



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE  
DEFINITIVE EDITION





RUDYARD KIPLING'S  
VERSE

DEFINITIVE EDITION



HODDER AND STOUGHTON  
LONDON SYDNEY AUCKLAND TORONTO

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE  
INCLUSIVE EDITIONS

BIBLIOGRAPHIES

THE FIRST EDITION OF THE COLLECTED VERSE  
OF RUDYARD KIPLING, DATED 1885-1912, WAS  
PUBLISHED IN NOVEMBER 1912

A SECOND IMPRESSION OF THIS EDITION APPEARED  
IN DECEMBER 1912

THE SECOND EDITION OF RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE,  
INCLUSIVE EDITION, DATED 1885-1918, WAS FIRST  
ISSUED IN THREE VOLUMES IN DECEMBER 1919  
A SECOND IMPRESSION OF THIS THREE-VOLUME  
EDITION APPEARED IN APRIL 1920

THE 1885-1918 EDITION WAS SUBSEQUENTLY  
ISSUED IN ONE VOLUME IN OCTOBER 1921, AND  
BETWEEN THAT DATE AND AUGUST 1926 EIGHTEEN  
IMPRESSIONS OF THIS EDITION APPEARED

THE THIRD INCLUSIVE EDITION OF RUDYARD  
KIPLING'S VERSE, DATED 1885-1926, WAS FIRST  
ISSUED IN ONE VOLUME IN SEPTEMBER 1927, AND  
BETWEEN THAT DATE AND OCTOBER 1931 ELEVEN  
IMPRESSIONS OF THIS EDITION APPEARED

THE FOURTH INCLUSIVE EDITION OF RUDYARD  
KIPLING'S VERSE, DATED 1885-1932, WAS FIRST  
ISSUED IN ONE VOLUME IN OCTOBER 1933, AND  
BETWEEN THAT DATE AND NOVEMBER 1939 SIX  
IMPRESSIONS OF THIS EDITION APPEARED

THIS IS THE DEFINITIVE EDITION OF RUDYARD KIPLING'S  
VERSE, FIRST PUBLISHED IN 1940, REPRINTED IN  
FEBRUARY 1941, MARCH 1941, MAY 1942, MAY 1943,  
FEBRUARY 1945, JANUARY 1946, SEPTEMBER 1946,  
FEBRUARY 1948, NOVEMBER 1948, MARCH 1949,  
JULY 1954, JULY 1958, JANUARY 1960, MAY 1966,  
JULY 1969 AND MAY 1973

ISBN 0 340 1157 2

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN FOR  
HODDER AND STOUGHTON LIMITED,  
ST. PAUL'S HOUSE, WARWICK LANE, LONDON, EC4P 4AH. BY  
LOWE AND BRYDONE (PRINTERS) LTD., THETFORD, NORFOLK

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
Absent-Minded Beggar, The . . . . .	459
Advertisement, The . . . . .	678
Akbar's Bridge . . . . .	779
Alnaschar and the Oxen . . . . .	759
American, An . . . . .	184
American Rebellion, The . . . . .	726
Anchor Song . . . . .	111
" Angutivaun Taina " . . . . .	667
Answer, The . . . . .	373
Anvil, The . . . . .	713
Appeal, The . . . . .	827
Arithmetic on the Frontier . . . . .	45
Army Headquarters . . . . .	5
Arterial . . . . .	677
" As the Bell Clinks " . . . . .	52
Astrologer's Song, An . . . . .	590
At His Execution . . . . .	781
Ave Imperatrix! . . . . .	169
Azrael's Count . . . . .	789
" Back to the Army Again " . . . . .	430
Ballad of Boh Da Thone, The . . . . .	255
Ballad of East and West, The . . . . .	234
Ballad of Fisher's Boarding-House, The . . . . .	40
ballad of Minepit Shaw, The . . . . .	660
Ballad of the " Bolivar," The . . . . .	137
Ballad of the Cars, The . . . . .	687
Ballad of the " Clampherdown," The . . . . .	138
Ballad of the King's Jest, The . . . . .	247
Ballad of the King's Mercy, The . . . . .	243
Ballad of the Red Earl, The . . . . .	230
Ballade of Burial, A . . . . .	31
Ballade of Jakko Hill, A . . . . .	50
" Banquet Night " . . . . .	750
Bee-boy's Song, The . . . . .	593
Bees and the Flies, The . . . . .	543
" Before a Midnight Breaks in Storm " . . . . .	293
Beginner, The . . . . .	684
Beginnings, The . . . . .	673
Bell Buoy, The . . . . .	294
Bells and Queen Victoria, The . . . . .	731
Belts . . . . .	414
Benefactors, The . . . . .	340
Betrothed, The . . . . .	47
Big Steamers . . . . .	728
Bill 'Awkins . . . . .	414

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
" Birds of Prey " March . . . . .	432
Birtheright, The . . . . .	761
Blue Roses . . . . .	633
" Bobs " . . . . .	395
Bonfires, The . . . . .	350
Boots . . . . .	473
Bother, The . . . . .	685
Boy Scouts' Patrol Song, A . . . . .	273
Braggart, The . . . . .	680
Bridge-Guard in the Karroo . . . . .	205
British-Roman Song, A . . . . .	547
Broken Men, The . . . . .	96
Brookland Road . . . . .	491
" Brown Bess " . . . . .	724
Buddha at Kamakura . . . . .	92
Burden, The . . . . .	766
Burial, The . . . . .	209
Butterflies . . . . .	634
" By the Hoof of the Wild Goat " . . . . .	620
Cain and Abel . . . . .	580
Captive, The . . . . .	532
Carmen Circulare . . . . .	677
Carol, A . . . . .	510
Cells . . . . .	404
Centaurs, The . . . . .	752
Certain Maxims of Hafiz . . . . .	60
Changelings, The . . . . .	749
Chant-Pagan . . . . .	461
Chapter Headings	
Beast and Man in India . . . . .	566
Collected . . . . .	570
Day's Work . . . . .	570
Fringes of the Fleet . . . . .	571
Jungle Books . . . . .	642
Kim . . . . .	569
Life's Handicap . . . . .	568
Light That Failed . . . . .	540
Many Inventions . . . . .	570
Naulahka . . . . .	536
Plain Tales from the Hills . . . . .	503
Charm, A . . . . .	500
Chartres Windows . . . . .	803
Chil's Song . . . . .	532
Child's Garden, A . . . . .	689
Children, The . . . . .	522
Children's Song, The . . . . .	573
Choice, The . . . . .	186
Cholera Camp . . . . .	440
Christmas in India . . . . .	54
" Cities and Thrones and Powers " . . . . .	487
" City of Brass, The " . . . . .	315
City of Sleep, The . . . . .	611

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
" Cleared " . . . . .	227
Clerks and the Bells, The . . . . .	798
Coastwise Lights, The . . . . .	171
Code of Morals, A . . . . .	12
Coiner, The . . . . .	778
Cold Iron . . . . .	508
Columns . . . . .	466
Comforters, The . . . . .	615
Consolations of Memory, The . . . . .	679
Contradictions . . . . .	683
Conundrum of the Workshops, The . . . . .	336
Counting-out Song, A . . . . .	744
Covenant, The . . . . .	320
Craftsman, The . . . . .	348
Cruisers . . . . .	141
Cuckoo Song . . . . .	499
Curé, The . . . . .	785
Dane-geld . . . . .	712
Danny Deever . . . . .	397
Darzee's Chaunt . . . . .	670
Dawn Wind, The . . . . .	717
Dead King, The . . . . .	224
Death-Bed, A . . . . .	286
Declaration of London, The . . . . .	307
Dedication from " Barrack-Room Ballads " . . . . .	83
Dedication—To " Soldiers Three " . . . . .	637
Deep-Sea Cables, The . . . . .	174
Delilah . . . . .	7
Departure, A . . . . .	742
Derelict, The . . . . .	149
Destroyers, The . . . . .	143
Dinah in Heaven . . . . .	771
Dirge of Dead Sisters . . . . .	218
Disciple, The . . . . .	774
Divided Destinies . . . . .	34
Doctors . . . . .	565
Dove of Dacca, The . . . . .	254
Dutch in the Medway, The . . . . .	723
Dying Chauffeur, The . . . . .	686
Dykes, The . . . . .	305
'Eathen, The . . . . .	451
Eddi's Service . . . . .	513
Edgehill Fight . . . . .	722
Egg-Shell, The . . . . .	646
En-Dor . . . . .	366
England's Answer . . . . .	178
English Flag, The . . . . .	221
English Way, The . . . . .	822
Epitaphs of the War . . . . .	386
Et Dona Ferentes . . . . .	287
Evarra and His Gods . . . . .	338
Exiles' Line, The . . . . .	163

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
Expert, The . . . . .	784
Explanation, The . . . . .	371
Explorer, The . . . . .	103
Fabulists, The . . . . .	545
Fairies' Siege, The . . . . .	520
Fall of Jock Gillespie, The . . . . .	64
Fastness . . . . .	683
Feet of the Young Men, The . . . . .	270
Female of the Species, The . . . . .	367
Files, The . . . . .	351
Fires, The . . . . .	82
First Chantey, The . . . . .	159
Flight, The . . . . .	562
Floods, The . . . . .	498
Flowers, The . . . . .	190
" Follow Me 'Ome " . . . . .	446
" For All We Have and Are " . . . . .	329
" For to Admire " . . . . .	457
Ford o' Kabul River . . . . .	423
Four Angels, The . . . . .	672
Four-Feet . . . . .	773
Four Points, The . . . . .	679
Fox-Hunting . . . . .	819
France . . . . .	291
Frankie's Trade . . . . .	663
French Wars, The . . . . .	727
Friends, The . . . . .	808
" Fuzzy-Wuzzy " . . . . .	400
Galley-Slave, The . . . . .	73
Gallio's Song . . . . .	542
Gehazi . . . . .	242
General Joubert . . . . .	242
General Summary, A . . . . .	4
Gentlemen-Rankers . . . . .	424
Gertrude's Prayer . . . . .	771
Gethsemane . . . . .	98
Giffen's Debt . . . . .	78
Gift of the Sea, The . . . . .	374
Gipsy Trail, The . . . . .	181
Gipsy Vans . . . . .	760
Glories, The . . . . .	813
Glory of the Garden, The . . . . .	732
Gods of the Copybook Headings, The . . . . .	793
Gow's Watch, Acts II., IV., V. . . . .	617
Grave of the Hundred Head, The . . . . .	56
Great-Heart . . . . .	577
Greek National Anthem, The . . . . .	93
Gunga Din . . . . .	406
Hadramauti . . . . .	535
Half-Ballade of Waterval . . . . .	478
Harp Song of the Dane Women . . . . .	528
" Helen All Alone " . . . . .	612

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
Heriot's Ford . . . . .	662
Heritage, The . . . . .	565
" His Apologies " . . . . .	816
Holy War, The . . . . .	289
Hour of the Angel, The . . . . .	740
Houses, The . . . . .	179
Hunting-Song of the Seeonee Pack . . . . .	667
Hyænas, The . . . . .	318
Hymn before Action . . . . .	325
Hymn of Breaking Strain . . . . .	384
Hymn of the Triumphant Airman . . . . .	817
Hymn to Physical Pain . . . . .	787
Idiot Boy, The . . . . .	682
If—— . . . . .	576
Imperial Rescript, An . . . . .	284
In Springtime . . . . .	78
In the Matter of One Compass . . . . .	168
In the Neolithic Age . . . . .	342
Instructor, The . . . . .	472
Inventor, The . . . . .	686
Irish Guards, The . . . . .	196
Islanders, The . . . . .	301
Jacket, The . . . . .	449
James I. . . . .	721
Jane's Marriage . . . . .	757
Jester, The . . . . .	584
Jobson's Amen . . . . .	502
Jubal and Tubal Cain . . . . .	554
Juggler's Song, The . . . . .	664
Junk and the Dhow, The . . . . .	738
Just So Verses . . . . .	604
Justice . . . . .	393
Justice's Tale, The . . . . .	678
King, The . . . . .	376
King and the Sea, The . . . . .	825
King Henry VII. and the Shipwrights . . . . .	657
King's Job, The . . . . .	718
King's Pilgrimage, The . . . . .	805
King's Task, The . . . . .	648
Kingdom, The . . . . .	494
Kitchener's School . . . . .	202
La Nuit Blanche . . . . .	28
Ladies, The . . . . .	442
Lady Geraldine's Hardship . . . . .	684
Lament of the Border Cattle Thief, The . . . . .	268
Land, The . . . . .	601
Landau, The . . . . .	682
Last Chantey, The . . . . .	160
Last Department, The . . . . .	21
Last Lap, The . . . . .	741
Last Ode, The . . . . .	765
Last of the Light Brigade, The . . . . .	200



# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
Last Rhyme of True Thomas, The . . . . .	377
Last Suttee, The . . . . .	238
"Late Came the God" . . . . .	753
Law of the Jungle, The . . . . .	558
Legend of Mirth, The . . . . .	516
Legend of the Foreign Office, A . . . . .	8
Legend of Truth, A . . . . .	762
Legends of Evil, The . . . . .	354
L'Envoi to "Departmental Ditties" . . . . .	81
Lesson, The . . . . .	299
Lichtenberg . . . . .	476
Liner She's a Lady, The . . . . .	158
Lollius . . . . .	800
London Stone . . . . .	804
Long Trail, The . . . . .	165
Looking-Glass, The . . . . .	609
Loot . . . . .	410
Lord Roberts . . . . .	204
Lost Legion, The . . . . .	195
Love Song of Har Dyal, The . . . . .	637
Lovers' Litany, The . . . . .	30
Lowestoft Boat, The . . . . .	653
"Lukannon" . . . . .	589
McAndrew's Hymn . . . . .	120
MacDonough's Song . . . . .	561
Man Who Could Write, The . . . . .	17
Mandalay . . . . .	418
Mare's Nest, The . . . . .	39
Marrèd Drives of Windsor, The . . . . .	691
Married Man, The . . . . .	474
"Mary Gloster," The . . . . .	129
"Mary, Pity Women!" . . . . .	455
Mary's Son . . . . .	373
Masque of Plenty, The . . . . .	35
Master-Cook, The . . . . .	739
Memories . . . . .	821
"Men that Fought at Minden, The" . . . . .	438
Merchantmen, The . . . . .	151
Merrow Down . . . . .	597
Mesopotamia . . . . .	300
M. I. . . . .	463
Mine Sweepers . . . . .	631
Miracles, The . . . . .	88
Moon of Other Days, The . . . . .	63
Moral, The . . . . .	690
Morning Song in The Jungle . . . . .	632
Mother o' Mine . . . . .	638
Mother-Lodge, The . . . . .	444
Mother's Son, The . . . . .	777
Mowgli's Song Against People . . . . .	640
Mulholland's Contract . . . . .	127
Municipal . . . . .	20

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
My Boy Jack . . . . .	216
My Father's Chair . . . . .	716
My Lady's Law . . . . .	635
" My New-Cut Ashlar " . . . . .	511
My Rival . . . . .	22
Naaman's Song . . . . .	776
Native-Born, The . . . . .	192
Nativity, A . . . . .	217
Natural Theology . . . . .	343
Necessitarian, The . . . . .	582
Neighbours . . . . .	784
New Knighthood, The . . . . .	524
" Non Nobis Domine! " . . . . .	512
Norman and Saxon . . . . .	714
North Sea Patrol, The . . . . .	665
Nurses, The . . . . .	743
Nursing Sister, The . . . . .	636
Ode: Melbourne Shrine of Remembrance . . . . .	189
Old Issue, The . . . . .	296
Old Men, The . . . . .	321
Old Mother Laidinwool . . . . .	599
Old Song, An . . . . .	58
Oldest Song, The . . . . .	158
One Viceroy Resigns . . . . .	69
Only Son, The . . . . .	639
Oonts . . . . .	408
Open Door, The . . . . .	811
" Our Fathers Also " . . . . .	546
" Our Fathers of Old " . . . . .	563
Our Lady of the Sackcloth . . . . .	514
Our Lady of the Snows . . . . .	182
Outlaws, The . . . . .	322
Outsong in the Jungle . . . . .	526
Overland Mail, The . . . . .	33
Pageant of Elizabeth, A . . . . .	611
Pagett, M.P. . . . .	26
Palace, The . . . . .	385
Pan in Vermont . . . . .	356
Parade-Song of the Camp-Animals . . . . .	574
Parting of the Columns, The . . . . .	468
Peace of Dives, The . . . . .	278
Penalty, The . . . . .	788
Pharaoh and the Sergeant . . . . .	198
Philadelphia . . . . .	585
Pict Song, A . . . . .	548
Piet . . . . .	479
Pilgrim's Way, A . . . . .	371
Pink Dominoes . . . . .	18
Pirates in England, The . . . . .	711
Playmate, The . . . . .	775
Plea of the Simla Dancers, The . . . . .	51
" Poison of Asps " . . . . .	811

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
" Poor Honest Men " . . . . .	551
Portent, The . . . . .	758
Poseidon's Law . . . . .	651
Possibilities . . . . .	43
Post that Fitted, The . . . . .	11
" Power of the Dog, The " . . . . .	591
Prairie, The . . . . .	501
Prayer, The . . . . .	673
Prayer of Miriam Cohen, The . . . . .	614
Preface to Land and Sea Tales . . . . .	737
Prelude to " Departmental Ditties " . . . . .	3
Press, The . . . . .	534
Private Ortheris's Song . . . . .	427
Pro-Consuls, The . . . . .	107
Prodigal Son, The . . . . .	579
Progress of the Spark, The . . . . .	680
Prophets at Home . . . . .	554
Public Waste . . . . .	14
Puck's Song . . . . .	488
Puzzler, The . . . . .	533
Queen's Men, The . . . . .	610
Quest, The . . . . .	521
Question, The . . . . .	327
Rabbi's Song, The . . . . .	592
Rahere . . . . .	754
Rebirth . . . . .	583
Recall, The . . . . .	487
Recantation, A . . . . .	369
Recessional . . . . .	328
Rector's Memory, A . . . . .	799
Reeds of Runnymede, The . . . . .	715
Reformers, The . . . . .	319
Return, The . . . . .	485
Return of the Children, The . . . . .	596
Rhodes Memorial, Table Mountain . . . . .	210
Rhyme of the Three Captains, The . . . . .	332
Rhyme of the Three Sealers, The . . . . .	113
" Rimini " . . . . .	550
Rimmon . . . . .	312
Ripple Song, A . . . . .	634
River's Tale, The . . . . .	709
Road-Song of the <i>Bandar-Log</i> . . . . .	544
Roman Centurion's Song, The . . . . .	710
Romulus and Remus . . . . .	641
Route Marchin' . . . . .	426
Rowers, The . . . . .	282
Run of the Downs, The . . . . .	491
Runes on Weland's Sword, The . . . . .	669
Runners, The . . . . .	109
Rupaiyat of Omar Kal'vin, The . . . . .	25
Russia to the Pacifists . . . . .	277
Sack of the Gods, The . . . . .	493

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
Sacrifice of Er-Heb, The . . . . .	263
St. Helena Lullaby, A . . . . .	530
Samuel Pepys . . . . .	349
Sappers . . . . .	435
Scholars, The . . . . .	795
School Song, A . . . . .	556
Screw-Guns . . . . .	403
Sea and the Hills, The . . . . .	110
Sea-Wife, The . . . . .	94
Second Voyage, The . . . . .	156
Secret of the Machines, The . . . . .	729
Sepulchral . . . . .	677
Sergeant's Weddin', The . . . . .	447
" Servant when he Reigneth, A "	560
" Service Man, The " . . . . .	458
Sestina of the Tramp-Royal . . . . .	87
Settler, The . . . . .	212
Seven Watchmen . . . . .	394
Shillin' a Day . . . . .	429
Shiv and the Grasshopper . . . . .	519
Shut-Eye Sentry, The . . . . .	453
Sir Richard's Song . . . . .	495
Smuggler's Song, A . . . . .	655
" Snarleyow " . . . . .	412
" Soldier an' Sailor Too " . . . . .	433
Soldier, Soldier . . . . .	401
Song at Cock-Crow, A . . . . .	326
Song in Storm, A . . . . .	148
Song in the Desert, A . . . . .	807
Song of Bananas, A . . . . .	809
Song of Diego Valdez, The . . . . .	153
Song of French Roads, A . . . . .	801
Song of Kabir, A . . . . .	510
Song of Seven Cities, The . . . . .	594
Song of Seventy Horses . . . . .	786
Song of the Banjo, The . . . . .	98
Song of the Cities, The . . . . .	175
Song of the Dead, The . . . . .	172
Song of the Dynamo . . . . .	810
Song of the English, A . . . . .	170
Song of the Fifth River . . . . .	572
Song of the Galley-Slaves . . . . .	671
Song of the Lathes, The . . . . .	310
Song of the Little Hunter, The . . . . .	616
Song of the Men's Side . . . . .	668
Song of the Old Guard, The . . . . .	313
Song of the Red War-Boat . . . . .	629
Song of the Sons, The . . . . .	175
Song of the White Men, A . . . . .	282
Song of the Wise Children . . . . .	90
Song of the Women, The . . . . .	46
Song of Travel, A . . . . .	586

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
Song to Mithras, A . . . . .	523
Sons of Martha, The . . . . .	382
South Africa . . . . .	207
Spies' March, The . . . . .	101
Stellenbosch . . . . .	477
Storm Cone, The . . . . .	824
Story of Ung, The . . . . .	345
Story of Uriah, The . . . . .	10
Stranger, The . . . . .	549
Study of an Elevation, in Indian Ink . . . . .	6
"Such as in Ships" . . . . .	810
Supplication of the Black Aberdeen . . . . .	814
Supports, The . . . . .	767
Survival, The . . . . .	756
Sussex . . . . .	213
Tale of Two Cities, A . . . . .	76
Tarrant Moss . . . . .	494
That Day . . . . .	437
Things and the Man . . . . .	210
Thorkild's Song . . . . .	666
Thousandth Man, The . . . . .	529
Three-Decker, The . . . . .	330
Three-Part Song, A . . . . .	490
Threshold, The . . . . .	782
"Tin Fish" . . . . .	648
To a Lady, persuading Her to a Car . . . . .	679
To James Whitcomb Riley . . . . .	598
To Motorists . . . . .	681
To the City of Bombay . . . . .	179
To the Companions . . . . .	751
To the True Romance . . . . .	85
To the Unknown Goddess . . . . .	24
To Thomas Atkins . . . . .	394
"Together" . . . . .	720
Tomlinson . . . . .	360
Tommy . . . . .	398
Totem, The . . . . .	773
Tour, The . . . . .	681
"Trade, The" . . . . .	647
Translation, A . . . . .	588
Tree Song, A . . . . .	497
Troopin' . . . . .	420
Truce of the Bear, The . . . . .	274
Truthful Song, A . . . . .	654
Two Kopjes . . . . .	470
Two Months . . . . .	80
Two Races . . . . .	812
Two-Sided Man, The . . . . .	587
Ubique . . . . .	483
Ulster . . . . .	232
Undertaker's Horse, The . . . . .	67
Untimely . . . . .	764

# C O N T E N T S

	PAGE
Vampire, The . . . . .	220
Verdicts, The . . . . .	142
Verses on Games . . . . .	358
" Very many People " . . . . .	813
Veterans, The . . . . .	305
Vineyard, The . . . . .	749
Virginity, The . . . . .	353
Voortrekker, The . . . . .	555
Wage-Slaves, The . . . . .	308
Waster, The . . . . .	525
Way Through the Woods, The . . . . .	490
We and They . . . . .	763
Wet Litany, The . . . . .	659
What Happened . . . . .	15
What the People Said . . . . .	66
When Earth's Last Picture is Painted . . . . .	226
" When 'Omer Smote 'Is Bloomin' Lyre " . . . . .	351
" When the Great Ark " . . . . .	553
" When the Journey was intended to the City " . . . . .	681
White Horses . . . . .	145
White Man's Burden, The . . . . .	323
Widow at Windsor, The . . . . .	413
Widow's Party, The . . . . .	421
Widower, The . . . . .	613
" Wilful-Missing " . . . . .	482
Winners, The . . . . .	530
Wishing-Caps, The . . . . .	628
With Drake in the Tropics . . . . .	719
With Scindia to Delhi . . . . .	250
Young British Soldier, The . . . . .	416
Young Queen, The . . . . .	187
Zion . . . . .	91



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE  
DEFINITIVE EDITION





## PRELUDE

(To "Departmental Ditties")

1885

*I have eaten your bread and salt.  
I have drunk your water and wine.  
The deaths ye died I have watched beside,  
And the lives ye led were mine.*

*Was there aught that I did not share  
In vigil or toil or ease,—  
One joy or woe that I did not know,  
Dear hearts across the seas?*

*I have written the tale of our life  
For a sheltered people's mirth,  
In jesting guise—but ye are wise,  
And ye know what the jest is worth.*

A GENERAL SUMMARY

WE ARE very slightly changed  
 From the semi-apes who ranged  
 India's prehistoric clay;  
 He that drew the longest bow  
 Ran his brother down, you know,  
 As we run men down to-day.

"Dowb," the first of all his race,  
 Met the Mammoth face to face  
 On the lake or in the cave:  
 Stole the steadiest canoe,  
 Ate the quarry others slew,  
 Died—and took the finest grave.

When they scratched the reindeer-bone,  
 Some one made the sketch his own,  
 Filched it from the artist—then,  
 Even in those early days,  
 Won a simple Viceroy's praise  
 Through the toil of other men.  
 Ere they hewed the Sphinx's visage  
 Favouritism governed kissage,  
 Even as it does in this age.

Who shall doubt "the secret hid  
 Under Cheops' pyramid"  
 Was that the contractor did  
 Cheops out of several millions?  
 Or that Joseph's sudden rise  
 To Comptroller of Supplies  
 Was a fraud of monstrous size  
 On King Pharaoh's swart Civilians?

Thus, the artless songs I sing  
 Do not deal with anything  
 New or never said before.  
 As it was in the beginning  
 Is to-day official sinning,  
 And shall be for evermore.

ARMY HEADQUARTERS

*Old is the song that I sing—  
Old as my unpaid bills—  
Old as the chicken that khitmutgars<sup>1</sup> bring  
Men at dāk-bungalows—old as the Hills.*

AHASUERUS JENKINS of the "Operatic Own"  
Was dowered with a tenor voice of *super*-Santley tone.  
His views on equitation were, perhaps, a trifle queer.  
He had no seat worth mentioning, but oh! he had an ear.

He clubbed his wretched company a dozen times a day;  
He used to quit his charger in a parabolic way;  
His method of saluting was the joy of all beholders;  
But Ahasuerus Jenkins had a head upon his shoulders.

He took two months at Simla when the year was at the spring,  
And underneath the deodars eternally did sing.  
He warbled like a *bul-bul*<sup>2</sup> but particularly at  
Cornelia Agrippina, who was musical and fat.

She controlled a humble husband, who, in turn, controlled a  
Dept.  
Where Cornelia Agrippina's human singing-birds were kept  
From April to October on a plump retaining-fee,  
Supplied, of course, *per mensem*, by the Indian Treasury.

Cornelia used to sing with him, and Jenkins used to play;  
He praised unblushingly her notes, for he was false as they;  
So when the winds of April turned the budding roses brown,  
Cornelia told her husband:—"Tom, you mustn't send him  
down."

They haled him from his regiment, which didn't much regret  
him;  
They found for him an office-stool, and on that stool they set  
him  
To play with maps and catalogues three idle hours a day,  
And draw his plump retaining-fee—which means his double  
pay.

<sup>1</sup> Waiters.

<sup>2</sup> Nightingale.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Now, ever after dinner, when the coffee-cups are brought,  
Ahasuerus walleth o'er the grand pianoforte;  
And, thanks to fair Cornelia, his fame hath waxen great,  
And Ahasuerus Jenkins is a Power in the State!

### STUDY OF AN ELEVATION, IN INDIAN INK

*This ditty is a string of lies.  
But—how the deuce did Gubbins rise?*

POTIPHAR GUBBINS, C.E.,  
Stands at the top of the tree;  
And I muse in my bed on the reasons that led  
To the hoisting of Potiphar G.

Potiphar Gubbins, C.E.,  
Is seven years junior to Me;  
Each bridge that he makes either buckles or breaks,  
And his work is as rough as he.

Potiphar Gubbins, C.E.,  
Is coarse as a chimpanzee;  
And I can't understand why you gave him your hand,  
Lovely Mehitabel Lee.

Potiphar Gubbins, C.E.,  
Is dear to the Powers that Be;  
For They bow and They smile in an affable style,  
Which is seldom accorded to Me.

Potiphar Gubbins, C.E.,  
Is certain as certain can be  
Of a highly paid post which is claimed by a host  
Of seniors—including Me.

Careless and lazy is he,  
Greatly inferior to Me.  
What is the spell that you manage so well,  
Commonplace Potiphar G.?

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Lovely Mehitabel Lee,  
Let me inquire of thee,  
Should I have riz to where Potiphar is,  
Hadst thou been mated to Me?

### DELILAH

*We have another Viceroy now,—those days are dead and done  
Of Delilah Aberyswith and depraved Ulysses Gunne.*

DELILAH ABERYSWITH was a lady—not too young—  
With a perfect taste in dresses and a badly-bitted  
tongue,  
With a thirst for information, and a greater thirst for praise,  
And a little house in Simla in the Prehistoric Days.

By reason of her marriage to a gentleman in power,  
Delilah was acquainted with the gossip of the hour;  
And many little secrets, of the half-official kind,  
Were whispered to Delilah, and she bore them all in mind.

She patronised extensively a man, Ulysses Gunne,  
Whose mode of earning money was a low and shameful one.  
He wrote for certain papers, which, as everybody knows,  
Is worse than serving in a shop or scaring off the crows.

He praised her “queenly beauty” first; and, later on, he  
hinted  
At the “vastness of her intellect” with compliment un-  
stinted.  
He went with her a-riding, and his love for her was such  
That he lent her all his horses and—she galled them very  
much.

One day, THEY brewed a secret of a fine financial sort;  
It related to Appointments, to a Man and a Report.  
'Twas almost worth the keeping,—only seven people knew  
it—  
And Gunne rose up to seek the truth and patiently ensue it.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

It was a Viceroy's Secret, but—perhaps the wine was red—  
Perhaps an Aged Councillor had lost his aged head—  
Perhaps Delilah's eyes were bright—Delilah's whispers  
sweet—

The Aged Member told her what 'twere treason to repeat.

Ulysses went a-riding, and they talked of love and flowers;  
Ulysses went a-calling, and he called for several hours;  
Ulysses went a-waltzing, and Delilah helped him dance—  
Ulysses let the waltzes go, and waited for his chance.

The summer sun was setting, and the summer air was still,  
The couple went a-walking in the shade of Summer Hill.  
The wasteful sunset faded out in turkis-green and gold,  
Ulysses pleaded softly, and . . . that bad Delilah told!

Next morn, a startled Empire learnt the all-important news;  
Next week, the Aged Councillor was shaking in his shoes.  
Next month, I met Delilah and she did not show the least  
Hesitation in affirming that Ulysses was a "beast."

We have another Viceroy now, those days are dead and  
done—  
Off, Delilah Aberyswith and most mean Ulysses Gunne!

## A LEGEND OF THE FOREIGN OFFICE

*This is the reason why Rustum Beg,  
Rajah of Kolazai,  
Drinketh the "simpkin"<sup>1</sup> and brandy peg,  
Maketh the money to fly,  
Vexeth a Government, tender and kind,  
Also—but this is a detail—blind.*

**R**USTUM BEG of Kolazai — slightly backward Native  
State—  
Lusted for a C. S. I.<sup>2</sup>—so began to sanitate.  
Built a Gaol and Hospital—nearly built a City drain—  
Till his faithful subjects all thought their ruler was insane.

<sup>1</sup> Champagne.

<sup>2</sup> The Order of the Star of India.

# D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

Strange departures made he then—yea, Departments  
stranger still:

Half a dozen Englishmen helped the Rajah with a will,  
"Talked of noble aims and high, hinted at a future fine  
For the State of Kolazai, on a strictly Western line.

Rajah Rustum held his peace; lowered octroi dues a half;  
Organised a State Police; purified the Civil Staff;  
Settled cess and tax afresh in a very liberal way;  
Cut temptations of the flesh—also cut the Bukhshi's<sup>1</sup> pay:

Roused his Secretariat to a fine Mahratta fury,  
By an Order hinting at supervision of *dasturi*;<sup>2</sup>  
Turned the State of Kolazai very nearly upside-down;  
When the end of May was nigh waited his achievement's  
crown.

Then the Birthday Honours came. Sad to state and sad to  
see,  
Stood against the Rajah's name nothing more than  
*C. I. E.*!<sup>3</sup> . . .  
Things were lively for a week in the State of Kolazai,  
Even now the people speak of that time regretfully.

How he disendowed the Gaol—stopped at once the City  
drain;  
Turned to beauty fair and frail—got his senses back again;  
Doubled taxes, cesses, all; cleared away each new-built  
*thana*;<sup>4</sup>  
Turned the two-lakh Hospital into a superb *Zenana*;

Heaped upon the Bukhshi Sahib wealth and honours mani-  
fold;  
Clad himself in Eastern garb—squeezed his people as of old.  
Happy, happy Kolazai! Never more will Rustum Beg  
Play to catch his Viceroy's eye. He prefers the "simpkin"  
peg.

<sup>1</sup> The Commander in Chief.    <sup>2</sup> Bribes.  
Order of the Indian Empire.

<sup>3</sup> A Companionship of the  
<sup>4</sup> Police station.



THE STORY OF URIAH

*"Now there were two men in one city; the one rich, and the other poor."*

JACK BARRETT went to Quetta  
 Because they told him to.  
 He left his wife at Simla  
 On three-fourths his monthly screw.  
 Jack Barrett died at Quetta  
 Ere the next month's pay he drew.

Jack Barrett went to Quetta.  
 He didn't understand  
 The reason of his transfer  
 From the pleasant mountain-land.  
 The season was September,  
 And it killed him out of hand.

Jack Barrett went to Quetta  
 And there gave up the ghost,  
 Attempting two men's duty  
 In that very healthy post;  
 And Mrs. Barrett mourned for him  
 Five lively months at most.

Jack Barrett's bones at Quetta  
 Enjoy profound repose;  
 But I shouldn't be astonished  
 If *now* his spirit knows  
 The reason of his transfer  
 From the Himalayan snows.

And, when the Last Great Bugle Call  
 Adown the Hurnai throbs,  
 And the last grim joke is entered  
 In the big black Book of Jobs,  
 And Quetta graveyards give again  
 Their victims to the air,  
 I shouldn't like to be the man  
 Who sent Jack Barrett there.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### THE POST THAT FITTED

*Though tangled and twisted the course of true love,  
This ditty explains,  
No tangle's so tangled it cannot improve  
If the Lover has brains.*

ERE the steamer bore him Eastward, Sleary was engaged to marry an attractive girl at Tunbridge, whom he called "my little Carrie." Sleary's pay was very modest; Sleary was the other way. Who can cook a two-plate dinner on eight poor rupees a day?

Long he pondered o'er the question in his scanty furnished quarters—  
Then proposed to Minnie Boffkin, eldest of Judge Boffkin's daughters.  
Certainly an impecunious Subaltern was not a catch,  
But the Boffkins knew that Minnie mightn't make another match.

So they recognised the business and, to feed and clothe the bride,  
Got him made a Something Something somewhere on the Bombay side.  
Anyhow, the billet carried pay enough for him to marry—  
As the artless Sleary put it:—"Just the thing for me and Carrie."

Did he, therefore, jilt Miss Boffkin—impulse of a baser mind?  
No! He started epileptic fits of an appalling kind.  
[Of his *modus operandi* only this much I could gather:—  
"Pears's shaving sticks will give you little taste and lots of lather."]

Frequently in public places his affliction used to smite Sleary with distressing vigour—always in the Boffkins' sight.  
Ere a week was over Minnie weepingly returned his ring,  
Told him his "unhappy weakness" stopped all thought of marrying.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Sleary bore the information with a chastened holy joy,—  
Epileptic fits don't matter in Political employ,—  
Wired three short words to Carrie—took his ticket, packed  
his kit—  
Bade farewell to Minnie Boffkin in one last, long, lingering  
fit.

Four weeks later, Carrie Sleary read—and laughed until she  
wept—  
Mrs. Boffkin's warning letter on the "wretched epilept." . . .  
Year by year, in pious patience, vengeful Mrs. Boffkin sits  
Waiting for the Sleary babies to develop Sleary's fits.

### A CODE OF MORALS

*Lest you should think this story true  
I merely mention I  
Evolved it lately. 'Tis a most  
Unmitigated misstatement.*

**N**ow Jones had left his new-wed bride to keep his house  
in order,  
And hied away to the Hurrum Hills above the Afghan border,  
To sit on a rock with a heliograph; but ere he left he taught  
His wife the working of the Code that sets the miles at  
naught.

And Love had made him very sage, as Nature made her fair;  
So Cupid and Apollo linked, *per* heliograph, the pair.  
At dawn, across the Hurrum Hills, he flashed her counsel  
wise—  
At e'en, the dying sunset bore her husband's homilies.

He warned her 'gainst seductive youths in scarlet clad and  
gold,  
As much as 'gainst the blandishments paternal of the old;  
But kept his gravest warnings for (hereby the ditty hangs)  
That snowy-haired Lothario, Lieutenant-General Bangs.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"Twas General Bangs, with Aide and Staff, who tittupped on  
the way,  
When they beheld a heliograph tempestuously at play.  
They thought of Border risings, and of stations sacked and  
burnt—  
So stopped to take the message down—and this is what they  
learnt—

"Dash dot dot, dot, dot dash, dot dash dot" twice. The  
General swore.  
"Was ever General Officer addressed as 'dear' before?  
" 'My Love,' i' faith! 'My Duck,' Gadzooks! 'My  
darling popsy-wop!'  
"Spirit of great Lord Wolseley, *who* is on that mountain-  
top?"

The artless Aide-de-camp was mute, the gilded Staff were  
still,  
As, dumb with pent-up mirth, they booked that message  
from the hill;  
For clear as summer lightning-flare, the husband's warning  
ran:—  
"Don't dance or ride with General Bangs—a most immoral  
man."

[At dawn, across the Hurrum Hills, he flashed her counsel  
wise—  
But, howsoever Love be blind, the world at large hath eyes.]  
With damnatory dot and dash he heliographed his wife  
Some interesting details of the General's private life.

The artless Aide-de-camp was mute, the shining Staff were  
still,  
And red and ever redder grew the General's shaven gill.  
And this is what he said at last (his feelings matter not):—  
"I think we've tapped a private line. Hi! Threes about  
there! Trot!"

All honour unto Bangs, for ne'er did Jones thereafter know  
By word or act official who read off that helio.  
But the tale is on the Frontier, and from Michni to Mooltan  
They know the worthy General as "that most immoral  
man."

PUBLIC WASTE

*Walpole talks of "a man and his price."*

*List to a ditty queer—*

*The sale of a Deputy-Acting-Vice-*

*Resident-Engineer,*

*Bought like a bullock, hoof and hide,*

*By the Little Tin Gods on the Mountain Side.*

**B**Y THE LAWS of the Family Circle 'tis written in letters  
of brass  
That only a Colonel from Chatham can manage the Rail-  
ways of State,  
Because of the gold on his breeks, and the subjects wherein  
he must pass;  
Because in all matters that deal not with Railways his know-  
ledge is great.

Now Exeter Battleby Tring had laboured from boyhood to  
eld  
On the Lines of the East and the West, and eke of the North  
and South;  
Many Lines had he built and surveyed—important the posts  
which he held;  
And the Lords of the Iron Horse were dumb when he opened  
his mouth.

Black as the raven his garb, and his heresies jettier still—  
Hinting that Railways required lifetimes of study and know-  
ledge—  
Never clanked sword by his side—Vauban he knew not nor  
drill—  
Nor was his name on the list of the men who had passed  
through the "College."

Wherefore the Little Tin Gods harried their little tin souls,  
Seeing he came not from Chatham, jingled no spurs at his  
heels,  
Knowing that, nevertheless, was he first on the Government  
rolls  
For the billet of "Railway Instructor to Little Tin Gods on  
Wheels."

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Letters not seldom they wrote him, "having the honour to state,"

It would be better for all men if he were laid on the shelf.

Much would accrue to his bank-book, an he consented to wait

Until the Little Tin Gods built him a berth for himself,

"Special, well paid, and exempt from the Law of the Fifty and Five,

Even to Ninety and Nine"—these were the terms of the pact:

Thus did the Little Tin Gods (long may Their Highnesses thrive!)

Silence his mouth with rupees, keeping their Circle intact;

Appointing a Colonel from Chatham who managed the Bhamo State Line

(The which was one mile and one furlong—a guaranteed twenty-inch gauge),

So Exeter Battleby Tring consented his claims to resign,

And died, on four thousand a month, in the ninetieth year of his age!

## WHAT HAPPENED

**H**URREE CHUNDER MOOKERJEE, pride of Bow Bazar,

Owner of a native press, "Barrishter-at-Lar,"

Waited on the Government with a claim to wear

Sabres by the bucketful, rifles by the pair.

Then the Indian Government winked a wicked wink,

Said to Chunder Mookerjee: "Stick to pen and ink.

They are safer implements, but, if you insist,

We will let you carry arms wheresoe'er you list."

Hurree Chunder Mookerjee sought the gunsmith and

Bought the tubes of Lancaster, Ballard, Dean, and Bland,

Bought a shiny bowie-knife, bought a town-made sword,

Jingled like a carriage-horse when he went abroad.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*But* the Indian Government, always keen to please,  
Also gave permission to horrid men like these—  
Yar Mahommed Yusufzai, down to kill or steal,  
Chimbu Singh from Bikaner, Tantia the Bhil;

Killar Khan the Marri chief, Jowar Singh the Sikh,  
Nubbee Baksh Punjabi Jat, Abdul Huq Rafiq—  
He was a Wahabi; last, little Boh Hla-oo  
Took advantage of the Act—took a Snider too.

They were unenlightened men, Ballard knew them not.  
They procured their swords and guns chiefly on the spot;  
And the lore of centuries, plus a hundred fights,  
Made them slow to disregard one another's rights.

With a unanimity dear to patriot hearts  
All those hairy gentlemen out of foreign parts  
Said: "The good old days are back—let us go to war!"  
Swaggered down the Grand Trunk Road into Bow Bazar.

Nubbee Baksh Punjabi Jat found a hide-bound flail;  
Chimbu Singh from Bikaner oiled his Tonk jezail<sup>1</sup>;  
Yar Mahommed Yusufzai spat and grinned with glee  
As he ground the butcher-knife of the Khyberree.

Jowar Singh the Sikh procured sabre, quoit, and mace,  
Abdul Huq, Wahabi, jerked his dagger from its place,  
While amid the jungle-grass danced and grinned and jabbered  
Little Boh Hla-oo and cleared his dah-blade from the scab-  
bard.

What became of Mookerjee? Soothly, who can say?  
Yar Mahommed only grins in a nasty way,  
Jowar Singh is reticent, Chimbu Singh is mute,  
But the belts of all of them simply bulge with loot.

What became of Ballard's guns? Afghans black and grubby  
Sell them for their silver weight to the men of Pubbi;  
And the shiny bowie-knife and the town-made sword are  
Hanging in a Marri camp just across the Border.

<sup>1</sup> Native gun.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

What became of Mookerjee? Ask Mahommed Yar  
Prodding Siva's sacred bull down the Bow Bazar,  
Speak to placid Nubbee Baksh—question land and sea—  
Ask the Indian Congressmen—only don't ask me!

### THE MAN WHO COULD WRITE

*Shun—shun the Bowl! That fatal, facile drink  
Has ruined many geese who dipped their quills in 't;  
Bribe, murder, marry, but steer clear of Ink  
Save when you write receipts for paid-up bills in 't.  
There may be silver in the "blue-black"—all  
I know of is the iron and the gall.*

**B**OANERGES BLITZEN, servant of the Queen,  
Is a dismal failure—is a Might-have-been.  
In a luckless moment he discovered men  
Rise to high position through a ready pen.

Boanerges Blitzen argued therefore—"I,  
With the selfsame weapon, can attain as high."  
Only he did not possess when he made the trial,  
Wicked wit of Colvin, irony of Lyall.

[Men who spar with Government need, to back their blows,  
Something more than ordinary journalistic prose.]

Never young Civilian's prospects were so bright,  
Till an Indian paper found that he could write:  
Never young Civilian's prospects were so dark,  
When the wretched Blitzen wrote to make his mark.

Certainly he scored it, bold, and black, and firm,  
In that Indian paper—made his seniors squirm,  
Quoted office scandals, wrote the tactless truth—  
Was there ever known a more misguided youth?

When the Rag he wrote for praised his plucky game,  
Boanerges Blitzen felt that this was Fame;  
When the men he wrote of shook their heads and swore,  
Boanerges Blitzen only wrote the more:



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Posed as Young Ithuriel, resolute and grim,  
Till he found promotion didn't come to him;  
Till he found that reprimands weekly were his lot,  
And his many Districts curiously hot.

Till he found his furlough strangely hard to win,  
Boanerges Blitzzen didn't care a pin:  
Then it seemed to dawn on him something wasn't right—  
Boanerges Blitzzen put it down to "spite";

Languished in a District desolate and dry;  
Watched the Local Government yearly pass him by;  
Wondered where the hitch was; called it most unfair.

That was seven years ago—and he still is there!

### PINK DOMINOES

*"They are fools who kiss and tell"—  
Wisely has the poet sung.  
Man may hold all sorts of posts  
If he'll only hold his tongue.*

JENNY and Me were engaged, you see,  
On the eve of the Fancy Ball;  
So a kiss or two was nothing to you  
Or any one else at all.

Jenny would go in a domino—  
Pretty and pink but warm;  
While I attended, clad in a splendid  
Austrian uniform.

Now we had arranged, through notes exchanged  
Early that afternoon,  
At Number Four to waltz no more,  
But to sit in the dusk and spoon.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

I wish you to see that Jenny and Me  
Had barely exchanged our troth;  
So a kiss or two was strictly due  
By, from, and between us both.

When Three was over, an eager lover,  
I fled to the gloom outside;  
And a Domino came out also  
Whom I took for my future bride.

That is to say, in a casual way,  
I slipped my arm around her;  
With a kiss or two (which is nothing to you),  
And ready to kiss I found her.

She turned her head and the name she said  
Was certainly not my own;  
But ere I could speak, with a smothered shriek  
She fled and left me alone.

Then Jenny came, and I saw with shame  
She'd doffed her domino;  
And I had embraced an alien waist—  
But I did not tell her so.

Next morn I knew that there were two  
Dominoes pink, and one  
Had cloaked the spouse of Sir Julian Vouse,  
Our big Political gun.

Sir J. was old, and her hair was gold,  
And her eye was a blue cerulean;  
And the name she said when she turned her head  
Was not in the least like "Julian."

Now wasn't it nice, when want of *pice*  
Forbade us twain to marry,  
That old Sir J., in the kindest way,  
Made me his *Secretarry*?

MUNICIPAL

"*Why is my District death-rate low?*"  
*Said Binks of Hezabad.*  
*"Well, drains, and sewage-outfalls are*  
*My own peculiar fad.*  
*I learnt a lesson once. It ran*  
*"Thus," quoth that most veracious man:*

IT WAS an August evening and, in snowy garments clad,  
 I paid a round of visits in the lines of Hezabad;  
 When, presently, my Waler saw, and did not like at all,  
 A Commissariat elephant careering down the Mall.

I couldn't see the driver, and across my mind it rushed  
 That that Commissariat elephant had suddenly gone *musth*.<sup>1</sup>  
 I didn't care to meet him, and I couldn't well get down,  
 So I let the Waler have it, and we headed for the town.

The buggy was a new one and, praise Dykes, it stood the  
 strain,  
 Till the Waler jumped a bullock just above the City Drain;  
 And the next that I remember was a hurricane of squeals,  
 And the creature making toothpicks of my five-foot patent  
 wheels.

He seemed to want the owner, so I fled, distraught with fear,  
 To the Main Drain sewage-outfall while he snorted in my  
 ear—  
 Reached the four-foot drain-head safely and, in darkness  
 and despair,  
 Felt the brute's proboscis fingering my terror-stiffened hair.

Heard it trumpet on my shoulder—tried to crawl a little  
 higher—  
 Found the Main Drain sewage-outfall blocked, some eight  
 feet up, with mire;  
 And, for twenty reeking minutes, Sir, my very marrow froze,  
 While the trunk was feeling blindly for a purchase on my  
 toes!

<sup>1</sup> Mad.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

It missed me by a fraction, but my hair was turning grey  
Before they called the drivers up and dragged the brute away.  
Then I sought the City Elders, and my words were very  
plain.  
They flushed that four-foot drain-head and—it never choked  
again!

You may hold with surface-drainage, and the sun-for-gar-  
bage cure,  
Till you've been a periwinkle shrinking coyly up a sewer.  
*I believe in well-flushed culverts. . . .*  
This is why the death-rate's small;  
And, if you don't believe me, get *shikarred*<sup>1</sup> yourself. That's  
all.

### THE LAST DEPARTMENT

*Twelve hundred million men are spread  
About this Earth, and I and You  
Wonder, when You and I are dead,  
"What will those luckless millions do?"*

"**N**ONE whole or clean," we cry, "or free from stain  
Of favour." Wait awhile, till we attain  
The Last Department where nor fraud nor fools,  
Nor grade nor greed, shall trouble us again.

Fear, Favour, or Affection—what are these  
To the grim Head who claims our services?  
I never knew a wife or interest yet  
Delay that *pukka* step, miscalled "decease";

When leave, long overdue, none can deny;  
When idleness of all Eternity  
Becomes our furlough, and the marigold  
Our thriftless, bullion-minting Treasury

Transferred to the Eternal Settlement,  
Each in his strait, wood-scantled office pent,  
No longer Brown reverses Smith's appeals,  
Or Jones records his Minute of Dissent.

<sup>1</sup> Hunted.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And One, long since a pillar of the Court,  
As mud between the beams thereof is wrought;  
And One who wrote on phosphates for the crops  
Is subject-matter of his own Report.

These be the glorious ends whereto we pass—  
Let Him who Is, go call on Him who Was;  
And He shall see the *mallie*<sup>1</sup> steals the slab  
For curry-grinder, and for goats the grass.

A breath of wind, a Border bullet's flight,  
A draught of water, or a horse's fright—  
The droning of the fat *Sheristadar*<sup>2</sup>  
Ceases, the punkah stops, and falls the night

For you or Me. Do those who live decline  
The step that offers, or their work resign?  
Trust me, To-day's Most Indispensables,  
Five hundred men can take your place or mine.

### MY RIVAL

I GO to concert, party, ball—  
What profit is in these?  
I sit alone against the wall  
And strive to look at ease.  
The incense that is mine by right  
They burn before Her shrine;  
And that's because I'm seventeen  
And she is forty-nine.

I cannot check my girlish blush,  
My colour comes and goes.  
I redden to my finger-tips,  
And sometimes to my nose.  
But She is white where white should be,  
And red where red should shine.  
The blush that flies at seventeen  
Is fixed at forty-nine.

<sup>1</sup> The cemetery gardener.

<sup>2</sup> Clerk of the Court.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

I wish *I* had her constant cheek:

I wish that I could sing  
All sorts of funny little songs,  
Not quite the proper thing.  
I'm very *gauche* and very shy,  
Her jokes aren't in my line;  
And, worst of all, I'm seventeen  
While She is forty-nine.

The young men come, the young men go,  
Each pink and white and neat,  
She's older than their mothers, but  
They grovel at Her feet.  
They walk beside Her '*rickshaw*-wheels—  
None ever walk by mine;  
And that's because I'm seventeen  
And She is forty-nine.

She rides with half a dozen men  
(She calls them "boys" and "mashes"),  
I trot along the Mall alone;  
My prettiest frocks and sashes  
Don't help to fill my programme-card,  
And vainly I repine  
From ten to two A.M. Ah me!  
Would I were forty-nine.

She calls me "darling," "pet," and "dear,"  
And "sweet retiring maid."  
I'm always at the back, I know—  
She puts me in the shade.  
She introduces me to men—  
"Cast" lovers, I opine;  
For sixty takes to seventeen,  
Nineteen to forty-nine.

But even She must older grow  
And end Her dancing days,  
She can't go on for ever so  
At concerts, balls, and plays.  
One ray of priceless hope I see  
Before my footsteps shine;  
Just think, that She'll be eighty-one  
When I am forty-nine!

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

## TO THE UNKNOWN GODDESS

WILL you conquer my heart with your beauty, my soul  
going out from afar?  
Shall I fall to your hand as a victim of crafty and cautious  
*shikar*?

Have I met you and passed you already, unknowing, un-  
thinking, and blind?  
Shall I meet you next season at Simla, O sweetest and best  
of your kind?

Does the P. & O. bear you to meward, or, clad in short  
frocks in the West,  
Are you growing the charms that shall capture and torture  
the heart in my breast?

Will you stay in the Plains till September—my passion as  
warm as the day?  
Will you bring me to book on the Mountains, or where the  
thermantidotes play?

When the light of your eyes shall make pallid the mean lesser  
lights I pursue,  
And the charm of your presence shall lure me from love of  
the gay "thirteen-two",<sup>1</sup>

When the "peg"<sup>2</sup> and the pigskin shall please not; when I  
buy me Calcutta-built clothes;  
When I quit the Delight of Wild Asses, forswearing the  
swearing of oaths;

As a deer to the hand of the hunter when I turn 'mid the  
gibes of my friends;  
When the days of my freedom are numbered, and the life of  
the bachelor ends.

Ah, Goddess! child, spinster, or widow—as of old on Mars  
Hill when they raised  
To the God that they knew not an altar—so I, a young  
Pagan, have praised

<sup>1</sup> Polo-pony.

<sup>2</sup> Whisky and Soda.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The Goddess I know not nor worship; yet, if half that men  
tell me be true,  
You will come in the future, and therefore these verses are  
written to you.

### THE RUPAIYAT OF OMAR KAL'VIN

*[Allowing for the difference 'twixt prose and rhymed exaggeration, this ought to reproduce the sense of what Sir Auckland (Colvin) told the nation some time ago, when the Government struck from our incomes two per cent.]*

Now the New Year reviving last Year's Debt,  
The Thoughtful Fisher casteth wide his Net;  
So I with begging Dish and ready Tongue  
Assail all Men for all that I can get.

Imports indeed are gone with all their Dues—  
Lo! Salt a Lever that I dare not use,  
Nor may I ask the Tillers in Bengal—  
Surely my Kith and Kin will not refuse

Pay—and I promise by the Dust of Spring,  
Retrenchment. If my promises can bring  
Comfort, Ye have Them now a thousand-fold—  
By Allah! I will promise *Anything*!

Indeed, indeed, Retrenchment oft before  
I swore—but did I mean it when I swore?  
And then, and then, We wandered to the Hills,  
And so the Little Less became Much More.

Whether at Boileaugunge or Babylon,  
I know not how the wretched Thing is done,  
The Items of Receipt grow surely small;  
The Items of Expense mount one by one.

I cannot help it. What have I to do  
With One and Five, or Four, or Three, or Two?  
Let Scribes spit Blood and Sulphur as they please,  
Or Statesmen call me foolish—Heed not you.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Behold, I promise—Anything You will.  
Behold, I greet you with an empty Till—  
Ah! Fellow-Sinners, of your Charity  
Seek not the Reason of the Dearth but fill.

For if I sinned and fell, where lies the Gain  
Of Knowledge? Would it ease you of your Pain  
To know the tangled Threads of Revenue,  
I ravel deeper in a hopeless Skein?

"Who hath not Prudence"—what was it I said,  
Of Her who paints Her Eyes and tires Her Head,  
And jibes and mocks the People in the Street,  
And fawns upon them for Her thriftless Bread?

Accursèd is She of Eve's daughters—She  
Hath cast off Prudence, and Her End shall be  
Destruction. . . . Brethren, of your Bounty grant  
Some portion of your daily Bread to *Me!*

### PAGETT, M.P.

*The toad beneath the harrow knows  
Exactly where each tooth-point goes;  
The butterfly upon the road  
Preaches contentment to that toad.*

PAGETT, M.P., was a liar, and a fluent liar therewith,—  
He spoke of the heat of India as "The Asian Solar  
Myth";  
Came on a four months' visit, to "study the East" in No-  
vember,  
And I got him to make an agreement vowing to stay till  
September.

March came in with the *koil*.<sup>1</sup> Pagett was cool and gay,  
Called me a "bloated Brahmin," talked of my "princely  
pay."  
March went out with the roses. "Where is your heat?"  
said he.  
"Coming," said I to Pagett. "Skittles!" said Pagett, M.P.

<sup>1</sup> The Indian bell-bird.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

April began with the punkah, coolies, and prickly-heat,—  
Pagett was dear to mosquitoes, sandflies found him a treat.  
He grew speckled and lumpy—hammered, I grieve to say,  
Aryan brothers who fanned him, in an illiberal way.

May set in with a dust-storm,—Pagett went down with the  
sun.

All the delights of the season tickled him one by one.  
*Imprimis*—ten days' "liver"—due to his drinking beer;  
Later, a dose of fever—slight, but he called it severe.

Dysent'ry touched him in June, after the *Chota Bursat*<sup>1</sup>—  
Lowered his portly person—made him yearn to depart.  
He didn't call me a "Brahmin," or "bloated," or "over-  
paid,"

But seemed to think it a wonder that any one ever stayed.

July was a trifle unhealthy,—Pagett was ill with fear,  
Called it the "Cholera Morbus," hinted that life was dear.  
He babbled of "Eastern exile," and mentioned his home with  
tears;

But I hadn't seen *my* children for close upon seven years.

We reached a hundred and twenty once in the Court at noon,  
[I've mentioned Pagett was portly] Pagett went off in a  
swoon.

That was an end to the business. Pagett, the perjured, fled  
With a practical, working knowledge of "Solar Myths" in  
his head.

And I laughed as I drove from the station, but the mirth died  
out on my lips

As I thought of the fools like Pagett who write of their  
"Eastern trips,"

And the sneers of the travelled idiots who duly misgovern  
the land,

And I prayed to the Lord to deliver another one into my hand.

<sup>1</sup> The early rains.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

LA NUIT BLANCHE

*A much-discerning Public hold  
The Singer generally sings  
Of personal and private things,  
And prints and sells his past for gold.*

*Whatever I may here disclaim,  
The very clever folk I sing to  
Will most indubitably cling to  
Their pet delusion, just the same.*

I HAD seen, as dawn was breaking  
And I staggered to my rest,  
Tara Devi softly shaking  
From the Cart Road to the crest.  
I had seen the spurs of Jakko  
Heave and quiver, swell and sink.  
Was it Earthquake or tobacco,  
Day of Doom or Night of Drink?

In the full, fresh fragrant morning  
I observed a camel crawl,  
Laws of gravitation scorning,  
On the ceiling and the wall.  
Then I watched a fender walking,  
And I heard grey leeches sing,  
And a red-hot monkey talking  
Did not seem the proper thing.

Then a Creature, skinned and crimson,  
Ran about the floor and cried,  
And they said I had the "jims" on,  
And they dosed me with bromide,  
And they locked me in my bedroom—  
Me and one wee Blood-Red Mouse—  
Though I said:—"To give my head room  
"You had best unroof the house."

But my words were all unheeded,  
Though I told the grave M.D.  
That the treatment really needed  
Was a dip in open sea

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

That was lapping just below me,  
Smooth as silver, white as snow—  
And it took three men to throw me  
When I found I could not go.

Half the night I watched the Heavens  
Fizz like '81 champagne—  
Fly to sixes and to sevens,  
Wheel and thunder back again;  
And when all was peace and order  
Save one planet nailed askew,  
Much I wept because my warder  
Would not let me set it true.

After frenzied hours of waiting,  
When the Earth and Skies were dumb,  
Pealed an awful voice dictating  
An interminable sum,  
Changing to a tangled story—  
“What she said you said I said—”  
Till the Moon arose in glory,  
And I found her . . . in my head;

Then a Face came, blind and weeping,  
And It couldn't wipe Its eyes,  
And It muttered I was keeping  
Back the moonlight from the skies;  
So I patted It for pity,  
But It whistled shrill with wrath,  
And a huge, black Devil City  
Poured its peoples on my path.

So I fled with steps uncertain  
On a thousand-year-long race,  
But the bellying of the curtain  
Kept me always in one place,  
While the tumult rose and maddened  
To the roar of Earth on fire,  
Ere it ebbed and sank and saddened  
To a whisper tense as wire.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

In intolerable stillness  
Rose one little, little star,  
And it chuckled at my illness,  
And it mocked me from afar;  
And its brethren came and eyed me,  
Called the Universe to aid,  
Till I lay, with naught to hide me,  
'Neath the Scorn of All Things Made.

Dun and saffron, robed and splendid  
Broke the solemn, pitying Day,  
And I knew my pains were ended,  
And I turned and tried to pray;  
But my speech was shattered wholly,  
And I wept as children weep,  
Till the dawn-wind, softly, slowly,  
Brought to burning eyelids sleep.

### THE LOVERS' LITANY

EYES of grey—a sodden quay,  
Driving rain and falling tears,  
As the steamer puts to sea  
In a parting storm of cheers.  
Sing, for Faith and Hope are high—  
None so true as you and I—  
Sing the Lovers' Litany:—  
“*Love like ours can never die!*”

Eyes of black—a throbbing keel,  
Milky foam to left and right;  
Whispered converse near the wheel  
In the brilliant tropic night.  
Cross that rules the Southern Sky!  
Stars that sweep, and turn, and fly  
Hear the Lovers' Litany:—  
“*Love like ours can never die!*”

Eyes of brown—a dusty plain  
Split and parched with heat of June.  
Flying hoof and tightened rein,  
Hearts that beat the ancient tune.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Side by side the horses fly,  
Frame we now the old reply  
Of the Lovers' Litany:—  
*"Love like ours can never die!"*

Eyes of blue—the Simla Hills  
Silvered with the moonlight hoar;  
Pleading of the waltz that thrills,  
Dies and echoes round Benmore.  
*"Mabel," "Officers," "Good-bye,"*  
Glamour, wine, and witchery—  
On my soul's sincerity,  
*"Love like ours can never die!"*

Maidens, of your charity,  
Pity my most luckless state.  
Four times Cupid's debtor I—  
Bankrupt in quadruplicate.  
Yet, despite my evil case,  
An a maiden showed me grace,  
Four-and-forty times would I  
Sing the Lovers' Litany:—  
*"Love like ours can never die!"*

### A BALLADE OF BURIAL

*"Saint Praxed's ever was the Church for peace."*

**I**F DOWN here I chance to die,  
Solemnly I beg you take  
All that is left of "I"  
To the Hills for old sake's sake.  
Pack me very thoroughly  
In the ice that used to slake  
Pegs I drank when I was dry—  
This observe for old sake's sake.

To the railway station hie,  
There a single ticket take  
For Umballa—goods-train—I  
Shall not mind delay or shake.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I shall rest contentedly  
Spite of clamour coolies make;  
Thus in state and dignity  
Send me up for old sake's sake.

Next the sleepy Babu wake,  
Book a Kalka van "for four."  
Few, I think, will care to make  
Journeys with me any more  
As they used to do of yore.  
I shall need a "special brake"—  
"Thing I never took before—  
Get me one for old sake's sake.

After that—arrangements make.  
No hotel will take me in,  
And a bullock's back would break  
'Neath the teak and leaden skin.  
Tonga-ropes are frail and thin,  
Or, did I a back-seat take,  
In a tonga I might spin,—  
Do your best for old sake's sake.

After that—your work is done.  
Recollect a Padre must  
Mourn the dear departed one—  
Throw the ashes and the dust.  
Don't go down at once. I trust  
You will find excuse to "snake  
Three days' casual on the bust,"<sup>1</sup>—  
Get your fun for old sake's sake.

I could never stand the Plains.  
Think of blazing June and May,  
Think of those September rains  
Yearly till the Judgment Day!  
I should never rest in peace,  
I should sweat and lie awake.  
Rail me then, on my decease,  
To the Hills for old sake's sake!

<sup>1</sup> Three days' leave.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### THE OVERLAND MAIL

*(Foot-service to the Hills)*

IN THE Name of the Empress of India, make way,  
O Lords of the Jungle, wherever you roam,  
The woods are astir at the close of the day—  
We exiles are waiting for letters from Home.  
Let the robber retreat—let the tiger turn tail—  
In the Name of the Empress, the Overland Mail!

With a jingle of bells as the dusk gathers in,  
He turns to the footpath that heads up the hill—  
The bags on his back and a cloth round his chin,  
And, tucked in his waistbelt, the Post Office bill:—  
“Despatched on this date, as received by the rail,  
“*Per* runner, two bags of the Overland Mail.”

Is the torrent in spate? He must ford it or swim.  
Has the rain wrecked the road? He must climb by the  
cliff.

Does the tempest cry halt? What are tempests to him?  
The service admits not a “but” or an “if.”  
While the breath’s in his mouth, he must bear without fail,  
In the Name of the Empress, the Overland Mail.

From aloe to rose-oak, from rose-oak to fir,  
From level to upland, from upland to crest,  
From rice-field to rock-ridge, from rock-ridge to spur,  
Fly the soft-sandalled feet, strains the brawny, brown  
chest.  
From rail to ravine—to the peak from the vale—  
Up, up through the night goes the Overland Mail.

There’s a speck on the hillside, a dot on the road—  
A jingle of bells on the footpath below—  
There’s a scuffle above in the monkey’s abode—  
The world is awake and the clouds are aglow.  
For the great Sun himself must attend to the hail:—  
“In the Name of the Empress, the Overland Mail!”



DIVIDED DESTINIES

IT WAS an artless *Bandar*<sup>1</sup> and he danced upon a pine,  
 And much I wondered how he lived, and where the beast  
 might dine,  
 And many many other things, till, o'er my morning smoke,  
 I slept the sleep of idleness and dreamt that *Bandar* spoke.

He said:—"O man of many clothes! Sad crawler on the  
 Hills!

"Observe, I know not Ranken's shop, nor Ranken's monthly  
 bills!

"I take no heed to trousers or the coats that you call dress;  
 "Nor am I plagued with little cards for little drinks at Mess.

"I steal the bunnia's grain at morn, at noon and eventide  
 "(For he is fat and I am spare), I roam the mountain-side.  
 "I follow no man's carriage, and no, never in my life  
 "Have I flirted at Peliti's with another *Bandar's* wife.

"O man of futile fopperies—unnecessary wraps;  
 "I own no ponies in the hills, I drive no tallwheeled traps.  
 "I buy me not twelve-button gloves, 'short-sixes' eke, or  
 rings,  
 "Nor do I waste at Hamilton's my wealth on 'pretty  
 things.'

"I quarrel with my wife at home, we never fight abroad;  
 "But Mrs. B. has grasped the fact I *am* her only lord.  
 "I never heard of fever—dumps nor debts depress my  
 soul;  
 "And I pity and despise you!" Here he pouched my break-  
 fast-roll.

His hide was very mangy and his face was very red,  
 And ever and anon he scratched with energy his head.  
 His manners were not always nice, but how my spirit cried  
 To be an artless *Bandar* loose upon the mountain-side!

<sup>1</sup> Monkey.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

So I answered:—"Gentle *Bandar*, an inscrutable Decree  
"Makes thee a gleesome fleasome Thou, and me a wretched  
Me.  
"Go! Depart in peace, my brother, to thy home amid the  
pine;  
"Yet forget not once a mortal wished to change his lot with  
thine."

### THE MASQUE OF PLENTY

ARGUMENT.—*The Indian Government being minded to discover the economic condition of their land, sent a Committee to inquire into it; and saw that it was good.*

SCENE.—*The wooded heights of Simla. The Incarnation of the Government of India in the raiment of the Angel of Plenty sings, to pianoforte accompaniment:—*

"HOW sweet is the shepherd's sweet life!  
From the dawn to the even he strays—  
He shall follow his sheep all the day  
And his tongue shall be filled with praise.  
(*adagio dim.*) Filled with praise!"

(*largo con sp.*) Now this is the position,  
Go make an inquisition  
Into their real condition  
As swiftly as ye may.  
(*p*) Ay, paint our swarthy billions  
The richest of vermilions  
Ere two well-led cotillions  
Have danced themselves away.

TURKISH PATROL, *as able and intelligent Investigators wind down the Himalayas:—*

What is the state of the Nation? What is its occupation?  
Hi! get along, get along, get along—lend us the information!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

(*dim.*) Census the *byle*<sup>1</sup> and the *yabu*—capture a first-class Babu,

Set him to file Gazetteers—Gazetteers . . .

(*ff*) What is the state of the Nation, etc., etc.

INTERLUDE, *from Nowhere in Particular, to stringed and Oriental instruments.*

Our cattle reel beneath the yoke they bear—  
The earth is iron and the skies are brass—  
And faint with fervour of the flaming air  
The languid hours pass.

The well is dry beneath the village tree—  
The young wheat withers ere it reach a span,  
And belts of blinding sand show cruelly  
Where once the river ran.

Pray, brothers, pray, but to no earthly King—  
Lift up your hands above the blighted grain,  
Look westward—if they please, the Gods shall bring  
Their mercy with the rain.

Look westward—bears the blue no brown cloud-bank?  
Nay, it is written—wherefore should we fly?  
On our own field and by our cattle's flank  
Lie down, lie down to die!

### SEMI-CHORUS

By the plumèd heads of Kings  
    Waving high,  
Where the tall corn springs  
    O'er the dead.  
If they rust or rot we die,  
If they ripen we are fed.  
Very mighty is the power of our Kings!

*Triumphal return to Simla of the Investigators, attired after the manner of Dionysus, leading a pet tiger-cub in wreaths of rhubarb-leaves, symbolical of India under medical treatment. They sing:—*

<sup>1</sup> The ox and the pony.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

We have seen, we have written—behold it, the proof of our  
manifold toil!  
In their hosts they assembled and told it—the tale of the  
Sons of the Soil.  
We have said of the Sickness—"Where is it?"—and of Death  
—"It is far from our ken,"—  
We have paid a particular visit to the affluent children of men.  
We have trodden the mart and the well-curb—we have  
stooped to the bield and the byre;  
And the King may the forces of Hell curb, for the People  
have all they desire!

### *Castanets and step-dance:—*

Oh, the *dom*<sup>1</sup> and the *mag* and the *thakur* and the *thag*,  
And the *nat* and the *brinjaree*,  
And the *bunnia* and the *ryot* are as happy and as quiet  
And as plump as they can be!  
Yes, the *jain* and the *jat* in his stucco-fronted hut,  
And the bounding *bazugar*,  
By the favour of the King, are as fat as anything,  
They are—they are—they are!

### RECITATIVE, *Government of India, with white satin wings and electro-plated harp:—*

How beautiful upon the Mountains—in peace reclining,  
Thus to be assured that our people are unanimously dining.  
And though there are places not so blessed as others in natural  
advantages, which, after all, was only to be expected,  
Proud and glad are we to congratulate you upon the work  
you have thus ably effected.  
(*Cres.*) How be-ewtiful upon the Mountains!

### HIREBAND, *brasses only, full chorus:—*

God bless the Squire  
And all his rich relations  
Who teach us poor people  
We eat our proper rations—

<sup>1</sup> A list of various Indian tribes and castes.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

We eat our proper rations,  
In spite of inundations,  
Malarial exhalations,  
And casual starvations,  
We have, we have, they say we have—  
We *have* our proper rations!

### CHORUS OF THE CRYSTALLISED FACTS

Before the beginning of years  
There came to the rule of the State  
Men with a pair of shears,  
Men with an Estimate—  
Strachey with Muir for leaven,  
Lytton with locks that fell,  
Ripon fooling with Heaven,  
And Temple riding like H—ll!  
And the bigots took in hand  
Cess and the falling of rain,  
And the measure of sifted sand  
The dealer puts in the grain—  
Imports by land and sea,  
To uttermost decimal worth,  
And registration—free—  
In the houses of death and of birth.  
And fashioned with pens and paper,  
And fashioned in black and white,  
With Life for a flickering taper  
And Death for a blazing light—  
With the Armed and the Civil Power,  
That his strength might endure for a span—  
From Adam's Bridge to Peshawur,  
The Much Administered Man.

In the towns of the North and the East,  
They gathered as unto rule,  
They bade him starve his priest  
And send his children to school.  
Railways and roads they wrought,  
For the needs of the soil within;  
A time to squabble in court,  
A time to bear and to grin.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And gave him peace in his ways,  
Jails—and Police to fight,  
Justice—at length of days,  
And Right—and Might in the Right.  
His speech is of mortgaged bedding,  
On his kine he borrows yet,  
At his heart is his daughter's wedding,  
In his eye foreknowledge of debt.  
He eats and hath indigestion,  
He toils and he may not stop;  
His life is a long-drawn question  
Between a crop and a crop.

### THE MARE'S NEST

JANE AUSTEN BEECHER STOWE DE ROUSE  
Was good beyond all earthly need;  
But, on the other hand, her spouse  
Was very, very bad indeed.  
He smoked cigars, called churches slow,  
And raced—but this she did not know.

For Belial Machiavelli kept  
The little fact a secret, and,  
Though o'er his minor sins she wept,  
Jane Austen did not understand  
That Lilly—thirteen-two and bay—  
Absorbed one-half her husband's pay.

She was so good she made him worse  
(Some women are like this, I think);  
He taught her parrot how to curse,  
Her Assam monkey how to drink.  
He vexed her righteous soul until  
She went up, and he went down hill.

Then came the crisis, strange to say,  
Which turned a good wife to a better.  
A telegraphic peon, one day,  
Brought her—now, had it been a letter  
For Belial Machiavelli, I  
Know Jane would just have let it lie—

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

But 'twas a telegram instead,  
Marked "urgent," and her duty plain  
To open it. Jane Austen read:—  
"Your Lilly's got a cough again.  
"Can't understand why she is kept  
"At your expense." Jane Austen wept.

It was a misdirected wire,  
Her husband was at Shaitanpore.  
She spread her anger, hot as fire,  
Through six thin foreign sheets or more;  
Sent off that letter, wrote another  
To her solicitor—and mother.

Then Belial Machiavelli saw  
Her error and, I trust, his own,  
Wired to the minion of the Law,  
And travelled wifeward—not alone.  
For Lilly—thirteen-two and bay—  
Came in a horse-box all the way.

There was a scene—a weep or two—  
With many kisses. Austen Jane  
Rode Lilly all the season through,  
And never opened wires again.  
She races now with Belial . . . This  
Is very sad, but so it is.

## THE BALLAD OF FISHER'S BOARDING-HOUSE

*That night, when through the mooring-chains  
The wide-eyed corpse rolled free,  
To blunder down by Garden Reach  
And rot at Kedgerree,  
The tale the Hughli told the shoal  
The lean shoal told to me.*

'T WAS Fultah Fisher's boarding-house,  
Where sailor-men reside,  
And there were men of all the ports  
From Mississip to Clyde,  
And regally they spat and smoked,  
And fearsomely they lied.

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

They lied about the purple Sea  
That gave them scanty bread,  
They lied about the Earth beneath,  
The Heavens overhead,  
For they had looked too often on  
Black rum when that was red.

They told their tales of wreck and wrong,  
Of shame and lust and fraud,  
They backed their toughest statements with  
The Brimstone of the Lord,  
And crackling oaths went to and fro  
Across the fist-banged board.

And there was Hans the blue-eyed Dane,  
Bull-throated, bare of arm,  
Who carried on his hairy chest  
The maid Ultruda's charm—  
The little silver crucifix  
That keeps a man from harm.

And there was Jake Without-the-Ears,  
And Pamba the Malay,  
And Carboy Gin the Guinea cook,  
And Luz from Vigo Bay,  
And Honest Jack who sold them slops  
And harvested their pay.

And there was Salem Hardieker,  
A lean Bostonian he—  
Russ, German, English, Halfbreed, Finn,  
Yank, Dane, and Portugee,  
At Fultah Fisher's boarding-house  
They rested from the sea.

Now Anne of Austria shared their drinks,  
Collinga knew her fame,  
From Tarnau in Galicia  
To Jaun Bazar she came,  
To eat the bread of infamy  
And take the wage of shame.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

She held a dozen men to heel—  
Rich spoil of war was hers,  
In hose and gown and ring and chain,  
From twenty mariners,  
And, by Port Law, that week, men called  
Her Salem Hardieker's.

But seamen learnt—what landsmen know—  
That neither gifts nor gain  
Can hold a winking Light o' Love  
Or Fancy's flight restrain,  
When Anne of Austria rolled her eyes  
On Hans the blue-eyed Dane.

Since Life is strife, and strife means knife,  
From Howrah to the Bay,  
And he may die before the dawn  
Who liquored out the day,  
In Fultah Fisher's boarding-house  
We woo while yet we may.

But cold was Hans the blue-eyed Dane,  
Bull-throated, bare of arm,  
And laughter shook the chest beneath  
The maid Ultruda's charm—  
The little silver crucifix  
That keeps a man from harm.

"You speak to Salem Hardieker;  
"You was his girl, I know.  
"I ship mineselfs to-morrow, see,  
"Und round the Skaw we go,  
"South, down the Cattegat, by Hjelm,  
"To Besser in Saro."

When love rejected turns to hate,  
All ill betide the man.  
"You speak to Salem Hardieker"—  
She spoke as woman can.  
A scream—a sob—"He called me—names!"  
And then the fray began.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

An oath from Salem Hardieker,  
A shriek upon the stairs,  
A dance of shadows on the wall,  
A knife-thrust unawares—  
And Hans came down, as cattle drop,  
Across the broken chairs.

In Anne of Austria's trembling hands  
The weary head fell low:—  
"I ship mineselfs to-morrow, straight  
"For Besser in Saro;  
"Und there Ultruda comes to me  
"At Easter, und I go

"South, down the Cattegat.—What's here?  
"There—are—no—lights—to—guide!"  
The mutter ceased, the spirit passed.  
And Anne of Austria cried  
In Fultah Fisher's boarding-house  
When Hans the mighty died.

Thus slew they Hans the blue-eyed Dane,  
Bull-throated, bare of arm,  
But Anne of Austria looted first  
The maid Ultruda's charm—  
The little silver crucifix  
That keeps a man from harm.

## POSSIBILITIES

AY, LAY him 'neath the Simla pine—  
A fortnight fully to be missed,  
Behold, we lose our fourth at whist,  
A chair is vacant where we dine.

His place forgets him; other men  
Have bought his ponies, guns, and traps.  
His fortune is the Great Perhaps  
And that cool rest-house down the glen,

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Whence he shall hear, as spirits may,  
Our mundane revel on the height,  
Shall watch each flashing 'rickshaw-light  
Sweep on to dinner, dance, and play.

Benmore shall woo him to the ball  
With lighted rooms and braying band;  
And he shall hear and understand  
“*Dream Faces*” better than us all.

For, think you, as the vapours flee  
Across Sanjaolie after rain,  
His soul may climb the hill again  
To each old field of victory.

Unseen, whom women held so dear,  
The strong man's yearning to his kind  
Shall shake at most the window-blind,  
Or dull awhile the card-room's cheer.

In his own place of power unknown,  
His Light o' Love another's flame,  
His dearest pony galloped lame,  
And he an alien and alone!

Yet may he meet with many a friend—  
Shrewd shadows, lingering long unseen  
Among us when “*God save the Queen*”  
Shows even “extras” have an end.

And, when we leave the heated room,  
And, when at four the lights expire,  
The crew shall gather round the fire  
And mock our laughter in the gloom;

Talk as we talked, and they ere death—  
Flirt wanly, dance in ghostly wise,  
With ghosts of tunes for melodies,  
And vanish at the morning's breath!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### ARITHMETIC ON THE FRONTIER

A GREAT and glorious thing it is  
To learn, for seven years or so,  
The Lord knows what of that and this,  
Ere reckoned fit to face the foe—  
The flying bullet down the Pass,  
That whistles clear: "All flesh is grass."

Three hundred pounds per annum spent  
On making brain and body meeter  
For all the murderous intent  
Comprised in "villainous saltpetre"!   
And after?—Ask the Yusufzaies  
What comes of all our 'ologies.

A scrimmage in a Border Station—  
A canter down some dark defile—  
Two thousand pounds of education  
Drops to a ten-rupee jezail—  
The Crammer's boast, the Squadron's pride,  
Shot like a rabbit in a ride!

No proposition Euclid wrote  
No formulæ the text-books know,  
Will turn the bullet from your coat,  
Or ward the tulwar's downward blow.  
Strike hard who cares—shoot straight who can—  
The odds are on the cheaper man.

One sword-knot stolen from the camp  
Will pay for all the school expenses  
Of any Kurrum Valley scamp  
Who knows no word of moods and tenses,  
But, being blessed with perfect sight,  
Picks off our messmates left and right.

With home-bred hordes the hillsides teem.  
The troopships bring us one by one,  
At vast expense of time and steam,  
To slay Afridis where they run.  
The "captives of our bow and spear"  
Are cheap, alas! as we are dear.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

THE SONG OF THE WOMEN

*(Lady Dufferin's Fund for medical aid to the Women of India)*

How shall she know the worship we would do her?  
The walls are high and she is very far.  
How shall the women's message reach unto her  
Above the tumult of the packed bazar?  
Free wind of March, against the lattice blowing,  
Bear thou our thanks lest she depart unknowing.

Go forth across the fields we may not roam in,  
Go forth beyond the trees that rim the city  
To whatsoever fair place she hath her home in,  
Who dowered us with wealth of love and pity.  
Out of our shadow pass and seek her singing —  
"I have no gifts but Love alone for bringing."

Say that we be a feeble folk who greet her,  
But old in grief, and very wise in tears:  
Say that we, being desolate, entreat her  
That she forget us not in after-years;  
For we have seen the light and it were grievous  
To dim that dawning if our Lady leave us.

By Life that ebb'd with none to staunch the failing,  
By Love's sad harvest garnered ere the spring,  
When Love in Ignorance wept unavailing  
O'er young buds dead before their blossoming;  
By all the grey owl watched, the pale moon viewed,  
In past grim years declare our gratitude!

By hands uplifted to the Gods that heard not,  
By gifts that found no favour in their sight,  
By faces bent above the babe that stirred not,  
By nameless horrors of the stifling night;  
By ills fordone, by peace her toils discover,  
Bid Earth be good beneath and Heaven above her!

If she have sent her servants in our pain,  
If she have fought with Death and dulled his sword;

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

If she have given back our sick again,  
And to the breast the weakling lips restored,  
Is it a little thing that she has wrought?  
Then Life and Death and Motherhood be nought.

Go forth, O Wind, our message on thy wings,  
And they shall hear thee pass and bid thee speed,  
In reed-roofed hut, or white-walled home of kings,  
Who have been holpen by her in their need.  
All spring shall give thee fragrance, and the wheat  
Shall be a tasselled floorcloth to thy feet.

Haste, for our hearts are with thee, take no rest!  
Loud-voiced ambassador, from sea to sea  
Proclaim the blessing, manifold, confest,  
Of those in darkness by her hand set free,  
Then very softly to her presence move,  
And whisper: "Lady, lo, they know and love!"

## THE BETROTHED

*"You must choose between me and your cigar."*—Breach of Promise Case,  
circa 1885.

OPEN the old cigar-box, get me a Cuba stout,  
For things are running crossways, and Maggie and I  
are out.

We quarrelled about Havanas—we fought o'er a good  
cheroot,  
And I know she is exacting, and she says I am a brute.

Open the old cigar-box—let me consider a space;  
In the soft blue veil of the vapour musing on Maggie's  
face.

Maggie is pretty to look at—Maggie's a loving lass,  
But the prettiest cheeks must wrinkle, the truest of loves  
must pass.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There's peace in a Larranaga, there's calm in a Henry Clay;  
But the best cigar in an hour is finished and thrown away—

Thrown away for another as perfect and ripe and brown—  
But I could not throw away Maggie for fear o' the talk o' the town!

Maggie, my wife at fifty—grey and dour and old—  
With never another Maggie to purchase for love or gold!

And the light of Days that have Been the dark of the Days  
that Are,  
And Love's torch stinking and stale, like the butt of a dead  
cigar—

The butt of a dead cigar you are bound to keep in your  
pocket—  
With never a new one to light tho' it's charred and black to  
the socket!

Open the old cigar-box—let me consider a while.  
Here is a mild Manila—there is a wifely smile.

Which is the better portion—bondage bought with a ring,  
Or a harem of dusky beauties, fifty tied in a string?

Counsellors cunning and silent—comforters true and tried,  
And never a one of the fifty to sneer at a rival bride?

Thought in the early morning, solace in time of woes,  
Peace in the hush of the twilight, balm ere my eyelids close,

This will the fifty give me, asking nought in return,  
With only a *Suttee's* passion—to do their duty and burn.

This will the fifty give me. When they are spent and dead,  
Five times other fifties shall be my servants instead.

The furrows of far-off Java, the isles of the Spanish Main,  
When they hear my harem is empty will send me my brides  
again.

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

I will take no heed to their raiment, nor food for their mouths  
withal,  
So long as the gulls are nesting, so long as the showers fall.

I will scent 'em with best vanilla, with tea will I temper their  
hides,  
And the Moor and the Mormon shall envy who read of the  
tale of my brides.

For Maggie has written a letter to give me my choice between  
The wee little whimpering Love and the great god Nick o'  
Teen.

And I have been servant of Love for barely a twelvemonth  
clear,  
But I have been Priest of Cabanas a matter of seven year;

And the gloom of my bachelor days is flecked with the cheery  
light  
Of stumps that I burned to Friendship and Pleasure and  
Work and Fight.

And I turn my eyes to the future that Maggie and I must  
prove,  
But the only light on the marshes is the Will-o'-the-Wisp of  
Love.

Will it see me safe through my journey or leave me bogged  
in the mire?  
Since a puff of tobacco can cloud it, shall I follow the fitful  
fire?

Open the old cigar-box—let me consider anew—  
Old friends, and who is Maggie that I should abandon *you*?

A million surplus Maggies are willing to bear the yoke;  
And a woman is only a woman, but a good Cigar is a Smoke.

Light me another Cuba—I hold to my first-sworn vows.  
If Maggie will have no rival, I'll have no Maggie for Spouse!



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### A BALLADE OF JAKKO HILL

ONE moment bid the horses wait,  
Since tiffin is not laid till three,  
Below the upward path and strait  
You climbed a year ago with me.  
Love came upon us suddenly  
And loosed—an idle hour to kill—  
A headless, harmless armoury  
That smote us both on Jakko Hill.

Ah, Heaven! we would wait and wait  
Through Time and to Eternity!  
Ah, Heaven! we would conquer Fate  
With more than Godlike constancy!  
I cut the date upon a tree—  
Here stand the clumsy figures still:—  
“10-7-85, A.D.”  
Damp in the mists on Jakko Hill.

What came of high resolve and great,  
And until Death fidelity?  
Whose horse is waiting at your gate?  
Whose *'rickshaw*-wheels ride over me?  
No Saint's, I swear; and—let me see  
To-night what names your programme fill.  
We drift asunder merrily,  
As drifts the mist on Jakko Hill!

### L'ENVOI

Princess, behold our ancient state  
Has clean departed; and we see  
'Twas Idleness we took for Fate  
That bound light bonds on you and me.  
Amen! Here ends the comedy  
Where it began in all good will,  
Since Love and Leave together flee  
As driven mist on Jakko Hill!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE PLEA OF THE SIMLA DANCERS

*Too late, alas! the song  
To remedy the wrong—  
The rooms are taken from us, swept and garnished for their fate,  
But these tear-besprinkled pages  
Shall attest to future ages  
That we cried against the crime of it—too late, alas! too late!*

“**W**HAT have *we* ever done to bear this grudge?”  
Was there no room save only in Benmore  
For docket, *duftar*,<sup>1</sup> and for office-drudge,  
That you usurp our smoothest dancing floor?  
Must Babus do their work on polished teak?  
Are ballrooms fittest for the ink you spill?  
Was there no other cheaper house to seek?  
You might have left them all at Strawberry Hill.

We never harmed you! Innocent our guise,  
Dainty our shining feet, our voices low;  
And we revolved to divers melodies,  
And we were happy but a year ago.  
To-night, the moon that watched our lightsome wiles—  
That beamed upon us through the deodars—  
Is wan with gazing on official files,  
And desecrating desks disgust the stars.

Nay! by the memory of tuneful nights—  
Nay! by the witchery of flying feet—  
Nay! by the glamour of foredone delights—  
By all things merry, musical, and meet—  
By wine that sparkled, and by sparkling eyes—  
By wailing waltz—by reckless galop's strain—  
By dim verandahs and by soft replies.  
Give us our ravished ballroom back again!

Or—hearken to the curse we lay on you!  
The ghosts of waltzes shall perplex your brain,  
And murmurs of past merriment pursue  
Your 'wildered clerks that they indite in vain;

<sup>1</sup> Office.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And when you count your poor Provincial millions,  
The only figures that your pen shall frame  
Shall be the figures of dear, dear cotillions  
Danced out in tumult long before you came.

Yea! "*See-Saw*" shall upset your estimates,  
"*Dream Faces*" shall your heavy heads bemuse.  
Because your hand, unheeding, desecrates  
Our temple fit for higher, worthier use.  
And all the long verandahs, eloquent  
With echoes of a score of Simla years,  
Shall plague you with unbidden sentiment—  
Babbling of kisses, laughter, love, and tears.

So shall you mazed amid old memories stand,  
So shall you toil, and shall accomplish nought.  
And ever in your ears a phantom Band  
Shall blare away the staid official thought.  
Wherefore—and ere this awful curse be spoken,  
Cast out your swarthy sacrilegious train,  
And give—ere dancing cease and hearts be broken—  
Give us our ravished ballroom back again!

### "AS THE BELL CLINKS"

AS I LEFT the Halls at Lumley, rose the vision of a comely  
Maid last season worshipped dumbly, watched with  
fervour from afar;  
And I wondered idly, blindly, if the maid would greet me  
kindly.  
That was all—the rest was settled by the clinking tonga-  
bar.<sup>1</sup>  
Yea, my life and hers were coupled by the tonga coupling-  
bar.

For my misty meditation, at the second changing-station,  
Suffered sudden dislocation, fled before the tuneless jar

<sup>1</sup> Bar of the old-fashioned curricule that took men up to Simla before the railroad was made.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Of a Wagner *obbligato, scherzo*, double-hand *staccato*,  
Played on either pony's saddle by the clacking tonga-bar—  
Played with human speech, I fancied, by the jiggling, jolting  
bar.

"She was sweet," thought I, "last season, but 'twere surely  
wild unreason  
"Such a tiny hope to freeze on as was offered by my  
Star,  
"When she whispered, something sadly: 'I—we feel your  
going badly!'"  
"And you let the chance escape you?" rapped the rattling  
tonga-bar.  
"What a chance and what an idiot!" clicked the vicious  
tonga-bar.

Heart of man—O heart of putty! Had I gone by Kaka-  
hutti,  
On the old Hill-road and rutty, I had 'scaped that fatal  
car.  
But his fortune each must bide by, so I watched the mile-  
stones slide by  
To—"You call on Her to-morrow!" fugue with cymbals by  
the bar—  
"You must call on Her to-morrow!"—post-horn galop by  
the bar.

Yet a further stage my goal on—we were whirling down to  
Solon,  
With a double lurch and roll on, best foot foremost, *ganx  
und gar*—  
"She was *very* sweet," I hinted. "If a kiss had been im-  
printed——?"  
"'Would ha' saved a world of trouble!" clashed the busy  
tonga-bar.  
"'Been accepted or rejected!" banged and clanged the tonga-  
bar.

Then a notion wild and daring, 'spite the income-tax's  
paring  
And a hasty thought of sharing—less than many incomes  
are—

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Made me put a question private, (you can guess what I would drive at.)

"*You must work the sum to prove it,*" clanked the careless tonga-bar.

"*Simple Rule of Two will prove it,*" lilted back the tonga-bar.

It was under Khyraghaut I mused:—"Suppose the maid be haughty—

"There are lovers rich—and forty; wait some wealthy Avatar?

"Answer, monitor untiring, 'twixt the ponies twain perspiring!"

"*Faint heart never won fair lady,*" creaked the straining tonga-bar.

"*Can I tell you ere you ask Her?*" pounded slow the tonga-bar.

Last, the Tara Devi turning showed the lights of Simla burning,

Lit my little lazy yearning to a fiercer flame by far.

As below the Mall we jingled, through my very heart it tingled—

Did the iterated order of the threshing tonga-bar:—

"*Try your luck—you can't do better!*" twanged the loosened tonga-bar.

## CHRISTMAS IN INDIA

**D**IM dawn behind the tamarisks—the sky is saffron-yellow—

As the women in the village grind the corn,  
And the parrots seek the river-side, each calling to his fellow

That the Day, the staring Eastern Day, is born.

O the white dust on the highway! O the stench in the byway!

O the clammy fog that hovers over earth!

And at Home they're making merry 'neath the white and scarlet berry—

What part have India's exiles in their mirth?

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Full day behind the tamarisks—the sky is blue and staring—  
As the cattle crawl afield beneath the yoke,  
And they bear One o'er the field-path, who is past all hope or  
caring,  
To the ghat below the curling wreaths of smoke.  
Call on Rama, going slowly, as ye bear a brother lowly—  
Call on Rama—he may hear, perhaps, your voice!  
With our hymn-books and our psalters we appeal to  
other altars,  
And to-day we bid “good Christian men rejoice!”

High noon behind the tamarisks—the sun is hot above us—  
As at Home the Christmas Day is breaking wan.  
They will drink our healths at dinner—those who tell us how  
they love us,  
And forget us till another year be gone!  
O the toil that knows no breaking! O the *Heimweh*,  
ceaseless, aching!  
O the black dividing Sea and alien Plain!  
Youth was cheap—wherefore we sold it. Gold was  
good—we hoped to hold it.  
And to-day we know the fulness of our gain!

Grey dusk behind the tamarisks—the parrots fly together—  
As the Sun is sinking slowly over Home;  
And his last ray seems to mock us shackled in a lifelong  
tether  
That drags us back howe'er so far we roam.  
Hard her service, poor her payment—she in ancient,  
tattered raiment—  
India, she the grim Stepmother of our kind.  
If a year of life be lent her, if her temple's shrine we  
enter,  
The door is shut—we may not look behind.

Black night behind the tamarisks—the owls begin their  
chorus—  
As the conches from the temple scream and bray.  
With the fruitless years behind us and the hopeless years  
before us,  
Let us honour, O my brothers, Christmas Day!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Call a truce, then, to our labours—let us feast with  
friends and neighbours,  
And be merry as the custom of our caste;  
For, if “faint and forced the laughter,” and if sadness  
follow after,  
We are richer by one mocking Christmas past.

### THE GRAVE OF THE HUNDRED HEAD

*T*HERE'S a widow in sleepy Chester  
Who weeps for her only son;  
There's a grave on the Pabeng River,  
A grave that the Burmans shun;  
And there's Subadar Prag Tewarri  
Who tells how the work was done.

A Snider squibbed in the jungle—  
Somebody laughed and fled,  
And the men of the First Shikaris  
Picked up their Subaltern dead,  
With a big blue mark in his forehead  
And the back blown out of his head.

Subadar Prag Tewarri,  
Jemadar Hira Lal,  
Took command of the party,  
Twenty rifles in all,  
Marched them down to the river  
As the day was beginning to fall.

They buried the boy by the river,  
A blanket over his face—  
They wept for their dead Lieutenant,  
The men of an alien race—  
They made a *samadh*<sup>1</sup> in his honour,  
A mark for his resting-place.

For they swore by the Holy Water,  
They swore by the salt they ate,

<sup>1</sup> A memorial.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

That the soul of Lieutenant Eshmitt Sahib  
Should go to his God in state,  
With fifty file of Burmans  
To open him Heaven's Gate.

The men of the First Shikaris  
Marched till the break of day,  
Till they came to the rebel village.  
The village of Pabengmay—  
A *jingal*<sup>1</sup> covered the clearing,  
Calthrops hampered the way.

Subadar Prag Tewarri,  
Bidding them load with ball,  
Halted a dozen rifles  
Under the village wall;  
Sent out a flanking-party  
With Jemadar Hira Lal.

The men of the First Shikaris  
Shouted and smote and slew,  
Turning the grinning *jingal*  
On to the howling crew.  
The Jemadar's flanking-party  
Butchered the folk who flew.

Long was the morn of slaughter,  
Long was the list of slain,  
Five score heads were taken,  
Five score heads and twain;  
And the men of the First Shikaris  
Went back to their grave again,

Each man bearing a basket  
Red as his palms that day,  
Red as the blazing village—  
The village of Pabengmay.  
And the "*drip-drip-drip*" from the baskets  
Reddened the grass by the way.

They made a pile of their trophies  
High as a tall man's chin,

<sup>1</sup> Native cannon.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Head upon head distorted,  
Set in a sightless grin,  
Anger and pain and terror  
Stamped on the smoke-scorched skin.

Subadar Prag Tewarri  
Put the head of the Boh  
On the top of the mound of triumph,  
The head of his son below—  
With the sword and the peacock-banner  
That the world might behold and know.

Thus the *samadh* was perfect,  
Thus was the lesson plain  
Of the wrath of the First Shikaris—  
The price of a white man slain;  
And the men of the First Shikaris  
Went back into camp again.

Then a silence came to the river,  
A hush fell over the shore,  
And Bohs that were brave departed,  
And Sniders squibbed no more;  
For the Burmans said  
That a white man's head  
Must be paid for with heads five-score.

*There's a widow in sleepy Chester  
Who weeps for her only son;  
There's a grave on the Pabeng River,  
A grave that the Burmans shun;  
And there's Subadar Prag Tewarri  
Who tells how the work was done.*

## AN OLD SONG

SO LONG as 'neath the Kalka hills  
The tonga-horn shall ring,  
So long as down the Solon dip  
The hard-held ponies swing,

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

So long as Tara Devi sees  
The lights of Simla town,  
So long as Pleasure calls us up,  
Or Duty drives us down,  
*If you love me as I love you*  
*What pair so happy as we two?*

So long as Aces take the King,  
Or backers take the bet,  
So long as debt leads men to wed,  
Or marriage leads to debt,  
So long as little luncheons, Love,  
And scandal hold their vogue,  
While there is sport at Annandale  
Or whisky at Jutogh,  
*If you love me as I love you*  
*What knife can cut our love in two?*

So long as down the rocking floor  
The raving polka spins,  
So long as Kitchen Lancers spur  
The maddened violins,  
So long as through the whirling smoke  
We hear the oft-told tale—  
“Twelve hundred in the Lotteries,”  
And *Whatshername* for sale,  
*If you love me as I love you*  
*We'll play the game and win it too.*

So long as Lust or Lucre tempt  
Straight riders from the course,  
So long as with each drink we pour  
Black brewage of Remorse,  
So long as those unloaded guns  
We keep beside the bed,  
Blow off, by obvious accident,  
The lucky owner's head,  
*If you love me as I love you*  
*What can Life kill or Death undo?*

So long as Death 'twixt dance and dance  
Chills best and bravest blood,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And drops the reckless rider down  
The rotten, rain-soaked *khud*,  
So long as rumours from the North  
Make loving wives afraid,  
So long as Burma takes the boy  
Or typhoid kills the maid,  
*If you love me as I love you*  
*What knife can cut our love in two?*

By all that lights our daily life  
Or works our lifelong woe,  
From Boileaugunge to Simla Downs  
And those grim glades below,  
Where, heedless of the flying hoof  
And clamour overhead,  
Sleep, with the grey langur for guard,  
Our very scornful Dead,  
*If you love me as I love you*  
*All Earth is servant to us two!*

By Docket, Billetdoux, and File,  
By Mountain, Cliff, and Fir,  
By Fan and Sword and Office-box,  
By Corset, Plume, and Spur  
By Riot, Revel, Waltz, and War,  
By Women, Work, and Bills,  
By all the life that fizzles in  
The everlasting Hills,  
*If you love me as I love you*  
*What pair so happy as we two?*

## CERTAIN MAXIMS OF HAFIZ

### I

IF IT be pleasant to look on, stalled in the packed *serai*,  
Does not the Young Man try Its temper and pace ere he  
buy?  
If She be pleasant to look on, what does the Young Man say?  
“Lo! She is pleasant to look on. Give Her to me to-day!”

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### II

Yea, though a Kafir die, to him is remitted Jehannum  
If he borrowed in life from a native at sixty per cent. per annum.

### III

Blister we not for *bursati*<sup>1</sup>? So when the heart is vext,  
The pain of one maiden's refusal is drowned in the pain of the next.

### IV

The temper of chums, the love of your wife, and a new  
piano's tune—  
Which of the three will you trust at the end of an Indian  
June?

### V

Who are the rulers of Ind—to whom shall we bow the knee?  
Make your peace with the women, and men will make you  
L. G.<sup>2</sup>

### VI

Does the woodpecker flit round the young *ferash*<sup>3</sup>? Does  
the grass clothe a new-built wall?  
Is she under thirty, the woman who holds a boy in her thrall?

### VII

If She grow suddenly gracious—reflect. Is it all for thee?  
The blackbuck is stalked through the bullock, and Man  
through jealousy.

### VIII

Seek not for favour of women. So shall you find it indeed.  
Does not the boar break cover just when you're lighting a  
weed?

### IX

If He play, being young and unskilful, for shekels of silver  
and gold,  
Take His money, my son, praising Allah. The kid was or-  
dained to be sold.

<sup>1</sup> A skin-disease of horses.

<sup>2</sup> Lieutenant-Governor.

<sup>3</sup> Tamarisk.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

X

With a "weed" among men or horses verily this is the best,  
That you work him in office or dog-cart lightly—but give  
him no rest.

XI

Pleasant the snaffle of Courtship, improving the manners  
and carriage;  
But the colt who is wise will abstain from the terrible thorn-  
bit of Marriage.

XII

As the thriftless gold of the *babul*<sup>1</sup> so is the gold that we  
spend  
On a Derby Sweep, or our neighbour's wife, or the horse  
that we buy from a friend.

XIII

The ways of man with a maid be strange, yet simple and  
tame  
To the ways of a man with a horse, when selling or racing  
that same.

XIV

In public Her face turneth to thee, and pleasant Her smile  
when ye meet.  
It is ill. The cold rocks of El-Gidar smile thus on the waves  
at their feet.  
In public Her face is averted; with anger She nameth thy  
name.  
It is well. Was there ever a loser content with the loss of the  
game?

XV

If She have spoken a word, remember thy lips are sealed,  
And the Brand of the Dog is upon him by whom is the secret  
revealed.  
If She have written a letter, delay not an instant but burn it.  
Tear it in pieces, O Fool, and the wind to her mate shall re-  
turn it!  
If there be trouble to Herward, and a lie of the blackest  
can clear,  
Lie, while thy lips can move or a man is alive to hear.

<sup>1</sup> Acacia.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### XVI

My Son, if a maiden deny thee and scufflingly bid thee give  
o'er,  
Yet lip meets with lip at the lastward. Get out! She has  
been there before.  
They are pecked on the ear and the chin and the nose who  
are lacking in lore.

### XVII

If we fall in the race, though we win, the hoof-slide is scarred  
on the course.  
Though Allah and Earth pardon Sin, remaineth for ever  
Remorse.

### XVIII

"By all I am misunderstood!" if the Matron shall say, or  
the Maid:—  
"Alas! I do not understand," my son, be thou nowise  
afraid.  
In vain in the sight of the Bird is the net of the Fowler dis-  
played.

### XIX

My son, if I, Hafiz, thy father, take hold of thy knees in my  
pain,  
Demanding thy name on stamped paper, one day or one  
hour—refrain.  
Are the links of thy fetters so light that thou cravest another  
man's chain?

## THE MOON OF OTHER DAYS

BENEATH the deep verandah's shade,  
When bats begin to fly,  
I sit me down and watch—alas!  
Another evening die.  
Blood-red behind the sere *ferash*  
She rises through the haze.  
Sainted Diana! can that be  
The Moon of Other Days?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Ah! shade of little Kitty Smith,  
Sweet Saint of Kensington!  
Say, was it ever thus at Home  
The Moon of August shone,  
When arm in arm we wandered long  
Through Putney's evening haze,  
And Hammersmith was Heaven beneath  
The Moon of Other Days?

But Wandle's stream is Sutlej now,  
And Putney's evening haze  
The dust that half a hundred kine  
Before my window raise.  
Unkempt, unclean, athwart the mist  
The seething city looms,  
In place of Putney's golden gorse  
The sickly *vabul* blooms.

Glare down, old Hecate, through the dust,  
And bid the pie-dog yell,  
Draw from the drain its typhoid-germ,  
From each bazar its smell;  
Yea, suck the fever from the tank  
And sap my strength therewith:  
Thank Heaven, you show a smiling face  
To little Kitty Smith!

### THE FALL OF JOCK GILLESPIE

THIS fell when dinner-time was done—  
'Twixt the first an' the second rub—  
That oor mon Jock cam' hame again  
To his rooms ahint the Club.

An' syne he laughed, an' syne he sang,  
An' syne we thocht him fou,  
An' syne he trumped his partner's trick,  
An' garred his partner rue.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Then up and spake an elder mon,

That held the Spade its Ace—

“God save the lad! Whence comes the licht

“That wimples on his face?”

An’ Jock he sniggered, an’ Jock he smiled,

An’ ower the card-brim wunk:—

“I’m a’ too fresh fra’ the stirrup-peg,

“May be that I am drunk.”

“There’s whusky brewed in Galashiels

“An’ L. L. L. forbye;

“But never liquor lit the lowe

“That keeks fra’ oot your eye.

“There’s a thrid o’ hair on your dress-coat breast,

“Aboon the heart a wee?”

“Oh! that is fra’ the lang-haired Skye

“That slobbers ower me.”

“Oh! lang-haired Skyes are lovin’ beasts,

“An’ terrier-dogs are fair,

“But never yet was terrier born,

“Wi’ ell-lang gowden hair!

“There’s a smirch o’ pouter on your breast,

“Below the left lappel?”

“Oh! that is fra’ my auld cigar,

“Whenas the stump-end fell.”

“Mon Jock, ye smoke the Trichi coarse,

“For ye are short o’ cash.

“An’ best Havanas couldna leave

“Sae white an’ pure an ash.

“This nicht ye stopped a story braid,

“An’ stopped it wi’ a curse.

“L-’st nicht ye told that tale yoursel’—

“An’ capped it wi’ a warse!

“Oh! we’re no fou! Oh! we’re no fou!

“But plainly we can ken

“Ye’re fallin’, fallin’ fra’ the band

“O’ cantie single men!”



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

An' it fell when *siris*-shaws were sere,  
An' the nichts were lang and mirk,  
In braw new breeks, wi' a gowden ring,  
Oor Jockie gaed to the Kirk!

### WHAT THE PEOPLE SAID

#### *Queen Victoria's Jubilee*

JUNE 21ST, 1887

BY THE well, where the bullocks go  
Silent and blind and slow—  
By the field, where the young corn dies  
In the face of the sultry skies.  
They have heard, as the dull Earth hears  
The voice of the wind of an hour,  
The sound of the Great Queen's voice:—  
"My God hath given me years,  
"Hath granted dominion and power:  
"And I bid you, O Land, rejoice."

And the Ploughman settles the share  
More deep in the grudging clod;  
For he saith:—"The wheat is my care,  
"And the rest is the will of God.  
"He sent the Mahratta spear  
"As He sendeth the rain,  
"And the *Mlech*,<sup>1</sup> in the fated year,  
"Broke the spear in twain,  
"And was broken in turn. Who knows  
"How our Lords make strife?  
"It is good that the young wheat grows,  
"For the bread is Life."

Then, far and near, as the twilight drew,  
Hissed up to the scornful dark  
Great serpents, blazing, of red and blue,  
That rose and faded, and rose anew,  
That the Land might wonder and mark.

<sup>1</sup> The foreigner.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

"To-day is a day of days," they said,  
"Make merry, O People, all!"  
And the Ploughman listened and bowed his head.  
"To-day and to-morrow God's will," he said,  
As he trimmed the lamps on the wall.

"He sendeth us years that are good,  
"As He sendeth the dearth.  
"He giveth to each man his food,  
"Or Her food to the Earth.  
"Our Kings and our Queens are afar—  
"On their peoples be peace—  
"God bringeth the rain to the Bar,  
"That our cattle increase."

And the Ploughman settled the share  
More deep in the sun-dried clod:—  
"Mogul, Mahratta, and *Mlech* from the North,  
"And White Queen over the Seas—  
"God raiseth them up and driveth them forth  
"As the dust of the ploughshare flies in the breeze;  
"But the wheat and the cattle are all my care,  
"And the rest is the will of God."

## THE UNDERTAKER'S HORSE

*"To-tschin-shu is condemned to death. How can he drink tea with the Executioner?"—JAPANESE PROVERB.*

THE eldest son bestrides him,  
And the pretty daughter rides him,  
And I meet him oft o' mornings on the Course;  
And there kindles in my bosom  
An emotion chill and gruesome  
As I canter past the Undertaker's Horse.

Neither shies he nor is restive,  
But a hideously suggestive  
Trot, professional and placid, he affects;

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And the cadence of his hoof-beats  
To my mind this grim reproof beats:—  
"Mend your pace, my friend. I'm coming. Who's the next?"

Ah! stud-bred of ill-omen,  
I have watched the strongest go—men  
Of pith and might and muscle—at your heels,  
Down the plantain-bordered highway,  
(Heaven send it ne'er be my way!)  
In a lacquered box and jetty upon wheels.

Answer, sombre beast and dreary,  
Where is Brown, the young, the cheery?  
Smith, the pride of all his friends and half the Force?  
You were at that last dread *dāk*<sup>1</sup>  
We must cover at a walk,  
Bring them back to me, O Undertaker's Horse!

With your mane unhogged and flowing,  
And your curious way of going,  
And that businesslike black crimping of your tail,  
E'en with Beauty on your back, Sir,  
Pacing as a lady's hack, Sir,  
What wonder when I meet you I turn pale?

It may be you wait your time, Beast,  
Till I write my last bad rhyme, Beast—  
Quit the sunlight, cut the rhyming, drop the glass—  
Follow after with the others,  
Where some dusky heathen smothers  
Us with marigolds in lieu of English grass.

Or, perchance, in years to follow,  
I shall watch your plump sides hollow,  
See Carnifex (gone lame) become a corse—  
See old age at last o'erpower you,  
And the Station Pack devour you,  
I shall chuckle then, O Undertaker's Horse!

<sup>1</sup> Stage of a journey.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

But to insult, jibe, and quest, I've  
Still the hideously suggestive  
Trot that hammers out the unrelenting text,  
And I hear it hard behind me  
In what place soe'er I find me:—  
“'Sure to catch you soon or later. Who's the next?’”

### ONE VICEROY RESIGNS

LORD DUFFERIN TO LORD LANSDOWNE:—

SO HERE'S your Empire. No more wine, then? Good.  
We'll clear the Aides and *khitmutgars* away.  
(You'll know that fat old fellow with the knife—  
He keeps the Name Book, talks in English, too,  
And almost thinks himself the Government.)  
O Youth, Youth, Youth! Forgive me, you're so young.  
Forty from sixty—twenty years of work  
And power to back the working. *Ay de mi!*  
You want to know, you want to see, to touch  
And, by your lights, to act. It's natural.  
I wonder can I help you? Let me try.  
You saw—what did you see from Bombay east?  
Enough to frighten any one but me?  
Neat that! It frightened Me in Eighty-Four!  
You shouldn't take a man from Canada  
And bid him smoke in powder-magazines;  
Nor with a Reputation such as—Bah!  
That ghost has haunted me for twenty years,  
My Reputation now full-blown. Your fault!  
Yours, with your stories of the strife at Home,  
Who's up, who's down, who leads and who is led—  
One reads so much, one hears so little here.  
Well, now's your turn of exile. I go back  
To Rome and leisure. All roads lead to Rome,  
Or books—the refuge of the destitute.  
When you . . . that brings me back to India. See!  
Start clear. I couldn't. Egypt served my turn.  
You'll never plumb the Oriental mind,  
And if you did, it isn't worth the toil.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Think of a sleek French priest in Canada;  
Divide by twenty half-breeds. Multiply  
By twice the Sphinx's silence. There's your East,  
And you're as wise as ever. So am I.

Accept on trust and work in darkness, strike  
At venture, stumble forward, make your mark,  
(It's chalk on granite) then thank God no flame  
Leaps from the rock to shrivel mark and man.  
I'm clear—my mark is made. Three months of drouth  
Had ruined much. It rained and washed away  
The specks that might have gathered on my Name.  
I took a country twice the size of France,  
And shuttered up one doorway in the North.  
I stand by those. You'll find that both will pay,  
I pledged my Name on both—they're yours to-night.  
Hold to them—they hold fame enough for two.  
I'm old, but I shall live till Burma pays.  
Men there—*not* German traders—Crosthwaite knows—  
You'll find it in my papers. For the North  
Guns always—quietly—but always guns.  
You've seen your Council? Yes, they'll try to rule,  
And prize their Reputations. Have you met  
A grim lay-reader with a taste for coins,  
And faith in Sin most men withhold from God?  
He's gone to England. Ripon knew his grip  
And kicked. A Council always has its Hopes.  
They look for nothing from the West but Death  
Or Bath or Bournemouth. Here's their ground.

They fight

Until the Middle Classes take them back,  
One of ten millions plus a C. S. I.,  
Or drop in harness. Legion of the Lost?  
Not altogether. Earnest, narrow men,  
But chiefly earnest, and they'll do your work,  
And end by writing letters to the *Times*.  
(Shall I write letters, answering Hunter—fawn  
With Ripon on the Yorkshire grocers? Ugh!)  
They have their Reputations. Look to one—  
I work with him—the smallest of them all,  
White-haired, red-faced, who sat the plunging horse  
Out in the garden. He's your right-hand man,  
And dreams of tilting Wolseley from the throne,  
But while he dreams gives work we cannot buy;

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

He has his Reputation—wants the Lords  
 By way of Frontier Roads. Meantime, I think,  
 He values very much the hand that falls  
 Upon his shoulder at the Council table—  
 Hates cats and knows his business. *Which is yours.*  
 Your business! Twice a hundred million souls.  
 Your business! I could tell you what I did  
 Some nights of Eighty-five, at Simla, worth  
 A Kingdom's ransom. When a big ship drives  
 God knows to what new reef, the man at the wheel  
 Prays with the passengers. They lose their lives,  
 Or rescued go their way; but he's no man  
 To take his trick at the wheel again. That's worse  
 Than drowning. Well, a galled Mashobra mule  
 (You'll see Mashobra) passed me on the Mall,  
 And I was—some fool's wife had ducked and bowed  
 To show the others I would stop and speak.  
 Then the mule fell—three galls, a hand-breadth each,  
 Behind the withers. Mrs. Whatsisname  
 Leers at the mule and me by turns, thweet thou!  
 "How could they make him carry such a load!"  
 I saw—it isn't often I dream dreams—  
 More than the mule that minute—smoke and flame  
 From Simla to the haze below. That's weak.  
 You're younger. You'll dream dreams before you've done.  
 You've youth, that's one; good workmen—that means two  
 Fair chances in your favour. Fate's the third.  
 I know what *I* did. Do you ask me, "Preach?"  
 I answer by my past or else go back  
 To platitudes of rule—or take you thus  
 In confidence and say:—"You know the trick:  
 "You've governed Canada. You know. *You* know!"  
 And all the while commend you to Fate's hand  
 (Here at the top one loses sight o' God),  
 Commend you, then, to something more than you—  
 The Other People's blunders and . . . that's all.  
 I'd agonise to serve you if I could.  
 It's incommunicable, like the cast  
 That drops the hackle with the gut adry.  
 Too much—too little—there's your salmon lost!  
 And so I tell you nothing—wish you luck,  
 And wonder—how I wonder!—for your sake!  
 And triumph for my own. You're young, you're young,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

You hold to half a hundred Shibboleths.  
 I'm old. I followed Power to the last,  
 Gave her my best, and Power followed Me.  
 It's worth it—on my soul I'm speaking plain,  
 Here by the claret glasses!—worth it all.  
 I gave—no matter what I gave—I win.  
 I *know* I win. Mine's work, good work that lives!  
 A country twice the size of France—the North  
 Safeguarded. That's my record: sink the rest  
 And better if you can. The Rains may serve,  
 Rupees may rise—threepence will give you Fame—  
 It's rash to hope for sixpence. If they rise  
 Get guns, more guns, and lift the salt-tax. . . Oh!  
 I told you what the Congress meant or thought?  
 I'll answer nothing. Half a year will prove  
 The full extent of time and thought you'll spare  
 To Congress. Ask a Lady Doctor *once*  
 How little Begums see the light—deduce  
 Thence how the True Reformer's child is born.  
 It's interesting, curious . . . and vile.  
 I told the Turk he was a gentleman.  
 I told the Russian that his Tartar veins  
 Bled pure Parisian ichor; and he purred.  
 The Congress doesn't purr. I think it swears.  
 You're young—you'll swear too ere you've reached the end.  
 The End! God help you, if there be a God.  
 (There must be one to startle Gladstone's soul  
 In that new land where all the wires are cut,  
 And Cross snores anthems on the asphodel.)  
 God help you! And I'd help you if I could,  
 But that's beyond me. Yes, your speech was crude.  
 Sound claret after olives—yours and mine;  
 But Médoc slips into vin ordinaire.  
 (I'll drink my first at Genoa to your health)  
 Raise it to Hock. You'll never catch my style.  
 And, after all, the middle-classes grip  
 The middle-class—for Brompton talk Earl's Court.  
 Perhaps you're right. I'll see you in the *Times*—  
 A quarter-column of eye-searing print,  
 A leader once a quarter—then a war;  
 The Strand a-bellow through the fog:—"Defeat!"  
 "'Orrible slaughter!" While you lie awake  
 And wonder. Oh, you'll wonder ere you're free!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

I wonder now. The four years slide away  
So fast, so fast, and leave me here alone.  
Reay, Colvin, Lyall, Roberts, Buck, the rest,  
Princes and Powers of Darkness, troops and trains,  
(I *cannot* sleep in trains), land piled on land,  
Whitewash and weariness, red rockets, dust,  
White snows that mocked me, palaces—with draughts,  
And Westland with the drafts he couldn't pay.  
Poor Wilson reading his obituary  
Before he died, and Hope, the man with bones,  
And Aitchison a dripping mackintosh  
At Council in the Rains, his grating "Sirrr"  
Half drowned by Hunter's silky: "Bât, my lahd."  
Hunterian always: Marshal spinning plates  
Or standing on his head; the Rent Bill's roar,  
A hundred thousand speeches, much red cloth,  
And Smiths thrice happy if I called them Jones,  
(I can't remember half their names) or reined  
My pony on the Mall to greet their wives.  
More trains, more troops, more dust, and then all's done . . .  
Four years, and I forget. If I forget,  
How will *they* bear me in their minds? The North  
Safeguarded—nearly (Roberts knows the rest),  
A country twice the size of France annexed.  
That stays at least. The rest may pass—may pass—  
Your heritage—and I can teach you naught.  
"High trust," "vast honour," "interests twice as vast,"  
"Due reverence to your Council"—keep to those.  
I envy you the twenty years you've gained,  
But not the five to follow. What's that? One!  
Two!—Surely not so late. Good-night. *Don't* dream.

## THE GALLEY-SLAVE

**O**H, GALLANT was our galley from her carven steering-wheel  
To her figurehead of silver and her beak of hammered steel.  
The leg-bar chafed the ankle and we gasped for cooler air,  
But no galley on the waters with our galley could compare!



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Our bulkheads bulged with cotton and our masts were stepped  
in gold—  
We ran a mighty merchandise of niggers in the hold;  
The white foam spun behind us, and the black shark swam  
below,  
As we gripped the kicking sweep-head and we made the  
galley go.

It was merry in the galley, for we revelled now and then—  
If they wore us down like cattle, faith, we fought and loved  
like men!  
As we snatched her through the water, so we snatched a  
minute's bliss,  
And the mutter of the dying never spoiled the lover's kiss.

Our women and our children toiled beside us in the dark—  
They died, we filed their fetters, and we heaved them to the  
shark—  
We heaved them to the fishes, but so fast the galley sped  
We had only time to envy, for we could not mourn our dead.

Bear witness, once my comrades, what a hard-bit gang were  
we—  
The servants of the sweep-head, but the masters of the sea!  
By the hands that drove her forward as she plunged and  
yawed and sheered,  
Woman, Man, or God or Devil, was there anything we  
feared?

Was it storm? Our fathers faced it and a wilder never blew.  
Earth that waited for the wreckage watched the galley  
struggle through.  
Burning noon or choking midnight, Sickness, Sorrow, Part-  
ing, Death?  
Nay, our very babes would mock you had they time for idle  
breath.

But to-day I leave the galley and another takes my place;  
There's my name upon the deck-beam—let it stand a little  
space.  
I am free—to watch my messmates beating out to open  
main,  
Free of all that Life can offer—save to handle sweep again.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

By the brand upon my shoulder, by the gall of clinging  
steel,  
By the welts the whips have left me, by the scars that never  
heal;  
By eyes grown old with staring through the sunwash on the  
brine,  
I am paid in full for service. Would that service still were  
mine!

Yet they talk of times and seasons and of woe the years bring  
forth,  
Of our galley swamped and shattered in the rollers of the  
North;  
When the niggers break the hatches and the decks are gay  
with gore,  
And a craven-hearted pilot crams her crashing on the shore.

She will need no half-mast signal, minute-gun, or rocket-  
flare.  
When the cry for help goes seaward, she will find her servants  
there.  
Battered chain-gangs of the orlop, grizzled drafts of years  
gone by,  
To the bench that broke their manhood, they shall lash them-  
selves and die.

Hale and crippled, young and aged, paid, deserted, shipped  
away—  
Palace, cot, and lazaretto shall make up the tale that day,  
When the skies are black above them, and the decks ablaze  
beneath,  
And the top-men clear the raffle with their clasp-knives in  
their teeth.

It may be that Fate will give me life and leave to row once  
more—  
Set some strong man free for fighting as I take awhile his  
oar.  
But to-day I leave the galley. Shall I curse her service  
then?  
God be thanked! Whate'er comes after, I have lived and  
toiled with Men!

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

## A TALE OF TWO CITIES

WHERE the sober-coloured cultivator smiles  
On his *byles*; <sup>1</sup>  
Where the cholera, the cyclone, and the crow  
Come and go;  
Where the merchant deals in indigo and tea,  
Hides and *ghi*; <sup>2</sup>  
Where the Babu drops inflammatory hints  
In his prints;  
Stands a City—Charnock chose it—packed away  
Near a Bay—  
By the sewage rendered fetid, by the sewer  
Made impure,  
By the Sunderbunds unwholesome, by the swamp  
Moist and damp;  
And the City and the Viceroy, as we see,  
Don't agree.

Once, two hundred years ago, the trader came  
Meek and tame.  
Where his timid foot first halted, there he stayed,  
Till mere trade  
Grew to Empire, and he sent his armies forth  
South and North,  
Till the country from Peshawur to Ceylon  
Was his own.  
Thus the midday halt of Charnock—more's the pity!—  
Grew a City.  
As the fungus sprouts chaotic from its bed,  
So it spread—  
Chance-directed, chance-erected, laid and built  
On the silt—  
Palace, byre, hovel—poverty and pride—  
Side by side;  
And, above the packed and pestilential town,  
Death looked down.

But the Rulers in that City by the Sea  
Turned to flee—  
Fled, with each returning Spring-tide, from its ills  
To the Hills.

<sup>1</sup> Cattle.

<sup>2</sup> Butter.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

From the clammy fogs of morning, from the blaze  
Of the days,  
From the sickness of the noontide, from the heat,  
Beat retreat;  
For the country from Peshawur to Ceylon  
Was their own.  
But the Merchant risked the perils of the Plain  
For his gain.

Now the resting-place of Charnock, 'neath the palms,  
Asks an alms,  
And the burden of its lamentation is,  
Briefly, this:—  
“ Because, for certain months, we boil and stew,  
“ So should you.  
“ Cast the Viceroy and his Council, to perspire  
“ In our fire!”  
And for answer to the argument, in vain  
We explain  
That an amateur Saint Lawrence cannot cry:—  
“ *All* must fry!”  
That the Merchant risks the perils of the Plains  
For his gains.  
Nor can Rulers rule a house that men grow rich in,  
From its kitchen.

Let the Babu drop inflammatory hints  
In his prints;  
And mature—consistent soul—his plan for stealing  
To Darjeeling:  
Let the Merchant seek, who makes his silver pile,  
England's isle;  
Let the City Charnock pitched on—evil day!—  
Go Her way.  
Though the argosies of Asia at Her doors  
Heap their stores,  
Though Her enterprise and energy secure  
Income sure,  
Though “ out-station orders punctually obeyed ”  
Swell Her trade—  
*Still*, for rule, administration, and the rest,  
Simla's best!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### IN SPRINGTIME

**M**Y GARDEN blazes brightly with the rose-bush and the peach,  
And the *koil* sings above it, in the *siris* by the well,  
From the creeper-covered trellis comes the squirrel's chattering speech,  
And the blue jay screams and flutters where the cheery *sat-bhai*<sup>1</sup> dwell.  
But the rose has lost its fragrance, and the *koil's* note is strange;  
I am sick of endless sunshine, sick of blossom-burdened bough.  
Give me back the leafless woodlands where the winds of Springtime range—  
Give me back one day in England, for it's Spring in England now!

Through the pines the gusts are booming, o'er the brown fields blowing chill,  
From the furrow of the ploughshare streams the fragrance of the loam,  
And the hawk nests on the cliffside and the jackdaw in the hill,  
And my heart is back in England 'mid the sights and sounds of Home.  
But the garland of the sacrifice this wealth of rose and peach is  
Ah! *koil*, little *koil*, singing on the *siris* bough,  
In my ears the knell of exile your ceaseless bell like speech is—  
Can *you* tell me aught of England or of Spring in England now?

### GIFFEN'S DEBT

**I**MPRIMIS he was "broke." Thereafter left  
His Regiment and, later, took to drink;  
Then, having lost the balance of his friends,  
"Went Fantee"—joined the people of the land,

<sup>1</sup> Indian starlings,

## D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

Turned three parts Mussulman and one Hindu,  
 And lived among the Gauri villagers,  
 Who gave him shelter and a wife or twain,  
 And boasted that a thorough, full-blood *sahib*  
 Had come among them. Thus he spent his time,  
 Deeply indebted to the village *shroff*<sup>1</sup>  
 (Who never asked for payment), always drunk,  
 Unclean, abominable, out-at-heels;  
 Forgetting that he was an Englishman.

You know they dammed the Gauri with a dam,  
 And all the good contractors scamped their work  
 And all the bad material at hand  
 Was used to dam the Gauri—which was cheap,  
 And, therefore, proper. Then the Gauri burst,  
 And several hundred thousand cubic tons  
 Of water dropped into the valley, *flop*,  
 And drowned some five-and-twenty villagers,  
 And did a lakh or two of detriment  
 To crops and cattle. When the flood went down  
 We found him dead, beneath an old dead horse  
 Full six miles down the valley. So we said  
 He was a victim to the Demon Drink,  
 And moralised upon him for a week,  
 And then forgot him. Which was natural.

But, in the valley of the Gauri, men  
 Beneath the shadow of the big new dam,  
 Relate a foolish legend of the flood,  
 Accounting for the little loss of life  
 (Only those five-and-twenty villagers)  
 In this wise:—On the evening of the flood,  
 They heard the groaning of the rotten dam,  
 And voices of the Mountain Devils. Then  
 An incarnation of the local God,  
 Mounted upon a monster-neighing horse,  
 And flourishing a flail-like whip, came down,  
 Breathing ambrosia, to the villages,  
 And fell upon the simple villagers  
 With yells beyond the power of mortal throat,  
 And blows beyond the power of mortal hand,

<sup>1</sup> Money-lender.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And smote them with his flail-like whip, and drove  
Them clamorous with terror up the hill,  
And scattered, with the monster-neighing steed,  
Their crazy cottages about their ears,  
And generally cleared those villages.  
Then came the water, and the local God,  
Breathing ambrosia, flourishing his whip,  
And mounted on his monster-neighing steed,  
Went down the valley with the flying trees  
And residue of homesteads, while they watched  
Safe on the mountain-side these wondrous things,  
And knew that they were much beloved of Heaven.

Wherefore, and when the dam was newly built,  
They raised a temple to the local God,  
And burnt all manner of unsavoury things  
Upon his altar, and created priests,  
And blew into a conch and banged a bell,  
And told the story of the Gauri flood  
With circumstance and much embroidery. . . .  
So he, the whiskified Objectionable,  
Unclean, abominable, out-at-heels,  
Became the Tutelary Deity  
Of all the Gauri valley villages,  
And may in time become a Solar Myth.

## TWO MONTHS

### JUNE

**N**O HOPE, no change! The clouds have shut us in,  
And through the cloud the sullen Sun strikes down  
Full on the bosom of the tortured Town,  
Till Night falls heavy as remembered sin  
That will not suffer sleep or thought of ease,  
And, hour on hour, the dry-eyed Moon in spite  
Glares through the haze and mocks with watery light  
The torment of the uncomplaining trees.  
Far off, the Thunder bellows her despair  
To echoing Earth, thrice parched. The lightnings fly

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

In vain. No help the heaped-up clouds afford,  
But wearier weight of burdened, burning air.  
What truce with Dawn? Look, from the aching sky,  
Day stalks, a tyrant with a flaming sword!

### SEPTEMBER

AT DAWN there was a murmur in the trees,  
A ripple on the tank, and in the air  
Presage of coming coolness—everywhere  
A voice of prophecy upon the breeze.  
Up leapt the Sun and smote the dust to gold,  
And strove to parch anew the heedless land,  
All impotently, as a King grown old  
Wars for the Empire crumbling 'neath his hand.  
One after one the lotos-petals fell,  
Beneath the onslaught of the rebel year,  
In mutiny against a furious sky;  
And far-off Winter whispered:—"It is well!  
"Hot Summer dies. Behold your help is near,  
"For when men's need is sorest, then come I."

### L'ENVOI

*(Departmental Ditties)*

THE smoke upon your Altar dies,  
The flowers decay,  
The Goddess of your sacrifice  
Has flown away.  
What profit then to sing or slay  
The sacrifice from day to day?

"We know the Shrine is void," they said,  
"The Goddess flown—  
"Yet wreaths are on the altar laid—  
"The Altar-Stone  
"Is black with fumes of sacrifice,  
"Albeit She has fled our eyes.



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

" For, it may be, if still we sing  
" And tend the Shrine,  
" Some Deity on wandering wing  
" May there incline;  
" And, finding all in order meet,  
" Stay while we worship at Her feet."

(End of *Departmental Ditties*)

THE FIRES

MEN make them fires on the hearth  
Each under his roof-tree,  
And the Four Winds that rule the earth  
They blow the smoke to me.

Across the high hills and the sea  
And all the changeful skies,  
The Four Winds blow the smoke to me  
Till the tears are in my eyes.

Until the tears are in my eyes  
And my heart is wellnigh broke  
For thinking on old memories  
That gather in the smoke.

With every shift of every wind  
The homesick memories come,  
From every quarter of mankind  
Where I have made me a home.

Four times a fire against the cold  
And a roof against the rain—  
Sorrow fourfold and joy fourfold  
The Four Winds bring again!

How can I answer which is best  
Of all the fires that burn?  
I have been too often host or guest  
At every fire in turn.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

How can I turn from any fire,  
On any man's hearthstone?  
I know the wonder and desire  
That went to build my own!

How can I doubt man's joy or woe  
Where'er his house-fires shine,  
Since all that man must undergo  
Will visit me at mine?

Oh, you Four Winds that blow so strong  
And know that this is true,  
Stoop for a little and carry my song  
To all the men I knew!

Where there are fires against the cold,  
Or roofs against the rain—  
With love fourfold and joy fourfold,  
Take them my songs again!

### DEDICATION FROM "BARRACK-ROOM BALLADS"

**B**YOND the path of the outmost sun through utter  
darkness hurled—  
Farther than ever comet flared or vagrant star-dust  
swirled—  
Live such as fought and sailed and ruled and loved and made  
our world.

They are purged of pride because they died; they know the  
worth of their bays;  
They sit at wine with the Maidens Nine and the Gods of the  
Elder Days—  
It is their will to serve or be still as fitteth Our Father's  
praise.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

'Tis theirs to sweep through the ringing deep where Azrael's  
outposts are,  
Or buffet a path through the Pit's red wrath when God goes  
out to war,  
Or hang with the reckless Seraphim on the rein of a red-  
maned star.

They take their mirth in the joy of the Earth—they dare not  
grieve for her pain.  
They know of toil and the end of toil; they know God's Law  
is plain;  
So they whistle the Devil to make them sport who know that  
Sin is vain.

And oft-times cometh our wise Lord God, master of every  
trade,  
And tells them tales of His daily toil, of Edens newly made;  
And they rise to their feet as He passes by, gentlemen un-  
afraid.

To these who are cleansed of base Desire, Sorrow and Lust  
and Shame—  
Gods for they knew the hearts of men, men for they stooped  
to Fame—  
Borne on the breath that men call Death, my brother's  
spirit came.

He scarce had need to doff his pride or slough the dross of  
Earth—  
E'en as he trod that day to God so walked he from his birth,  
In simpleness and gentleness and honour and clean mirth.

So cup to lip in fellowship they gave him welcome high  
And made him place at the banquet board—the Strong Men  
ranged thereby,  
Who had done his work and held his peace and had no fear  
to die.

Beyond the loom of the last lone star, through open darkness  
hurled,  
Further than rebel comet dared or hiving star-swarm swirled,  
Sits he with those that praise our God for that they served  
His world.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

TO THE TRUE ROMANCE

1893

*THY face is far from this our war,  
Our call and counter-cry,  
I shall not find Thee quick and kind,  
Nor know Thee till I die.  
Enough for me in dreams to see  
And touch Thy garments' hem:  
Thy feet have trod so near to God  
I may not follow them!*

Through wantonness if men profess  
They weary of Thy parts,  
E'en let them die at blasphemy  
And perish with their arts;  
But we that love, but we that prove  
Thine excellence august,  
While we adore, discover more  
Thee perfect, wise, and just.

Since spoken word Man's Spirit stirred  
Beyond his belly-need,  
What is is Thine of fair design  
In Thought and Craft and Deed.  
Each stroke aright of toil and fight,  
That was and that shall be,  
And hope too high, wherefore we die,  
Has birth and worth in Thee.

Who holds by Thee hath Heaven in fee  
To gild his dross thereby,  
And knowledge sure that he endure  
A child until he die—  
For to make plain that man's disdain  
Is but new Beauty's birth—  
For to possess in singleness  
The joy of all the earth.

As Thou didst teach all lovers speech,  
And Life all mystery,

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

So shalt Thou rule by every school  
Till life and longing die,  
Who wast, or yet the Lights were set,  
A whisper in the Void,  
Who shalt be sung through planets young  
When this is clean destroyed.

Beyond the bounds our staring rounds,  
Across the pressing dark,  
The children wise of outer skies  
Look hitherward and mark  
A light that shifts, a glare that drifts,  
Rekindling thus and thus—  
Not all forlorn, for Thou hast borne  
Strange tales to them of us.

Time hath no tide but must abide  
The servant of Thy will;  
Tide hath no time, for to Thy rhyme  
The ranging stars stand still—  
Regent of spheres that lock our fears,  
Our hopes invisible,  
Oh, 'twas certes at Thy decrees  
We fashioned Heaven and Hell!

Pure Wisdom hath no certain path  
That lacks Thy morning-eyne,  
And Captains bold by Thee controlled  
Most like to Gods design.  
Thou art the Voice to kingly boys  
To lift them through the fight,  
And Comfortress of Unsuccess,  
To give the Dead good-night.

A veil to draw 'twixt God His Law  
And Man's infirmity,  
A shadow kind to dumb and blind  
The shambles where we die;  
A rule to trick th' arithmetic,  
Too base, of leaguings odds—  
The spur of trust, the curb of lust,  
Thou handmaid of the Gods!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

O Charity, all patiently  
Abiding wrack and scaith!  
O Faith, that meets ten thousand cheats  
Yet drops no jot of faith!  
Devil and brute Thou dost transmute  
To higher, lordlier show,  
Who art in sooth that lovely Truth  
The careless angels know!

*Thy face is far from this our war,  
Our call and counter-cry,  
I may not find Thee quick and kind,  
Nor know Thee till I die.*

*Yet may I look with heart unshook  
On blow brought home or missed—  
Yet may I hear with equal ear  
The clarions down the List;  
Yet set my lance above mischance  
And ride the barriere—  
Oh, hit or miss, how little 'tis,  
My Lady is not there!*

## SESTINA OF THE TRAMP-ROYAL

1896

SPEAKIN' in general, I 'ave tried 'em all—  
The 'appy roads that take you o'er the world.  
Speakin' in general, I 'ave found them good  
For such as cannot use one bed too long,  
But must get 'ence, the same as I 'ave done,  
An' go observin' matters till they die.

What do it matter where or 'ow we die,  
So long as we've our 'ealth to watch it all—  
The different ways that different things are done,  
An' men an' women lovin' in this world;  
Takin' our chances as they come along,  
An' when they ain't, pretendin' they are good?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

In cash or credit—no, it aren't no good;  
You 'ave to 'ave the 'abit or you'd die,  
Unless you lived your life but one day long,  
Nor didn't prophesy nor fret at all,  
But drew your tucker some'ow from the world,  
An' never bothered what you might ha' done.

But, Gawd, what things are they I 'aven't done?  
I've turned my 'and to most, an' turned it good,  
In various situations round the world—  
For 'im that doth not work must surely die;  
But that's no reason man should labour all  
'Is life on one same shift—life's none so long.

Therefore, from job to job I've moved along.  
Pay couldn't 'old me when my time was done,  
For something in my 'ead upset it all,  
Till I 'ad dropped whatever 'twas for good,  
An', out at sea, be'eld the dock-lights die,  
An' met my mate—the wind that tramps the world!

It's like a book, I think, this bloomin' world,  
Which you can read and care for just so long,  
But presently you feel that you will die  
Unless you get the page you're readin' done,  
An' turn another—likely not so good;  
But what you're after is to turn 'em all.

Gawd bless this world! Whatever she 'ath done—  
Excep' when awful long—I've found it good.  
So write, before I die, " 'E liked it all! "

## THE MIRACLES

1894

I SENT a message to my dear—  
A thousand leagues and more to Her—  
The dumb sea-levels thrilled to hear,  
And Lost Atlantis bore to Her!

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

Behind my message hard I came,  
And nigh had found a grave for me;  
But that I launched of steel and flame  
Did war against the wave for me.

Uprose the deep, in gale on gale,  
To bid me change my mind again—  
He broke his teeth along my rail,  
And, roaring, swung behind again.

I stayed the sun at noon to tell  
My way across the waste of it;  
I read the storm before it fell  
And made the better haste of it.

Afar, I hailed the land at night—  
The towers I built had heard of me—  
And, ere my rocket reached its height,  
Had flashed my Love the word of me.

Earth sold her chosen men of strength  
(They lived and strove and died for me)  
To drive my road a nation's length,  
And toss the miles aside for me.

I snatched their toil to serve my needs—  
Too slow their fleetest flew for me.  
I tired twenty smoking steeds,  
And bade them bait a new for me.

I sent the Lightnings forth to see  
Where hour by hour She waited me.  
Among ten million one was She,  
And surely all men hated me!

Dawn ran to meet me at my goal—  
Ah, day no tongue shall tell again!  
And little folk of little soul  
Rose up to buy and sell again!



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

SONG OF THE WISE CHILDREN

1902

WHEN the darkened Fifties dip to the North,  
And frost and the fog divide the air,  
And the day is dead at his breaking-forth,  
Sirs, it is bitter beneath the Bear!

Far to Southward they wheel and glance,  
The million molten spears of morn—  
The spears of our deliverance  
That shine on the house where we were born.

Flying-fish about our bows,  
Flying sea-fires in our wake:  
This is the road to our Father's House,  
Whither we go for our souls' sake!

We have forfeited our birthright,  
We have forsaken all things meet;  
We have forgotten the look of light,  
We have forgotten the scent of heat.

They that walk with shaded brows,  
Year by year in a shining land,  
They be men of our Father's House,  
They shall receive us and understand.

We shall go back by the boltless doors,  
To the life unaltered our childhood knew—  
To the naked feet on the cool, dark floors,  
And the high-ceiled rooms that the Trade blows through:

To the trumpet-flowers and the moon beyond,  
And the tree-toad's chorus drowning all—  
And the lisp of the split banana-frond  
That talked us to sleep when we were small.

The wayside magic, the threshold spells,  
Shall soon undo what the North has done—  
Because of the sights and the sounds and the smells  
That ran with our youth in the eye of the sun.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

And Earth accepting shall ask no vows,  
Nor the Sea our love, nor our lover the Sky.  
When we return to our Father's House  
Only the English shall wonder why!

ZION

1914-18

THE Doorkeepers of Zion,  
They do not always stand  
In helmet and whole armour,  
With halberds in their hand;  
But, being sure of Zion,  
And all her mysteries,  
They rest awhile in Zion,  
Sit down and smile in Zion;  
Ay, even jest in Zion;  
In Zion, at their ease.

The Gatekeepers of Baal,  
They dare not sit or lean,  
But fume and fret and posture  
And foam and curse between;  
For, being bound to Baal,  
Whose sacrifice is vain,  
Their rest is scant with Baal,  
They glare and pant for Baal,  
They mouth and rant for Baal;  
For Baal in their pain.

But we will go to Zion,  
By choice and not through dread,  
With these our present comrades  
And those our present dead;  
And, being free of Zion  
In both her fellowships,  
Sit down and sup in Zion—  
Stand up and drink in Zion  
Whatever cup in Zion  
Is offered to our lips!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

BUDDHA AT KAMAKURA

1892

*"And there is a Japanese idol at Kamakura."*

O YE who tread the Narrow Way  
By Tophet-flare to Judgment Day,  
Be gentle when "the heathen" pray  
To Buddha at Kamakura!

To Him the Way, the Law, apart,  
Whom Maya held beneath her heart,  
Ananda's Lord, the Bodhisat,  
The Buddha of Kamakura.

For though He neither burns nor sees,  
Nor hears ye thank your Deities,  
Ye have not sinned with such as these,  
His children at Kamakura,

Yet spare us still the Western joke  
When joss-sticks turn to scented smoke  
The little sins of little folk  
That worship at Kamakura—

The grey-robed, gay-sashed butterflies  
That flit beneath the Master's eyes.  
He is beyond the Mysteries  
But loves them at Kamakura.

And whoso will, from Pride released,  
Contemning neither creed nor priest,  
May feel the Soul of all the East  
About him at Kamakura.

Yea, every tale Ananda heard,  
Of birth as fish or beast or bird,  
While yet in lives the Master stirred,  
The warm wind brings Kamakura.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Till drowsy eyelids seem to see  
A-flower 'neath her golden *htee*  
The Shwe-Dagon flare easterly  
From Burma to Kamakura,

And down the loaded air there comes  
The thunder of Thibetan drums,  
And droned—" *Om mane padme hum's* " <sup>1</sup>  
A world's-width from Kamakura.

Yet Brahmans rule Benares still,  
Buddh-Gaya's ruins pit the hill,  
And beef-fed zealots threaten ill  
To Buddha and Kamakura.

A tourist-show, a legend told,  
A rusting bulk of bronze and gold,  
So much, and scarce so much, ye hold  
The meaning of Kamakura?

But when the morning prayer is prayed,  
Think, ere ye pass to strife and trade,  
Is God in human image made  
No nearer than Kamakura?

## THE GREEK NATIONAL ANTHEM

1918

WE KNEW thee of old,  
Oh, divinely restored,  
By the light of thine eyes  
And the light of thy Sword.

From the graves of our slain  
Shall thy valour prevail  
As we greet thee again—  
Hail, Liberty! Hail!

<sup>1</sup> The Buddhist invocation.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Long time didst thou dwell  
Mid the peoples that mourn,  
Awaiting some voice  
That should bid thee return.

Ah, slow broke that day  
And no man dared call,  
For the shadow of tyranny  
Lay over all:

And we saw thee sad-eyed,  
The tears on thy cheeks  
While thy raiment was dyed  
In the blood of the Greeks.

Yet, behold now thy sons  
With impetuous breath  
Go forth to the fight  
Seeking Freedom or Death.

From the graves of our slain  
Shall thy valour prevail  
As we greet thee again—  
Hail, Liberty! Hail!

### THE SEA-WIFE

1893

**T**HERE dwells a wife by the Northern Gate,  
And a wealthy wife is she;  
She breeds a breed of roving men  
And casts them over sea.

And some are drowned in deep water,  
And some in sight o' shore,  
And word goes back to the weary wife  
And ever she sends more.

For since that wife had gate or gear,  
Or hearth or garth or field,  
She willed her sons to the white harvest,  
And that is a bitter yield.

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

She wills her sons to the wet ploughing,  
To ride the horse of tree;  
And syne her sons come back again  
Far-spent from out the sea.

The good wife's sons come home again  
With little into their hands,  
But the lore of men that have dealt with men  
In the new and naked lands;

But the faith of men that have brothered men  
By more than easy breath,  
And the eyes of men that have read with men  
In the open books of Death.

Rich are they, rich in wonders seen,  
But poor in the goods of men;  
So what they have got by the skin of their teeth  
They sell for their teeth again.

And whether they lose to the naked life  
Or win to their hearts' desire,  
They tell it all to the weary wife  
That nods beside the fire.

Her hearth is wide to every wind  
That makes the white ash spin;  
And tide and tide and 'tween the tides  
Her sons go out and in;

(Out with great mirth that do desire  
Hazard of trackless ways—  
In with content to wait their watch  
And warm before the blaze);

And some return by failing light,  
And some in waking dream,  
For she hears the heels of the dripping ghosts  
That ride the rough roof-beam.

Home, they come home from all the ports,  
The living and the dead;  
The good wife's sons come home again  
For her blessing on their head!

THE BROKEN MEN

1902

FOR things we never mention,  
 For Art misunderstood—  
 For excellent intention  
 That did not turn to good;  
 From ancient tales' renewing,  
 From clouds we would not clear—  
 Beyond the Law's pursuing  
 We fled, and settled here.

We took no tearful leaving,  
 We bade no long good-byes.  
 Men talked of crime and thieving,  
 Men wrote of fraud and lies.  
 To save our injured feelings  
 'Twas time and time to go—  
 Behind was dock and Dartmoor,  
 Ahead lay Callao!

The widow and the orphan  
 That pray for ten per cent,  
 They clapped their trailers on us  
 To spy the road we went.  
 They watched the foreign sailings  
 (They scan the shipping still),  
 And that's your Christian people  
 Returning good for ill!

God bless the thoughtful islands  
 Where never warrants come;  
 God bless the just Republics  
 That give a man a home,  
 That ask no foolish questions,  
 But set him on his feet;  
 And save his wife and daughters  
 From the workhouse and the street!

On church and square and market  
 The noonday silence falls;

DEFINITIVE EDITION

You'll hear the drowsy mutter  
Of the fountain in our halls.  
Asleep amid the yuccas  
The city takes her ease—  
Till twilight brings the land-wind  
To the clicking jealousies.

Day long the diamond weather,  
The high, unaltered blue—  
The smell of goats and incense  
And the mule-bells tinkling through.  
Day long the warder ocean  
That keeps us from our kin,  
And once a month our levée  
When the English mail comes in.

You'll find us up and waiting  
To treat you at the bar;  
You'll find us less exclusive  
Than the average English are.  
We'll meet you with a carriage,  
Too glad to show you round,  
But—we do not lunch on steamers,  
For they are English ground.

We sail o' nights to England  
And join our smiling Boards—  
Our wives go in with Viscounts  
And our daughters dance with Lords,  
But behind our princely doings,  
And behind each coup we make,  
We feel there's Something Waiting,  
And—we meet It when we wake.

Ah, God! One sniff of England—  
To greet our flesh and blood—  
To hear the traffic slurring  
Once more through London mud!  
Our towns of wasted honour—  
Our streets of lost delight!  
How stands the old Lord Warden?  
Are Dover's cliffs still white?



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

GETHSEMANE

1914-18

THE Garden called Gethsemane  
In Picardy it was,  
And there the people came to see  
The English soldiers pass.  
We used to pass—we used to pass  
Or halt, as it might be,  
And ship our masks in case of gas  
Beyond Gethsemane.

The Garden called Gethsemane,  
It held a pretty lass,  
But all the time she talked to me  
I prayed my cup might pass.  
The officer sat on the chair,  
The men lay on the grass,  
And all the time we halted there  
I prayed my cup might pass.

It didn't pass—it didn't pass—  
It didn't pass from me.  
I drank it when we met the gas  
Beyond Gethsemane!

THE SONG OF THE BANJO

1894

YOU couldn't pack a Broadwood half a mile—  
You mustn't leave a fiddle in the damp—  
You couldn't raft an organ up the Nile,  
And play it in an Equatorial swamp.  
I travel with the cooking-pots and pails—  
I'm sandwiched 'tween the coffee and the pork—  
And when the dusty column checks and tails,  
You should hear me spur the rearguard to a walk!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

With my "*Pilly-willy-winky-winky-popp!*"  
[Oh, it's any tune that comes into my head!]  
So I keep 'em moving forward till they drop;  
So I play 'em up to water and to bed.

In the silence of the camp before the fight,  
When it's good to make your will and say your prayer,  
You can hear my *strumpty-tumpty* overnight,  
Explaining ten to one was always fair.  
I'm the Prophet of the Utterly Absurd,  
Of the Patently Impossible and Vain—  
And when the Thing that Couldn't has occurred,  
Give me time to change my leg and go again.

With my "*Tumpa-tumpa-tumpa-tumpa-tump!*"  
In the desert where the dung-fed camp-smoke curled.  
There was never voice before us till I led our lonely  
chorus,  
I—the war-drum of the White Man round the world!

By the bitter road the Younger Son must tread,  
Ere he win to hearth and saddle of his own,—  
'Mid the riot of the shearers at the shed,  
In the silence of the herder's hut alone—  
In the twilight, on a bucket upside down,  
Hear me babble what the weakest won't confess—  
I am Memory and Torment—I am Town!  
I am all that ever went with evening dress!

With my "*Tunka-tunka-tunka-tunka-tunk!*"  
[So the lights—the London Lights—grow near and  
plain!]  
So I rowel 'em afresh towards the Devil and the Flesh,  
Till I bring my broken rankers home again.

In desire of many marvels over sea,  
Where the new-raised tropic city sweats and roars,  
I have sailed with Young Ulysses from the quay  
Till the anchor rumbled down on stranger shores.  
He is blooded to the open and the sky,  
He is taken in a snare that shall not fail,  
He shall hear me singing strongly, till he die,  
Like the shouting of a backstay in a gale.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

With my "*Hya! Heeya! Heeya! Hullah! Haul!*"  
[Oh, the green that thunders aft along the deck!]  
Are you sick o' towns and men? You must sign and  
sail again,  
For it's "Johnny Bowlegs, pack your kit and trek!"

Through the gorge that gives the stars at noon-day clear—  
Up the pass that packs the scud beneath our wheel—  
Round the bluff that sinks her thousand fathom sheer—  
Down the valley with our guttering brakes asqueal:  
Where the trestle groans and quivers in the snow,  
Where the many-shedded levels loop and twine,  
Hear me lead my reckless children from below  
Till we sing the Song of Roland to the pine!

With my "*Tinka-tinka-tinka-tinka-tink!*"  
[Oh, the axe has cleared the mountain, croup and crest!]  
And we ride the iron stallions down to drink,  
Through the cañons to the waters of the West!

And the tunes that mean so much to you alone—  
Common tunes that make you choke and blow your nose—  
Vulgar tunes that bring the laugh that brings the groan—  
I can rip your very heartstrings out with those;  
With the feasting, and the folly, and the fun—  
And the lying, and the lusting, and the drink,  
And the merry play that drops you, when you're done,  
To the thoughts that burn like irons if you think.

With my "*Plunka-lunka-lunka-lunka-lunk!*"  
Here's a trifle on account of pleasure past,  
Ere the wit that made you win gives you eyes to see your  
sin  
And—the heavier repentance at the last!

Let the organ moan her sorrow to the roof—  
I have told the naked stars the Grief of Man!  
Let the trumpet snare the foeman to the proof—  
I have known Defeat, and mocked it as we ran!  
My bray ye may not alter nor mistake  
When I stand to jeer the fatted Soul of Things,  
But the Song of Lost Endeavour that I make,  
Is it hidden in the twanging of the strings?

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

With my "*Ta-ra-rara-rara-ra-ra-rrrp!*"

[Is it naught to you that hear and pass me by?]

But the word—the word is mine, when the order moves  
the line

And the lean, locked ranks go roaring down to die!

The grandam of my grandam was the Lyre—

[Oh, the blue below the little fisher-huts!]

That the Stealer stooping beachward filled with fire,

Till she bore my iron head and ringing guts!

By the wisdom of the centuries I speak—

To the tune of yestermorn I set the truth—

I, the joy of life unquestioned—I, the Greek—

I, the everlasting Wonder-song of Youth!

With my "*Tinka-tinka-tinka-tinka-tink!*"

[What d'ye lack, my noble masters! What d'ye lack?]

So I draw the world together link by link:

Yea, from Delos up to Limerick and back!

## THE SPIES' MARCH

1913

*("The outbreak is in full swing and our death-rate would sicken Napoleon. . . . Dr. M—— died last week, and C—— on Monday, but some more medicines are coming. . . . We don't seem to be able to check it at all. . . . Villages panicking badly. . . . In some places not a living soul. . . . But at any rate the experience gained may come in useful, so I am keeping my notes written up to date in case of accidents. . . . Death is a queer chap to live with for steady company."—Extract from a private letter from Manchuria.)*

**T**HERE are no leaders to lead us to honour, and yet without  
leaders we sally;

Each man reporting for duty alone, out of sight, out of  
reach, of his fellow.

There are no bugles to call the battalions, and yet without  
bugle we rally

From the ends of the earth to the ends of the earth, to follow  
the Standard of Yellow!

*Fall in! O fall in! O fall in!*

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Not where the squadrons mass,  
Not where the bayonets shine,  
Not where the big shell shout as they pass  
Over the firing-line;  
Not where the wounded are,  
Not where the nations die,  
Killed in the cleanly game of war—  
That is no place for a spy!  
O Princes, Thrones and Powers, your work is less than  
ours—  
Here is no place for a spy!

Trained to another use,  
We march with colours furled,  
Only concerned when Death breaks loose  
On a front of half a world.  
Only for General Death  
The Yellow Flag may fly,  
While we take post beneath—  
That is the place for a spy.  
Where Plague has spread his pinions over Nations and  
Dominions—  
Then will be work for a spy!

The dropping shots begin,  
The single funerals pass,  
Our skirmishers run in,  
The corpses dot the grass!  
The howling towns stampede,  
The tainted hamlets die.  
Now it is war indeed—  
Now there is room for a spy!  
O Peoples, Kings and Lands, we are waiting your com-  
mands—  
What is the work for a spy?  
(Drums)—*Fear is upon us, spy!*

“ Go where his pickets hide—  
Unmask the shape they take,  
Whether a gnat from the waterside,  
Or a stinging fly in the brake,

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Or filth of the crowded street,  
Or a sick rat limping by,  
Or a smear of spittle dried in the heat—  
That is the work for a spy!  
(Drums)—*Death is upon us, spy!*

“What does he next prepare?  
Whence will he move to attack?—  
By water, earth or air?—  
How can we head him back?  
Shall we starve him out if we burn  
Or bury his food-supply?  
Slip through his lines and learn—  
That is the work for a spy!  
(Drums)—*Get to your business, spy!*

“Does he feint or strike in force?  
Will he charge or ambuscade?  
What is it checks his course?  
Is he beaten or only delayed?  
How long will the lull endure?  
Is he retreating? Why?  
Crawl to his camp and make sure—  
That is the work for a spy!  
(Drums)—*Fetch us our answer, spy!*

“Ride with him girth to girth  
Wherever the Pale Horse wheels.  
Wait on his councils, ear to earth,  
And show what the dust reveals.  
For the smoke of our torment rolls  
Where the burning corpses lie;  
What do we care for men's bodies or souls?  
Bring us deliverance, spy!”

## THE EXPLORER

1898

“THERE'S no sense in going further—it's the edge of cultivation,”  
So they said, and I believed it—broke my land and sowed my crop—

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Built my barns and strung my fences in the little border  
station

Tucked away below the foothills where the trails run out  
and stop:

Till a voice, as bad as Conscience, rang interminable changes

On one everlasting Whisper day and night repeated—so:  
“Something hidden. Go and find it. Go and look behind  
the Ranges—

“Something lost behind the Ranges. Lost and waiting  
for you. Go!”

So I went, worn out of patience; never told my nearest  
neighbours—

Stole away with pack and ponies—left 'em drinking in the  
town;

And the faith that moveth mountains didn't seem to help my  
labours

As I faced the sheer main-ranges, whipping up and leading  
down.

March by march I puzzled through 'em, turning flanks and  
dodging shoulders,

Hurried on in hope of water, headed back for lack of grass;  
Till I camped above the tree-line—drifted snow and naked  
boulders—

Felt free air astir to windward—knew I'd stumbled on the  
Pass.

"Thought to name it for the finder: but that night the  
Norther found me—

Froze and killed the plains-bred ponies; so I called the  
camp Despair

(It's the Railway Gap to-day, though). Then my Whisper  
waked to hound me:—

“Something lost behind the Ranges. Over yonder! Go  
you there!”

Then I knew, the while I doubted—knew His Hand was  
certain o'er me.

Still—it might be self-delusion—scores of better men had  
died—

DEFINITIVE EDITION

I could reach the township living, but . . . He knows what  
terror tore me . . .

But I didn't . . . but I didn't. I went down the other  
side,

Till the snow ran out in flowers, and the flowers turned to  
aloes,

And the aloes sprung to thickets and a brimming stream  
ran by;

But the thickets dwined to thorn-scrub, and the water  
drained to shallows,

And I dropped again on desert—blasted earth, and blasting  
sky. . . .

I remember lighting fires; I remember sitting by 'em;

I remember seeing faces, hearing voices, through the  
smoke;

I remember they were fancy—for I threw a stone to try 'em.

"Something lost behind the Ranges" was the only word  
they spoke.

I remember going crazy. I remember that I knew it

When I heard myself hallooing to the funny folk I saw.

'Very full of dreams that desert, but my two legs took me  
through it . . .

And I used to watch 'em moving with the toes all black and  
raw.

But at last the country altered—White Man's country past  
disputing—

Rolling grass and open timber, with a hint of hills behind—

There I found me food and water, and I lay a week recruiting.

Got my strength and lost my nightmares. Then I entered  
on my find.

Thence I ran my first rough survey—chose my trees and  
blazed and ringed 'em—

Week by week I pried and sampled—week by week my  
findings grew.

Saul he went to look for donkeys, and by God he found a  
kingdom!

But by God, who sent His Whisper, I had struck the worth  
of two!



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Up along the hostile mountains, where the hair-poised snow-  
slide shivers—

Down and through the big fat marshes that the virgin  
ore-bed stains,

Till I heard the mile-wide mutterings of unimagined rivers,  
And beyond the nameless timber saw illimitable plains!

'Plotted sites of future cities, traced the easy grades between  
'em;

Watched unharnessed rapids wasting fifty thousand head  
an hour;

Counted leagues of water-frontage through the axe-ripe  
woods that screen 'em—

Saw the plant to feed a people—up and waiting for the  
power!

Well I know who'll take the credit—all the clever chaps that  
followed—

Came, a dozen men together—never knew my desert-fears;  
Tracked me by the camps I'd quitted, used the water-holes  
I'd hollowed.

They'll go back and do the talking. *They'll* be called the  
Pioneers!

They will find my sites of townships—not the cities that I set  
there.

They will rediscover rivers—not my rivers heard at night.  
By my own old marks and bearings they will show me how to  
get there,

By the lonely cairns I builded they will guide my feet aright.

Have I named one single river? Have I claimed one single  
acre?

Have I kept one single nugget—(barring samples)? No,  
not I!

Because my price was paid me ten times over by my Maker.

But you wouldn't understand it. You go up and occupy.

Ores you'll find there; wood and cattle; water-transit sure  
and steady

(That should keep the railway-rates down), coal and iron  
at your doors.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

God took care to hide that country till He judged His people  
ready,

Then He chose me for His Whisper, and I've found it, and  
it's yours!

Yes, your "Never-never country"—yes, your "edge of cultivation"

And "no sense in going further"—till I crossed the range  
to see.

God forgive me! No, *I* didn't. It's God's present to our  
nation.

Anybody might have found it, but—His Whisper came  
to Me!

## THE PRO-CONSULS

(LORD MILNER)

*THE overfaithful sword returns the user  
His heart's desire at price of his heart's blood.  
The clamour of the arrogant accuser  
Wastes that one hour we needed to make good.  
This was foretold of old at our outgoing;  
This we accepted who have squandered, knowing,  
The strength and glory of our reputations,  
At the day's need, as it were dross, to guard  
The tender and new-dedicate foundations  
Against the sea we fear—not man's award.*

They that dig foundations deep,  
Fit for realms to rise upon,  
Little honour do they reap  
Of their generation,  
Any more than mountains gain  
Stature till we reach the plain.

With no veil before their face  
Such as shroud or sceptre lend—  
Daily in the market-place,  
Of one height to foe and friend—  
They must cheapen self to find  
Ends uncheapened for mankind.

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

Through the night when hirelings rest,  
Sleepless they arise, alone,  
The unsleeping arch to test  
And the o'er-trusted corner-stone,  
'Gainst the need, they know, that lies  
Hid behind the centuries.

Not by lust of praise or show,  
Not by Peace herself betrayed—  
Peace herself must they forgo  
Till that peace be fitly made;  
And in single strength uphold  
Wearier hands and hearts acold.

On the stage their act hath framed  
For thy sports, O Liberty!  
Doubted are they, and defamed  
By the tongues their act set free,  
While they quicken, tend and raise  
Power that must their power displace.

Lesser men feign greater goals,  
Failing whereof they may sit  
Scholarly to judge the souls  
That go down into the Pit  
And, despite its certain clay,  
Heave a new world toward the day.

*These* at labour make no sign,  
More than planets, tides or years  
Which discover God's design,  
Not our hopes and not our fears;  
Nor in aught they gain or lose  
Seek a triumph or excuse!

*For, so the Ark be borne to Zion, who  
Heeds how they perished or were paid that bore it?  
For, so the Shrine abide, what shame—what pride—  
If we, the priests, were bound or crowned before it?*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE RUNNERS

Indian Frontier, 1904

(" A Sahibs' War "—*Traffics and Discoveries*)

*News!*

What is the word that they tell now—now—now!  
The little drums beating in the bazaars?

*They beat (among the buyers and the sellers)*

*" Nimrud—ah, Nimrud!*

*God sends a gnat against Nimrud! "*

Watchers, O Watchers a thousand!

*News!*

At the edge of the crops—now—now—where the well-wheels  
are halted,

One prepares to loose the bullocks and one scrapes his  
hoe,

*They beat (among the sowers and the reapers)*

*" Nimrud—ah, Nimrud!*

*God prepares an ill day for Nimrud! "*

Watchers, O Watchers ten thousand.

*News!*

By the fires of the camps—now—now—where the travellers  
meet,

Where the camels come in and the horses, their men con-  
ferring,

*They beat (among the packmen and the drivers)*

*" Nimrud—ah, Nimrud!*

*Thus it befell last noon to Nimrud! "*

Watchers, O Watchers an hundred thousand!

*News!*

Under the shadow of the border-peels—now—now—now!  
In the rocks of the passes where the expectant shoe their  
horses,

*They beat (among the rifles and the riders)*

*" Nimrud—ah, Nimrud!*

*Shall we go up against Nimrud? "*

Watchers, O Watchers a thousand thousand!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*News!*

Bring out the heaps of grain—open the account-books again!  
Drive forward the well-bullocks against the taxable harvest!  
Eat and lie under the trees—pitch the police-guarded fair-  
grounds, O dancers!

Hide away the rifles and let down the ladders from the watch-  
towers!

*They beat (among all the peoples)*

*"Now—now—now!"*

*God has reserved the Sword for Nimrud!*

*God has given Victory to Nimrud!*

*Let us abide under Nimrud!"*

O Well-disposed and Heedful, an hundred thousand  
thousand!

### THE SEA AND THE HILLS

1902

WHO hath desired the Sea?—the sight of salt water  
unbounded—

The heave and the halt and the hurl and the crash of the  
comber wind-hounded?

The sleek-barrelled swell before storm, grey, foamless,  
enormous, and growing—

Stark calm on the lap of the Line or the crazy-eyed hurricane  
blowing—

His Sea in no showing the same—his Sea and the same  
'neath each showing:

His Sea as she slackens or thrills?

So and no otherwise—so and no otherwise—hillmen desire  
their Hills!

Who hath desired the Sea?—the immense and contemptuous  
surges?

The shudder, the stumble, the swerve, as the star-stabbing  
bowsprit emerges?

The orderly clouds of the Trades, the ridged, roaring  
sapphire thereunder—

Unheralded cliff-haunting flaws and the headsail's low-  
volleying thunder—

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

His Sea in no wonder the same—his Sea and the same through  
each wonder:

His Sea as she rages or stills?  
So and no otherwise—so and no otherwise—hillmen desire  
their Hills.

Who hath desired the Sea? Her menaces swift as her  
mercies?

The in-rolling walls of the fog and the silver-winged breeze  
that disperses?

The unstable mined berg going South and the calvings and  
groans that declare it—

White water half-guessed overside and the moon breaking  
timely to bare it—

His Sea as his fathers have dared—his Sea as his children  
shall dare it:

His Sea as she serves him or kills?  
So and no otherwise—so and no otherwise—hillmen desire  
their Hills.

Who hath desired the Sea? Her excellent loneliness rather  
Than forecourts of kings, and her outermost pits than the  
streets where men gather

Inland, among dust, under trees—inland where the slayer  
may slay him—

Inland, out of reach of her arms, and the bosom whereon he  
must lay him—

His Sea from the first that betrayed—at the last that shall  
never betray him:

His Sea that his being fulfils?  
So and no otherwise—so and no otherwise—hillmen desire  
their Hills.

## ANCHOR SONG

1893

**H**EH! Walk her round. Heave, ah, heave her short  
again!

Over, snatch her over, there, and hold her on the pawl.  
Loose all sail, and brace your yards aback and full—

Ready jib to pay her off and heave short all!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Well, ah, fare you well; we can stay no more with you,  
my love—

Down, set down your liquor and your girl from off  
your knee;

For the wind has come to say:

“ You must take me while you may,

If you'd go to Mother Carey

(Walk her down to Mother Carey!),

Oh, we're bound to Mother Carey where she feeds her  
chicks at sea!”

Heh! Walk her round. Break, ah, break it out o' that!

Break our starboard-bower out, apeak, awash, and clear!  
Port—port she casts, with the harbour-mud beneath her  
foot.

And that's the last o' bottom we shall see this year!

Well, ah, fare you well, for we've got to take her out  
again—

Take her out in ballast, riding light and cargo-free.

And it's time to clear and quit

When the hawser grips the bitt,

So we'll pay you with the foresheet and a promise from  
the sea!

Heh! Tally on. Aft and walk away with her!

Handsome to the cathead, now; O tally on the fall!

Stop, seize and fish, and easy on the davit-guy.

Up, well up the fluke of her, and inboard haul!

Well, ah, fare you well, for the Channel wind's took hold  
of us,

Choking down our voices as we snatch the gaskets free.

And it's blowing up for night,

And she's dropping light on light,

And she's snorting as she's snatching for a breath of  
open sea!

Wheel, full and by; but she'll smell her road alone to-night.

Sick she is and harbour-sick—oh, sick to clear the land!

Roll down to Brest with the old Red Ensign over us—

Carry on and thrash her out with all she'll stand!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Well, ah, fare you well, and it's Ushant slams the door  
on us,  
Whirling like a windmill through the dirty scud to lee,  
Till the last, last flicker goes  
From the tumbling water-rows,  
And we're off to Mother Carey  
(Walk her down to Mother Carey!),  
Oh, we're bound for Mother Carey where she feeds her  
chicks at sea!

## THE RHYME OF THE THREE SEALERS

1893

*A*WAY by the lands of the Japanee  
Where the paper lanterns glow  
And the crews of all the shipping drink  
In the house of Blood Street Joe,  
At twilight, when the landward breeze  
Brings up the harbour noise,  
And ebb of Yokohama Bay  
Swigs chattering through the buoys,  
In Cisco's Dewdrop Dining Rooms  
They tell the tale anew  
Of a hidden sea and a hidden fight,  
When the Baltic ran from the Northern Light,  
And the Stralsund fought the two.

Now this is the Law of the Muscovite, that he proves with  
shot and steel,  
When you come by his isles in the Smoky Sea you must not  
take the seal,  
Where the grey sea goes nakedly between the weed-hung  
shelves,  
And the little blue fox he is bred for his skin and the seal they  
breed for themselves.  
For when the *matkas*<sup>1</sup> seek the shore to drop their pups  
aland,  
The great man-seal haul out of the sea, aroaring, band by  
band.

<sup>1</sup> She-seals.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And when the first September gales have slaked their rutting-  
 wrath,  
 The great man-seal haul back to the sea and no man knows  
 their path.  
 Then dark they lie and stark they lie—rookery, dune, and  
 floe,  
 And the Northern Lights come down o' nights to dance with  
 the houseless snow;  
 And God Who clears the grounding berg and steers the  
 grinding floe,  
 He hears the cry of the little kit-fox and the wind along the  
 snow.  
 But since our women must walk gay and money buys their  
 gear,  
 The sealing-boats they filch that way at hazard year by  
 year.  
 English they be and Japanee that hang on the Brown Bear's  
 flank,  
 And some be Scot, but the worst of the lot, and the boldest  
 thieves, be Yank!

It was the sealer *Northern Light*, to the Smoky Seas she  
 bore,  
 With a stovepipe stuck from a starboard port and the  
 Russian flag at her fore.  
 (*Baltic*, *Stralsund*, and *Northern Light*—oh! they were birds  
 of a feather—  
 Slipping away to the Smoky Seas, three seal-thieves to-  
 gether!)

And at last she came to a sandy cove and the *Baltic* lay  
 therein,  
 But her men were up with the herding seal to drive and club  
 and skin.  
 There were fifteen hundred skins abeach, cool pelt and proper  
 fur,  
 When the *Northern Light* drove into the bight and the sea-  
 mist drove with her.  
 The *Baltic* called her men and weighed—she could not  
 choose but run—  
 For a stovepipe seen through the closing mist, it shows like  
 a four-inch gun  
 (And loss it is that is sad as death to lose both trip and ship  
 And lie for a rotting contraband on Vladivostok slip).

DEFINITIVE EDITION

She turned and dived in the sea-smother as a rabbit dives in  
the whins,  
And the *Northern Light* sent up her boats to steal the stolen  
skins.  
They had not brought a load to side or slid their hatches  
clear,  
When they were aware of a sloop-of-war, ghost-white and  
very near.  
Her flag she showed, and her guns she showed—three of  
them, black, abeam,  
And a funnel white with the crusted salt, but never a show  
of steam.

There was no time to man the brakes, they knocked the  
shackle free,  
And the *Northern Light* stood out again, goose-winged to  
open sea.  
(For life it is that is worse than death, by force of Russian  
law,  
To work in the mines of mercury that loose the teeth in your  
jaw.)  
They had not run a mile from shore—they heard no shots  
behind—  
When the skipper smote his hand on his thigh and threw her  
up in the wind:  
“Bluffed—raised out on a bluff,” said he, “for if my  
name’s Tom Hall,  
“You must set a thief to catch a thief—and a thief has  
caught us all!  
“By every butt in Oregon and every spar in Maine,  
“The hand that spilled the wind from her sail was the hand  
of Reuben Paine!  
“He has rigged and trigged her with paint and spar, and,  
faith, he has faked her well—  
“But I’d know the *Stralsund’s* deckhouse yet from here to  
the booms o’ Hell.  
“Oh, once we ha’ met at Baltimore, and twice on Boston pier,  
“But the sickest day for you, Reuben Paine, was the day  
that you came here—  
“The day that you came here, my lad, to scare us from our  
seal  
“With your funnel made o’ your painted cloth, and your  
guns o’ rotten deal!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"Ring and blow for the *Baltic* now, and head her back to the bay,

"And we'll come into the game again—with a double deck to play!"

They rang and blew the sealers' call—the poaching-cry of the sea—

And they raised the *Baltic* out of the mist, and an angry ship was she.

And blind they groped through the whirling white and blind to the bay again,

Till they heard the creak of the *Stralsund's* boom and the clank of her mooring chain.

They laid them down by bitt and boat, their pistols in their belts,

And: "Will you fight for it, Reuben Paine, or will you share the pelts?"

A dog-toothed laugh laughed Reuben Paine, and bared his flenching-knife.

"Yea, skin for skin, and all that he hath a man will give for his life;

"But I've six thousand skins below, and Yeddo Port to see,

"And there's never a law of God or man runs north of Fifty-Three:

"So go in peace to the naked seas with empty holds to fill,

"And I'll be good to your seal this catch, as many as I shall kill!"

Answered the snap of a closing lock—the jar of a gun-butt slid,

But the tender fog shut fold on fold to hide the wrong they did.

The weeping fog rolled fold on fold the wrath of man to cloak,

As the flame-spurts pale ran down the rail and the sealing-rifles spoke.

The bullets bit on bend and butt, the splinter slivered free (Little they trust to sparrow-dust that stop the seal in his sea!),

The thick smoke hung and would not shift, leaden it lay and blue,

But three were down on the *Baltic's* deck and two of the *Stralsund's* crew.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

An arm's length out and overside the banked fog held them  
bound,  
But, as they heard or groan or word, they fired at the  
sound.  
For one cried out on the Name of God, and one to have him  
cease,  
And the questing volley found them both and bade them hold  
their peace.  
And one called out on a heathen joss and one on the Virgin's  
Name,  
And the schooling bullet leaped across and led them whence  
they came.  
And in the waiting silences the rudder whined beneath,  
And each man drew his watchful breath slow-taken 'tween  
the teeth—  
Trigger and ear and eye acock, knit brow and hard-drawn  
lips—  
Bracing his feet by chock and cleat for the rolling of the  
ships.  
Till they heard the cough of a wounded man that fought in  
the fog for breath,  
Till they heard the torment of Reuben Paine that wailed  
upon his death:

"The tides they'll go through Fundy Race, but I'll go never  
more  
"And see the hogs from ebb-tide mark turn scampering back  
to shore.  
"No more I'll see the trawlers drift below the Bass Rock  
ground,  
"Or watch the tall Fall steamer lights tear blazing up the  
Sound.  
"Sorrow is me, in a lonely sea and a sinful fight I fall,  
"But if there's law o' God or man you'll swing for it yet, Tom  
Hall!"

Tom Hall stood up by the quarter-rail. "Your words in  
your teeth," said he.  
"There's never a law of God or man runs north of Fifty-  
Three.  
"So go in grace with Him to face, and an ill-spent life behind,  
"And I'll be good to your widows, Rube, as many as I shall  
find."

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

A *Stralsund* man shot blind and large, and a warlock Finn  
was he,

And he hit Tom Hall with a bursting ball a hand's-breadth  
over the knee.

Tom Hall caught hold by the topping-lift, and sat him down  
with an oath,

"You'll wait a little, Rube," he said, "the Devil has called  
for both.

"The Devil is driving both this tide, and the killing-grounds  
are close,

"And we'll go up to the Wrath of God as the holluschickie<sup>1</sup>  
goes.

"O men, put back your guns again and lay your rifles by,

"We've fought our fight, and the best are down. Let up and  
let us die!

"Quit firing, by the bow there—quit! Call off the *Baltic's*  
crew!

"You're sure of Hell as me or Rube—but wait till we get  
through."

There went no word between the ships, but thick and quick  
and loud

The life-blood drummed on the dripping decks, with the fog-  
dew from the shroud.

The sea-pull drew them side by side, gunnel to gunnel laid,  
And they felt the sheer-strakes pound and clear, but never a  
word was said.

Then Reuben Paine cried out again before his spirit passed:

"Have I followed the sea for thirty years to die in the dark  
at last?

"Curse on her work that has nipped me here with a shifty  
trick unkind—

"I have gotten my death where I got my bread, but I dare  
not face it blind.

"Curse on the fog! Is there never a wind of all the winds I  
knew

"To clear the smother from off my chest, and let me look at  
the blue?"

The good fog heard—like a splitten sail, to left and right she  
tore,

And they saw the sun-dogs in the haze and the seal upon the  
shore.

<sup>1</sup> The young seal.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Silver and grey ran spit and bay to meet the steel-backed  
tide,

And pinched and white in the clearing light the crews stared  
overside.

O rainbow-gay the red pools lay that swilled and spilled and  
spread,

And gold, raw gold, the spent shells rolled between the care-  
less dead—

The dead that rocked so drunkenwise to weather and to lee,  
And they saw the work their hands had done as God had bade  
them see!

And a little breeze blew over the rail that made the headsails  
lift,

But no man stood by wheel or sheet, and they let the  
schooners drift.

And the rattle rose in Reuben's throat and he cast his soul  
with a cry,

And "Gone already?" Tom Hall he said. "Then it's time  
for me to die."

His eyes were heavy with great sleep and yearning for the  
land,

And he spoke as a man that talks in dreams, his wound be-  
neath his hand.

"Oh, there comes no good o' the westering wind that backs  
against the sun;

"Wash down the decks—they're all too red—and share the  
skins and run.

"*Baltic*, *Stralsund*, and *Northern Light*—clean share and  
share for all,

"You'll find the fleets off Tolstoi Mees, but you will not find  
Tom Hall.

"Evil he did in shoal-water and blacker sin on the deep,

"But now he's sick of watch and trick and now he'll turn and  
sleep.

"He'll have no more of the crawling sea that made him suffer  
so,

"But he'll lie down on the killing-grounds where the hollus-  
chickie go.

"And west you'll sail and south again, beyond the sea-fog's  
rim,

"And tell the Yoshiwara girls to burn a stick for him.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

" And you'll not weight him by the heels and dump him over-  
side,  
" But carry him up to the sand-hollows to die as Bering died,  
" And make a place for Reuben Paine that knows the fight  
was fair,  
" And leave the two that did the wrong to talk it over there!"

*Half-steam ahead by guess and lead, for the sun is mostly veiled—  
Through fog to fog, by luck and log, sail you as Bering sailed;  
And if the light shall lift aright to give your landfall plain,  
North and by west, from Zapne Crest you raise the Crosses  
twain.*

*Fair marks are they to the inner bay, the reckless poacher knows,  
What time the scarred see-catchie<sup>1</sup> lead their sleek seraglios.  
Ever they hear the floe-pack clear, and the blast of the old bull-  
whale,*

*And the deep seal-roar that beats off-shore above the loudest gale.  
Ever they wait the winter's hate as the thundering boorga<sup>2</sup> calls,  
Where northward look they to St. George, and westward to St.  
Paul's.*

*Ever they greet the hunted fleet—lone keels off headlands drear—  
When the sealing-schooners flit that way at hazard year by year.  
Ever in Yokohama port men tell the tale anew*

*Of a hidden sea and a hidden fight,  
When the Baltic ran from the Northern Light,  
And the Stralsund fought the two.*

## McANDREW'S HYMN

1893

**L**ORD, Thou hast made this world below the shadow of  
a dream,  
An', taught by time, I tak' it so—exceptin' always Steam.  
From coupler-flange to spindle-guide I see Thy Hand, O  
God—  
Predestination in the stride o' yon connectin'-rod.  
John Calvin might ha' forged the same—enormous, certain,  
slow—  
Ay, wrought it in the furnace-flame—*my* "Institutio."

<sup>1</sup> The male seal.

<sup>2</sup> Hurricane.

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

I cannot get my sleep to-night; old bones are hard to please;  
I'll stand the middle watch up here—alone wi' God an' these  
My engines, after ninety days o' race an' rack an' strain  
Through all the seas of all Thy world, slam-bangin' home  
again.

Slam-bang too much—they knock a wee—the crosshead-  
gibs are loose,

But thirty thousand mile o' sea has gied them fair ex-  
cuse. . . .

Fine, clear an' dark—a full-draught breeze, wi' Ushant out  
o' sight,

An' Ferguson relievin' Hay. Old girl, ye'll walk to-night!  
His wife's at Plymouth. . . . Seventy—One—Two—Three  
since he began—

Three turns for Mistress Ferguson . . . and who's to  
blame the man?

There's none at any port for me, by drivin' fast or slow,  
Since Elsie Campbell went to Thee, Lord, thirty years ago.  
(The year the *Sarah Sands* was burned. Oh, roads we used  
to tread,

Fra' Maryhill to Pollokshaws—fra' Govan to Parkhead!)  
Not but they're ceevil on the Board. Ye'll hear Sir Kenneth  
say:

“Good mornn, McAndrew! Back again? An' how's your  
bilge to-day?”

Miscallin' technicalities but handin' me my chair  
To drink Madeira wi' three Earls—the auld Fleet Engineer  
That started as a boiler-whelp—when steam and he were  
low.

I mind the time we used to serve a broken pipe wi' tow!  
Ten pound was all the pressure then—Eh! Eh!—a man  
wad drive;

An' here, our workin' gauges give one hunder sixty-five!  
We're creepin' on wi' each new rig—less weight an' larger  
power;

There'll be the loco-boiler next an' thirty mile an hour!  
Thirty an' more. What I ha' seen since ocean-steam began  
Leaves me na doot for the machine: but what about the  
man?

The man that counts, wi' all his runs, one million mile o'  
sea:

Four time the span from earth to moon. . . . How far,  
O Lord, from Thee



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

That wast beside him night an' day? Ye mind my first typhoon?

It scoughed the skipper on his way to jock wi' the saloon.  
Three feet were on the stokehold-floor—just slappin' to an' fro—

An' cast me on a furnace-door. I have the marks to show.  
Marks! I ha' marks o' more than burns—deep in my soul  
an' black,

An' times like this, when things go smooth, my wickud-ness comes back.

The sins o' four an' forty years, all up an' down the seas,  
Clack an' repeat like valves half-fed. . . . Forgie's our trespasses!

Nights when I'd come on deck to mark, wi' envy in my gaze,

The couples kittlin' in the dark between the funnel-stays;  
Years when I raked the Ports wi' pride to fill my cup o' wrong—

Judge not, O Lord, my steps aside at Gay Street in Hong-Kong!

Blot out the wastrel hours of mine in sin when I abode—  
Jane Harrigan's an' Number Nine, The Reddick an' Grant Road!

An' waur than all—my crownin' sin—rank blasphemy an' wild.

I was not four and twenty then—Ye wadna judge a child?  
I'd seen the Tropics first that run—new fruit, new smells,  
new air—

How could I tell—blind-fou wi' sun—the Deil was lurkin' there?

By day like playhouse-scenes the shore slid past our sleepy eyes;

By night those soft, lasceevious stars leered from those velvet skies,

In port (we used no cargo-steam) I'd daunder down the streets—

An' ijjit grinnin' in a dream—for shells an' parrakeets,  
An' walkin'-sticks o' carved bamboo an' blowfish stuffed an' dried—

Fillin' my bunk wi' rubbishry the Chief put overside.  
Till, off Sambahwa Head, Ye mind, I heard a land-breeze ca',  
Milk-warm wi' breath o' spice an' bloom: "McAndrew, come awa'!"

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Firm, clear an' low—no haste, no hate—the ghostly whisper  
went,

Just statin' evidential facts beyon' all argument:

"Your mither's God's a graspin' deil, the shadow o' yoursel',  
"Got out o' books by meenisters clean daft on Heaven an'  
Hell.

"They mak' him in the Broomielaw, o' Glasgie cold an'  
dirt,

"A jealous, pridefu' fetich, lad, that's only strong to hurt.

"Ye'll not go back to Him again an' kiss His red-hot rod,

"But come wi' Us" (Now, who were *They*?) "an' know the  
Leevin' God,

"That does not kipper souls for sport or break a life in jest,

"But swells the ripenin' cocoanuts an' ripes the woman's  
breast."

An' there it stopped—cut off—no more—that quiet, certain  
voice—

For me, six months o' twenty-four, to leave or take at choice.

'Twas on me like a thunderclap—it racked me through an'  
through—

Temptation past the show o' speech, unnameable an' new—

The Sin against the Holy Ghost? . . . An' under all, our  
screw.

That storm blew by but left behind her anchor-shiftin' swell.  
Thou knowest all my heart an' mind, Thou knowest, Lord, I  
fell—

Third on the *Mary Gloster* then, and first that night in  
Hell!

Yet was Thy Hand beneath my head, about my feet Thy  
Care—

Fra' Deli clear to Torres Strait, the trial o' despair,

But when we touched the Barrier Reef Thy answer to my  
prayer! . . .

We dared na run that sea by night but lay an' held our fire,  
An' I was drowsin' on the hatch—sick—sick wi' doubt an'  
tire:

"*Better the sight of eyes that see than wanderin' o' desire!*"

Ye mind that word? Clear as our gongs—again, an' once  
again,

When rippin' down through coral-trash ran out our moorin'-  
chain:

An', by Thy Grace, I had the Light to see my duty plain.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Light on the engine-room—no more—bright as our carbons  
burn.

I've lost it since a thousand times, but never past return!

Obsairve! Per annum we'll have here two thousand souls  
aboard—

Think not I dare to justify myself before the Lord,  
But—average fifteen hunder souls safe-borne fra' port to  
port—

I am o' service to my kind. Ye wadna blame the thought?  
Maybe they steam from Grace to Wrath—to sin by folly led—  
It isna mine to judge their path—their lives are on my head.  
Mine at the last—when all is done it all comes back to me,  
The fault that leaves six thousand ton a log upon the sea.  
We'll tak' one stretch—three weeks an' odd by ony road ye  
steer—

Fra' Cape Town east to Wellington—ye need an engineer.  
Fail there—ye've time to weld your shaft—ay, eat it, ere  
ye're spoke;

Or make Kerguelen under sail—three jiggers burned wi'  
smoke!

An' home again—the Rio run: it's no child's play to go  
Steamin' to bell for fourteen days o' snow an' floe an' blow.  
The bergs like kelpies overside that girn an' turn an' shift  
Whaur, grindin' like the Mills o' God, goes by the big South  
drift.

(Hail, Snow and Ice that praise the Lord. I've met them  
at their work,

An' wished we had anither route or they anither kirk.)  
Yon's strain, hard strain, o' head an' hand, for though Thy  
Power brings

All skill to naught, Ye'll understand a man must think o'  
things.

Then, at the last, we'll get to port an' hoist their baggage  
clear—

The passengers, wi' gloves an' canes—an' this is what I'll  
hear:

“ Well, thank ye for a pleasant voyage. The tender's comin'  
now.”

While I go testin' follower-bolts an' watch the skipper bow.  
They've words for every one but me—shake hands wi' half  
the crew,

Except the dour Scots engineer, the man they never knew.

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

An' yet I like the wark for all we've dam'-few pickin's  
here—

No pension, an' the most we'll earn 's four hunder pound a  
year.

Better myself abroad? Maybe. *I'd* sooner starve than sail  
Wi' such as call a snifter-rod *ross*. . . . French for  
nightingale.

Commeession on my stores? Some do; but I cannot afford  
To lie like stewards wi' patty-pans. I'm older than the  
Board.

A bonus on the coal I save? Ou ay, the Scots are close,  
But when I grudge the strength Ye gave I'll grudge their  
food to *those*.

(There's bricks that I might recommend—an' clink the fire-  
bars cruel.

No! Welsh—Wangarti at the worst—an' damn all patent  
fuel!)

Inventions? Ye must stay in port to mak' a patent pay.  
My Deferential Valve-Gear taught me how that business  
lay.

I blame no chaps wi' clearer heads for aught they make or  
sell.

I found that I could not invent an' look to these as well.

So, wrestled wi' Apollyon—Nah!—fretted like a bairn—

But burned the workin'-plans last run, wi' all I hoped to earn.

Ye know how hard an Idol dies, an' what that meant to me—

E'en tak' it for a sacrifice acceptable to Thee. . . .

*Below there! Oiler! What's your wark? Ye find it  
runnin' hard?*

*Ye needn't swill the cup wi' oil—this isn't the Cunard!*

*Ye thought? Ye are not paid to think. Go, sweat that off  
again!*

Tck! Tck! It's deeficult to sweer nor tak' The Name in  
vain!

Men, ay, an' women, call me stern. Wi' these to oversee,

Ye'll note I've little time to burn on social repatee.

The bairns see what their elders miss; they'll hunt me to  
an' fro,

Till for the sake of—well, a kiss—I tak' 'em down below.

That minds me of our Viscount loon—Sir Kenneth's kin—  
the chap

Wi' Russia-leather tennis-shoon an' spar-decked yachtin'-  
cap.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I showed him round last week, o'er all—an' at the last says  
he:

"Mister McAndrew, don't you think steam spoils romance  
at sea?"

Damned ijjit! I'd been doon that morn to see what ailed  
the throws,

Manholin', on my back—the cranks three inches off my nose.

Romance! Those first-class passengers they like it very  
well,

Printed an' bound in little books; but why don't poets  
tell?

I'm sick of all their quirks an' turns—the loves an' doves  
they dream—

Lord, send a man like Robbie Burns to sing the Song o'  
Steam!

To match wi' Scotia's noblest speech yon orchestra sublime  
Whaurto—uplifted like the Just—the tail-rods mark the  
time.

The crank-throws give the double-bass, the feed-pump sobs  
an' heaves,

An' now the main eccentrics start their quarrel on the  
sheaves:

Her time, her own appointed time, the rocking link-head  
bides,

Till—hear that note?—the rod's return whings glimmerin'  
through the guides.

They're all awa'! True beat, full power, the clangin' chorus  
goes

Clear to the tunnel where they sit, my purrin' dynamoes.

Interdependence absolute, foreseen, ordained, decreed,

To work, Ye'll note, at ony tilt an' every rate o' speed.

Fra' skylight-lift to furnace-bars, backed, bolted, braced an'  
stayed,

An' singin' like the Mornin' Stars for joy that they are made;

While, out o' touch o' vanity, the sweatin' thrust-block  
says:

"Not unto us the praise, or man—not unto us the praise!"

Now, a' together, hear them lift their lesson—theirs an'  
mine:

"Law, Orrder, Duty an' Restraint, Obedience, Discipline!"

Mill, forge an' try-pit taught them that when roarin' they  
arose,

An' whiles I wonder if a soul was gied them wi' the blows.

## D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

Oh for a man to weld it then, in one trip-hammer strain,  
 Till even first-class passengers could tell the meanin' plain!  
 But no one cares except mysel' that serve an' understand  
 My seven thousand horse-power here. Eh, Lord! They're  
     grand—they're grand!  
 Uplift am I? When first in store the new-made beasties  
     stood,  
 Were Ye cast down that breathed the Word declarin' all  
     things good?  
 Not so! O' that warld-liftin' joy no after-fall could vex,  
 Ye've left a glimmer still to cheer the Man—the Arrtifex!  
*That* holds, in spite o' knock and scale, o' friction, waste an'  
     slip,  
 An' by that light—now, mark my word—we'll build the  
     Perfect Ship.  
 I'll never last to judge her lines or take her curve—not I.  
 But I ha' lived an' I ha' worked. Be thanks to Thee, Most  
     High!  
 An' I ha' done what I ha' done—judge Thou if ill or well—  
 Always Thy Grace preventin' me. . . .  
     Losh! Yon's the “Stand-by” bell.  
 Pilot so soon? His flare it is. The mornin'-watch is set.  
 Well, God be thanked, as I was sayin', I'm no Pelagian yet.  
 Now I'll tak' on. . . .  
*'Morrn, Ferguson. Man, have ye ever thought*  
*What your good leddy costs in coal? . . . I'll burn 'em down*  
     *to port.*

## MULHOLLAND'S CONTRACT

1894

**T**HE fear was on the cattle, for the gale was on the sea,  
 An' the pens broke up on the lower deck an' let the  
     creatures free—  
 An' the lights went out on the lower deck, an' no one near but  
     me.  
 I had been singin' to them to keep 'em quiet there,  
 For the lower deck is the dangerousest, requirin' constant care,  
 An' give to me as the strongest man, though used to drink  
     and swear.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I seed my chance was certain of bein' horned or trod,  
For the lower deck was packed with steers thicker'n peas  
in a pod,  
An' more pens broke at every roll—so I made a Contract  
with God.

An' by the terms of the Contract, as I have read the same,  
If He got me to port alive I would exalt His Name,  
An' praise His Holy Majesty till further orders came.

He saved me from the cattle an' He saved me from the sea,  
For they found me 'tween two drowned ones where the roll  
had landed me—  
An' a four-inch crack on top of my head, as crazy as could be.

But that were done by a stanchion, an' not by a bullock at all,  
An' I lay still for seven weeks convalescing of the fall,  
An' readin' the shiny Scripture texts in the Seaman's  
Hospital.

An' I spoke to God of our Contract, an' He says to my  
prayer:

"I never puts on My ministers no more than they can bear.  
"So back you go to the cattle-boats an' preach My Gospel  
there.

"For human life is chancy at any kind of trade,  
"But most of all, as well you know, when the steers are mad-  
afraid;  
"So you go back to the cattle-boats an' preach 'em as I've  
said.

"They must quit drinkin' an' swearin', they mustn't knife on  
a blow,  
"They must quit gamblin' their wages, and you must preach  
it so;  
"For now those boats are more like Hell than anything else  
I know."

I didn't want to do it, for I knew what I should get;  
An' I wanted to preach Religion, handsome an' out of the wet;  
But the Word of the Lord were laid on me, an' I done what I  
was set.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

I have been smit an' bruised, as warned would be the case,  
An' turned my cheek to the smiter exactly as Scripture says;  
But, following that, I knocked him down an' led him up to  
Grace.

An' we have preaching on Sundays whenever the sea is calm,  
An' I use no knife or pistol an' I never take no harm;  
For the Lord abideth back of me to guide my fighting arm.

An' I sign for four-pound-ten a month and save the money  
clear,  
An' I am in charge of the lower deck, an' I never lose a steer;  
An' I believe in Almighty God an' I preach His Gospel here.

The skippers say I'm crazy, but I can prove 'em wrong,  
For I am in charge of the lower deck with all that doth  
belong—  
*Which they would not give to a lunatic, and the competition  
so strong!*

## THE "MARY GLOSTER"

1894

I've paid for your sickest fancies; I've humoured your  
crackedest whim—  
Dick, it's your daddy, dying; you've got to listen to him!  
Good for a fortnight, am I? The doctor told you? He  
lied.  
I shall go under by morning, and—— Put that nurse out-  
side.  
'Never seen death yet, Dickie? Well, now is your time to  
learn,  
And you'll wish you held my record before it comes to your  
turn.  
Not counting the Line and the Foundry, the Yards and the  
village, too,  
I've made myself and a million; but I'm damned if I made  
you.  
Master at two-and-twenty, and married at twenty-three—  
Ten thousand men on the pay-roll, and forty freighters at  
sea!



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Fifty years between 'em, and every year of it fight,  
And now I'm Sir Anthony Gloster, dying, a baronite:  
For I lunched with his Royal 'Ighness—what was it the  
papers had?

"Not least of our merchant-princes." Dickie, that's me,  
your dad!

I didn't begin with askings. I took my job and I stuck;  
I took the chances they wouldn't, an' now they're calling it  
luck.

Lord, what boats I've handled—rotten and leaky and old—  
Ran 'em, or—opened the bilge-cock, precisely as I was told.  
Grub that 'ud bind you crazy, and crews that 'ud turn you  
grey,

And a big fat lump of insurance to cover the risk on the way.  
The others they dursn't do it; they said they valued their  
life

(They've served me since as skippers). I went, and I took  
my wife.

Over the world I drove 'em, married at twenty-three,  
And your mother saving the money and making a man of me.  
I was content to be master, but she said there was better  
behind;

She took the chances I wouldn't, and I followed your mother  
blind.

She egged me to borrow the money, an' she helped me to  
clear the loan,

When we bought half-shares in a cheap 'un and hoisted a flag  
of our own.

Patching and coaling on credit, and living the Lord knew  
how,

We started the Red Ox freighters—we've eight-and-thirty  
now.

And those were the days of clippers, and the freights were  
clipper-freights,

And we knew we were making our fortune, but she died in  
Macassar Straits—

By the Little Paternosters, as you come to the Union Bank—  
And we dropped her in fourteen fathom: I pricked it off  
where she sank.

Owners we were, full owners, and the boat was christened for  
her,

And she died in the *Mary Gloster*. My heart, how young  
we were!

# D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

So I went on a spree round Java and well-nigh ran her ashore,  
But your mother came and warned me and I wouldn't liquor  
no more:

Strict I stuck to my business, afraid to stop or I'd think,  
Saving the money (she warned me), and letting the other men  
drink.

And I met M'Cullough in London (I'd saved five 'undred  
then),

And 'tween us we started the Foundry—three forges and  
twenty men.

Cheap repairs for the cheap 'uns. It paid, and the business  
grew;

For I bought me a steam-lathe patent, and that was a gold  
mine too.

"Cheaper to build 'em than buy 'em," *I* said, but  
M'Cullough he shied,

And we wasted a year in talking before we moved to the  
Clyde.

And the Lines were all beginning, and we all of us started  
fair,

Building our engines like houses and staying the boilers  
square.

But M'Cullough 'e wanted cabins with marble and maple  
and all,

And Brussels an' Utrecht velvet, and baths and a Social Hall,  
And pipes for closets all over, and cutting the frames too  
light,

But M'Cullough he died in the Sixties, and—— Well, I'm  
dying to-night. . . .

I knew—I knew what was coming, when we bid on the  
*Byfleet's* keel—

They piddled and piffled with iron. I'd given my orders for  
steel!

Steel and the first expansions. It paid, I tell you, it paid,  
When we came with our nine-knot freighters and collared the  
long-run trade!

And they asked me how I did it, and I gave 'em the Scripture  
text,

"You keep your light so shining a little in front o' the  
next!"

They copied all they could follow, but they couldn't copy my  
mind,

And I left 'em sweating and stealing a year and a half behind.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Then came the armour-contracts, but that was M'Cullough's side;  
 He was always best in the Foundry, but better, perhaps, he died.  
 I went through his private papers; the notes was plainer than print;  
 And I'm no fool to finish if a man'll give me a hint.  
 (I remember his widow was angry.) So I saw what his drawings meant,  
 And I started the six-inch rollers, and it paid me sixty per cent.  
 Sixty per cent *with* failures, and more than twice we could do,  
 And a quarter-million to credit, and I saved it all for you!  
 I thought—it doesn't matter—you seemed to favour your ma,  
 But you're nearer forty than thirty, and I know the kind you are.  
 Harrer an' Trinity College! I ought to ha' sent you to sea—  
 But I stood you an education, an' what have you done for me?  
 The things I knew was proper you wouldn't thank me to give,  
 And the things I knew was rotten you said was the way to live.  
 For you muddled with books and pictures, an' china an' etchin's an' fans,  
 And your rooms at college was beastly—more like a whore's than a man's;  
 Till you married that thin-flanked woman, as white and as stale as a bone,  
 An' she gave you your social nonsense; but where's that kid o' your own?  
 I've seen your carriages blocking the half o' the Cromwell Road,  
 But never the doctor's brougham to help the missus unload.  
 (So there isn't even a grandchild, an' the Gloster family's done.)  
 Not like your mother, she isn't. *She* carried her freight each run.  
 But they died, the pore little beggars! At sea she had 'em—  
 —they died.  
 Only you, an' you stood it. You haven't stood much beside.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Weak, a liar, and idle, and mean as a collier's whelp  
Nosing for scraps in the galley. No help—my son was no  
help!  
So he gets three 'undred thousand, in trust and the interest  
paid.  
I wouldn't give it you, Dickie—you see, I made it in trade.  
You're saved from soiling your fingers, and if you have no  
child,  
It all comes back to the business. 'Gad, won't your wife be  
wild!  
'Calls and calls in her carriage, her 'andkerchief up to 'er eye:  
"Daddy! dear daddy's dyin'!" and doing her best to cry.  
Grateful? Oh, yes, I'm grateful, but keep her away from  
here.  
Your mother 'ud never ha' stood 'er, and, anyhow, women  
are queer. . . .  
There's women will say I've married a second time. Not  
quite!  
But give pore Aggie a hundred, and tell her your lawyers'll  
fight.  
She was the best o' the boiling—you'll meet her before it  
ends.  
I'm in for a row with the mother—I'll leave you settle my  
friends.  
For a man he must go with a woman, which women don't  
understand—  
Or the sort that say they can see it they aren't the marrying  
brand.  
But I wanted to speak o' your mother that's Lady Gloster  
still;  
I'm going to up and see her, without its hurting the will.  
Here! Take your hand off the bell-pull. Five thousand's  
waiting for you,  
If you'll only listen a minute, and do as I bid you do.  
They'll try to prove me crazy, and, if you bungle, they can;  
And I've only you to trust to! (O God, why ain't it a man?)  
There's some waste money on marbles, the same as  
M'Cullough tried—  
Marbles and mausoleums—but I call that sinful pride.  
There's some ship bodies for burial—we've carried 'em,  
soldered and packed;  
Down in their wills they wrote it, and nobody called *them*  
cracked.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

But me—I've too much money, and people might . . .

All my fault:

It come o' hoping for grandsons and buying that Wokin'  
vault. . . .

I'm sick o' the 'ole dam' business. I'm going back where I  
came.

Dick, you're the son o' my body, and you'll take charge o'  
the same!

I want to lie by your mother, ten thousand mile away,  
And they'll want to send me to Woking; and that's where  
you'll earn your pay.

I've thought it out on the quiet, the same as it ought to be  
done—

Quiet, and decent, and proper—an' here's your orders, my  
son.

You know the Line? You don't, though. You write to the  
Board, and tell

Your father's death has upset you an' you're goin' to cruise  
for a spell,

An' you'd like the *Mary Gloster*—I've held her ready for  
this—

They'll put her in working order and you'll take her out as  
she is.

Yes, it was money idle when I patched her and laid her  
aside

(Thank God, I can pay for my fancies!)—the boat where  
your mother died,

By the Little Paternosters, as you come to the Union Bank,  
We dropped her—I think I told you—and I pricked it off  
where she sank.

['Tiny she looked on the grating—that oily, treacly sea—]

Hundred and Eighteen East, remember, and South just  
Three.

Easy bearings to carry—Three South—Three to the dot;

But I gave McAndrew a copy in case of dying—or not.

And so you'll write to McAndrew, he's Chief of the Maori  
Line;

They'll give him leave, if you ask 'em and say it's business  
o' mine.

I built three boats for the Maoris, an' very well pleased they  
were,

An' I've known Mac since the Fifties, and Mac knew me—  
and her.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

After the first stroke warned me I sent him the money to  
keep  
Against the time you'd claim it, committin' your dad to the  
deep;  
For you are the son o' my body, and Mac was my oldest  
friend,  
I've never asked 'im to dinner, but he'll see it out to the end.  
Stiff-necked Glasgow beggar! I've heard he's prayed for  
my soul,  
But he couldn't lie if you paid him, and he'd starve before he  
stole.  
He'll take the *Mary* in ballast—you'll find her a lively ship;  
And you'll take Sir Anthony Gloster, that goes on 'is wedding-  
trip,  
Lashed in our old deck-cabin with all three port-holes wide,  
The kick o' the screw beneath him and the round blue seas  
outside!  
Sir Anthony Gloster's carriage—our 'ouse-flag flyin' free—  
Ten thousand men on the pay-roll and forty freighters at  
sea!  
He made himself and a million, but this world is a fleetin'  
show,  
And he'll go to the wife of 'is bosom the same as he ought to  
go—  
By the heel of the Paternosters—there isn't a chance to  
mistake—  
And Mac'll pay you the money as soon as the bubbles break!  
Five thousand for six weeks' cruising, the staunchest freighter  
afloat,  
And Mac he'll give you your bonus the minute I'm out o' the  
boat!  
He'll take you round to Macassar, and you'll come back  
alone;  
He knows what I want o' the *Mary*. . . . I'll do what I  
please with my own.  
Your mother 'ud call it wasteful, but I've seven-and-thirty  
more;  
I'll come in my private carriage and bid it wait at the  
door. . . .  
For my son 'e was never a credit: 'e muddled with books  
and art,  
And 'e lived on Sir Anthony's money and 'e broke Sir  
Anthony's heart.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There isn't even a grandchild, and the Gloster family's done—

The only one you left me—O mother, the only one!  
Harrer and Trinity College—me slavin' early an' late—  
An' he thinks I'm dying crazy, and you're in Macassar Strait!

Flesh o' my flesh, my dearie, for ever an' ever amen,  
That first stroke come for a warning. I ought to ha' gone to you then.

But—cheap repairs for a cheap 'un—the doctors said I'd do.  
Mary, why didn't *you* warn me? I've allus heeded to you,  
Excep'—I know—about women; but you are a spirit now;  
An', wife, they was only women, and I was a man. That's how.

An' a man 'e must go with a woman, as you *could* not understand;

But I never talked 'em secrets. I paid 'em out o' hand.  
Thank Gawd, I can pay for my fancies! Now what's five thousand to me,

For a berth off the Paternosters in the haven where I would be?

I believe in the Resurrection, if I read my Bible plain,  
But I wouldn't trust 'em at Wokin'; we're safer at sea again.  
For the heart it shall go with the treasure—go down to the sea in ships.

I'm sick of the hired women. I'll kiss my girl on her lips!  
I'll be content with my fountain. I'll drink from my own well,

And the wife of my youth shall charm me—an' the rest can go to Hell!

(Dickie, *he* will, that's certain.) I'll lie in our standin'-bed,  
An' Mac'll take her in ballast—an' she trims best by the head. . . .

Down by the head an' sinkin', her fires are drawn and cold,  
And the water's splashin' hollow on the skin of the empty hold—

Churning an' choking and chuckling, quiet and scummy and dark—

Full to her lower hatches and risin' steady. Hark!  
That was the after-bulkhead. . . . She's flooded from stern to stern. . . .

'Never seen death yet, Dickie? . . . Well, now is your time to learn!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE BALLAD OF THE "BOLIVAR"

1890

*SEVEN men from all the world back to Docks again,  
Rolling down the Ratcliffe Road drunk and raising Cain.  
Give the girls another drink 'fore we sign away—  
We that took the Bolivar out across the Bay!*

We put out from Sunderland loaded down with rails;  
We put back to Sunderland 'cause our cargo shifted;  
We put out from Sunderland—met the winter gales—  
Seven days and seven nights to The Start we drifted.

Racketing her rivets loose, smoke-stack white as snow,  
All the coals adrift adeck, half the rails below,  
Leaking like a lobster-pot, steering like a dray—  
Out we took the *Bolivar*, out across the Bay!

One by one the Lights came up, winked and let us by;  
Mile by mile we waddled on, coal and fo'c'sle short;  
Met a blow that laid us down, heard a bulkhead fly;  
Left The Wolf behind us with a two-foot list to port.

Trailing like a wounded duck, working out her soul;  
Clanging like a smithy-shop after every roll;  
Just a funnel and a mast lurching through the spray—  
So we threshed the *Bolivar* out across the Bay!

Felt her hog and felt her sag, betted when she'd break;  
Wondered every time she raced if she'd stand the shock;  
Heard the seas like drunken men pounding at her strake;  
Hoped the Lord 'ud keep His thumb on the plummer-  
block!

Banged against the iron decks, bilges choked with coal;  
Flayed and frozen foot and hand, sick of heart and soul;  
'Last we prayed she'd buck herself into Judgment Day—  
Hi! we cursed the *Bolivar* knocking round the Bay!

O her nose flung up to sky, groaning to be still—  
Up and down and back we went, never time for breath;  
Then the money paid at Lloyds' caught her by the keel,  
And the stars ran round and round dancin' at our death!



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Aching for an hour's sleep, dozing off between:  
'Heard the rotten rivets draw when she took it green;  
'Watched the compass chase its tail like a cat at play—  
That was on the *Bolivar*, south across the Bay!

Once we saw between the squalls, lyin' head to swell—  
Mad with work and weariness, wishin' they was we—  
Some damned Liner's lights go by like a grand hotel;  
'Cheered her from the *Bolivar* swampin' in the sea.

Then a greybeard cleared us out, then the skipper  
laughed;  
"Boys, the wheel has gone to Hell—rig the winches aft!  
"Yoke the kicking rudder-head—get her under way!"  
So we steered her, pully-haul, out across the Bay!

Just a pack o' rotten plates puttied up with tar,  
In we came, an' time enough, 'cross Bilbao Bar.  
Overloaded, undermanned, meant to founder, we  
Euchred God Almighty's storm, bluffed the Eternal Sea!

*Seven men from all the world back to town again,  
Rollin' down the Ratcliffe Road drunk and raising Cain:  
Seven men from out of Hell. Ain't the owners gay,  
Cause we took the "Bolivar" safe across the Bay?*

## THE BALLAD OF THE "CLAMPHERDOWN"

1892

*This was originally written for the "St. James's Gazette" as a deliberate skit on a letter by a correspondent who seemed to believe that naval warfare of the future would be conducted on the old Nelsonic battle lines, including boarding, etc. By some accident it was treated from the first as a serious contribution—was even, if I remember rightly, set to music as a cantata. I never explained this till now.*

IT WAS our war-ship *Clampherdown*  
Would sweep the Channel clean,  
Wherefore she kept her hatches close  
When the merry Channel chops arose,  
To save the bleached Marine.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

She had one bow-gun of a hundred ton  
And a great stern-gun beside.  
They dipped their noses deep in the sea,  
They racked their stays and stanchions free  
In the wash of the wind-whipped tide.

It was our war-ship *Clampherdown*  
Fell in with a cruiser light  
That carried the dainty Hotchkiss gun  
And a pair of heels wherewith to run  
From the grip of a close-fought fight.

She opened fire at seven miles—  
As ye shoot at a bobbing cork—  
And once she fired and twice she fired,  
Till the bow-gun dropped like a lily tired  
That lolls upon the stalk.

“ Captain, the bow-gun melts apace,  
“ The deck-beams break below,  
“ ’Twere well to rest for an hour or twain,  
“ And botch the shattered plates again.”  
And he answered, “ Make it so.”

She opened fire within the mile—  
As ye shoot at the flying duck—  
And the great stern-gun shot fair and true,  
With the heave of the ship, to the stainless blue,  
And the great stern-turret stuck.

“ Captain, the turret fills with steam,  
“ The feed-pipes burst below—  
“ You can hear the hiss of the helpless ram,  
“ You can hear the twisted runners jam.”  
And he answered, “ Turn and go!”

It was our war-ship *Clampherdown*,  
And grimly did she roll;  
Swung round to take the cruiser’s fire  
As the White Whale faces the Thresher’s ire  
When they war by the frozen Pole.

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

" Captain, the shells are falling fast.  
" And faster still fall we;  
" And it is not meet for English stock  
" To bide in the heart of an eight-day clock  
" The death they cannot see."

" Lie down, lie down, my bold A. B.,  
" We drift upon her beam;  
" We dare not ram, for she can run:  
" And dare ye fire another gun,  
" And die in the peeling steam?"

It was our war-ship *Clampherdown*  
That carried an armour-belt;  
But fifty feet at stern and bow  
Lay bare as the paunch of the purser's sow,  
To the hail of the Nordenfeldt.

" Captain, they hack us through and through;  
" The chilled steel bolts are swift!  
" We have emptied our bunkers in open sea,  
" Their shrapnel bursts where our coal should be."  
And he answered, " Let her drift."

It was our war-ship *Clampherdown*  
Swung round upon the tide,  
Her two dumb guns glared south and north,  
And the blood and the bubbling steam ran forth,  
And she ground the cruiser's side.

" Captain, they cry, the fight is done,  
" They bid you send your sword."  
And he answered, " Grapple her stern and bow.  
" They have asked for the steel. They shall have it now;  
" Out cutlasses and board!"

It was our war-ship *Clampherdown*  
Spewed up four hundred men;  
And the scalded stokers yelped delight,  
As they rolled in the waist and heard the fight,  
Stamp o'er their steel-walled pen.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

They cleared the cruiser end to end  
From conning-tower to hold.  
They fought as they fought in Nelson's fleet;  
They were stripped to the waist, they were bare to the feet  
As it was in the days of old.

It was the sinking *Clampherdown*  
Heaved up her battered side—  
And carried a million pounds in steel  
To the cod and the corpse-fed conger-eel,  
And the scour of the Channel tide.

It was the crew of the *Clampherdown*  
Stood out to sweep the sea,  
On a cruiser won from an ancient foe,  
As it was in the days of long ago,  
And as it still shall be!

### CRUISERS

1899

As OUR mother the Frigate, repainted and fine,  
Made play for her bully the Ship of the Line;  
So we, her bold daughters by iron and fire,  
Accost and decoy to our masters' desire.

Now, pray you, consider what toils we endure,  
Night-walking wet sea-lanes, a guard and a lure;  
Since half of our trade is that same pretty sort  
As mettlesome wenches do practise in port.

For this is our office—to spy and make room,  
As hiding yet guiding the foe to their doom;  
Surrounding, confounding, we bait and betray  
And tempt them to battle the sea's width away.

The pot-bellied merchant foreboding no wrong  
With headlight and sidelight he lieth along,  
Till, lightless and lightfoot and lurking, leap we  
To force him discover his business by sea.

And when we have wakened the lust of a foe,  
To draw him by flight toward our bullies we go,  
Till, 'ware of strange smoke stealing nearer, he flies  
Ere our bullies close in for to make him good prize.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

So, when we have spied on the path of their host,  
One lieth to carry that word to the coast;  
And, lest by false doublings they turn and go free,  
One lieth behind them to follow and see.

Anon we return, being gathered again,  
Across the sad valleys all drabbled with rain—  
Across the grey ridges all crispèd and curled—  
To join the long dance round the curve of the world.

The bitter salt spindrift, the sun-glare likewise,  
The moon-track a-tremble, bewilders our eyes,  
Where, linking and lifting, our sisters we hail  
"Twixt wrench of cross-surges or plunge of head-gale.

As maidens awaiting the bride to come forth  
Make play with light jestings and wit of no worth,  
So, widdershins circling the bride-bed of death,  
Each fleereth her neighbour and signeth and saith:—

"What see ye? Their signals, or levin afar?  
"What hear ye? God's thunder, or guns of our war?  
"What mark ye? Their smoke, or the cloud-rack outblown?  
"What chase ye? Their lights, or the Daystar low down?"

So, times past all number deceived by false shows,  
Deceiving we cumber the road of our foes,  
For this is our virtue: to track and betray;  
Preparing great battles a sea's width away.

*Now peace is at end and our peoples take heart,  
For the laws are clean gone that restrained our art;  
Up and down the near headlands and against the far wind  
We are loosed (O be swift!) to the work of our kind!*

## THE VERDICTS

(JUTLAND)

1916

NOT in the thick of the fight,  
Not in the press of the odds,  
Do the heroes come to their height,  
Or we know the demi-gods.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

That stands over till peace.  
We can only perceive  
Men returned from the seas,  
Very grateful for leave.

They grant us sudden days  
Snatched from their business of war;  
But we are too close to appraise  
What manner of men they are.

And, whether their names go down  
With age-kept victories,  
Or whether they battle and drown  
Unreckoned, is hid from our eyes.

They are too near to be great,  
But our children shall understand  
When and how our fate  
Was changed, and by whose hand.

Our children shall measure their worth.  
We are content to be blind . . .  
But we know that we walk on a new-born earth  
With the saviours of mankind.

### THE DESTROYERS

1898

*THE strength of twice three thousand horse  
That seeks the single goal;  
The line that holds the rending course,  
The hate that swings the whole:  
The stripped hulls, slinking through the gloom,  
At gaze and gone again—  
The Brides of Death that wait the groom—  
The Choosers of the Slain!*

Offshore where sea and skyline blend  
In rain, the daylight dies;  
The sullen, shouldering swells attend  
Night and our sacrifice.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Adown the stricken capes no flare—  
No mark on spit or bar,—  
Girdled and desperate we dare  
The blindfold game of war.

Nearer the up-flung beams that spell  
The council of our foes;  
Clearer the barking guns that tell  
Their scattered flank to close.  
Sheer to the trap they crowd their way  
From ports for this unbarred.  
Quiet, and count our laden prey,  
The convoy and her guard!

On shoal with scarce a foot below,  
Where rock and islet throng,  
Hidden and hushed we watch them throw  
Their anxious lights along.  
Not here, not here your danger lies—  
(Stare hard, O hooded eyne!)  
Save where the dazed rock-pigeons rise  
The lit cliffs give no sign.

Therefore—to break the rest ye seek,  
The Narrow Seas to clear—  
Hark to the siren's whimpering shriek—  
The driven death is here!  
Look to your van a league away,—  
What midnight terror stays :  
The bulk that checks against the spray  
Her crackling tops ablaze?

Hit, and hard hit! The blow went home,  
The muffled, knocking stroke—  
The steam that overruns the foam—  
The foam that thins to smoke—  
The smoke that cokes the deep aboil—  
The deep that chokes her throes  
Till, streaked with ash and sleeked with oil,  
The lukewarm whirlpools close!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

A shadow down the sickened wave  
Long since her slayer fled:  
But hear their chattering quick-fires rave  
Astern, abeam, ahead!  
Panic that shells the drifting spar—  
Loud waste with none to check—  
Mad fear that rakes a scornful star  
Or sweeps a consort's deck.

Now, while their silly smoke hangs thick,  
Now ere their wits they find,  
Lay in and lance them to the quick—  
Our gallied whales are blind!  
Good luck to those that see the end,  
Good-bye to those that drown—  
For each his chance as chance shall send—  
And God for all! *Shut down!*

*The strength of twice three thousand horse  
That serve the one command;  
The hand that heaves the headlong force,  
The hate that backs the hand:  
The doom-bolt in the darkness freed,  
The mine that splits the main;  
The white-hot wake, the 'wildering speed—  
The Choosers of the Slain!*

## WHITE HORSES

1897

*W*HERE run your colts at pasture?  
Where hide your mares to breed?  
'Mid bergs about the Ice-cap  
Or wove Sargasso weed;  
By chartless reef and channel,  
Or crafty coastwise bars,  
But most the ocean-meadows  
All purple to the stars!



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*Who holds the rein upon you?*  
The latest gale let free.  
*What meat is in your mangers?*  
The glut of all the sea.  
"Twixt tide and tide's returning  
Great store of newly dead,—  
The bones of those that faced us,  
And the hearts of those that fled.

Afar, off-shore and single,  
Some stallion, rearing swift,  
Neighs hungry for new fodder,  
And calls us to the drift:  
Then down the cloven ridges—  
A million hooves unshod—  
Break forth the mad White Horses  
To seek their meat from God!

Girth-deep in hissing water  
Our furious vanguard strains—  
Through mist of mighty tramlings  
Roll up the fore-blown manes—  
A hundred leagues to leeward,  
Ere yet the deep is stirred,  
The groaning rollers carry  
The coming of the herd!

*Whose hand may grip your nostrils—*  
*Your forelock who may hold?*  
E'en they that use the broads with us—  
The riders bred and bold,  
That spy upon our matings,  
That rope us where we run—  
They know the strong White Horses  
From father unto son.

We breathe about their cradles,  
We race their babes ashore,  
We snuff against their thresholds,  
We nuzzle at their door;

DEFINITIVE EDITION

By day with stamping squadrons,  
By night in whinnying droves,  
Creep up the wise White Horses,  
To call them from their loves.

*And come they for your calling?*  
No wit of man may save.  
They hear the loosed White Horses  
Above their fathers' grave;  
And, kin to those we crippled,  
And, sons of those we slew,  
Spur down the wild white riders  
To school the herds anew.

*What service have ye paid them,  
O jealous steeds and strong?*  
Save we that throw their weaklings,  
Is none dare work them wrong;  
While thick around the homestead  
Our snow-backed leaders graze—  
A guard behind their plunder,  
And a veil before their ways.

With march and countermarchings—  
With weight of wheeling hosts—  
Stray mob or bands embattled—  
We ring the chosen coasts:  
And, careless of our clamour  
That bids the stranger fly,  
At peace within our pickets  
The wild white riders lie.

Trust ye the curdled hollows—  
Trust ye the neighing wind—  
Trust ye the moaning groundswell—  
Our herds are close behind!  
To bray your foeman's armies—  
To chill and snap his sword—  
Trust ye the wild White Horses,  
The Horses of the Lord!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

A SONG IN STORM

1914-18

**B**E WELL assured that on our side  
The abiding oceans fight,  
Though headlong wind and heaping tide  
Make us their sport to-night.  
By force of weather, not of war,  
In jeopardy we steer:  
Then welcome Fate's discourtesy  
Whereby it shall appear  
How in all time of our distress,  
And our deliverance too,  
The game is more than the player of the game,  
And the ship is more than the crew!

Out of the mist into the mirk  
The glimmering combers roll.  
Almost these mindless waters work  
As though they had a soul—  
Almost as though they leagued to whelm  
Our flag beneath their green:  
Then welcome Fate's discourtesy  
Whereby it shall be seen, etc.

Be well assured, though wave and wind  
Have mightier blows in store,  
That we who keep the watch assigned  
Must stand to it the more;  
And as our streaming bows rebuke  
Each billow's baulked career,  
Sing, welcome Fate's discourtesy  
Whereby it is made clear, etc.

No matter though our decks be swept  
And mast and timber crack—  
We can make good all loss except  
The loss of turning back.  
So, 'twixt these Devils and our deep  
Let courteous trumpets sound,  
To welcome Fate's discourtesy  
Whereby it will be found, etc.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Be well assured, though in our power  
Is nothing left to give  
But chance and place to meet the hour,  
And leave to strive to live,  
Till these dissolve our Order holds,  
Our Service binds us here.  
Then welcome Fate's discourtesy  
Whereby it is made clear  
How in all time of our distress,  
As in our triumph too,  
The game is more than the player of the game,  
And the ship is more than the crew!

### THE DERELICT

1894

*"And reports the derelict Margaret Pollock still at sea."*—  
SHIPPING NEWS.

*I WAS the staunchest of our fleet  
Till the sea rose beneath my feet  
Unheralded, in hatred past all measure.  
Into his pits he stamped my crew,  
Buffeted, blinded, bound and threw,  
Bidding me eyeless wait upon his pleasure.*

Man made me, and my will  
Is to my maker still,  
Whom now the currents con, the rollers steer—  
Lifting forlorn to spy  
Trailed smoke along the sky,  
Falling afraid lest any keel come near!

Wrenched as the lips of thirst,  
Wried, dried, and split and burst,  
Bone-bleached my decks, wind-scoured to the graining;  
And, jarred at every roll,  
The gear that was my soul  
Answers the anguish of my beams' complaining.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

For life that crammed me full,  
Gangs of the prying gull  
That shriek and scrabble on the riven hatches.  
For roar that dumbled the gale,  
My hawse-pipes' guttering wail,  
Sobbing my heart out through the uncounted watches.

Blind in the hot blue ring  
Through all my points I swing—  
Swing and return to shift the sun anew.  
Blind in my well-known sky  
I hear the stars go by,  
Mocking the prow that cannot hold one true.

White on my wasted path  
Wave after wave in wrath  
Frets 'gainst his fellow, warring where to send me.  
Flung forward, heaved aside,  
Witless and dazed I bide  
The mercy of the comber that shall end me.

North where the bergs careen,  
The spray of seas unseen  
Smokes round my head and freezes in the falling.  
South where the corals breed,  
The footless, floating weed  
Folds me and fouls me, strake on strake upcrawling.

I that was clean to run  
My race against the sun—  
Strength on the deep—am bawd to all disaster;  
Whipped forth by night to meet  
My sister's careless feet,  
And with a kiss betray her to my master.

Man made me, and my will  
Is to my maker still—  
To him and his, our peoples at their pier:  
Lifting in hope to spy  
Trailed smoke along the sky,  
Falling afraid lest any keel come near!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE MERCHANTMEN

1893

KING SOLOMON drew merchantmen,  
Because of his desire  
For peacocks, apes, and ivory,  
From Tarshish unto Tyre,  
With cedars out of Lebanon  
Which Hiram rafted down;  
But we be only sailormen  
That use in London town.

*Coastwise—cross-seas—round the world and back again—  
Where the flaw shall head us or the full Trade suits—  
Plain-sail—storm-sail—lay your board and tack again—  
And that's the way we'll pay Paddy Doyle for his boots!*

We bring no store of ingots,  
Of spice or precious stones,  
But what we have we gathered  
With sweat and aching bones:  
In flame beneath the Tropics,  
In frost upon the floe,  
And jeopardy of every wind  
That does between them go.

And some we got by purchase,  
And some we had by trade,  
And some we found by courtesy  
Of pike and carronade—  
At midnight, 'mid-sea meetings,  
For charity to keep,  
And light the rolling homeward-bound  
That rode a foot too deep!

By sport of bitter weather  
We're walty, strained, and scarred  
From the kentledge on the kelson  
To the slings upon the yard.

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

Six oceans had their will of us  
To carry all away—  
Our galley's in the Baltic,  
And our boom's in Mossel Bay.

We've floundered off the Texel,  
Awash with sodden deals,  
We've slipped from Valparaiso  
With the Norther at our heels:  
We've ratched beyond the Crossets  
That tusk the Southern Pole,  
And dipped our gunnels under  
To the dread Agulhas roll.

Beyond all outer charting  
We sailed where none have sailed,  
And saw the land-lights burning  
On islands none have hailed;  
Our hair stood up for wonder,  
But, when the night was done,  
There danced the deep to windward  
Blue-empty 'neath the sun!

Strange consorts rode beside us  
And brought us evil luck;  
The witch-fire climbed our channels,  
And flared on vane and truck,  
Till, through the red tornado,  
That lashed us nigh to blind,  
We saw The Dutchman plunging,  
Full canvas, head to wind!

We've heard the Midnight Leadsman  
That calls the black deep down—  
Ay, thrice we've heard The Swimmer,  
The Thing that may not drown.  
On frozen bunt and gasket  
The sleet-cloud drove her hosts,  
When, manned by more than signed with us,  
We passed the Isle of Ghosts!

And north, amid the hummocks,  
A biscuit-toss below,

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

We met the silent shallop  
That frightened whalers know;  
For, down a cruel ice-lane,  
That opened as he sped,  
We saw dead Hendrick Hudson  
Steer, North by West, his dead.

So dealt God's waters with us  
Beneath the roaring skies,  
So walked His signs and marvels  
All naked to our eyes:  
But we were heading homeward  
With trade to lose or make—  
Good Lord, they slipped behind us  
In the tailing of our wake!

Let go, let go the anchors;  
Now shamed at heart are we  
To bring so poor a cargo home  
That had for gift the sea!  
Let go the great bow-anchor—  
Ah, fools were we and blind—  
The worst we stored with utter toil,  
The best we left behind!

*Coastwise—cross-seas—round the world and back again,  
Whither flaw shall fail us or the Trades drive down:  
Plain-sail—storm-sail—lay your board and tack again—  
And all to bring a cargo up to London Town!*

## THE SONG OF DIEGO VALDEZ

1902

THE God of Fair Beginnings  
Hath prospered here my hand—  
The cargoes of my lading,  
And the keels of my command.  
For out of many ventures  
That sailed with hope as high,  
My own have made the better trade,  
And Admiral am I.



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

To me my King's much honour,  
To me my people's love—  
To me the pride of Princes  
And power all pride above;  
To me the shouting cities,  
To me the mob's refrain:—  
“ Who knows not noble Valdez  
“ Hath never heard of Spain.”

But I remember comrades—  
Old playmates on new seas—  
Whenas we traded orpiment  
Among the savages—  
A thousand leagues to south'ard  
And thirty years removed—  
They knew not noble Valdez,  
But me they knew and loved.

Then they that found good liquor,  
They drank it not alone,  
And they that found fair plunder,  
They told us every one,  
About our chosen islands  
Or secret shoals between,  
When, weary from far voyage,  
We gathered to careen.

There burned our breaming-fagots  
All pale along the shore:  
There rose our worn pavilions—  
A sail above an oar:  
As flashed each yearning anchor  
Through mellow seas afire,  
So swift our careless captains  
Rowed each to his desire.

Where lay our loosened harness?  
Where turned our naked feet?  
Whose tavern 'mid the palm-trees?  
What quenchings of what heat?  
Oh, fountain in the desert!  
Oh, cistern in the waste!  
Oh, bread we ate in secret!  
Oh, cup we spilled in haste!

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

The youth new-taught of longing,  
The widow curbed and wan,  
The goodwife proud at season,  
And the maid aware of man—  
All souls unslaked, consuming,  
Defrauded in delays,  
Desire not more their quittance  
Than I those forfeit days!

I dreamed to wait my pleasure  
Unchanged my spring would bide:  
Wherefore, to wait my pleasure,  
I put my spring aside  
Till, first in face of Fortune,  
And last in mazed disdain,  
I made Diego Valdez  
High Admiral of Spain.

Then walked no wind 'neath Heaven  
Nor surge that did not aid—  
I dared extreme occasion,  
Nor ever one betrayed.  
They wrought a deeper treason—  
(Led seas that served my needs!)  
They sold Diego Valdez  
To bondage of great deeds.

The tempest flung me seaward,  
And pinned and bade me hold  
The course I might not alter—  
And men esteemed me bold!  
The calms embayed my quarry,  
The fog-wreath sealed his eyes;  
The dawn-wind brought my topsails—  
And men esteemed me wise!

Yet, 'spite my tyrant triumphs,  
Bewildered, dispossessed—  
My dream held I before me—  
My vision of my rest;  
But, crowned by Fleet and People,  
And bound by King and Pope—  
Stands here Diego Valdez  
To rob me of my hope.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

No prayer of mine shall move him.  
No word of his set free  
The Lord of Sixty Pennants  
And the Steward of the Sea.  
His will can loose ten thousand  
To seek their loves again—  
But not Diego Valdez,  
High Admiral of Spain.

There walks no wind 'neath Heaven  
Nor wave that shall restore  
The old careening riot  
And the clamorous, crowded shore—  
The fountain in the desert,  
The cistern in the waste,  
The bread we ate in secret,  
The cup we spilled in haste.

Now call I to my Captains—  
For council fly the sign—  
Now leap their zealous galleys,  
Twelve-oared, across the brine.  
To me the straiter prison,  
To me the heavier chain—  
To me Diego Valdez,  
High Admiral of Spain!

### THE SECOND VOYAGE

1903

WE'VE sent our little Cupids all ashore—  
They were frightened, they were tired, they were  
cold.  
Our sails of silk and purple go to store,  
And we've cut away our mast of beaten gold.  
(Foul weather!)  
Oh, 'tis hemp and singing pine for to stand against the  
brine,  
But Love he is our master as of old!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

The sea has shorn our galleries away,  
The salt has soiled our gilding past remede;  
Our paint is flaked and blistered by the spray,  
Our sides are half a fathom furred in weed.  
(Foul weather!)

And the Doves of Venus fled and the petrels came instead,  
But Love he was our master at our need!

'Was Youth would keep no vigil at the bow,  
'Was Pleasure at the helm too drunk to steer—  
We've shipped three able quartermasters now.  
Men call them Custom, Reverence, and Fear.  
(Foul weather!)

They are old and scarred and plain, but we'll run no risk  
again  
From any Port o' Paphos mutineer!

We seek no more the tempest for delight,  
We skirt no more the indraught and the shoal—  
We ask no more of any day or night  
Than to come with least adventure to our goal.  
(Foul weather!)

What we find we needs must brook, but we do not go to look  
Nor tempt the Lord our God that saved us whole.

Yet, caring so, not overmuch we care  
To brace and trim for every foolish blast,  
If the squall be pleased to sweep us unaware,  
He may bellow off to leeward like the last.  
(Foul weather!)

We will blame it on the deep (for the watch must have their  
sleep),  
And Love can come and wake us when 'tis past.

Oh, launch them down with music from the beach,  
Oh, warp them out with garlands from the quays—  
Most resolute—a damsel unto each—  
New prowls that seek the old Hesperides!  
(Foul weather!)

Though we know their voyage is vain, yet we see our path  
again  
In the saffroned bridesails scenting all the seas!  
(Foul weather!)

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

## THE OLDEST SONG

*"For before Eve was Lilith."*—OLD TALE.

"THESE were never your true love's eyes.  
Why do you feign that you love them?  
You that broke from their constancies,  
And the wide calm brows above them!

This was never your true love's speech.  
Why do you thrill when you hear it?  
You that have ridden out of its reach  
The width of the world or near it!

This was never your true love's hair,—  
You that chafed when it bound you  
Screened from knowledge or shame or care,  
In the night that it made around you!"

"All these things I know, I know.  
And that's why my heart is breaking!"  
"Then what do you gain by pretending so?"  
*"The joy of an old wound waking."*

## THE LINER SHE'S A LADY

1894

THE Liner she's a lady, an' she never looks nor 'eeds—  
The Man-o'-War's 'er 'usband, an' 'e gives 'er all she  
needs;  
But, oh, the little cargo-boats, that sail the wet seas roun',  
They're just the same as you an' me a-plyin' up an' down!

*Plyin' up an' down, Jenny, 'angin' round the Yard,  
All the way by Fratton tram down to Portsmouth 'Ard;  
Anythin' for business, an' we're growin' old—  
Plyin' up an' down, Jenny, waitin' in the cold!*

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The Liner she's a lady by the paint upon 'er face,  
An' if she meets an accident they count it sore disgrace.  
The Man-o'-War's 'er 'usband, and 'e's always 'andy by,  
But, oh, the little cargo-boats, they've got to load or die!

The Liner she's a lady, and 'er route is cut an' dried;  
The Man-o'-War's 'er 'usband, an' 'e always keeps beside;  
But, oh, the little cargo-boats that 'aven't any man,  
They've got to do their business first, and make the most they  
can!

The Liner she's a lady, and if a war should come,  
The Man-o'-War's 'er 'usband, and 'e'd bid 'er stay at home;  
But, oh, the little cargo-boats that fill with every tide!  
'E'd 'ave to up an' fight for them, for they are England's pride.

The Liner she's a lady, but if she wasn't made,  
There still would be the cargo-boats for 'ome an' foreign  
trade.

The Man-o'-War's 'er 'usband, but if we wasn't 'ere,  
'E wouldn't have to fight at all for 'ome an' friends so dear.

*'Ome an' friends so dear, Jenny, 'angin' round the Yard,  
All the way by Fratton tram down to Portsmouth 'Ard;  
Anythin' for business, an' we're growin' old—  
'Ome an' friends so dear, Jenny, waitin' in the cold!*

## THE FIRST CHANTEY

1896

**M**INE was the woman to me, darkling I found her:  
Haling her dumb from the camp, held her and bound  
her.

Hot rose her tribe on our track ere I had proved her;  
Hearing her laugh in the gloom, greatly I loved her.

Swift through the forest we ran, none stood to guard us,  
Few were my people and far; then the flood barred us—  
Him we call Son of the Sea, sullen and swollen.  
Panting we waited the death, stealer and stolen.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Yet ere they came to my lance laid for the slaughter,  
Lightly she leaped to a log lapped in the water;  
Holding on high and apart skins that arrayed her,  
Called she the God of the Wind that He should aid her.

Life had the tree at that word (Praise we the Giver!),  
Otter-like left he the bank for the full river.  
Far fell their axes behind, flashing and ringing,  
Wonder was on me and fear—yet she was singing!

Low lay the land we had left. Now the blue bound us,  
Even the Floor of the Gods level around us.  
Whisper there was not, nor word, shadow nor showing,  
Till the light stirred on the deep, glowing and growing.

Then did He leap to His place flaring from under,  
He the Compeller, the Sun, bared to our wonder.  
Nay, not a league from our eyes blinded with gazing,  
Cleared He the Gate of the World, huge and amazing!

This we beheld (and we live)—the Pit of the Burning!  
Then the God spoke to the tree for our returning;  
Back to the beach of our flight, fearless and slowly,  
Back to our slayers went he; but we were holy.

Men that were hot in that hunt, women that followed,  
Babes that were promised our bones, trembled and wallowed  
Over the necks of the Tribe crouching and fawning—  
Prophet and priestess we came back from the dawning!

### THE LAST CHANTEY

1892

*"And there was no more sea."*

THUS said the Lord in the Vault above the Cherubim,  
Calling to the Angels and the Souls in their degree:  
"Lo! Earth has passed away  
On the smoke of Judgment Day.  
That Our word may be established shall We gather up the  
sea?"

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Loud sang the souls of the jolly, jolly mariners:

“Plague upon the hurricane that made us furl and flee!  
But the war is done between us,  
In the deep the Lord hath seen us—  
Our bones we’ll leave the barracout’, and God may sink  
the sea!”

Then said the soul of Judas that betrayèd Him:

“Lord, hast Thou forgotten Thy covenant with me?  
How once a year I go  
To cool me on the floe?  
And Ye take my day of mercy if Ye take away the sea.”

Then said the soul of the Angel of the Off-shore Wind:

(He that bits the thunder when the bull-mouthed breakers  
flee):  
“I have watch and ward to keep  
O’er Thy wonders on the deep,  
And Ye take mine honour from me if Ye take away the  
sea!”

Loud sang the souls of the jolly, jolly mariners:

“Nay, but we were angry, and a hasty folk are we.  
If we worked the ship together  
Till she foundered in foul weather,  
Are we babes that we should clamour’ for a vengeance on  
the sea?”

Then said the souls of the slaves that men threw overboard:

“Kennelled in the picaroon a weary band were we;  
But Thy arm was strong to save,  
And it touched us on the wave,  
And we drownd the long tides idle till Thy Trumpets tore  
the sea.”

Then cried the soul of the stout Apostle Paul to God:

“Once we frapped a ship, and she laboured woundily.  
There were fourteen score of these,  
And they blessed Thee on their knees,  
When they learned Thy Grace and Glory under Malta by  
the sea!”



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Loud sang the souls of the jolly, jolly mariners,  
Plucking at their harps, and they plucked unhandily:  
    " Our thumbs are rough and tarred,  
    And the tune is something hard—  
May we lift a Deepsea Chantey such as seamen use at  
    sea? "

Then said the souls of the gentlemen-adventurers—  
Fettered wrist to bar all for red iniquity:  
    " Ho, we revel in our chains  
    O'er the sorrow that was Spain's!  
Heave or sink it, leave or drink it, we were masters of the  
    sea! "

Up spake the soul of a grey Gothavn 'speckshioner—  
(He that led the flenching in the fleets of fair Dundee):  
    " Oh, the ice-blink white and near,  
    And the bowhead breaching clear!  
Will Ye whelm them all for wantonness that wallow in the  
    sea? "

Loud sang the souls of the jolly, jolly mariners,  
Crying: " Under Heaven, here is neither lead nor lee!  
    Must we sing for evermore  
    On the windless, glassy floor?  
Take back your golden fiddles and we'll beat to open  
    sea! "

Then stooped the Lord, and He called the good sea up to  
    Him,  
And 'stablished its borders unto all eternity,  
    That such as have no pleasure  
    For to praise the Lord by measure,  
They may enter into galleons and serve Him on the sea.

*Sun, Wind, and Cloud shall fail not from the face of it,  
Stinging, ringing spindrift, nor the fulmar flying free;  
And the ships shall go abroad  
To the Glory of the Lord  
Who heard the silly sailor-folk and gave them back their  
    sea!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE EXILES' LINE

1890

Now the New Year reviving old desires,  
The restless soul to open sea aspires,  
Where the Blue Peter flickers from the fore,  
And the grimed stoker feeds the engine-fires.

Coupons, alas, depart with all their rows,  
And last year's sea-met loves where Grindlay knows;  
But still the wild wind wakes off Gardafui,  
And hearts turn eastward with the P. & O's.

Twelve knots an hour, be they more or less—  
Oh, slothful mother of much idleness,  
Whom neither rivals spur nor contracts speed!  
Nay, bear us gently! Wherefore need we press?

The Tragedy of all our East is laid  
On those white decks beneath the awning shade—  
Birth, absence, longing, laughter, love and tears,  
And death unmaking ere the land is made.

And midnight madresses of souls distraught  
Whom the cool seas call through the open port,  
So that the table lacks one place next morn,  
And for one forenoon men forgo their sport.

The shadow of the rigging to and fro  
Sways, shifts, and flickers on the spar-deck's snow,  
And like a giant trampling in his chains,  
The screw-blades gasp and thunder deep below;

And, leagued to watch one flying-fish's wings,  
Heaven stoops to sea, and sea to Heaven clings;  
While, bent upon the ending of his toil,  
The hot sun strides, regarding not these things:

For the same wave that meets our stem in spray  
Bore Smith of Asia eastward yesterday,  
And Delhi Jones and Brown of Midnapore  
To-morrow follow on the self-same way.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Linked in the chain of Empire one by one,  
Flushed with long leave, or tanned with many a sun,  
The Exiles' Line brings out the exiles' line,  
And ships them homeward when their work is done.

Yea, heedless of the shuttle through the loom,  
The flying keels fulfil the web of doom.  
Sorrow or shouting—what is that to them?  
Make out the cheque that pays for cabin-room!

And how so many score of times ye flit  
With wife and babe and caravan of kit,  
Not all thy travels past shall lower one fare,  
Not all thy tears abate one pound of it.

And how so high thine earth-born dignity,  
Honour and state, go sink it in the sea,  
Till that great one upon the quarter-deck,  
Brow-bound with gold, shall give thee leave to be.

Indeed, indeed from that same line we swear  
Off for all time, and mean it when we swear;  
And then, and then we meet the Quartered Flag,  
And, surely for the last time, pay the fare.

And Green of Kensington, estrayed to view  
In three short months the world he never knew,  
Stares with blind eyes upon the Quartered Flag  
And sees no more than yellow, red and blue.

But we, the gipsies of the East, but we—  
Waifs of the land and wastrels of the sea—  
Come nearer home beneath the Quartered Flag  
Than ever home shall come to such as we.

The camp is struck, the bungalow decays,  
Dead friends and houses desert mark our ways,  
Till sickness send us down to Prince's Dock  
To meet the changeless use of many days.

Bound in the wheel of Empire, one by one,  
The chain-gangs of the East from sire to son,  
The Exiles' Line takes out the exiles' line  
And ships them homeward when their work is done.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

How runs the old indictment? "Dear and slow,"  
So much and twice so much. We gird, but go.

For all the soul of our sad East is there,  
Beneath the house-flag of the P. & O.

### THE LONG TRAIL

THERE'S a whisper down the field where the year has  
shot her yield,  
And the ricks stand grey to the sun,  
Singing: "Over then, come over, for the bee has quit the  
clover,

"And your English summer's done."

You have heard the beat of the off-shore wind,  
And the thresh of the deep-sea rain;  
You have heard the song—how long? how long?  
Pull out on the trail again!  
Ha' done with the Tents of Shem, dear lass,  
We've seen the seasons through,  
And it's time to turn on the old trail, our own trail, the  
out trail,  
Pull out, pull out, on the Long Trail—the trail that is  
always new!

It's North you may run to the rime-ringed sun  
Or South to the blind Horn's hate;  
Or East all the way into Mississippi Bay,  
Or West to the Golden Gate—  
Where the blindest bluffs hold good, dear lass,  
And the wildest tales are true,  
And the men bulk big on the old trail, our own trail,  
the out trail,  
And life runs large on the Long Trail—the trail that  
is always new.

The days are sick and cold, and the skies are grey and old,  
And the twice-breathed airs blow damp;  
And I'd sell my tired soul for the bucking beam-sea roll  
Of a black Bilbao tramp,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

With her load-line over her hatch, dear lass,  
And a drunken Dago crew,  
And her nose held down on the old trail, our own trail,  
the out trail  
From Cadiz south on the Long Trail—the trail that  
is always new.

There be triple ways to take, of the eagle or the snake,  
Or the way of a man with a maid;  
But the sweetest way to me is a ship's upon the sea  
In the heel of the North-East Trade.  
Can you hear the crash on her bows, dear lass,  
And the drum of the racing screw,  
As she ships it green on the old trail, our own trail,  
the out trail,  
As she lifts and 'scends on the Long Trail—the trail  
that is always new?

See the shaking funnels roar, with the Peter at the fore,  
And the fenders grind and heave,  
And the derricks clack and grate, as the tackle hooks the  
crate,  
And the fall-rope whines through the sheave;  
It's "Gang-plank up and in," dear lass,  
It's "Hawsers warp her through!"  
And it's "All clear aft" on the old trail, our own trail,  
the out trail,  
We're backing down on the Long Trail—the trail that  
is always new.

O the mutter overside, when the port-fog holds us tied,  
And the sirens hoot their dread,  
When foot by foot we creep o'er the hueless, viewless  
deep  
To the sob of the questing lead!  
It's down by the Lower Hope, dear lass,  
With the Gunfleet Sands in view,  
Till the Mouse swings green on the old trail, our own  
trail, the out trail,  
And the Gull Light lifts on the Long Trail—the trail  
that is always new.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

O the blazing tropic night, when the wake's a welt of  
light

That holds the hot sky tame,  
And the steady fore-foot snores through the planet-powdered  
floors

Where the scared whale flukes in flame!

Her plates are flaked by the sun, dear lass,  
And her ropes are taut with the dew,  
For we're booming down on the old trail, our own  
trail, the out trail,  
We're sagging south on the Long Trail—the trail that  
is always new.

Then home, get her home, where the drunken rollers  
comb,

And the shouting seas drive by,  
And the engines stamp and ring, and the wet bows reel and  
swing,

And the Southern Cross rides high!

Yes, the old lost stars wheel back, dear lass,  
That blaze in the velvet blue.  
They're all old friends on the old trail, our own trail,  
the out trail,  
They're God's own guides on the Long Trail—the  
trail that is always new.

Fly forward, O my heart, from the Foreland to the Start—

We're steaming all too slow,  
And it's twenty thousand mile to our little lazy isle  
Where the trumpet-orchids blow!  
You have heard the call of the off-shore wind  
And the voice of the deep-sea rain;  
You have heard the song—how long?—how long?  
Pull out on the trail again!

The Lord knows what we may find, dear lass,  
And The Deuce knows what we may do—  
But we're back once more on the old trail, our own trail,  
the out trail,  
We're down, hull-down, on the Long Trail—the trail that  
is always new!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

IN THE MATTER OF ONE COMPASS

1892

(Enlarged from "Many Inventions")

WHEN, foot to wheel and back to wind,  
The helmsman dare not look behind,  
But hears beyond his compass-light,  
The blind bow thunder through the night,  
And, like a harpstring ere it snaps,  
The rigging sing beneath the caps;  
Above the shriek of storm in sail  
Or rattle of the blocks blown free,  
Set for the peace beyond the gale,  
This song the Needle sings the Sea:

*Oh, drunken Wave! Oh, driving Cloud!  
Rage of the Deep and sterile Rain,  
By Love upheld, by God allowed,  
We go, but we return again!*

When leagued about the 'wildered boat  
The rainbow Jellies fill and float,  
And, liting where the laver lingers,  
The Starfish trips on all her fingers;  
Where, 'neath his myriad spines ashock,  
The Sea-egg ripples down the rock,  
An orange wonder dimly guessed  
From darkness where the Cuttles rest,  
Moored o'er the darker deeps that hide  
The blind white Sea-snake and his bride,  
Who, drowsing, nose the long-lost Ships  
Let down through darkness to their lips—  
Safe-swung above the glassy death,  
Hear what the constant Needle saith:

*Oh, lisping Reef! Oh, listless Cloud,  
In slumber on a pulseless main!  
By Love upheld, by God allowed,  
We go, but we return again!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

E'en so through Tropic and through Trade,  
Awed by the shadow of new skies,  
As we shall watch old planets fade  
And mark the stranger stars arise,  
So, surely, back through Sun and Cloud,  
So, surely, from the outward main,  
By Love recalled, by God allowed,  
Shall we return—return again!  
Yea, we return—return again!

AVE IMPERATRIX!

*(Written on the occasion of the attempt to assassinate  
Queen Victoria in March 1882)*

FROM every quarter of your land  
They give God thanks who turned away  
Death and the needy madman's hand,  
Death-fraught, which menaced you that day.

One school of many made to make  
Men who shall hold it dearest right  
To battle for their ruler's sake,  
And stake their being in the fight,

Sends greeting humble and sincere—  
Though verse be rude and poor and mean—  
To you, the greatest as most dear—  
Victoria, by God's grace Our Queen!

Such greeting as should come from those  
Whose fathers faced the Sepoy hordes,  
Or served you in the Russian snows,  
And, dying, left their sons their swords.

And some of us have fought for you  
Already in the Afghan pass—  
Or where the scarce-seen smoke-puffs flew  
From Boer marksmen in the grass;



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And all are bred to do your will  
By land and sea—wherever flies  
The Flag, to fight and follow still,  
And work your Empire's destinies.

Once more we greet you, though unseen  
Our greeting be, and coming slow.  
Trust us, if need arise, O Queen,  
We shall not tarry with the blow!

A SONG OF THE ENGLISH

1893

*F*AIR is our lot—O goodly is our heritage!  
(Humble ye, my people, and be fearful in your mirth!)  
For the Lord our God Most High  
He hath made the deep as dry,  
He hath smote for us a pathway to the ends of all the Earth!

Yea, though we sinned, and our rulers went from righteousness—  
Deep in all dishonour though we stained our garments' hem,  
Oh, be ye not dismayed,  
Though we stumbled and we strayed,  
We were led by evil counsellors—the Lord shall deal with them!

Hold ye the Faith—the Faith our Fathers sealed us;  
Whoring not with visions—overwise and overstate.  
Except ye pay the Lord  
Single heart and single sword,  
Of your children in their bondage He shall ask them treble-tale!

Keep ye the Law—be swift in all obedience—  
Clear the land of evil, drive the road and bridge the ford.  
Make ye sure to each his own  
That he reap where he hath sown;  
By the peace among Our peoples let men know we serve the Lord!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Hear now a song—a song of broken interludes—  
A song of little cunning; of a singer nothing worth.  
Through the naked words and mean  
May ye see the truth between,  
As the singer knew and touched it in the ends of all the Earth!*

### THE COASTWISE LIGHTS

OUR brows are bound with spindrift and the weed is on  
our knees;  
Our loins are battered 'neath us by the swinging, smoking  
seas.  
From reef and rock and skerry—over headland, ness, and  
voe—  
The Coastwise Lights of England watch the ships of England  
go!

Through the endless summer evenings, on the lineless, level  
floors;  
Through the yelling Channel tempest when the siren hoots  
and roars—  
By day the dipping house-flag and by night the rocket's  
trail—  
As the sheep that graze behind us so we know them where  
they hail.

We bridge across the dark, and bid the helmsman have a  
care,  
The flash that, wheeling inland, wakes his sleeping wife to  
prayer.  
From our vexed eyries, head to gale, we bind in burning  
chains  
The lover from the sea-rim drawn—his love in English  
lanes.

We greet the clippers wing-and-wing that race the Southern  
wool;  
We warn the crawling cargo-tanks of Bremen, Leith, and  
Hull;  
To each and all our equal lamp at peril of the sea—  
The white wall-sided warships or the whalers of Dundee!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Come up, come in from Eastward, from the guardports of  
the Morn!

Beat up, beat in from Southerly, O gipsies of the Horn!  
Swift shuttles of an Empire's loom that weave us main to  
main,

The Coastwise Lights of England give you welcome back  
again!

Go, get you gone up-Channel with the sea-crust on your  
plates;

Go, get you into London with the burden of your freights!  
Haste, for they talk of Empire there, and say, if any seek,  
The Lights of England sent you and by silence shall ye speak!

THE SONG OF THE DEAD

*HEAR now the Song of the Dead—in the North by the torn  
berg-edges—  
They that look still to the Pole, asleep by their hide-stripped  
sledges.*

*Song of the Dead in the South—in the sun by their skeleton  
horses,  
Where the warrigal whimpers and bays through the dust of  
the sere river-courses.*

*Song of the Dead in the East—in the heat-rotted jungle-hollows,  
Where the dog-ape barks in the kloof—in the brake of the buffalo-  
wallows.*

*Song of the Dead in the West—in the Barrens, the pass that  
betrayed them,  
Where the wolverine tumbles their packs from the camp and  
the grave-mound they made them;*

*Hear now the Song of the Dead!*

I

We were dreamers, dreaming greatly, in the man-stifled  
town;

We yearned beyond the sky-line where the strange roads go  
down.

Came the Whisper, came the Vision, came the Power with the  
Need,

Till the Soul that is not man's soul was lent us to lead.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

As the deer breaks—as the steer breaks—from the herd  
where they graze,  
In the faith of little children we went on our ways.  
Then the wood failed—then the food failed—then the last  
water dried—  
In the faith of little children we lay down and died.  
On the sand-drift—on the veldt-side—in the fern-scrub we  
lay,  
That our sons might follow after by the bones on the way.  
Follow after—follow after! We have watered the root,  
And the bud has come to blossom that ripens for fruit!  
Follow after—we are waiting, by the trails that we lost,  
For the sounds of many footsteps, for the tread of a host.  
Follow after—follow after—for the harvest is sown:  
By the bones about the wayside ye shall come to your own!

*When Drake went down to the Horn  
And England was crowned thereby,  
'Twixt seas unsailed and shores unhailed  
Our Lodge—our Lodge was born  
(And England was crowned thereby!)*

*Which never shall close again  
By day nor yet by night,  
While man shall take his life to stake  
At risk of shoal or main  
(By day nor yet by night)*

*But standeth even so  
As now we witness here,  
While men depart, of joyful heart,  
Adventure for to know  
(As now bear witness here!)*

## II

We have fed our sea for a thousand years  
And she calls us, still unfed,  
Though there's never a wave of all her waves  
But marks our English dead:  
We have strawed our best to the weed's unrest,  
To the shark and the sheering gull.  
If blood be the price of admiralty,  
Lord God, we ha' paid in full!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There's never a flood goes shoreward now  
But lifts a keel we manned;  
There's never an ebb goes seaward now  
But drops our dead on th sand—  
But slinks our dead on the sands forlore,  
From the Ducies to the Swin.  
If blood be the price of admiralty,  
If blood be the price of admiralty,  
Lord God, we ha' paid it in!

We must feed our sea for a thousand years,  
For that is our doom and pride,  
As it was when they sailed with the *Golden Hind*,  
Or the wreck that struck last tide—  
Or the wreck that lies on the spouting reef  
Where the ghastly blue-lights flare.  
If blood be the price of admiralty,  
If blood be the price of admiralty,  
If blood be the price of admiralty,  
Lord God, we ha' bought it fair!

### THE DEEP-SEA CABLES

THE wrecks dissolve above us; their dust drops down  
from afar—  
Down to the dark, to the utter dark, where the blind white  
sea-snakes are.  
There is no sound, no echo of sound, in the deserts of the  
deep,  
Or the great grey level plains of ooze where the shell-burred  
cables creep.

Here in the womb of the world—here on the tie-ribs of earth  
Words, and the words of men, flicker and flutter and beat—  
Warning, sorrow, and gain, salutation and mirth—  
For a Power troubles the Still that has neither voice nor feet.

They have wakened the timeless Things; they have killed  
their father Time;  
Joining hands in the gloom, a league from the last of the sun.  
Hush! Men talk to-day o'er the waste of the ultimate slime,  
And a new Word runs between: whispering, "Let us be one!"

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### THE SONG OF THE SONS

ONE from the ends of the earth—gifts at an open door—  
Treason has much, but we, Mother, thy sons have  
more!

From the whine of a dying man, from the snarl of a wolf-pack  
freed,

Turn, and the world is thine. Mother, be proud of thy seed!  
Count, are we feeble or few? Hear, is our speech so rude?  
Look, are we poor in the land? Judge, are we men of The  
Blood?

Those that have stayed at thy knees, Mother, go call them  
in—

We that were bred overseas wait and would speak with our  
kin.

Not in the dark do we fight—haggle and flout and gibe;  
Selling our love for a price, loaning our hearts for a bribe.  
Gifts have we only to-day—Love without promise or fee—  
Hear, for thy children speak, from the uttermost parts of the  
sea!

### THE SONG OF THE CITIES

#### BOMBAY

ROYAL and Dower-royal, I the Queen  
Fronting thy richest sea with richer hands—  
A thousand mills roar through me where I glean  
All races from all lands.

#### CALCUTTA

Me the Sea-captain loved, the River built,  
Wealth sought and Kings adventured life to hold.  
Hail, England! I am Asia—Power on silt,  
Death in my hands, but Gold!

#### MADRAS

Clive kissed me on the mouth and eyes and brow,  
Wonderful kisses, so that I became  
Crowned above Queens—a withered beldame now,  
Brooding on ancient fame.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### RANGOON

Hail, Mother! Do they call me rich in trade?  
Little care I, but hear the shorn priest drone,  
And watch my silk-clad lovers, man by maid,  
Laugh 'neath my Shwe Dagon.

### SINGAPORE

Hail, Mother! East and West must seek my aid  
Ere the spent hull may dare the ports afar.  
The second doorway of the wide world's trade  
Is mine to loose or bar.

### HONG-KONG

Hail, Mother! Hold me fast; my Praya sleeps  
Under innumerable keels to-day.  
Yet guard (and landward), or to-morrow sweeps  
Thy warships down the bay!

### HALIFAX

Into the mist my guardian prowls put forth,  
Behind the mist my virgin ramparts lie,  
The Warden of the Honour of the North,  
Sleepless and veiled am I!

### QUEBEC AND MONTREAL

Peace is our portion. Yet a whisper rose,  
Foolish and causeless, half in jest, half hate.  
Now wake we and remember mighty blows,  
And, fearing no man, wait!

### VICTORIA

From East to West the circling word has passed,  
Till West is East beside our land-locked blue;  
From East to West the tested chain holds fast,  
The well-forged link rings true!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

CAPETOWN

Hail! Snatched and bartered oft from hand to hand,  
I dream my dream, by rock and heath and pine,  
Of Empire to the northward. Ay, one land  
From Lion's Head to Line!

MELBOURNE

Greeting! Nor fear nor favour won us place,  
Got between greed of gold and dread of drouth,  
Loud-voiced and reckless as the wild tide-race  
That whips our harbour-mouth!

SYDNEY

Greeting! My birth-stain have I turned to good;  
Forcing strong wills perverse to steadfastness:  
The first flush of the tropics in my blood,  
And at my feet Success!

BRISBANE

The northern stock beneath the southern skies—  
I build a Nation for an Empire's need,  
Suffer a little, and my land shall rise,  
Queen over lands indeed!

HOBART

Man's love first found me; man's hate made me Hell;  
For my babes' sake I cleansed those infamies.  
Earnest for leave to live and labour well,  
God flung me peace and ease.

AUCKLAND

Last, loneliest, loveliest, exquisite, apart—  
On us, on us the unswerving season smiles,  
Who wonder 'mid our fern why men depart  
To seek the Happy Isles!



# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

## ENGLAND'S ANSWER

**T**RULY ye come of The Blood; slower to bless than to ban,  
Little used to lie down at the bidding of any man—  
Flesh of the flesh that I bred, bone of the bone that I bare;  
Stark as your sons shall be—stern as your fathers were.  
Deeper than speech our love, stronger than life our tether,  
But we do not fall on the neck nor kiss when we come together.  
My arm is nothing weak, my strength is not gone by;  
Sons, I have borne many sons, but my dugs are not dry.  
Look, I have made ye a place and opened wide the doors,  
That ye may talk together, your Barons and Councillors—  
Wards of the Outer March, Lords of the Lower Seas,  
Ay, talk to your grey mother that bore you on her knees!—  
That ye may talk together, brother to brother's face—  
Thus for the good of your peoples—thus for the Pride of the Race.

Also, we will make promise. So long as The Blood endures,  
I shall know that your good is mine: ye shall feel that my strength is yours:

In the day of Armageddon, at the last great fight of all,  
That Our House stand together and the pillars do not fall.  
Draw now the threefold knot firm on the ninefold bands,  
And the Law that ye make shall be law after the rule of your lands.

This for the waxen Heath, and that for the Wattle-bloom,  
This for the Maple-leaf, and that for the Southern Broom.  
The Law that ye make shall be law and I do not press my will,  
Because ye are Sons of The Blood and call me Mother still.  
Now must ye speak to your kinsmen and they must speak to you,

After the use of the English, in straight-flung words and few.  
Go to your work and be strong, halting not in your ways,  
Baulking the end half-won for an instant dole of praise.  
Stand to your work and be wise—certain of sword and pen,  
Who are neither children nor Gods, but men in a world of men!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE HOUSES

1898

*(A Song of the Dominions)*

'T WIXT my house and thy house the pathway is broad,  
In thy house or my house is half the world's hoard;  
By my house and thy house hangs all the world's fate,  
On thy house and my house lies half the world's hate.

For my house and thy house no help shall we find  
Save thy house and my house—kin cleaving to kind;  
If my house be taken, thine tumbleth anon.  
If thy house be forfeit, mine followeth soon.

'Twixt my house and thy house what talk can there be  
Of headship or lordship, or service or fee?  
Since my house to thy house no greater can send  
Than thy house to my house—friend comforting friend;  
And thy house to my house no meaner can bring  
Than my house to thy house—King counselling King!

TO THE CITY OF BOMBAY

1894

*(Dedication to "The Seven Seas")*

T HE Cities are full of pride,  
Challenging each to each—  
This from her mountain-side,  
That from her burdened beach.

They count their ships full tale—  
Their corn and oil and wine,  
Derrick and loom and bale,  
And ramparts' gun-flecked line;  
City by City they hail:  
"Hast aught to match with mine?"

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And the men that breed from them  
They traffic up and down,  
But cling to their cities' hem  
As a child to the mother's gown;

When they talk with the stranger bands,  
Dazed and newly alone;  
When they walk in the stranger lands,  
By roaring streets unknown;  
Blessing her where she stands  
For strength above their own.

(On high to hold her fame  
That stands all fame beyond,  
By oath to back the same,  
Most faithful-foolish-fond;  
Making her mere-breathed name  
Their bond upon their bond.)

So thank I God my birth  
Fell not in isles aside—  
Waste headlands of the earth,  
Or warring tribes untried—  
But that she lent me worth  
And gave me right to pride.

Surely in toil or fray  
Under an alien sky,  
Comfort it is to say:  
"Of no mean city am I!"

(Neither by service nor fee  
Come I to mine estate—  
Mother of Cities to me,  
But I was born in her gate,  
Between the palms and the sea,  
Where the world-end steamers wait.)

Now for this debt I owe,  
And for her far-borne cheer  
Must I make haste and go  
With tribute to her pier.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And she shall touch and remit  
After the use of kings  
(Orderly, ancient, fit)  
My deep-sea plunderings,  
And purchase in all lands.  
And this we do for a sign  
Her power is over mine,  
And mine I hold at her hands!

### THE GIPSY TRAIL

THE white moth to the closing bine,  
The bee to the opened clover,  
And the gipsy blood to the gipsy blood  
Ever the wide world over.

Ever the wide world over, lass,  
Ever the trail held true,  
Over the world and under the world,  
And back at the last to you.

Out of the dark of the gorgio camp,  
Out of the grime and the gray  
(Morning waits at the end of the world),  
Gipsy, come away!

The wild boar to the sun-dried swamp,  
The red crane to her reed,  
And the Romany lass to the Romany lad  
By the tie of a roving breed.

The pied snake to the rifted rock,  
The buck to the stony plain,  
And the Romany lass to the Romany lad,  
And both to the road again.

Both to the road again, again!  
Out on a clean sea-track—  
Follow the cross of the gipsy trail  
Over the world and back!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Follow the Romany patteran  
North where the blue bergs sail,  
And the bows are gray with the frozen spray,  
And the masts are shod with mail.

Follow the Romany patteran  
Sheer to the Austral Light,  
Where the besom of God is the wild South wind,  
Sweeping the sea-floors white.

Follow the Romany patteran  
West to the sinking sun,  
Till the junk-sails lift through the houseless drift,  
And the east and the west are one.

Follow the Romany patteran  
East where the silence broods  
By a purple wave on an opal beach  
In the hush of the Mahim woods.

"The wild hawk to the wind-swept sky,  
The deer to the wholesome wold,  
And the heart of a man to the heart of a maid,  
As it was in the days of old."

The heart of a man to the heart of a maid—  
Light of my tents, be fleet.  
Morning waits at the end of the world,  
And the world is all at our feet!

### OUR LADY OF THE SNOWS

1897

*(Canadian Preferential Tariff, 1897)*

A NATION spoke to a Nation,  
A Queen sent word to a Throne:  
"Daughter am I in my mother's house,  
But mistress in my own.

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

The gates are mine to open,  
As the gates are mine to close,  
And I set my house in order,"  
Said our Lady of the Snows.

"Neither with laughter nor weeping,  
Fear or the child's amaze—  
Soberly under the White Man's law  
My white men go their ways.  
Not for the Gentiles' clamour—  
Insult or threat of blows—  
Bow we the knee to Baal,"  
Said our Lady of the Snows.

"My speech is clean and single,  
I talk of common things—  
Words of the wharf and the market-place  
And the ware the merchant brings:  
Favour to those I favour,  
But a stumbling-block to my foes.  
Many there be that hate us,"  
Said our Lady of the Snows.

"I called my chiefs to council  
In the din of a troubled year;  
For the sake of a sign ye would not see,  
And a word ye would not hear.  
This is our message and answer;  
This is the path we chose:  
For we be also a people,"  
Said our Lady of the Snows.

"Carry the word to my sisters—  
To the Queens of the East and the South.  
I have proven faith in the Heritage  
By more than the word of the mouth.  
They that are wise may follow  
Ere the world's war-trumpet blows,  
But I—I am first in the battle,"  
Said our Lady of the Snows.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*A Nation spoke to a Nation,  
A Throne sent word to a Throne:  
" Daughter am I in my mother's house,  
But mistress in my own.  
The gates are mine to open,  
As the gates are mine to close,  
And I abide by my Mother's House,"  
Said our Lady of the Snows.*

AN AMERICAN

1894

*The American Spirit speaks:*

**I**F THE Led Striker call it a strike,  
Or the papers call it a war,  
They know not much what I am like,  
Nor what he is, my Avatar.

Through many roads, by me possessed,  
He shambles forth in cosmic guise;  
He is the Jester and the Jest,  
And he the Text himself applies.

The Celt is in his heart and hand,  
The Gaul is in his brain and nerve;  
Where, cosmopolitanly planned,  
He guards the Redskin's dry reserve.

His easy unswept hearth he lends  
From Labrador to Guadeloupe;  
Till, elbowed out by sloven friends,  
He camps, at sufferance, on the stoop.

Calm-eyed he scoffs at Sword and Crown,  
Or, panic-blinded, stabs and slays;  
Blatant he bids the world bow down,  
Or cringing begs a crust of praise;

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Or, sombre-drunk, at mine and mart,  
He dubs his dreary brethren Kings.  
His hands are black with blood—his heart  
Leaps, as a babe's, at little things.

But, through the shift of mood and mood,  
Mine ancient humour saves him whole—  
The cynic devil in his blood  
That bids him mock his hurrying soul;

That bids him flout the Law he makes,  
That bids him make the Law he flouts,  
Till, dazed by many doubts, he wakes  
The drumming guns that—have no doubts;

That checks him foolish-hot and fond,  
That chuckles through his deepest ire,  
That gilds the slough of his despond  
But dims the goal of his desire;

Inopportune, shrill-accented,  
The acrid Asiatic mirth  
That leaves him, careless 'mid his dead,  
The scandal of the elder earth.

How shall he clear himself, how reach  
Your bar or weighed defence prefer—  
A brother hedged with alien speech  
And lacking all interpreter?

Which knowledge vexes him a space;  
But, while Reproof around him rings,  
He turns a keen untroubled face  
Home, to the instant need of things.

Enslaved, illogical, elate,  
He greets the embarrassed Gods, nor fears  
To shake the iron hand of Fate  
Or match with Destiny for beers.

Lo, imperturbable he rules,  
Unkempt, disreputable, vast—  
And, in the teeth of all the schools,  
I—I shall save him at the last!



THE CHOICE

1917

*The American Spirit speaks:*

*T*O the Judge of Right and Wrong  
 With Whom fulfilment lies  
 Our purpose and our power belong,  
 Our faith and sacrifice.

Let Freedom's Land rejoice!  
 Our ancient bonds are riven;  
 Once more to us the eternal choice  
 Of Good or Ill is given.

Not at a little cost,  
 Hardly by prayer or tears,  
 Shall we recover the road we lost  
 In the drugged and doubting years.

But, after the fires and the wrath,  
 But, after searching and pain,  
 His Mercy opens us a path  
 To live with ourselves again.

In the Gates of Death rejoice!  
 We see and hold the good—  
 Bear witness, Earth, we have made our choice  
 With Freedom's brotherhood!

Then praise the Lord Most High  
 Whose Strength hath saved us whole,  
 Who bade us choose that the Flesh should die  
 And not the living Soul!

*To the God in Man displayed—  
 Where'er we see that Birth,  
 Be love and understanding paid  
 As never yet on earth!*

*To the Spirit that moves in Man,  
 On Whom all worlds depend,  
 Be Glory since our world began  
 And service to the end!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE YOUNG QUEEN

1900

*(The Commonwealth of Australia, inaugurated New Year's  
Day, 1901)*

HER hand was still on her sword-hilt, the spur was still  
on her heel,  
She had not cast her harness of grey, war-dinted steel;  
High on her red-splashed charger, beautiful, bold, and  
browed,  
Bright-eyed out of the battle, the Young Queen rode to be  
crowned.

She came to the Old Queen's presence, in the Hall of Our  
Thousand Years—  
In the Hall of the Five Free Nations that are peers among  
their peers:  
Royal she gave the greeting, loyal she bowed the head,  
Crying—"Crown me, my Mother!" And the Old Queen  
rose and said:—

"How can I crown thee further? I know whose standard  
flies  
Where the clean surge takes the Leeuwin or the coral barriers  
rise.  
Blood of our foes on thy bridle, and speech of our friends in  
thy mouth—  
How can I crown thee further, O Queen of the Sovereign  
South?

"Let the Five Free Nations witness!" But the Young  
Queen answered swift:—  
"It shall be crown of Our crowning to hold Our crown for  
a gift.  
In the days when Our folk were feeble thy sword made sure  
Our lands:  
Wherefore We come in power to take Our crown at thy  
hands."

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

And the Old Queen raised and kissed her, and the jealous  
    circlet prest,  
Roped with the pearls of the Northland and red with the gold  
    of the West,  
Lit with her land's own opals, levin-hearted, alive,  
And the Five-starred Cross above them, for sign of the  
    Nations Five.

So it was done in the Presence—in the Hall of Our Thousand  
    Years,  
In the face of the Five Free Nations that have no peer but  
    their peers ;  
And the Young Queen out of the Southland kneeled down  
    at the Old Queen's knee,  
And asked for a mother's blessing on the excellent years to be.

And the Old Queen stooped in the stillness where the  
    jewelled head drooped low:—  
“ Daughter no more but Sister, and doubly Daughter so—  
Mother of many princes—and child of the child I bore,  
What good thing shall I wish thee that I have not wished  
    before?

“ Shall I give thee delight in dominion—mere pride of thy  
    setting forth?  
Nay, we be women together—we know what that lust is  
    worth.  
Peace in thy utmost borders, and strength on a road untrod?  
These are dealt or diminished at the secret will of God.

“ I have swayed troublous councils, I am wise in terrible  
    things;  
Father and son and grandson, I have known the hearts of the  
    Kings.  
Shall I give thee my sleepless wisdom, or the gift all wisdom  
    above?  
Ay, we be women together—I give thee thy people's love:

“ Tempered, august, abiding, reluctant of prayers or vows,  
Eager in face of peril as thine for thy mother's house.  
God requite thee, my Sister, through the excellent years to  
    be,  
And make thy people to love thee as thou hast loved me!”

DEFINITIVE EDITION

ODE

MELBOURNE SHRINE OF REMEMBRANCE

1934

SO LONG as memory, valour, and faith endure,  
Let these stones witness, through the years to come,  
How once there was a people fenced secure  
Behind great waters girdling a far home.

Their own and their land's youth ran side by side  
Heedless and headlong as their unyoked seas—  
Lavish o'er all, and set in stubborn pride  
Of judgment, nurtured by accepted peace.

Thus, suddenly, war took them—seas and skies  
Joined with the earth for slaughter. In a breath  
They, scoffing at all talk of sacrifice,  
Gave themselves without idle words to death.

Thronging as cities throng to watch a game  
Or their own herds move southward with the year,  
Secretly, swiftly, from their ports they came,  
So that before half earth had heard their name  
Half earth had learned to speak of them with fear;

Because of certain men who strove to reach,  
Through the red surf, the crest no man might hold,  
And gave their name for ever to a beach  
Which shall outlive Troy's tale when Time is old;

Because of horsemen, gathered apart and hid—  
Merciless riders whom Megiddo sent forth  
When the outflanking hour struck, and bid  
Them close and bar the drove-roads to the north;

And those who, when men feared the last March flood  
Of Western war had risen beyond recall,  
Stormed through the night from Amiens and made good,  
At their glad cost, the breach that perilled all.

Then they returned to their desired land—  
The kindly cities and plains where they were bred—  
Having revealed their nation in earth's sight  
So long as sacrifice and honour stand,  
And their own sun at the hushed hour shall light  
The shrine of these their dead!

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

## THE FLOWERS

1895

*"To our private taste, there is always something a little exotic, almost artificial, in songs which, under an English aspect and dress, are yet so manifestly the product of other skies. They affect us like translations; the very fauna and flora are alien, remote; the dog's-tooth violet is but an ill substitute for the rathe primrose, nor can we ever believe that the wood-robin sings us sweetly in April as the English thrush."*—THE ATHENÆUM.

*BUY my English posies!  
Kent and Surrey may—  
Violets of the Undercliff  
Wet with Channel spray;  
Cowslips from a Devon combe—  
Midland furze afire—  
Buy my English posies  
And I'll sell your heart's desire!*

Buy my English posies!  
You that scorn the May,  
Won't you greet a friend from home  
Half the world away?  
Green against the draggled drift,  
Faint and frail but first—  
Buy my Northern blood-root  
And I'll know where you were nursed!  
Robin down the logging-road whistles, "Come to me!"  
Spring has found the maple-grove, the sap is running free.  
All the winds of Canada call the ploughing-rain.  
Take the flower and turn the hour, and kiss your love again!

Buy my English posies!  
Here's to match your need—  
Buy a tuft of royal heath,  
Buy a bunch of weed  
White as sand of Muizenberg  
Spun before the gale—  
Buy my heath and lilies  
And I'll tell you whence you hail!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Under hot Constantia broad the vineyards lie—  
Throned and thorned the aching berg props the speckless sky—  
Slow below the Wynberg firs trails the tilted wain—  
Take the flower and turn the hour, and kiss your love again!

Buy my English posies!  
You that will not turn—  
Buy my hot-wood clematis,  
Buy a frond o' fern  
Gathered where the Erskine leaps  
Down the road to Lorne—  
Buy my Christmas creeper  
And I'll say where you were born!  
West away from Melbourne dust holidays begin—  
They that mock at Paradise woo at Cora Lynn—  
Through the great South Otway gums sings the great South  
Main—  
Take the flower and turn the hour, and kiss your love again!

Buy my English posies!  
Here's your choice unsold!  
Buy a blood-red myrtle-bloom,  
Buy the kowhai's gold  
Flung for gift on Taupo's face,  
Sign that spring is come—  
Buy my clinging myrtle  
And I'll give you back your home!  
Broom behind the windy town, pollen of the pine—  
Bell-bird in the leafy deep where the *ratas* twine—  
Fern above the saddle-bow, flax upon the plain—  
Take the flower and turn the hour, and kiss your love again!

Buy my English posies!  
Ye that have your own  
Buy them for a brother's sake  
Overseas, alone!  
Weed ye trample underfoot  
Floods his heart abrim—  
Bird ye never heeded,  
Oh, she calls his dead to him!  
Far and far our homes are set round the Seven Seas;  
Woe for us if we forget, we who hold by these!  
Unto each his mother-beach, bloom and bird and land—  
Masters of the Seven Seas, oh, love and understand!

THE NATIVE-BORN

1894

WE'VE drunk to the Queen—God bless her! -  
 We've drunk to our mothers' land;  
 We've drunk to our English brother,  
 (But he does not understand);  
 We've drunk to the wide creation,  
 And the Cross swings low for the morn,  
 Last toast, and of Obligation,  
 A health to the Native-born!

They change their skies above them,  
 But not their hearts that roam!  
 We learned from our wistful mothers  
 To call old England "home";  
 We read of the English skylark,  
 Of the spring in the English lanes,  
 But we screamed with the painted lories  
 As we rode on the dusty plains!

They passed with their old-world legends—  
 Their tales of wrong and dearth—  
 Our fathers held by purchase,  
 But we by the right of birth;  
 Our heart's where they rocked our cradle,  
 Our love where we spent our toil,  
 And our faith and our hope and our honour  
 We pledge to our native soil!

I charge you charge your glasses—  
 I charge you drink with me  
 To the men of the Four New Nations,  
 And the Islands of the Sea—  
 To the last least lump of coral  
 That none may stand outside,  
 And our own good pride shall teach us  
 To praise our comrade's pride.

To the hush of the breathless morning  
 On the thin, tin, crackling roofs,

DEFINITIVE EDITION

To the haze of the burned back-ranges  
And the dust of the shoeless hoofs—  
To the risk of a death by drowning,  
To the risk of a death by drouth—  
To the men of a million acres,  
To the Sons of the Golden South!

*To the Sons of the Golden South (Stand up!),  
And the life we live and know,  
Let a fellow sing o' the little things he cares about,  
If a fellow fights for the little things he cares about  
With the weight of a single blow!*

To the smoke of a hundred coasters,  
To the sheep on a thousand hills,  
To the sun that never blisters,  
To the rain that never chills—  
To the land of the waiting springtime,  
To our five-meal, meat-fed men,  
To the tall, deep-bosomed women,  
And the children nine and ten!

*And the children nine and ten (Stand up!),  
And the life we live and know,  
Let a fellow sing o' the little things he cares about,  
If a fellow fights for the little things he cares about  
With the weight of a two-fold blow!*

To the far-flung, fenceless prairie  
Where the quick cloud-shadows trail,  
To our neighbour's barn in the offing  
And the line of the new-cut rail;  
To the plough in her league-long furrow  
With the grey Lake gulls behind—  
To the weight of a half-year's winter  
And the warm wet western wind!

To the home of the floods and thunder,  
To her pale dry healing blue—  
To the lift of the great Cape combers,  
And the smell of the baked Karroo.



# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

To the growl of the sluicing stamp-head—  
 To the reef and the water-gold,  
 To the last and the largest Empire,  
 To the map that is half unrolled!

To our dear dark foster-mothers,  
 To the heathen songs they sung—  
 To the heathen speech we babbled  
 Ere we came to the white man's tongue.  
 To the cool of our deep verandahs—  
 To the blaze of our jewelled main,  
 To the night, to the palms in the moonlight,  
 And the fire-fly in the cane!

To the hearth of Our People's People—  
 To her well-ploughed windy sea,  
 To the hush of our dread high-altar  
 Where The Abbey makes us We.  
 To the grist of the slow-ground ages,  
 To the gain that is yours and mine—  
 To the Bank of the Open Credit,  
 To the Power-house of the Line!

We've drunk to the Queen—God bless her!  
 We've drunk to our mothers' land;  
 We've drunk to our English brother  
 (And we hope he'll understand).  
 We've drunk as much as we're able,  
 And the Cross swings low for the morn;  
 Last toast—and your foot on the table!—  
 A health to the Native-born!

*A health to the Native-born (Stand up!),  
 We're six white men arow,  
 All bound to sing o' the little things we care about,  
 All bound to fight for the little things we care about  
 With the weight of a six-fold blow!  
 By the might of our Cable-tow (Take hands!),  
 From the Orkneys to the Horn  
 All round the world (and a little loop to pull it by),  
 All round the world (and a little strap to buckle it).  
 A health to the Native-born!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE LOST LEGION

1895

THERE's a Legion that never was 'listed,  
That carries no colours or crest.  
But, split in a thousand detachments,  
Is breaking the road for the rest.  
Our fathers they left us their blessing—  
They taught us, and groomed us, and crammed;  
But we've shaken the Clubs and the Messes  
To go and find out and be damned  
(Dear boys!),  
To go and get shot and be damned.

So some of us chivvy the slaver,  
And some of us cherish the black,  
And some of us hunt on the Oil Coast,  
And some on the Wallaby track:  
And some of us drift to Sarawak,  
And some of us drift up The Fly,  
And some share our tucker with tigers,  
And some with the gentle Masai,  
(Dear boys!),  
Take tea with the giddy Masai.

We've painted The Islands vermillion,  
We've pearled on half-shares in the Bay,  
We've shouted on seven-ounce nuggets,  
We've starved on a Seedeboy's pay;  
We've laughed at the world as we found it,—  
Its women and cities and men—  
From Sayyid Burgash in a tantrum  
To the smoke-reddened eyes of Loben,  
(Dear boys!),  
We've a little account with Loben.

The ends of the Earth were our portion,  
The ocean at large was our share.  
There was never a skirmish to windward  
But the Leaderless Legion was there:

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Yes, somehow and somewhere and always  
We were first when the trouble began,  
From a lottery-row in Manila,  
To an I.D.B. race on the Pan  
(Dear boys!),  
With the Mounted Police on the Pan.

We preach in advance of the Army,  
We skirmish ahead of the Church,  
With never a gunboat to help us  
When we're scuppered and left in the lurch.  
But we know as the cartridges finish,  
And we're filed on our last little shelves,  
That the Legion that never was 'listed  
Will send us as good as ourselves  
(Good men!),  
Five hundred as good as ourselves!

Then a health (we must drink it in whispers),  
To our wholly unauthorized horde—  
To the line of our dusty foreloopers,  
The Gentlemen Rovers abroad—  
Yes, a health to ourselves ere we scatter,  
For the steamer won't wait for the train,  
And the Legion that never was 'listed  
Goes back into quarters again!  
'Regards!  
Goes back under canvas again.  
Hurrah!  
The swag and the billy again.  
Here's how!  
The trail and the packhorse again.  
Saluel  
The trek and the laager again!

### THE IRISH GUARDS

1918

WE'RE not so old in the Army List,  
But we're not so young at our trade,  
For we had the honour at Fontenoy  
Of meeting the Guards' Brigade.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

'Twas Lally, Dillon, Bulkeley, Clare,  
And Lee that led us then,  
And after a hundred and seventy years

We're fighting for France again!

*Old Days! The wild geese are fighting,*

*Head to the storm as they faced it before!*

*For where there are Irish there's bound to be fighting,*

*And when there's no fighting, it's Ireland no more!*

*Ireland no more!*

The fashion's all for khaki now,  
But once through France we went

Full-dressed in scarlet Army cloth

The English—left at Ghent.

They're fighting on our side to-day

But, before they changed their clothes,

The half of Europe knew our fame,

As all of Ireland knows!

*Old Days! The wild geese are flying,*

*Head to the storm as they faced it before!*

*For where there are Irish there's memory undying,*

*And when we forget, it is Ireland no more!*

*Ireland no more!*

From Barry Wood to Gouzeaucourt,

From Boyne to Pilkem Ridge,

The ancient days come back no more

Than water under the bridge.

But the bridge it stands and the water runs

As red as yesterday,

And the Irish move to the sound of the guns

Like salmon to the sea.

*Old Days! The wild geese are ranging,*

*Head to the storm as they faced it before!*

*For where there are Irish their hearts are unchanging,*

*And when they are changed, it is Ireland no more!*

*Ireland no more!*

We're not so old in the Army List,

But we're not so new in the ring,

For we carried our packs with Marshal Saxe

When Louis was our King.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

But Douglas Haig's our Marshal now  
And we're King George's men,  
And after one hundred and seventy years  
We're fighting for France again!  
    *Ah, France! And did we stand by you,  
        When life was made splendid with gifts and rewards?  
Ah, France! And will we deny you  
        In the hour of your agony, Mother of Swords?  
Old Days! The wild geese are fighting,  
        Head to the storm as they faced it before!  
For where there are Irish there's loving and fighting,  
        And when we stop either, it's Ireland no more!  
  Ireland no more!*

### PHARAOH AND THE SERGEANT

1897

*"... Consider that the meritorious services of the Sergeant Instructors attached to the Egyptian Army have been inadequately acknowledged. . . . To the excellence of their work is mainly due the great improvement that has taken place in the soldiers of H.H. the Khedive."—EXTRACT FROM LETTER.*

S AID England unto Pharaoh, "I must make a man of you,  
That will stand upon his feet and play the game;  
That will Maxim his oppressor as a Christian ought to do,"  
And she sent old Pharaoh Sergeant Whatsisname.  
    It was not a Duke nor Earl, nor yet a Viscount—  
    It was not a big brass General that came;  
    But a man in khaki kit who could handle men a bit,  
    With his bedding labelled Sergeant Whatsisname.

Said England unto Pharaoh, "Though at present singing  
    small,  
You shall hum a proper tune before it ends,"  
And she introduced old Pharaoh to the Sergeant once for all,  
And left 'em in the desert making friends.  
    It was not a Crystal Palace nor Cathedral;  
    It was not a public-house of common fame;  
    But a piece of red-hot sand, with a palm on either hand,  
    And a little hut for Sergeant Whatsisname.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Said England unto Pharaoh, "You've had miracles before,  
When Aaron struck your rivers into blood;  
But if you watch the Sergeant he can show you something  
more.

He's a charm for making riflemen from mud."  
It was neither Hindustani, French, nor Coptics;  
It was odds and ends and leavings of the same,  
Translated by a stick (which is really half the trick),  
And Pharaoh harked to Sergeant Whatsisname.

(There were years that no one talked of; there were times of  
horrid doubt—

There was faith and hope and whacking and despair—  
While the Sergeant gave the Cautions and he combed old  
Pharaoh out,

And England didn't seem to know nor care.  
That is England's awful way o' doing business—  
She would serve her God (or Gordon) just the same—  
For she thinks her Empire still is the Strand and Hol-  
born Hill,  
And she didn't think of Sergeant Whatsisname.)

Said England to the Sergeant, "You can let my people go!"  
(England used 'em cheap and nasty from the start),  
And they entered 'em in battle on a most astonished foe—  
But the Sergeant he had hardened Pharaoh's heart  
Which was broke, along of all the plagues of Egypt,  
Three thousand years before the Sergeant came—  
And he mended it again in a little more than ten,  
Till Pharaoh fought like Sergeant Whatsisname.

It was wicked bad campaigning (cheap and nasty from the  
first),

There was heat and dust and coolie-work and sun,  
There were vipers, flies, and sandstorms, there was cholera  
and thirst,

But Pharaoh done the best he ever done.

Down the desert, down the railway, down the river,

Like the Israelites from bondage so he came,

'Tween the clouds o' dust and fire to the land of his  
desire,

And his Moses, it was Sergeant Whatsisname!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

We are eating dirt in handfuls for to save our daily bread,  
Which we have to buy from those that hate us most,  
And we must not raise the money where the Sergeant raised  
the dead,  
And it's wrong and bad and dangerous to boast.  
But he did it on the cheap and on the quiet,  
And he's not allowed to forward any claim—  
Though he drilled a black man white, though he made a  
mummy fight,  
He will still continue Sergeant Whatsisname—  
Private, Corporal, Colour-Sergeant, and Instructor—  
But the everlasting miracle's the same!

### THE LAST OF THE LIGHT BRIGADE

1891

THERE were thirty million English who talked of Eng-  
land's might,  
There were twenty broken troopers who lacked a bed for the  
night.  
They had neither food nor money, they had neither service  
nor trade;  
They were only shiftless soldiers, the last of the Light Brigade.

They felt that life was fleeting; they knew not that art was  
long,  
That though they were dying of famine, they lived in death-  
less song.  
They asked for a little money to keep the wolf from the  
door;  
And the thirty million English sent twenty pounds and  
four!

They laid their heads together that were scarred and lined  
and grey;  
Keen were the Russian sabres, but want was keener than  
they;  
And an old Troop-Sergeant muttered, "Let us go to the  
man who writes  
The things on Balaclava the kiddies at school recites."

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

They went without bands or colours, a regiment ten-file  
strong,  
To look for the Master-singer who had crowned them all  
in his song;  
And, waiting his servant's order, by the garden gate they  
stayed,  
A desolate little cluster, the last of the Light Brigade.

They strove to stand to attention, to straighten the toil-  
bowed back;  
They drilled on an empty stomach, the loose-knit files fell  
slack;  
With stooping of weary shoulders, in garments tattered and  
frayed,  
They shambled into his presence, the last of the Light  
Brigade.

The old Troop-Sergeant was spokesman, and "Beggin' your  
pardon," he said,  
"You wrote o' the Light Brigade, sir. Here's all that isn't  
dead.  
An' it's all come true what you wrote, sir, regardin' the mouth  
of hell;  
For we're all of us nigh to the workhouse, an' we thought  
we'd call an' tell.

"No, thank you, we don't want food, sir; but couldn't you  
take an' write  
A sort of 'to be continued' and 'see next page' o' the  
fight?  
We think that someone has blundered, an' couldn't you tell  
'em how?  
You wrote we were heroes once, sir. Please, write we are  
starving now."

The poor little army departed, limping and lean and forlorn.  
And the heart of the Master-singer grew hot with "the scorn  
of scorn."  
And he wrote for them wonderful verses that swept the land  
like flame,  
Till the fatted souls of the English were scourged with the  
thing called Shame.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

O thirty million English that babble of England's might,  
Behold there are twenty heroes who lack their food to-night;  
Our children's children are lisping to "honour the charge  
they made—"  
And we leave to the streets and the workhouse the charge of  
the Light Brigade!

### KITCHENER'S SCHOOL

1898

*Being a translation of the song that was made by a Mohammedan school-master of Bengal Infantry (some time on service at Suakim) when he heard that Kitchener was taking money from the English to build a Madrissa for Hubshees—or a college for the Sudanese at Khartoum.*

O H, HUBSHEE, carry your shoes in your hand and bow  
your head on your breast!  
This is the message of Kitchener who did not break you in  
jest.

It was permitted to him to fulfil the long-appointed years;  
Reaching the end ordained of old over your dead Emirs.

He stamped only before your walls, and the Tomb ye knew  
was dust:

He gathered up under his armpits all the swords of your  
trust:

He set a guard on your granaries, securing the weak from  
the strong:

He said:—"Go work the waterwheels that were abolished so  
long."

He said:—"Go safely, being abased. I have accomplished  
my vow."

That was the mercy of Kitchener. Cometh his madness now!  
He does not desire as ye desire, nor devise as ye devise:  
He is preparing a second host—an army to make you wise.

Not at the mouth of his clean-lipped guns shall ye learn his  
name again,  
But letter by letter, from Kaf to Kaf, at the mouths of his  
chosen men.

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

He has gone back to his own city, not seeking presents or  
bribes,  
But openly asking the English for money to buy you Hakims  
and scribes.

Knowing that ye are forfeit by battle and have no right to  
live,  
He begs for money to bring you learning—and all the Eng-  
lish give.  
It is their treasure—it is their pleasure—thus are their  
hearts inclined:  
For Allah created the English mad—the maddest of all  
mankind!

They do not consider the Meaning of Things; they consult  
not creed nor clan.  
Behold, they clap the slave on the back, and behold, he ariseth  
a man!  
They terribly carpet the earth with dead, and before their  
cannon cool,  
They walk unarmed by twos and threes to call the living to  
school.

How is this reason (which is their reason) to judge a scholar's  
worth,  
By casting a ball at three straight sticks and defending the  
same with a fourth?  
But this they do (which is doubtless a spell) and other matters  
more strange,  
Until, by the operation of years, the hearts of their scholars  
change:

Till these make come and go great boats or engines upon the  
rail  
(But always the English watch near by to prop them when  
they fail);  
Till these make laws of their own choice and Judges of their  
own blood;  
And all the mad English obey the Judges and say that that  
Law is good.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Certainly they were mad from of old; but I think one new  
thing,  
That the magic whereby they work their magic—wherefrom  
their fortunes spring—  
May be that they show all peoples their magic and ask no  
price in return.  
Wherefore, since ye are bond to that magic, O Hubshee, make  
haste and learn!

Certainly also is Kitchener mad. But one sure thing I  
know—  
If he who broke you be minded to teach you, to his Madrissa  
go!  
Go, and carry your shoes in your hand and bow your head  
on your breast,  
For he who did not slay you in sport, he will not teach you  
in jest.

LORD ROBERTS

*(Died in France 1914)*

HE PASSED in the very battle-smoke  
Of the war that he had descried.  
Three hundred mile of cannon spoke  
When the Master-Gunner died.

He passed to the very sound of the guns;  
But, before his eye grew dim,  
He had seen the faces of the sons  
Whose sires had served with him.

He had touched their sword-hilts and greeted each  
With the old sure word of praise;  
And there was virtue in touch and speech  
As it had been in old days.

So he dismissed them and took his rest,  
And the steadfast spirit went forth  
Between the adoring East and West  
And the tireless guns of the North.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Clean, simple, valiant, well-beloved,  
Flawless in faith and fame,  
Whom neither ease nor honours moved  
An hair's-breadth from his aim.

Never again the war-wise face,  
The weighed and urgent word  
That pleaded in the market-place—  
Pleaded and was not heard!

Yet from his life a new life springs  
Through all the hosts to come,  
And Glory is the least of things  
That follow this man home.

## BRIDGE-GUARD IN THE KARROO

1901

*... and will supply details to guard the Blood River Bridge."*  
District Orders: Lines of Communication—South African War.

SUDDEN the desert changes,  
The raw glare softens and clings,  
Till the aching Oudtshoorn ranges  
Stand up like the thrones of Kings—

Ramparts of slaughter and peril—  
Blazing, amazing, aglow—  
'Twixt the sky-line's belting beryl  
And the wine-dark flats below.

Royal the pageant closes,  
Lit by the last of the sun—  
Opal and ash-of-roses,  
Cinnamon, umber, and dun.

The twilight swallows the thicket,  
The starlight reveals the ridge.  
The whistle shrills to the picket—  
We are changing guard on the bridge.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

(Few, forgotten and lonely,  
Where the empty metals shine—  
No, not combatants—only  
Details guarding the line.)

We slip through the broken panel  
Of fence by the ganger's shed;  
We drop to the waterless channel  
And the lean track overhead;

We stumble on refuse of rations,  
The beef and the biscuit-tins;  
We take our appointed stations,  
And the endless night begins.

We hear the Hottentot herders  
As the sheep click past to the fold—  
And the click of the restless girders  
As the steel contracts in the cold—

Voices of jackals calling  
And, loud in the hush between,  
A morsel of dry earth falling  
From the flanks of the scarred ravine.

And the solemn firmament marches,  
And the hosts of heaven rise  
Framed through the iron arches—  
Banded and barred by the ties,

Till we feel the far track humming,  
And we see her headlight plain,  
And we gather and wait her coming—  
The wonderful north-bound train.

(Few, forgotten and lonely,  
Where the white car-windows shine—  
No, not combatants—only  
Details guarding the line.)

Quick, ere the gift escape us!  
Out of the darkness we reach  
For a handful of week-old papers  
And a mouthful of human speech.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And the monstrous heaven rejoices,  
And the earth allows again  
Meetings, greetings, and voices  
Of women talking with men.

So we return to our places,  
As out on the bridge she rolls;  
And the darkness covers our faces,  
And the darkness re-enters our souls.

More than a little lonely  
Where the lessening tail-lights shine.  
No—not combatants—only  
Details guarding the line!

### SOUTH AFRICA

1903

LIVED a woman wonderful,  
(May the Lord amend her!)  
Neither simple, kind, nor true,  
But her Pagan beauty drew  
Christian gentlemen a few  
Hotly to attend her.

*Christian gentlemen a few  
From Berwick unto Dover;  
For she was South Africa,  
And she was South Africa,  
She was Our South Africa,  
Africa all over!*

Half her land was dead with drouth,  
Half was red with battle;  
She was fenced with fire and sword,  
Plague on pestilence outpoured,  
Locusts on the greening sward  
And murrain on the cattle!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*True, ah, true, and overtrue.  
That is why we love her!  
For she is South Africa,  
And she is South Africa,  
She is Our South Africa,  
Africa all over!*

Bitter hard her lovers toiled,  
Scandalous their payment,—  
Food forgot on trains derailed;  
Cattle-dung where fuel failed;  
Water where the mules had staled;  
And sackcloth for their raiment!

So she filled their mouths with dust  
And their bones with fever;  
Greeted them with cruel lies;  
Treated them despiteful-wise;  
Metered them calamities  
Till they vowed to leave her!

They took ship and they took sail,  
Raging, from her borders—  
In a little, none the less,  
They forgot their sore duress,  
They forgave her frowardness  
And returned for orders!

They esteemed her favour more  
Than a Throne's foundation.  
For the glory of her face  
Bade farewell to breed and race—  
Yea, and made their burial-place  
Altar of a Nation!

Wherefore, being bought by blood,  
And by blood restored  
To the arms that nearly lost,  
She, because of all she cost,  
Stands, a very woman, most  
Perfect and adored!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

*On your feet, and let them know  
This is why we love her!  
For she is South Africa,  
She is Our South Africa,  
Is Our Own South Africa,  
Africa all over!*

THE BURIAL

(C. J. RHODES, BURIED IN THE MATOPPOS,  
APRIL 10, 1902)

1902

WHEN that great Kings return to clay,  
Or Emperors in their pride,  
Grief of a day shall fill a day,  
Because its creature died.  
But we—we reckon not with those  
Whom the mere Fates ordain,  
This Power that wrought on us and goes  
Back to the Power again.

Dreamer devout, by vision led  
Beyond our guess or reach,  
The travail of his spirit bred  
Cities in place of speech.  
So huge the all-mastering thought that drove—  
So brief the term allowed—  
Nations, not words, he linked to prove  
His faith before the crowd.

It is his will that he look forth  
Across the world he won—  
The granite of the ancient North—  
Great spaces washed with sun.  
There shall he patient take his seat  
(As when the Death he dared),  
And there await a people's feet  
In the paths that he prepared.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There, till the vision he foresaw  
Splendid and whole arise,  
And unimagined Empires draw  
To council 'neath his skies,  
The immense and brooding Spirit still  
Shall quicken and control.  
Living he was the land, and dead,  
His soul shall be her soul!

### RHODES MEMORIAL, TABLE MOUNTAIN

1905

*(From a letter written to Sir Herbert Baker, R.A., when the form of the Memorial was under discussion)*

AS THO' again—yea, even once again,  
We should rewelcome to our stewardship  
The rider with the loose-flung bridle-rein  
And chance-plucked twig for whip,

The down-turned hat-brim, and the eyes beneath  
Alert, devouring—and the imperious hand  
Ordaining matters swiftly to bequeath  
Perfect the work he planned.

### THINGS AND THE MAN

(IN MEMORIAM, JOSEPH CHAMBERLAIN)

1904

*"And Joseph dreamed a dream, and he told it his brethren and they hated him yet the more."—GENESIS xxxvii. 5.*

OH, YE who hold the written clue  
To all save all unwritten things,  
And, half a league behind, pursue  
The accomplished Fact with flouts and flings,

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Look! To your knee your baby brings  
The oldest tale since Earth began—  
The answer to your worryings:  
“*Once on a time there was a Man.*”

He, single-handed, met and slew  
Magicians, Armies, Ogres, Kings.  
He lonely 'mid his doubting crew—  
“In all the loneliness of wings”—  
He fed the flame, he filled the springs,  
He locked the ranks, he launched the van  
Straight at the grinning Teeth of Things.  
“*Once on a time there was a Man.*”

The peace of shocked Foundations flew  
Before his ribald questionings.  
He broke the Oracles in two,  
And bared the paltry wires and strings.  
He headed desert wanderings;  
He led his soul, his cause, his clan  
A little from the ruck of Things.  
“*Once on a time there was a Man.*”

Thrones, Powers, Dominions block the view  
With episodes and underlings—  
The meek historian deems them true  
Nor heeds the song that Clio sings—  
The simple central truth that stings  
The mob to boo, the priest to ban;  
*Things never yet created things—*  
“*Once on a time there was a Man.*”

A bolt is fallen from the blue.  
A wakened realm full circle swings  
Where Dothan's dreamer dreams anew  
Of vast and far-borne harvestings;  
And unto him an Empire clings  
That grips the purpose of his plan.  
My Lords, how think you of these things?  
*Once—in our time—is there a Man?*

THE SETTLER

1903

*(South African War ended, May 1902)*

HERE, where my fresh-turned furrows run,  
 And the deep soil glistens red,  
 I will repair the wrong that was done  
 To the living and the dead.  
 Here, where the senseless bullet fell,  
 And the barren shrapnel burst,  
 I will plant a tree, I will dig a well,  
 Against the heat and the thirst.

Here, in a large and a sunlit land,  
 Where no wrong bites to the bone,  
 I will lay my hand in my neighbour's hand,  
 And together we will atone  
 For the set folly and the red breach  
 And the black waste of it all;  
 Giving and taking counsel each  
 Over the cattle-kraal.

Here will we join against our foes—  
 The hailstroke and the storm,  
 And the red and rustling cloud that blows  
 The locust's mile-deep swarm.  
 Frost and murrain and flood let loose  
 Shall launch us side by side  
 In the holy wars that have no truce  
 "Twixt seed and harvest-tide.

Earth, where we rode to slay or be slain,  
 Our love shall redeem unto life.  
 We will gather and lead to her lips again  
 The waters of ancient strife,  
 From the far and the fiercely guarded streams  
 And the pools where we lay in wait,  
 Till the corn cover our evil dreams  
 And the young corn our hate.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And when we bring old fights to mind,  
We will not remember the sin—  
If there be blood on his head of my kind,  
Or blood on my head of his kin—  
For the ungrazed upland, the untilled lea  
Cry, and the fields forlorn:  
“The dead must bury their dead, but ye—  
Ye serve an host unborn.”

Bless then, Our God, the new-yoked plough  
And the good beasts that draw,  
And the bread we eat in the sweat of our brow  
According to Thy Law.  
After us cometh a multitude—  
Prosper the work of our hands,  
That we may feed with our land's food  
The folk of all our lands!

Here, in the waves and the troughs of the plains,  
Where the healing stillness lies,  
And the vast, benignant sky restrains  
And the long days make wise—  
Bless to our use the rain and the sun  
And the blind seed in its bed,  
That we may repair the wrong that was done  
To the living and the dead!

## SUSSEX

1902

GOD gave all men all earth to love,  
But, since our hearts are small,  
Ordaigned for each one spot should prove  
Belovèd over all;  
That, as He watched Creation's birth,  
So we, in godlike mood,  
May of our love create our earth  
And see that it is good.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

So one shall Baltic pines content,  
As one some Surrey glade,  
Or one the palm-grove's droned lament  
Before Levuka's Trade.  
Each to his choice, and I rejoice  
The lot has fallen to me  
In a fair ground—in a fair ground—  
Yea, Sussex by the sea!

No tender-hearted garden crowns,  
No bosomed woods adorn  
Our blunt, bow-headed, whale-backed Downs,  
But gnarled and writhen thorn—  
Bare slopes where chasing shadows skim,  
And, through the gaps revealed,  
Belt upon belt, the wooded, dim,  
Blue goodness of the Weald.

Clean of officious fence or hedge,  
Half-wild and wholly tame,  
The wise turf cloaks the white cliff-edge  
As when the Romans came.  
What sign of those that fought and died  
At shift of sword and sword?  
The barrow and the camp abide,  
The sunlight and the sward.

Here leaps ashore the full Sou'west  
All heavy-winged with brine,  
Here lies above the folded crest  
The Channel's leaden line;  
And here the sea-fogs lap and cling,  
And here, each warning each,  
The sheep-bells and the ship-bells ring  
Along the hidden beach.

We have no waters to delight  
Our broad and brookless vales—  
Only the dewpond on the height  
Unfed, that never fails—

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

Whereby no tattered herbage tells  
Which way the season flies—  
Only our close-bit thyme that smells  
Like dawn in Paradise.

Here through the strong and shadeless days  
The tinkling silence thrills;  
Or little, lost, Down churches praise  
The Lord who made the hills:  
But here the Old Gods guard their round,  
And, in her secret heart,  
The heathen kingdom Wilfrid found  
Dreams, as she dwells, apart.

Though all the rest were all my share,  
With equal soul I'd see  
Her nine-and-thirty sisters fair,  
Yet none more fair than she.  
Choose ye your need from Thames to Tweed,  
And I will choose instead  
Such lands as lie 'twixt Rake and Rye,  
Black Down and Beachy Head.

I will go out against the sun  
Where the rolled scarp retires,  
And the Long Man of Wilmington  
Looks naked toward the shires;  
And east till doubling Rother crawls  
To find the fickle tide,  
By dry and sea-forgotten walls,  
Our ports of stranded pride.

I will go north about the shaws  
And the deep ghylls that breed  
Huge oaks and old, the which we hold  
No more than Sussex weed;  
Or south where windy Piddinghoe's  
Begilded dolphin veers,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And red beside wide-bankèd Ouse  
Lie down our Sussex steers.

So to the land our hearts we give  
Till the sure magic strike,  
And Memory, Use, and Love make live  
Us and our fields alike—  
That deeper than our speech and thought,  
Beyond our reason's sway,  
Clay of the pit whence we were wrought  
Yearns to its fellow-clay.

*God gives all men all earth to love,  
But, since man's heart is small,  
Ordains for each one spot shall prove  
Belovèd over all.  
Each to his choice, and I rejoice  
The lot has fallen to me  
In a fair ground—in a fair ground—  
Yea, Sussex by the sea!*

### MY BOY JACK

1914-18

“**H**AVE you news of my boy Jack?”  
*Not this tide.*  
“When d’you think that he’ll come back?”  
*Not with this wind blowing, and this tide.*

“Has any one else had word of him?”  
*Not this tide.*  
*For what is sunk will hardly swim,*  
*Not with this wind blowing, and this tide.*

“Oh, dear, what comfort can I find?”  
*None this tide,*  
*Nor any tide,*  
*Except he did not shame his kind—*  
*Not even with that wind blowing, and that tide.*

*Then hold your head up all the more,  
This tide,  
And every tide ;  
Because he was the son you bore,  
And gave to that wind blowing and that tide !*

1914-18

*The Cross was raised on high ;  
The Mother grieved beside—*  
“ But the Mother saw Him die  
And took Him when He died.  
(He died! He died!)  
“ Seemly and undefiled  
His burial-place was made—  
Is it well, is it well with the child?  
For I know not where he is laid.”



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*On the dawning of Easter Day  
Comes Mary Magdalene;  
But the Stone was rolled away,  
And the Body was not within—*  
(Within! Within!)

“ Ah, who will answer my word? ”  
The broken mother prayed.  
“ They have taken away my Lord,  
And I know not where He is laid.”

“ *The Star stands forth in Heaven.  
The watchers watch in vain  
For Sign of the Promise given  
Of peace on Earth again—*

(Again! Again!)

“ But I know for Whom he fell ”—  
The steadfast mother smiled,  
“ Is it well with the child—is it well?  
It is well—it is well with the child! ”

## DIRGE OF DEAD SISTERS

1902

*(For the Nurses who died in the South African War)*

WHO recalls the twilight and the ranged tents in order  
(Violet peaks uplifted through the crystal evening  
air?)  
And the clink of iron teacups and the piteous, noble laughter,  
And the faces of the Sisters with the dust upon their  
hair?

(Now and not hereafter, while the breath is in our nostrils,  
Now and not hereafter, ere the meaner years go by—  
Let us now remember many honourable women,  
Such as bade us turn again when we were like to die.)

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

Who recalls the morning and the thunder through the foot-  
hills,  
    (Tufts of fleecy shrapnel strung along the empty plains?)  
And the sun-scarred Red-Cross coaches creeping guarded to  
    the culvert,  
    And the faces of the Sisters looking gravely from the  
    trains?

(When the days were torment and the nights were clouded  
    terror,  
    When the Powers of Darkness had dominion on our  
    soul—  
When we fled consuming through the Seven Hells of Fever,  
    These put out their hands to us and healed and made us  
    whole.)

Who recalls the midnight by the bridge's wrecked abutment,  
    (Autumn rain that rattled like a Maxim on the tin?)  
And the lightning-dazzled levels and the streaming, straining  
    wagons,  
    And the faces of the Sisters as they bore the wounded in?

(Till the pain was merciful and stunned us into silence—  
    When each nerve cried out on God that made the misused  
    clay;  
When the Body triumphed and the last poor shame de-  
    parted—  
    These abode our agonies and wiped the sweat away.)

Who recalls the noontide and the funerals through the  
    market,  
    (Blanket-hidden bodies, flagless, followed by the flies?)  
And the footsore firing-party, and the dust and stench and  
    staleness,  
    And the faces of the Sisters and the glory in their eyes?

(Bold behind the battle, in the open camp all-hallowed,  
    Patient, wise, and mirthful in the ringed and reeking  
    town,  
These endured unresting till they rested from their labours—  
    Little wasted bodies, ah, so light to lower down!)

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Yet their graves are scattered and their names are clean forgotten,  
Earth shall not remember, but the Waiting Angel knows  
Them that died at Uitvlugt when the plague was on the city—  
Her that fell at Simon's Town<sup>1</sup> in service on our foes.

*Wherefore we they ransomed, while the breath is in our nostrils,  
Now and not hereafter—ere the meaner years go by—  
Praise with love and worship many honourable women,  
Those that gave their lives for us when we were like to die!*

THE VAMPIRE

1897

A FOOL there was and he made his prayer  
(Even as you and I!)  
To a rag and a bone and a hank of hair  
(We called her the woman who did not care)  
But the fool he called her his lady fair—  
(Even as you and I!)

*Oh, the years we waste and the tears we waste  
And the work of our head and hand  
Belong to the woman who did not know  
(And now we know that she never could know)  
And did not understand!*

A fool there was and his goods he spent  
(Even as you and I!)  
Honour and faith and a sure intent  
(And it wasn't the least what the lady meant)  
But a fool must follow his natural bent  
(Even as you and I!)

*Oh, the toil we lost and the spoil we lost  
And the excellent things we planned  
Belong to the woman who didn't know why  
(And now we know that she never knew why)  
And did not understand!*

<sup>1</sup> Mary Kingsley.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The fool was stripped to his foolish hide  
(Even as you and I!)  
Which she might have seen when she threw him aside—  
(But it isn't on record the lady tried)  
So some of him lived but the most of him died—  
(Even as you and I!)

*And it isn't the shame and it isn't the blame  
That stings like a white-hot brand—  
It's coming to know that she never knew why  
(Seeing, at last, she could never know why)  
And never could understand!*

## THE ENGLISH FLAG

1891

*Above the portico a flag-staff, bearing the Union Jack, remained fluttering in the flames for some time, but ultimately when it fell the crowds rent the air with shouts, and seemed to see significance in the incident.*

DAILY PAPERS.

WINDS of the World, give answer! They are whimpering to and fro—  
And what should they know of England who only England know?—  
The poor little street-bred people that vapour and fume and brag,  
They are lifting their heads in the stillness to yelp at the English Flag!

Must we borrow a clout from the Boer—to plaster anew with dirt?  
An Irish liar's bandage, or an English coward's shirt?  
We may not speak of England; her Flag's to sell or share.  
What is the Flag of England? Winds of the World, declare!

The North Wind blew:—"From Bergen my steel-shod van-guards go;  
"I chase your lazy whalers home from the Disko floe.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"By the great North Lights above me I work the will of God,  
"And the liner splits on the ice-field or the Dogger fills with  
cod.

"I barred my gates with iron, I shuttered my doors with  
flame,  
"Because to force my ramparts your nutshell navies came.  
"I took the sun from their presence, I cut them down with  
my blast,  
"And they died, but the Flag of England blew free ere the  
spirit passed.

"The lean white bear hath seen it in the long, long Arctic  
nights,  
"The musk-ox knows the standard that flouts the Northern  
Lights :  
"What is the Flag of England? Ye have but my bergs to  
dare,  
"Ye have but my drifts to conquer. Go forth, for it is  
there!"

The South Wind sighed:—"From the Virgins my mid-sea  
course was ta'en  
"Over a thousand islands lost in an idle main,  
"Where the sea-egg flames on the coral and the long-backed  
breakers croon  
"Their endless ocean legends to the lazy, locked lagoon.

"Strayed amid lonely islets, mazed amid outer keys,  
"I waked the palms to laughter—I tossed the scud in the  
breeze.  
"Never was isle so little, never was sea so lone,  
"But over the scud and the palm-trees an English flag was  
flown.

"I have wrenched it free from the halliards to hang for a  
wisp on the Horn;  
"I have chased it north to the Lizard—ribboned and rolled  
and torn;  
"I have spread its folds o'er the dying, adrift in a hopeless  
sea;  
"I have hurled it swift on the slaver, and seen the slave set  
free.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"My basking sunfish know it, and wheeling albatross,  
"Where the lone wave fills with fire beneath the Southern  
Cross.

"What is the Flag of England? Ye have but my reefs to  
dare,

"Ye have but my seas to furrow. Go forth, for it is there!"

The East Wind roared:—"From the Kuriles, the Bitter  
Seas, I come,

"And me men call the Home-Wind, for I bring the English  
home.

"Look—look well to your shipping! By the breath of my  
mad typhoon

"I swept your close-packed Praya and beached your best at  
Kowloon!

"The reeling junks behind me and the racing seas before,

"I raped your richest roadstead—I plundered Singapore!

"I set my hand on the Hoogli; as a hooded snake she rose;

"And I flung your stoutest steamers to roost with the  
startled crows.

"Never the lotos closes, never the wild-fowl wake,

"But a soul goes out on the East Wind that died for England's  
sake—

"Man or woman or suckling, mother or bride or maid—

"Because on the bones of the English the English Flag is  
stayed.

"The desert-dust hath dimmed it, the flying wild-ass knows,

"The scared white leopard winds it across the taintless  
snows.

"What is the Flag of England? Ye have but my sun to  
dare,

"Ye have but my sands to travel. Go forth, for it is there!"

The West Wind called:—"In squadrons the thoughtless  
galleons fly

"That bear the wheat and cattle lest street-bred people die.

"They make my might their porter, they make my house  
their path,

"Till I loose my neck from their rudder and whelm them all  
in my wrath.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

- "I draw the gliding fog-bank as a snake is drawn from the  
hole.  
"They bellow one to the other, the frightened ship-bells toll;  
"For day is a drifting terror till I raise the shroud with my  
breath,  
"And they see strange bows above them and the two go  
locked to death.
- "But whether in calm or wrack-wreath, whether by dark or  
day,  
"I heave them whole to the conger or rip their plates away,  
"First of the scattered legions, under a shrieking sky,  
"Dipping between the rollers, the English Flag goes by.
- "The dead dumb fog hath wrapped it—the frozen dews  
have kissed—  
"The naked stars have seen it, a fellow-star in the mist.  
"What is the Flag of England? Ye have but my breath to  
dare,  
"Ye have but my waves to conquer. Go forth, for it is  
there!"

THE DEAD KING

(EDWARD VII.)

1910

*WHO in the Realm to-day lays down dear life for the  
sake of a land more dear?*

*And, unconcerned for his own estate, toils till the last grudging  
sands have run?*

*Let him approach. It is proven here*

*Our King asks nothing of any man more than Our King himself  
has done.*

For to him, above all, was Life good, above all he commanded  
Her abundance full-handed.

The peculiar treasure of Kings was his for the taking.

All that men come to in dreams he inherited waking:—

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

His marvel of world-gathered armies—one heart and all  
races;  
His seas 'neath his keels when his war-castles foamed to their  
places;  
The thundering foreshores that answered his heralded land-  
ing;  
The huge lighted cities adoring, the assemblies upstanding;  
The Councils of Kings called in haste to learn how he was  
minded—  
The Kingdoms, the Powers, and the Glories he dealt with  
unblinded.

To him came all captains of men, all achievers of glory,  
Hot from the press of their battles they told him their story.  
They revealed him their lives in an hour and, saluting,  
departed,  
Joyful to labour afresh—he had made them new-hearted.  
And, since he weighed men from his youth, and no lie long  
deceived him,  
He spoke and exacted the truth, and the basest believed him.

And God poured him an exquisite wine that was daily  
renewed to him,  
In the clear-welling love of his peoples which daily accrued to  
him.  
Honour and service we gave him, rejoicingly fearless;  
Faith absolute, trust beyond speech and a friendship as peer-  
less,  
And since he was Master and Servant in all that we asked him,  
We leaned hard on his wisdom in all things, knowing not  
how we tasked him.

For on him each new day laid command, every tyrannous hour,  
To confront, or confirm, or make smooth some dread issue  
of power;  
To deliver true judgment aright on the instant, unaided,  
In the strict, level, ultimate phrase that allowed or dissuaded;  
To foresee, to allay, to avert from us perils unnumbered,  
To stand guard on our gates when he guessed that the watch-  
men had slumbered;  
To win time, to turn hate, to woo folly to service and,  
mightily schooling  
His strength to the use of his Nations, to rule as not ruling.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

These were the works of our King; Earth's peace was the proof of them.

God gave him great works to fulfil, and to us the behoof of them.

We accepted his toil as our right—none spared, none excused him.

When he was bowed by his burden his rest was refused him. We troubled his age with our weakness—the blacker our shame to us!

Hearing his People had need of him, straightway he came to us.

As he received so he gave—nothing grudged, naught denying; Not even the last gasp of his breath when he strove for us, dying.

For our sakes, without question, he put from him all that he cherished.

Simply as any that serve him he served and he perished.

All that Kings covet was his, and he flung it aside for us.

Simply as any that die in his service he died for us!

*Who in the Realm to-day has choice of the easy road or the hard to tread?*

*And, much concerned for his own estate, would sell his soul to remain in the sun?*

*Let him depart nor look on Our dead.*

*Our King asks nothing of any man more than Our King himself has done.*

## WHEN EARTH'S LAST PICTURE IS PAINTED

1892

(*L'Envoi to "The Seven Seas"*)

WHEN Earth's last picture is painted and the tubes are twisted and dried,

When the oldest colours have faded, and the youngest critic has died,

We shall rest, and, faith, we shall need it—lie down for an æon or two,

Till the Master of All Good Workmen shall put us to work anew.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

And those that were good shall be happy: they shall sit in a  
golden chair;  
They shall splash at a ten-league canvas with brushes of  
comets' hair.  
They shall find real saints to draw from—Magdalene, Peter,  
and Paul;  
They shall work for an age at a sitting and never be tired at  
all!

And only The Master shall praise us, and only The Master  
shall blame;  
And no one shall work for money, and no one shall work for  
fame,  
But each for the joy of the working, and each, in his separate  
star,  
Shall draw the Thing as he sees It for the God of Things as  
They are!

"CLEARED"

1890

*(In memory of the Parnell Commission)*

HELP for a patriot distressed, a spotless spirit hurt,  
Help for an honourable clan sore trampled in the dirt!  
From Queenstown Bay to Donegal, oh, listen to my song,  
The honourable gentlemen have suffered grievous wrong.

Their noble names were mentioned—Oh, the burning black  
disgrace!—  
By a brutal Saxon paper in an Irish shooting-case;  
They sat upon it for a year, then steeled their heart to brave  
it,  
And "coruscating innocence" the learned Judges gave it.

Bear witness, Heaven, of that grim crime beneath the sur-  
geon's knife,  
The "honourable gentlemen" deplored the loss of life!  
Bear witness of those chanting choirs that burke and shirk  
and snigger,  
No man laid hand upon the knife or finger to the trigger!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Cleared in the face of all mankind beneath the winking skies,  
Like phoenixes from Phoenix Park (and what lay there) they  
rise!

Go shout it to the emerald seas—give word to Erin now,  
Her honourable gentlemen are cleared—and this is how:—

They only paid the Moonlighter his cattle-hocking price,  
They only helped the murderer with counsel's best advice,  
But—sure it keeps their honour white—the learned Court  
believes

They never give a piece of plate to murderers and thieves.

They never told the ramping crowd to card a woman's hide,  
They never marked a man for death—what fault of theirs  
he died?—

They only said "intimidate," and talked and went away—  
By God, the boys that did the work were braver men than  
they!

Their sin it was that fed the fire—small blame to them that  
heard—

The boys get drunk on rhetoric, and madden at a word—  
They knew whom they were talking at, if they were Irish  
too,

The gentlemen that lied in Court, they knew, and well they  
knew!

They only took the Judas-gold from Fenians out of jail,  
They only fawned for dollars on the blood-dyed Clan-na-  
Gael.

If black is black or white is white, in black and white it's  
down,

They're only traitors to the Queen and rebels to the Crown.

"Cleared," honourable gentlemen! Be thankful it's no  
more:—

The widow's curse is on your house, the dead are at your  
door.

On you the shame of open shame; on you from North to  
South

The hand of every honest man flat-heeled across your  
mouth.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

“Less black than we were painted”?—Faith, no word of  
black was said;  
The lightest touch was human blood, and that, you know,  
runs red.  
It’s sticking to your fist to-day for all your sneer and scoff,  
And by the Judge’s well-weighed word you cannot wipe it off.

Hold up those hands of innocence—go, scare your sheep  
together,  
The blundering, tripping tups that bleat behind the old bell-  
wether;  
And if they snuff the taint and break to find another pen,  
Tell them it’s tar that glistens so, and daub them yours  
again!

“The charge is old”?—As old as Cain—as fresh as yester-  
day;  
Old as the Ten Commandments—have ye talked those laws  
away?  
If words are words, or death is death, or powder sends the  
ball,  
You spoke the words that sped the shot—the curse be on  
you all!

“Our friends believe”? Of course they do—as sheltered  
women may;  
But have they seen the shrieking soul ripped from the quiver-  
ing clay?  
They!—If their own front door is shut, they’ll swear the  
whole world’s warm;  
What do they know of dread of death or hanging fear of  
harm?

The secret half a county keeps, the whisper in the lane,  
The shriek that tells the shot went home behind the broken  
pane,  
The dry blood crisping in the sun that scares the honest bees,  
And shows the boys have heard your talk—what do they  
know of these?

But you—you know—ay, ten times more; the secrets of  
the dead,  
Black terror on the country-side by word and whisper bred,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

The mangled stallion's scream at night, the tail-cropped  
heifer's low.  
Who set the whisper going first? You know, and well you  
know!

My soul! I'd sooner lie in jail for murder plain and straight,  
Pure crime I'd done with my own hand for money, lust, or  
hate  
Than take a seat in Parliament by fellow-felons cheered,  
While one of those "not provens" proved me cleared as you  
are cleared.

Cleared—you that "lost" the League accounts—go, guard  
our honour still,  
Go, help to make our country's laws that broke God's law  
at will—  
One hand stuck out behind the back, to signal "strike  
again";  
The other on your dress-shirt-front to show your heart is  
clane.

If black is black or white is white, in black and white it's  
down,  
You're only traitors to the Queen and rebels to the Crown.  
If print is print or words are words, the learned Court per-  
pends:—  
We are not ruled by murderers, but only—by their friends.

## THE BALLAD OF THE RED EARL

1891

*(It is not for them to criticize too minutely the methods the Irish followed, though they might deplore some of their results. During the past few years Ireland had been going through what was tantamount to a revolution.—EARL SPENCER.)*

RED EARL, and will ye take for guide  
The silly camel-birds,  
That ye bury your head in an Irish thorn,  
On a desert of drifting words?

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Ye have followed a man for a God, Red Earl,  
As the Lord o' Wrong and Right;  
But the day is done with the setting sun—  
Will ye follow into the night?

He gave you your own old words, Red Earl,  
For food on the wastrel way;  
Will ye rise and eat in the night, Red Earl,  
That fed so full in the day?

Ye have followed fast, ye have followed far,  
And where did the wandering lead?  
From the day that ye praised the spoken word  
To the day ye must gloss the deed.

And as ye have given your hand for gain,  
So must ye give in loss;  
And as ye ha' come to the brink of the pit,  
So must ye loup across.

For some be rogues in grain, Red Earl,  
And some be rogues in fact,  
And rogues direct and rogues elect;  
But all be rogues in pact.

Ye have cast your lot with these, Red Earl;  
Take heed to where ye stand.  
Ye have tied a knot with your tongue, Red Earl,  
That ye cannot loose with your hand.

Ye have travelled fast, ye have travelled far,  
In the grip of a tightening tether,  
Till ye find at the end ye must take for friend  
The quick and their dead together.

Ye have played with the Law between your lips,  
And mouthed it daintile;  
But the gist o' the speech is ill to teach,  
For ye say: "Let wrong go free."

Red Earl, ye wear the Garter fair,  
And gat your place from a King:  
Do ye make Rebellion of no account,  
And Treason a little thing?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And have ye weighed your words, Red Earl,  
That stand and speak so high?  
And is it good that the guilt o' blood  
Be cleared at the cost of a sigh?

And is it well for the sake of peace,  
Our tattered Honour to sell,  
And higgie anew with a tainted crew—  
Red Earl, and is it well?

Ye have followed fast, ye have followed far,  
On a dark and doubtful way,  
And the road is hard, is hard, Red Earl,  
And the price is yet to pay.

Ye shall pay that price as ye reap reward  
For the toil of your tongue and pen—  
In the praise of the blamed and the thanks of the shamed,  
And the honour o' knavish men.

They scarce shall veil their scorn, Red Earl,  
And the worst at the last shall be,  
When you tell your heart that it does not know  
And your eye that it does not see.

## ULSTER

1912

*"Their webs shall not become garments, neither shall they cover themselves with their works : their works are works of iniquity, and the act of violence is in their hands."*—ISAIAH lix. 6.

THE dark eleventh hour  
Draws on and sees us sold  
To every evil power  
We fought against of old.  
Rebellion, rapine, hate,  
Oppression, wrong and greed  
Are loosed to rule our fate,  
By England's act and deed.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The Faith in which we stand,  
The laws we made and guard—  
Our honour, lives, and land—  
Are given for reward  
To Murder done by night,  
To Treason taught by day,  
To folly, sloth, and spite,  
And we are thrust away.

The blood our fathers spilt,  
Our love, our toils, our pains,  
Are counted us for guilt,  
And only bind our chains.  
Before an Empire's eyes  
The traitor claims his price.  
What need of further lies?  
We are the sacrifice.

We asked no more than leave  
To reap where we had sown,  
Through good and ill to cleave  
To our own flag and throne.  
Now England's shot and steel  
Beneath that flag must show  
How loyal hearts should kneel  
To England's oldest foe.

We know the wars prepared  
On every peaceful home,  
We know the hells declared  
For such as serve not Rome—  
The terror, threats, and dread  
In market, hearth, and field—  
We know, when all is said,  
We perish if we yield.

Believe, we dare not boast,  
Believe, we do not fear—  
We stand to pay the cost  
In all that men hold dear.  
What answer from the North?  
One Law, one Land, one Throne.  
If England drive us forth  
We shall not fall alone!



THE BALLAD OF EAST AND WEST

1889

*O*H, *EAST is East, and West is West, and never the twain  
shall meet,  
Till Earth and Sky stand presently at God's great Judgment  
Seat;  
But there is neither East nor West, Border, nor Breed, nor  
Birth,  
When two strong men stand face to face, though they come from  
the ends of the earth!*

Kamal is out with twenty men to raise the Border-side,  
And he has lifted the Colonel's mare that is the Colonel's  
pride.  
He has lifted her out of the stable-door between the dawn  
and the day,  
And turned the calkins upon her feet, and ridden her far  
away.  
Then up and spoke the Colonel's son that led a troop of the  
Guides:  
"Is there never a man of all my men can say where Kamal  
hides?"  
Then up and spoke Mohammed Khan, the son of the  
Ressaldar:  
"If ye know the track of the morning-mist, ye know where  
his pickets are.  
"At dusk he harries the Abazai—at dawn he is into Bonair,  
"But he must go by Fort Bukloh to his own place to fare.  
"So if ye gallop to Fort Bukloh as fast as a bird can fly,  
"By the favour of God ye may cut him off ere he win to the  
Tongue of Jagai.  
"But if he be past the Tongue of Jagai, right swiftly turn  
ye then,  
"For the length and the breadth of that grisly plain is sown  
with Kamal's men.  
"There is rock to the left, and rock to the right, and low lean  
thorn between,  
"And ye may hear a breech-bolt snick where never a man is  
seen."

DEFINITIVE EDITION

The Colonel's son has taken horse, and a raw rough dun  
was he,  
With the mouth of a bell and the heart of Hell and the head  
of a gallows-tree.  
The Colonel's son to the Fort has won, they bid him stay to  
eat—  
Who rides at the tail of a Border thief, he sits not long at his  
meat.  
He's up and away from Fort Bukloh as fast as he can fly,  
Till he was aware of his father's mare in the gut of the Tongue  
of Jagai,  
Till he was aware of his father's mare with Kamal upon her  
back,  
And when he could spy the white of her eye, he made the  
pistol crack.  
He has fired once, he has fired twice, but the whistling ball  
went wide.  
"Ye shoot like a soldier," Kamal said. "Show now if ye  
can ride!"  
It's up and over the Tongue of Jagai, as blown dust-devils  
go,  
The dun he fled like a stag of ten, but the mare like a barren  
doe.  
The dun he leaned against the bit and slugged his head  
above,  
But the red mare played with the snaffle-bars, as a maiden  
plays with a glove.  
There was rock to the left and rock to the right, and low lean  
thorn between,  
And thrice he heard a breech-bolt snick tho' never a man was  
seen.  
They have ridden the low moon out of the sky, their hoofs  
drum up the dawn,  
The dun he went like a wounded bull, but the mare like a  
new-roused fawn.  
The dun he fell at a water-course—in a woeful heap  
fell he,  
And Kamal has turned the red mare back, and pulled the  
rider free.  
He has knocked the pistol out of his hand—small room was  
there to strive,  
" 'Twas only by favour of mine," quoth he, "ye rode so long  
alive:

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"There was not a rock for twenty mile, there was not a  
clump of tree,

"But covered a man of my own men with his rifle cocked on  
his knee.

"If I had raised my bridle-hand, as I have held it low,

"The little jackals that flee so fast were feasting all in a  
row.

"If I had bowed my head on my breast, as I have held it  
high,

"The kite that whistles above us now were gorged till she  
could not fly."

Lightly answered the Colonel's son: "Do good to bird and  
beast,

"But count who come for the broken meats before thou  
makest a feast.

"If there should follow a thousand swords to carry my bones  
away,

"Belike the price of a jackal's meal were more than a thief  
could pay.

"They will feed their horse on the standing crop, their men  
on the garnered grain.

"The thatch of the byres will serve their fires when all the  
cattle are slain.

"But if thou thinkest the price be fair,—thy brethren wait  
to sup,

"The hound is kin to the jackal-spawn,—howl, dog, and call  
them up!

"And if thou thinkest the price be high, in steer and gear and  
stack,

"Give me my father's mare again, and I'll fight my own way  
back!"

Kamal has gripped him by the hand and set him upon his  
feet.

"No talk shall be of dogs," said he, "when wolf and grey  
wolf meet.

"May I eat dirt if thou hast hurt of me in deed or  
breath;

"What dam of lances brought thee forth to jest at the dawn  
with Death?"

Lightly answered the Colonel's son: "I hold by the blood of  
my clan:

"Take up the mare for my father's gift—by God, she has  
carried a man!"

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The red mare ran to the Colonel's son, and nuzzled against his breast;

"We be two strong men," said Kamal then, "but she loveth the younger best.

"So she shall go with a lifter's dower, my turquoise-studded rein,

"My 'broidered saddle and saddle-cloth, and silver stirrups twain."

The Colonel's son a pistol drew, and held it muzzle-end,

"Ye have taken the one from a foe," said he. "Will ye take the mate from a friend?"

"A gift for a gift," said Kamal straight; "a limb for the risk of a limb.

"Thy father has sent his son to me, I'll send my son to him!"

With that he whistled his only son, that dropped from a mountain-crest—

He trod the ling like a buck in spring, and he looked like a lance in rest.

"Now here is thy master," Kamal said, "who leads a troop of the Guides,

"And thou must ride at his left side as shield on shoulder rides.

"Till Death or I cut loose the tie, at camp and board and bed,

"Thy life is his—thy fate it is to guard him with thy head.

"So, thou must eat the White Queen's meat, and all her foes are thine,

"And thou must harry thy father's hold for the peace of the Border-line.

"And thou must make a trooper tough and hack thy way to power—

"Belike they will raise thee to Ressaldar when I am hanged in Peshawur!"

They have looked each other between the eyes, and there they found no fault.

They have taken the Oath of the Brother-in-Blood on leavened bread and salt:

They have taken the Oath of the Brother-in-Blood on fire and fresh-cut sod,

On the hilt and the haft of the Khyber knife, and the Wondrous Names of God.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

The Colonel's son he rides the mare and Kamal's boy the  
dun,  
And two have come back to Fort Bukloh where there went  
forth but one.  
And when they drew to the Quarter-Guard, full twenty  
swords flew clear—  
There was not a man but carried his feud with the blood of  
the mountaineer.  
“Ha' done! ha' done!” said the Colonel's son. “Put up  
the steel at your sides!  
“Last night ye had struck at a Border thief—to-night 'tis a  
man of the Guides!”

*Oh, East is East, and West is West, and never the twain shall  
meet,  
Till Earth and Sky stand presently at God's great Judgment  
Seat;  
But there is neither East nor West, Border, nor Breed, nor  
Birth,  
When two strong men stand face to face, though they come from  
the ends of the earth!*

## THE LAST SUTTEE

1889

*Not many years ago a King died in one of the Rajpoot States. His wives, disregarding the orders of the English against Suttee, would have broken out of the palace and burned themselves with the corpse, had not the gates been barred. But one of them, disguised as the King's favourite dancing-girl, passed through the line of guards and reached the pyre. There, her courage failing, she prayed her cousin, a baron of the King's court, to kill her. This he did, not knowing who she was.*

U DAI CHAND lay sick to death  
In his hold by Gungra hill.  
All night we heard the death-gongs ring,  
For the soul of the dying Rajpoot King,  
All night beat up from the women's wing  
A cry that we could not still.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

All night the barons came and went,  
The Lords of the Outer Guard.  
All night the cressets glimmered pale  
On Ulwar sabre and Tonk jezail,  
Mewar headstall and Marwar mail,  
That clinked in the palace yard.

In the Golden Room on the palace roof  
All night he fought for air:  
And there were sobbings behind the screen,  
Rustle and whisper of women unseen,  
And the hungry eyes of the Boondi Queen  
On the death she might not share.

He passed at dawn—the death-fire leaped  
From ridge to river-head,  
From the Malwa plains to the Abu scars:  
And wail upon wail went up to the stars  
Behind the grim zenana-bars,  
When they knew that the King was dead.

The dumb priest knelt to tie his mouth  
And robe him for the pyre.  
The Boondi Queen beneath us cried:  
“See, now, that we die as our mothers died  
“In the bridal-bed by our master’s side!  
“Out, women!—to the fire!”

We drove the great gates home apace—  
White hands were on the sill—  
But ere the rush of the unseen feet  
Had reached the turn to the open street,  
The bars shot down, the guard-drum beat—  
We held the dovecot still!

A face looked down in the gathering day,  
And laughing spoke from the wall:  
“Ohé, they mourn here: let me by—  
“Azizun, the Lucknow nautch-girl, I!  
“When the house is rotten, the rats must fly,  
“And I seek another thrall.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"For I ruled the King as ne'er did Queen,—  
"To-night the Queens rule me!  
"Guard them safely, but let me go,  
"Or ever they pay the debt they owe  
"In scourge and torture!" She leaped below.  
And the grim guard watched her flee.

They knew that the King had spent his soul  
On a North-bred dancing-girl:  
That he prayed to a flat-nosed Lucknow god,  
And kissed the ground where her feet had trod,  
And doomed to death at her drunken nod,  
And swore by her lightest curl.

We bore the King to his fathers' place,  
Where the tombs of the Sun-born stand:  
Where the grey apes swing, and the peacocks preen  
On fretted pillar and jewelled screen,  
And the wild boar couch in the house of the Queen  
On the drift of the desert sand.

The herald read his titles forth  
We set the logs aglow:  
"Friend of the English, free from fear,  
"Baron of Luni to Jeysulmeer,  
"Lord of the Desert of Bikaner,  
"King of the Jungle,—go!"

All night the red flame stabbed the sky  
With wavering wind-tossed spears:  
And out of a shattered temple crept  
A woman who veiled her head and wept,  
And called on the King—but the great King slept,  
And turned not for her tears.

One watched, a bow-shot from the blaze,  
The silent streets between,  
Who had stood by the King in sport and fray,  
To blade in ambush or boar at bay,  
And he was a baron old and grey,  
And kin to the Boondi Queen.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Small thought had he to mark the strife—  
Cold fear with hot desire—  
When thrice she leaped from the leaping flame,  
And thrice she beat her breast for shame,  
And thrice like a wounded dove she came  
And moaned about the fire.

He said: "O shameless, put aside  
"The veil upon thy brow!  
"Who held the King and all his land  
"To the wanton will of a harlot's hand!  
"Will the white ash rise from the blistered brand?  
"Stoop down, and call him now!"

Then she: "By the faith of my tarnished soul,  
"All things I did not well  
"I had hoped to clear ere the fire died,  
"And lay me down by my master's side  
"To rule in Heaven his only bride,  
"While the others howl in Hell.

"But I have felt the fire's breath,  
"And hard it is to die!  
"Yet if I may pray a Rajpoot lord  
"To sully the steel of a Thakur's sword  
"With base-born blood of a trade abhorred . . ."  
And the Thakur answered, "Ay."

He drew and struck: the straight blade drank  
The life beneath the breast.  
"I had looked for the Queen to face the flame,  
"But the harlot dies for the Rajpoot dame—  
"Sister of mine, pass, free from shame.  
"Pass with thy King to rest!"

The black log crashed above the white:  
The little flames and lean,  
Red as slaughter and blue as steel,  
That whistled and fluttered from head to heel,  
Leaped up anew, for they found their meal  
On the heart of—the Boondi Queen!



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

GENERAL JOUBERT

1900

*(Died, South African War, March 27, 1900)*

WITH those that bred, with those that loosed the strife  
He had no part whose hands were clear of gain;  
But subtle, strong, and stubborn, gave his life  
To a lost cause, and knew the gift was vain.

Later shall rise a people, sane and great,  
Forged in strong fires, by equal war made one;  
Telling old battles over without hate—  
Not least his name shall pass from sire to son.

He may not meet the onswEEP of our van  
In the doomed city when we close the score;  
Yet o'er his grave—his grave that holds a Man—  
Our deep-tongued guns shall answer his once more!

GEHAZI

1915

WHENCE comest thou, Gehazi,  
So reverend to behold,  
In scarlet and in ermines  
And chain of England's gold?  
"From following after Naaman  
To tell him all is well,  
Whereby my zeal hath made me  
A Judge in Israel."

Well done, well done, Gehazi!  
Stretch forth thy ready hand.  
Thou barely 'scaped from judgment,  
Take oath to judge the land  
Unswayed by gift of money  
Or privy bribe, more base,  
Of knowledge which is profit  
In any market-place.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Search out and probe, Gehazi,  
As thou of all canst try,  
The truthful, well-weighed answer  
That tells the blacker lie—  
The loud, uneasy virtue,  
The anger feigned at will,  
To overbear a witness  
And make the Court keep still.

Take order now, Gehazi,  
That no man talk aside  
In secret with his judges  
The while his case is tried.  
Lest he should show them—reason  
To keep a matter hid,  
And subtly lead the questions  
Away from what he did.

Thou mirror of uprightness,  
What ails thee at thy vows?  
What means the risen whiteness  
Of the skin between thy brows?  
The boils that shine and burrow,  
The sores that slough and bleed—  
The leprosy of Naaman  
On thee and all thy seed?  
Stand up, stand up, Gehazi,  
Draw close thy robe and go,  
Gehazi, Judge in Israel,  
A leper white as snow!

## THE BALLAD OF THE KING'S MERCY

1889

*ABDHUR RAHMAN, the Durani Chief, of him is the  
story told.  
His mercy fills the Khyber hills—his grace is manifold;  
He has taken toll of the North and the South—his glory  
reacheih far,  
And they tell the tale of his charity from Balkh to Kandahar.*

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Before the old Peshawur Gate, where Kurd and Kafir meet,  
The Governor of Kabul dealt the Justice of the Street,  
And that was strait as running noose and swift as plunging  
knife,

Tho' he who held the longer purse might hold the longer  
life.

There was a hound of Hindustan had struck a Yusufzai,  
Wherefore they spat upon his face and led him out to die.  
It chanced the King went forth that hour when throat was  
bared to knife;

The Kafir grovelled under-hoof and clamoured for his life.

Then said the King: "Have hope, O friend! Yea, Death  
disgraced is hard.

"Much honour shall be thine"; and called the Captain of the  
Guard,

Yar Khan, a bastard of the Blood, so city-babble saith,  
And he was honoured of the King—the which is salt to  
Death;

And he was son of Daoud Shah, the Reiver of the Plains,  
And blood of old Durani Lords ran fire in his veins;  
And 'twas to tame an Afghan pride nor Hell nor Heaven  
could bind,

The King would make him butcher to a yelping cur of Hind.

"Strike!" said the King. "King's blood art thou—his  
death shall be his pride!"

Then louder, that the crowd might catch: "Fear not—his  
arms are tied!"

Yar Khan drew clear the Khyber knife, and struck, and  
sheathed again.

"O man, thy will is done," quoth he; "A King this dog hath  
slain."

*Abdhur Rahman, the Durani Chief, to the North and the  
South is sold.*

*The North and the South shall open their mouth to a  
Ghilzai flag unrolled,*

*When the big guns speak to the Khyber peak, and his dog-  
Heratis fly:*

*Ye have heard the song—How long? How long? Wolves  
of the Abazai!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

That night before the watch was set, when all the streets  
were clear,

The Governor of Kabul spoke: "My King, hast thou no  
fear?

"Thou knowest—thou hast heard,"—his speech died at his  
master's face.

And grimly said the Afghan King: "I rule the Afghan race.  
"My path is mine—see thou to thine. To-night upon thy  
bed

"Think who there be in Kabul now that clamour for thy  
head."

That night when all the gates were shut to City and to throne,  
Within a little garden-house the King lay down alone.

Before the sinking of the moon, which is the Night of Night,  
Yar Khan came softly to the King to make his honour white.  
(The children of the town had mocked beneath his horse's  
hoofs,

The harlots of the town had hailed him "butcher!" from  
their roofs.)

But as he groped against the wall, two hands upon him fell,  
The King behind his shoulder spake: "Dead man, thou dost  
not well!

"'Tis ill to jest with Kings by day and seek a boon by  
night;

"And that thou bearest in thy hand is all too sharp to  
write.

"But three days hence, if God be good, and if thy strength  
remain,

"Thou shalt demand one boon of me and bless me in thy pain.

"For I am merciful to all, and most of all to thee.

"My butcher of the shambles, rest—no knife hast thou for  
me!"

*Abdhur Rahman, the Durani Chief, holds hard by the South  
and the North;*

*But the Ghilzai knows, ere the melting snows, when the  
swollen banks break forth,*

*When the red-coats crawl to the sungar wall, and his Usbeg  
lances fail:*

*Ye have heard the song—How long? How long? Wolves  
of the Zukka Kheyl!*

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

They stoned him in the rubbish-field when dawn was in the  
sky,  
According to the written word, "See that he do not die."  
They stoned him till the stones were piled above him on the  
plain,  
And those the labouring limbs displaced they tumbled back  
again.  
One watched beside the dreary mound that veiled the  
battered thing,  
And him the King with laughter called the Herald of the King.

It was upon the second night, the night of Ramazan,  
The watcher leaning earthward heard the message of Yar  
Khan.  
From shattered breast through shrivelled lips broke forth the  
rattling breath,  
"Creature of God, deliver me from agony of Death."

They sought the King among his girls, and risked their lives  
thereby:  
"Protector of the Pitiful, give orders that he die!"

"Bid him endure until the day," a lagging answer came;  
"The night is short, and he can pray and learn to bless my  
name."

Before the dawn three times he spoke, and on the day once  
more:  
"Creature of God, deliver me, and bless the King therefor!"

They shot him at the morning prayer, to ease him of his pain,  
And when he heard the matchlocks clink, he blessed the King  
again.

Which thing the singers made a song for all the world to sing  
So that the Outer Seas may know the mercy of the King.

*Abdhur Rahman, the Durani Chief, of him is the story told,  
He has opened his mouth to the North and the South, they  
have stuffed his mouth with gold.  
Ye know the truth of his tender ruth—and sweet his favours  
are:  
Ye have heard the song—How long? How long?—from  
Balkh to Kandahar.*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE BALLAD OF THE KING'S JEST

1890

WHEN spring-time flushes the desert grass,  
Our kafilas<sup>1</sup> wind through the Khyber Pass.  
Lean are the camels but fat the frails,  
Light are the purses but heavy the bales,  
As the snowbound trade of the North comes down  
To the market-square of Peshawur town.

In a turquoise twilight, crisp and chill,  
A kafila camped at the foot of the hill.  
Then blue smoke-haze of the cooking rose,  
And tent-peg answered to hammer-nose;  
And the picketed ponies, shag and wild,  
Strained at their ropes as the feed was piled;  
And the bubbling camels beside the load  
Sprawled for a furlong adown the road;  
And the Persian pussy-cats, brought for sale,  
Spat at the dogs from the camel-bale;  
And the tribesmen bellowed to hasten the food;  
And the camp-fires twinkled by Fort Jumrood;  
And there fled on the wings of the gathering dusk  
A savour of camels and carpets and musk,  
A murmur of voices, a reek of smoke,  
To tell us the trade of the Khyber woke.

The lid of the flesh-pot chattered high,  
The knives were whetted and—then came I  
To Mahbub Ali, the muleteer,  
Patching his bridles and counting his gear,  
Crammed with the gossip of half a year.  
But Mahbub Ali the kindly said,  
“Better is speech when the belly is fed.”  
So we plunged the hand to the mid-wrist deep  
In a cinnamon stew of the fat-tailed sheep,  
And he who never hath tasted the food,  
By Allah! he knoweth not bad from good.

<sup>1</sup> Caravans.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

We cleansed our beards of the mutton-grease,  
We lay on the mats and were filled with peace,  
And the talk slid north, and the talk slid south,  
With the sliding puffs from the hookah-mouth.

Four things greater than all things are,—  
Women and Horses and Power and War.  
We spake of them all, but the last the most.  
For I sought a word of a Russian post,  
Of a shifty promise, an unsheathed sword,  
And a grey-coat guard on the Helmund ford.  
Then Mahbub Ali lowered his eyes  
In the fashion of one who is weaving lies.  
Quoth he: "Of the Russians who can say?  
"When the night is gathering all is grey.  
"But we look that the gloom of the night shall die  
"In the morning flush of a blood-red sky.  
"Friend of my heart, is it meet or wise  
"To warn a King of his enemies?  
"We know what Heaven or Hell may bring,  
"But no man knoweth the mind of the King.  
"That unsought counsel is cursed of God  
"Attesteth the story of Wali Dad.

"His sire was leaky of tongue and pen,  
"His dam was a clucking Khattack hen;  
"And the colt bred close to the vice of each,  
"For he carried the curse of an unstaunched speech.  
"Therewith madness—so that he sought  
"The favour of kings at the Kabul Court;  
"And travelled, in hope of honour, far  
"To the line where the grey-coat squadrons are.  
"There have I journeyed too—but I  
"Saw naught, said naught, and—did not die!  
"He hearked to rumour, and snatched at a breath  
"Of 'this one knoweth,' and 'that one saith,'—  
"Legends that ran from mouth to mouth  
"Of a grey-coat coming, and sack of the South.  
"These have I also heard—they pass  
"With each new spring and the winter grass.

"Hot-foot southward, forgotten of God,  
"Back to the city ran Wali Dad,

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

" Even to Kabul—in full durbar  
 " The King held talk with his Chief in War.  
 " Into the press of the crowd he broke,  
 " And what he had heard of the coming spoke.  
 " Then Gholam Hyder, the Red Chief, smiled,  
 " As a mother might on a babbling child;  
 " But those who would laugh restrained their breath,  
 " When the face of the King showed dark as death.  
 " Evil it is in full durbar  
 " To cry to a ruler of gathering war!  
 " Slowly he led to a peach-tree small,  
 " That grew by a cleft of the city wall.  
 " And he said to the boy: ' They shall praise thy zeal  
 " ' So long as the red spurt follows the steel.  
 " ' And the Russ is upon us even now?  
 " ' Great is thy prudence—wait them, thou.  
 " ' Watch from the tree. Thou art young and strong.  
 " ' Surely the vigil is not for long.  
 " ' The Russ is upon us, thy clamour ran?  
 " ' Surely an hour shall bring their van.  
 " ' Wait and watch. When the host is near,  
 " ' Shout aloud that my men may hear.'

" Friend of my heart, is it meet or wise  
 " To warn a King of his enemies?  
 " A guard was set that he might not flee—  
 " A score of bayonets ringed the tree.  
 " The peach-bloom fell in showers of snow,  
 " When he shook at his death as he looked below.  
 " By the power of God, Who alone is great,  
 " Till the seventh day he fought with his fate.  
 " Then madness took him, and men declare  
 " He mowed in the branches as ape and bear,  
 " And last as a sloth, ere his body failed,  
 " And he hung like a bat in the forks, and wailed,  
 " And sleep the cord of his hands untied,  
 " And he fell, and was caught on the points and died.

" Heart of my heart, is it meet or wise  
 " To warn a King of his enemies?  
 " We know what Heaven or Hell may bring,  
 " But no man knoweth the mind of the King.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"Of the grey-coat coming who can say?  
"When the night is gathering all is grey.  
"Two things greater than all things are,  
"The first is Love, and the second War.  
"And since we know not how War may prove,  
"Heart of my heart, let us talk of Love!"

### WITH SCINDIA TO DELHI

1890

*More than a hundred years ago, in a great battle fought near Delhi, an Indian Prince rode fifty miles after the day was lost, with a beggar-girl, who had loved him and followed him in all his camps, on his saddle-bow. He lost the girl when almost within sight of safety. A Mahratta trooper tells the story:—*

THE wreath of banquet overnight lay withered on the  
neck,  
Our hands and scarves were saffron-dyed for signal of  
despair,  
When we went forth to Paniput to battle with the *Mlech*,—  
Ere we came back from Paniput and left a kingdom there.

Thrice thirty thousand men were we to force the Jumna  
fords—  
The hawk-winged horse of Damajee, mailed squadrons of  
the Bhao,  
Stark levies of the southern hills, the Deccan's sharpest  
swords,  
And he, the harlot's traitor-son, the goatherd Mulhar  
Rao!

Thrice thirty thousand men were we before the mists had  
cleared.  
The low white mists of morning heard the war-conch  
scream and bray.  
We called upon Bhowani and we gripped them by the  
beard,  
We rolled upon them like a flood and washed their ranks  
away.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

The children of the hills of Khost before our lances ran,  
We drove the black Rohillas back as cattle to the pen.  
'Twas then we needed Mulhar Rao to end what we began,  
A thousand men had saved the charge; he fled the field  
with ten!

There was no room to clear a sword—no power to strike a  
blow,  
For foot to foot, ay, breast to breast, the battle held us  
fast—  
Save where the naked hill-men ran, and stabbing from below  
Brought down the horse and rider, and we trampled them  
and passed.

To left the roar of musketry rang like a falling flood—  
To right the sunshine rippled red from redder lance and  
blade—  
Above the dark *Upsaras*<sup>1</sup> flew, beneath us plashed the blood,  
And, bellying black against the dust, the Bhagwa Jhanda  
swayed.

I saw it fall in smoke and fire, the Banner of the Bhao;  
I heard a voice across the press of one who called in vain:—  
“Ho! Anand Rao Nimbalkhur, ride! Get aid of Mulhar  
Rao!  
“Go shame his squadrons into fight—the Bhao—the  
Bhao is slain!”

Thereat, as when a sand-bar breaks in clotted spume and  
spray,  
When rain of later autumn sweeps the Jumna water-head,  
Before their charge from flank to flank our riven ranks gave  
way—  
But of the waters of that flood the Jumna fords ran red.

I held by Scindia, my lord, as close as man might hold;  
A Soobah of the Deccan asks no aid to guard his life;  
But Holkar's Horse were flying, and our chiefest chiefs were  
cold,  
And like a flame among us leapt the long lean Northern  
knife.

<sup>1</sup> The Choosers of the Slain.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I held by Scindia—my lance from butt to tuft was dyed,  
The froth of battle bossed the shield and roped the bridle-chain—

What time beneath our horses' feet a maiden rose and cried,  
And clung to Scindia, and I turned a sword-cut from the twain.

(He set a spell upon the maid in woodlands long ago:  
A hunter by the Tapti banks, she gave him water there:  
He turned her heart to water, and she followed to her woe.  
What need had he of Lalun who had twenty maids as fair?)

Now in that hour strength left my lord: he wrenched his  
mare aside;  
He bound the girl behind him and we slashed and struggled  
free.

Across the reeling wreck of strife we rode as shadows ride  
From Paniput to Delhi town, but not alone were we.

'Twas Lutf-Ullah Populzai laid horse upon our track,  
A swine-fed reiver of the North that lusted for the maid;  
I might have barred his path awhile, but Scindia called me  
back,  
And I—O woe for Scindia!—I listened and obeyed.

League after league the formless scrub took shape and glided  
by—

League after league the white road swirled behind the  
white mare's feet—

League after league, when leagues were done, we heard the  
Populzai,

Where sure as Time and swift as Death the tireless footfall  
beat.

Noon's eye beheld that shame of flight; the shadows fell, we  
fled

Where steadfast as the wheeling kite he followed in our  
train;

The black wolf warred where we had warred, the jackal  
mocked our dead,

And terror born of twilight-tide made mad the labouring  
brain.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

I gasped:—"A kingdom waits my lord; her love is but her own.

"A day shall mar, a day shall cure, for her—but what for thee?

"Cut loose the girl: he follows fast. Cut loose and ride alone!"

Then Scindia 'twixt his blistered lips:—"My Queens' Queen shall she be!

"Of all who ate my bread last night 'twas she alone that came

"To seek her love between the spears and find her crown therein!

"One shame is mine to-day. What need the weight of double shame?

"If once we reach the Delhi Gate, though all be lost, I win!"

We rode—the white mare failed—her trot a staggering stumble grew,—

The cooking-smoke of even rose and weltered and hung low;

And still we heard the Populzai and still we strained anew,

And Delhi town was very near, but nearer was the foe.

Yea, Delhi town was very near when Lalun whispered:—"Slay!

"Lord of my life, the mare sinks fast—stab deep and let me die!"

But Scindia would not, and the maid tore free and flung away,

And turning as she fell we heard the clattering Populzai.

Then Scindia checked the gasping mare that rocked and groaned for breath,

And wheeled to charge and plunged the knife a hands-breadth in her side—

The hunter and the hunted know how that last pause is death—

The blood had chilled about her heart, she reared and fell and died.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Our Gods were kind. Before he heard the maiden's piteous  
scream

A log upon the Delhi road, beneath the mare he lay—  
Lost mistress and lost battle passed before him like a dream;  
The darkness closed about his eyes. I bore my King  
away.

### THE DOVE OF DACCA

1892

THE freed dove flew to the Rajah's tower—  
Fled from the slaughter of Moslem kings—  
And the thorns have covered the city of Gaur.  
Dove—dove—oh, homing dove!  
Little white traitor, with woe on thy wings!

The Rajah of Dacca rode under the wall;  
He set in his bosom a dove of flight—  
"If she return, be sure that I fall."  
Dove—dove—oh, homing dove!  
Pressed to his heart in the thick of the fight.

"Fire the palace, the fort, and the keep—  
Leave to the foeman no spoil at all.  
In the flame of the palace lie down and sleep  
If the dove—if the dove—if the homing dove  
Come, and alone, to the palace wall."

The Kings of the North they were scattered abroad—  
The Rajah of Dacca he slew them all.  
Hot from slaughter he stooped at the ford,  
And the dove—the dove—oh, the homing dove!  
She thought of her cote on the palace-wall.

She opened her wings and she flew away—  
Fluttered away beyond recall;  
She came to the palace at break of day.  
Dove—dove—oh, homing dove,  
Flying so fast for a kingdom's fall!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The Queens of Dacca they slept in flame—  
Slept in the flame of the palace old—  
To save their honour from Moslem shame.  
And the dove—the dove—oh, the homing dove,  
She cooed to her young where the smoke-cloud rolled;

The Rajah of Dacca rode far and fleet,  
Followed as fast as a horse could fly,  
He came and the palace was black at his feet;  
And the dove—the dove—the homing dove  
Circled alone in the stainless sky.

So the dove flew to the Rajah's tower—  
Fled from the slaughter of Moslem kings;  
So the thorns covered the city of Gaur,  
And Dacca was lost for a white dove's wings.  
Dove—dove—oh, homing dove,  
Dacca is lost from the Roll of the Kings!

## THE BALLAD OF BOH DA THONE

1888

(*Burma War, 1883-85*)

*This is the ballad of Boh Da Thone,  
Erst a Pretender to Theebaw's throne,  
Who harried the District of Alalone:  
How he met with his fate and the V.P.P.<sup>1</sup>  
At the hand of Harendra Mukerji,  
Senior Gomashta, G.B.T.<sup>2</sup>*

**B**OH DA THONE was a warrior bold:  
His sword and his rifle were bossed with gold,

And the Peacock Banner his henchmen bore  
Was stiff with bullion, but stiffer with gore.

He shot at the strong and he slashed at the weak  
From the Salween scrub to the Chindwin teak:

<sup>1</sup> Value Payable Post = Collect on Delivery.

<sup>2</sup> Head Clerk, Government Bullock Train.

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S I

He crucified noble, he scarified mean,  
He filled old ladies with kerosene:

While over the water the papers cried,  
" The patriot fights for his countryside! "

But little they cared for the Native Press,  
The worn white soldiers in khaki dress,

Who tramped through the jungle and camped in the byre,  
Who died in the swamp and were tombed in the mire,

Who gave up their lives, at the Queen's Command,  
For the Pride of their Race and the Peace of the Land.

Now, first of the foemen of Boh Da Thone  
Was Captain O'Neil of the Black Tyrone,

And his was a Company, seventy strong,  
Who hustled that dissolute Chief along.

There were lads from Galway and Louth and Meath  
Who went to their death with a joke in their teeth,

And worshipped with fluency, fervour, and zeal  
The mud on the boot-heels of " Crook " O'Neil.

But ever a blight on their labours lay,  
And ever their quarry would vanish away,

Till the sun-dried boys of the Black Tyrone  
Took a brotherly interest in Boh Da Thone,

And, sooth, if pursuit in possession ends,  
The Boh and his trackers were best of friends.

The word of a scout—a march by night—  
A rush through the mist—a scattering fight—

A volley from cover—a corpse in the clearing—  
A glimpse of a loin-cloth and heavy jade earring—

The flare of a village—the tally of slain—  
And . . . the Boh was abroad on the raid again!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

They cursed their luck, as the Irish will,  
They gave him credit for cunning and skill,

They buried their dead, they bolted their beef,  
And started anew on the track of the thief,

Till, in place of the "Kalends of Greece," men said,  
"When Crook and his darlings come back with the head."

They had hunted the Boh from the hills to the plain—  
He doubled and broke for the hills again:

They had crippled his power for rapine and raid,  
They had routed him out of his pet stockade,

And at last, they came, when the Daystar tired,  
To a camp deserted—a village fired.

A black cross blistered the morning-gold,  
But the body upon it was stark and cold.

The wind of the dawn went merrily past,  
The high grass bowed her plumes to the blast,

And out of the grass, on a sudden, broke  
A spirtle of fire, a whorl of smoke—

And Captain O'Neil of the Black Tyrone  
Was blessed with a slug in the ulnar-bone—  
The gift of his enemy Boh Da Thone.

(Now a slug that is hammered from telegraph-wire  
Is a thorn in the flesh and a rankling fire.)

The shot-wound festered—as shot-wounds may  
In a steaming barrack at Mandalay.

The left arm throbbed, and the Captain swore,  
"I'd like to be after the Boh once more!"

The fever held him—the Captain said,  
"I'd give a hundred to look at his head!"



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

The Hospital punkahs creaked and whirred,  
But Babu Harendra (Gomashta) heard.

He thought of the cane-brake, green and dank,  
That girdled his home by the Dacca tank.

He thought of his wife and his High School son,  
He thought—but abandoned the thought—of a gun.

His sleep was broken by visions dread  
Of a shining Boh with a silver head.

He kept his counsel and went his way,  
And swindled the cartmen of half their pay.

And the months went on, as the worst must do,  
And the Boh returned to the raid anew.

But the Captain had quitted the long-drawn strife,  
And in far Simoorie had taken a wife;

And she was a damsel of delicate mould,  
With hair like the sunshine and heart of gold,

And little she knew the arms that embraced  
Had cloven a man from the brow to the waist:

And little she knew that the loving lips  
Had ordered a quivering life's eclipse,

Or the eye that lit at her lightest breath  
Had glared unawed in the Gates of Death.

(For these be matters a man would hide,  
As a general rule, from an innocent Bride.)

And little the Captain thought of the past,  
And, of all men, Babu Harendra last.

But slow, in the sludge of the Kathun road,  
The Government Bullock Train toted its load.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Speckless and spotless and shining with *ghi*,  
In the rearmost cart sat the Babu-jee;

And ever a phantom before him fled  
Of a scowling Boh with a silver head.

Then the lead-cart stuck, though the coolies slaved,  
And the cartmen flogged and the escort raved,

And out of the jungle, with yells and squeals,  
Pranced Boh Da Thone, and his gang at his heels!

Then belching blunderbuss answered back  
The Snider's snarl and the carbine's crack,

And the blithe revolver began to sing  
To the blade that twanged on the locking-ring,

And the brown flesh blued where the bayonet kissed,  
As the steel shot back with a wrench and a twist,

And the great white oxen with onyx eyes  
Watched the souls of the dead arise,

And over the smoke of the fusillade  
The Peacock Banner staggered and swayed.

The Babu shook at the horrible sight,  
And girded his ponderous loins for flight,

But Fate had ordained that the Boh should start  
On a lone-hand raid of the rearmost cart,

And out of that cart, with a bellow of woe,  
The Babu fell—flat on the top of the Boh!

For years had Harendra served the State,  
To the growth of his purse and the girth of his *pét*.<sup>1</sup>

There were twenty stone, as the tally-man knows,  
On the broad of the chest of this best of Bohs.

And twenty stone from a height discharged  
Are bad for a Boh with a spleen enlarged.

<sup>1</sup> Stomach.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Oh, short was the struggle—severe was the shock—  
He dropped like a bullock—he lay like a block;

And the Babu above him, convulsed with fear,  
Heard the labouring life-breath hissed out in his ear.

And thus in a fashion undignified  
The princely pest of the Chindwin died.

Turn now to Simoorie, where, all at his ease,  
The Captain is petting the Bride on his knees,

Where the *whit* of the bullet, the wounded man's scream  
Are mixed as the mist of some devilish dream—

Forgotten, forgotten the sweat of the shambles  
Where the hill-daisy blooms and the grey monkey gambols,

From the sword-belt set free and released from the steel,  
The Peace of the Lord is on Captain O'Neil!

Up the hill to Simoorie—most patient of drudges—  
The bags on his shoulder, the mail-runner trudges.

“For Captain O'Neil Sahib. One hundred and ten  
“Rupees to collect on delivery.”

Then

(Their breakfast was stopped while the screw-jack and  
hammer  
Tore waxcloth, split teak-wood, and chipped out the  
dammer;<sup>1</sup>)

Open-eyed, open-mouthed, on the napery's snow,  
With a crash and a thud, rolled—the Head of the Boh!

And gummed to the scalp was a letter which ran:—

“IN FIELDING FORCE SERVICE.

“*Encampment,*

“10th Jan.

“Dear Sir,—I have honour to send, *as you said,*  
“For final approval (see under) Boh's Head;

<sup>1</sup> Native sealing-wax.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

" Was took by myself in most bloody affair.  
" By High Education brought pressure to bear.  
" Now violate Liberty, time being bad,  
" To mail V.P.P. (rupees hundred) Please add  
" Whatever Your Honour can pass. Price of Blood  
" Much cheap at one hundred, and children want food.  
" So trusting Your Honour will somewhat retain  
" True love and affection for Govt. Bullock Train,  
" And show awful kindness to satisfy me,  
    " I am,  
        " Graceful Master,  
            " Your  
                " H. MUKERJI."  
.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
As the rabbit is drawn to the rattlesnake's power,  
As the smoker's eye fills at the opium hour,  
As a horse reaches up to the manger above,  
As the waiting ear yearns for the whisper of love,  
From the arms of the Bride, iron-visaged and slow,  
The Captain bent down to the Head of the Boh.  
And e'en as he looked on the Thing where It lay  
"Twixt the winking new spoons and the napkins' array,  
The freed mind fled back to the long-ago days—  
The hand-to-hand scuffle—the smoke and the blaze—  
The forced march at night and the quick rush at dawn—  
The banjo at twilight, the burial ere morn—  
The stench of the marshes—the raw, piercing smell  
When the overhand stabbing-cut silenced the yell—  
The oaths of his Irish that surged when they stood  
Where the black crosses hung o'er the Kuttamow flood.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

As a derelict ship drifts away with the tide  
The Captain went out on the Past from his Bride,

Back, back, through the springs to the chill of the year,  
When he hunted the Boh from Maloon to Tsaleer.

As the shape of a corpse dimmers up through deep water,  
In his eye lit the passionless passion of slaughter,

And men who had fought with O'Neil for the life  
Had gazed on his face with less dread than his wife.

For she who had held him so long could not hold him—  
Though a four-month Eternity should have controlled him!—

But watched the twin Terror—the head turned to head—  
The scowling, scarred Black, and the flushed savage Red—

The spirit that changed from her knowing and flew to  
Some grim hidden Past she had never a clue to.

But It knew as It grinned, for he touched it unfearing,  
And muttered aloud, "So you kept that jade earring!"

Then nodded, and kindly, as friend nods to friend,  
"Old man, you fought well, but you lost in the end."

The visions departed, and Shame followed Passion:—  
"He took what I said in this horrible fashion?"

"I'll write to Harendra!" With language unsainted  
The Captain came back to the Bride . . . who had fainted

And this is a fiction? No. Go to Simoorie  
And look at their baby, a twelve-month old Hourie,

A pert little, Irish-eyed Kathleen Mavournin—  
She's always about on the Mall of a mornin'—

And you'll see, if her right shoulder-strap is displaced,  
This: *Gules* upon *argent*, a Boh's Head, *erased!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE SACRIFICE OF ER-HEB

1887

*ER-HEB beyond the Hills of Ao-Safai  
Bears witness to the truth, and Ao-Safai  
Hath told the men of Gorukh. Thence the tale  
Comes westward o'er the peaks to India.*

The story of Bisesa, Armod's child,—  
A maiden plighted to the Chief in War,  
The Man of Sixty Spears, who held the Pass  
That leads to Thibet, but to-day is gone  
To seek his comfort of the God called Budh  
The Silent—showing how the Sickness ceased  
Because of her who died to save the tribe.

Taman is One and greater than us all.  
Taman is One and greater than all Gods:  
Taman is Two in One and rides the sky,  
Curved like a stallion's croup, from dusk to dawn,  
And drums upon it with his heels, by which  
Is bred the neighing thunder in the Hills.

This is Taman, the God of all Er-Heb,  
Who was before all Gods, and made all Gods,  
And presently will break the Gods he made,  
And step upon the Earth to govern men  
Who give him milk-dry ewes and cheat his Priests,  
Or leave his shrine unlighted—as Er-Heb  
Left it unlighted and forgot Taman,  
When all the Valley followed after Kysh  
And Yabosh, little Gods but very wise,  
And from the sky Taman beheld their sin.

He sent the Sickness out upon the hills,  
The Red Horse Sickness with the iron hooves,  
To turn the Valley to Taman again.

And the Red Horse snuffed thrice into the wind,  
The naked wind that had no fear of him;  
And the Red Horse stamped thrice upon the snow,  
The naked snows that had no fear of him;

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And the Red Horse went out across the rocks,  
The ringing rocks that had no fear of him;  
And downward, where the lean birch meets the snow,  
And downward, where the grey pine meets the birch,  
And downward, where the dwarf oak meets the pine,  
Till at his feet our cup-like pastures lay.

That night, the slow mists of the evening dropped,  
Dropped as a cloth upon a dead man's face,  
And weltered in the Valley, bluish-white  
Like water very silent—spread abroad,  
Like water very silent, from the Shrine  
Unlighted of Taman to where the stream  
Is dammed to fill our cattle-troughs—sent up  
White waves that rocked and heaved and stilled themselves,  
Till all the Valley glittered like a marsh,  
Beneath the moonlight, filled with sluggish mist  
Knee-deep, so that men waded as they walked.

That night, the Red Horse grazed above the Dam,  
Beyond the cattle-troughs. Men heard him feed,  
And those that heard him sickened where they lay.  
Thus came the Sickness to Er-Heb, and slew  
Ten men, strong men, and of the women four;  
And the Red Horse went hillward with the dawn,  
But near the cattle-troughs his hoofprints lay.

That night, the slow mists of the evening dropped,  
Dropped as a cloth upon the dead, but rose  
A little higher, to a young girl's height;  
Till all the Valley glittered like a lake,  
Beneath the moonlight, filled with sluggish mist.

That night, the Red Horse grazed beyond the Dam  
A stone's-throw from the troughs. Men heard him feed,  
And those that heard him sickened where they lay.  
Thus came the Sickness to Er-Heb, and slew  
Of men a score, and of the women eight,  
And of the children two.

Because the road  
To Gorukh was a road of enemies,  
And Ao-Safai was blocked with early snows,  
We could not flee from out the Valley. Death

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Smote at us in a slaughter-pen, and Kysh  
Was mute as Yabosh, though the goats were slain;  
And the Red Horse grazed nightly by the stream,  
And later, outward, towards the Unlighted Shrine,  
And those that heard him sickened where they lay.

Then said Bisesa to the Priests at dusk,  
When the white mist rose up breast-high, and choked  
The voices in the houses of the dead:—  
“Yabosh and Kysh avail not. If the Horse  
“Reach the Unlighted Shrine we surely die.  
“Ye have forgotten of all Gods the chief,  
“Taman!” Here rolled the thunder through the Hills,  
And Yabosh shook upon his pedestal.  
“Ye have forgotten of all Gods the chief  
“Too long.” And all were dumb save one, who cried  
On Yabosh with the Sapphire ’twixt His knees,  
But found no answer in the smoky roof,  
And, being smitten of the sickness, died  
Before the altar of the Sapphire Shrine.

Then said Bisesa:—“I am near to Death,  
“And have the Wisdom of the Grave for gift  
“To bear me on the path my feet must tread.  
“If there be wealth on earth, then I am rich,  
“For Armod is the first of all Er-Heb;  
“If there be beauty on the earth,”—her eyes  
Dropped for a moment to the temple floor,—  
“Ye know that I am fair. If there be Love,  
“Ye know that love is mine.” The Chief in War,  
The Man of Sixty Spears, broke from the press,  
And would have clasped her, but the Priests withstood,  
Saying:—“She has a message from Taman.”  
Then said Bisesa:—“By my wealth and love  
“And beauty, I am chosen of the God  
“Taman.” Here rolled the thunder through the Hills  
And Kysh fell forward on the Mound of Skulls.

In darkness, and before our Priests, the maid  
Between the altars cast her bracelets down,  
Therewith the heavy earrings Armod made,  
When he was young, out of the water-gold  
Of Gorukh—threw the breast-plate thick with jade



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Upon the turquoise anklets—put aside  
The bands of silver on her brow and neck;  
And as the trinkets tinkled on the stones,  
The thunder of Taman lowed like a bull.

Then said Bisesa, stretching out her hands,  
As one in darkness fearing Devils:—" Help!  
" O Priests, I am a woman very weak.  
" And who am I to know the will of Gods?  
" Taman hath called me—whither shall I go? "  
The Chief in War, the Man of Sixty Spears,  
Howled in his torment, fettered by the Priests,  
But dared not come to her to drag her forth,  
And dared not lift his spear against the Priests.  
Then all men wept.

There was a Priest of Kysh  
Bent with a hundred winters, hairless, blind,  
And taloned as the great Snow-Eagle is.  
His seat was nearest to the altar-fires,  
And he was counted dumb among the Priests.  
But, whether Kysh decreed, or from Taman  
The impotent tongue found utterance we know  
As little as the bats beneath the eaves.  
He cried so that they heard who stood without:—  
" To the Unlighted Shrine! " and crept aside  
Into the shadow of his fallen God  
And whimpered, and Bisesa went her way.

That night, the slow mists of the evening dropped,  
Dropped as a cloth upon the dead, and rose  
Above the roofs, and by the Unlighted Shrine  
Lay as the slimy water of the troughs  
When murrain thins the cattle of Er-Heb.  
And through the mist men heard the Red Horse feed.

In Armod's house they burned Bisesa's dower,  
And killed her black bull Tor, and broke her wheel,  
And loosed her hair, as for the marriage-feast,  
With cries more loud than mourning for the dead.

Across the fields, from Armod's dwelling-place,  
We heard Bisesa weeping where she passed

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

To seek the Unlighted Shrine; the Red Horse neighed  
And followed her, and on the river-mint  
His hooves struck dead and heavy in our ears.

Out of the mists of evening, as the star  
Of Ao-Safai climbs through the black snow-blurs  
To show the Pass is clear, Bisesa stepped  
Upon the great grey slope of mortised stone,  
The Causeway of Taman. The Red Horse neighed  
Behind her to the Unlighted Shrine—then fled  
North to the Mountain where his Stable lies.

They know who dared the anger of Taman,  
And watched that night above the clinging mists,  
Far up the hill, Bisesa's passing in.

She set her hand upon the carved door,  
Fouled by a myriad bats, and black with time,  
Whereon is graved the Glory of Taman  
In letters older than the Ao-Safai;  
And twice she turned aside and twice she wept,  
Cast down upon the threshold, clamouring  
For him she loved—the Man of Sixty Spears,  
And for her father,—and the black bull Tor,  
Hers and her pride. Yea, twice she turned away  
Before the awful darkness of the door,  
And the great horror of the Wall of Man  
Where Man is made the plaything of Taman,  
An Eyeless Face that waits above and laughs.

But the third time she cried and put her palms  
Against the hewn stone leaves, and prayed Taman  
To spare Er-Heb and take her life for price.

They know who watched, the doors were rent apart  
And closed upon Bisesa, and the rain  
Broke like a flood across the Valley, washed  
The mist away; but louder than the rain  
The thunder of Taman filled men with fear.

Some say that from the Unlighted Shrine she cried  
For succour, very pitifully, thrice,  
And others that she sang and had no fear.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And some that there was neither song nor cry,  
But only thunder and the lashing rain.

Howbeit, in the morning men rose up,  
Perplexed with horror, crowding to the Shrine.  
And when Er-Heb was gathered at the doors  
The Priests made lamentation and passed in  
To a strange Temple and a God they feared  
But knew not.

From the crevices the grass  
Had thrust the altar-slabs apart, the walls  
Were grey with stains unclean, the roof-beams swelled  
With many-coloured growth of rottenness,  
And lichen veiled the Image of Taman  
In leprosy. The Basin of the Blood  
Above the altar held the morning sun:  
A winking ruby on its heart. Below,  
Face hid in hands, the maid Bisesa lay.

*Er-Heb beyond the Hills of Ao-Safai  
Bears witness to the truth, and Ao-Safai  
Hath told the men of Gorukh. Thence the tale  
Comes westward o'er the peaks to India.*

## THE LAMENT OF THE BORDER CATTLE THIEF

1888

O WOE is me for the merry life  
I led beyond the Bar,  
And a treble woe for my winsome wife  
That weeps at Shalimar.

They have taken away my long jezail,  
My shield and sabre fine,  
And heaved me into the Central Jail  
For lifting of the kine.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

The steer may low within the byre,  
The Jat may tend his grain,  
But there'll be neither loot nor fire  
Till I come back again.

And God have mercy on the Jat  
When once my fetters fall,  
And Heaven defend the farmer's hut  
When I am loosed from thrall.

It's woe to bend the stubborn back  
Above the grinching quern,  
It's woe to hear the leg-bar clack  
And jingle when I turn!

But for the sorrow and the shame,  
The brand on me and mine,  
I'll pay you back in leaping flame  
And loss of the butchered kine.

For every cow I spared before—  
In charity set free—  
If I may reach my hold once more  
I'll reive an honest three.

For every time I raised the lowe  
That scared the dusty plain,  
By sword and cord, by torch and tow  
I'll light the land with twain!

Ride hard, ride hard to Abazai,  
Young Sahib with the yellow hair—  
Lie close, lie close as Khattacks <sup>1</sup> lie,  
Fat herds below Bonair!

The one I'll shoot at twilight-tide,  
At dawn I'll drive the other;  
The black shall mourn for hoof and hide,  
The white man for his brother.

<sup>1</sup> A tribe on the Indian frontier.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

'Tis war, red war, I'll give you then,  
War till my sinews fail;  
For the wrong you have done to a chief of men,  
And a thief of the Zukka Kheyl.

And if I fall to your hand afresh  
I give you leave for the sin,  
That you cram my throat with the foul pig's flesh,  
And swing me in the skin!

THE FEET OF THE YOUNG MEN

1897

NOW the Four-way Lodge is opened, now the Hunting  
Winds are loose—  
Now the Smokes of Spring go up to clear the brain;  
Now the Young Men's hearts are troubled for the whisper of  
the Trues,  
Now the Red Gods make their medicine again!  
Who hath seen the beaver busied? Who hath watched the  
black-tail mating?  
Who hath lain alone to hear the wild-goose cry?  
Who hath worked the chosen water where the ouananiche is  
waiting,  
Or the sea-trout's jumping-crazy for the fly?

*He must go—go—go away from here!  
On the other side the world he's overdue.  
'Send your road is clear before you when the old Spring-  
fret comes o'er you,  
And the Red Gods call for you!*

So for one the wet sail arching through the rainbow round  
the bow,  
And for one the creak of snow-shoes on the crust;  
And for one the lakeside lilies where the bull-moose waits the  
cow,  
And for one the mule-train coughing in the dust.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Who hath smelt wood-smoke at twilight? Who hath heard  
the birch-log burning?

Who is quick to read the noises of the night?  
Let him follow with the others, for the Young Men's feet are  
turning  
To the camps of proved desire and known delight!

*Let him go—go, etc.*

### I

Do you know the blackened timber—do you know that racing  
stream

With the raw, right-angled log-jam at the end;  
And the bar of sun-warmed shingle where a man may bask  
and dream

To the click of shod canoe-poles round the bend?  
It is there that we are going with our rods and reels and  
traces,

To a silent, smoky Indian that we know—  
To a couch of new-pulled hemlock, with the starlight on our  
faces,  
For the Red Gods call us out and we must go!

*They must go—go, etc.*

### II

Do you know the shallow Baltic where the seas are steep and  
short,

Where the bluff, lee-boarded fishing-luggers ride?  
Do you know the joy of threshing leagues to leeward of your  
port

On a coast you've lost the chart of overside?  
It is there that I am going, with an extra hand to bale  
her—

Just one able 'long-shore loafer that I know.  
He can take his chance of drowning, while I sail and sail and  
sail her,  
For the Red Gods call me out and I must go!

*He must go—go, etc.*

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### III

Do you know the pile-built village where the sago-dealers  
trade—

Do you know the reek of fish and wet bamboo?  
Do you know the steaming stillness of the orchid-scented  
glade

When the blazoned, bird-winged butterflies flap through?  
It is there that I am going with my camphor, net, and boxes,  
To a gentle, yellow pirate that I know—  
To my little wailing lemurs, to my palms and flying-foxes,  
For the Red Gods call me out and I must go!

*He must go—go, etc.*

### IV

Do you know the world's white roof-tree—do you know that  
windy rift

Where the baffling mountain-eddies chop and change?  
Do you know the long day's patience, belly-down on frozen  
drift,

While the head of heads is feeding out of range?  
It is there that I am going, where the boulders and the snow  
lie,

With a trusty, nimble tracker that I know.  
I have sworn an oath, to keep it on the Horns of Ovis Poli,  
And the Red Gods call me out and I must go!

*He must go—go, etc.*

Now the Four-way Lodge is opened—now the Smokes of  
Council rise—

Pleasant smokes, ere yet 'twixt trail and trail they choose—  
Now the girths and ropes are tested: now they pack their last  
supplies:

Now our Young Men go to dance before the Trues!  
Who shall meet them at those altars—who shall light them  
to that shrine?

Velvet-footed, who shall guide them to their goal?  
Unto each the voice and vision: unto each his spoor and  
sign—

Lonely mountain in the Northland, misty sweat-bath 'neath  
the Line—

And to each a man that knows his naked soul!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

White or yellow, black or copper, he is waiting, as a lover,  
Smoke of funnel, dust of hooves, or beat of train—  
Where the high grass hides the horseman or the glaring flats  
discover—  
Where the steamer hails the landing, or the surf-boat brings  
the rover—  
Where the rails run out in sand-drift . . . Quick! ah,  
heave the camp-kit over,  
For the Red Gods make their medicine again!

*And we go—go—go away from here!  
On the other side the world we're overdue!  
'Send the road is clear before you when the old Spring-  
fret comes o'er you,  
And the Red Gods call for you!*

## A BOY SCOUTS' PATROL SONG

1913

THESE are *our* regulations—  
There's just one law for the Scout  
And the first and the last, and the present and the past,  
And the future and the perfect is "Look out!"  
I, thou and he, look out!  
We, ye and they, look out!  
Though you didn't or you wouldn't  
Or you hadn't or you couldn't;  
You jolly well *must* look out!

Look out, when you start for the day,  
That your kit is packed to your mind;  
There is no use going away  
With half of it left behind.  
Look out that your laces are tight,  
And your boots are easy and stout,  
Or you'll end with a blister at night.  
(Chorus) *All Patrols look out!*

Look out for the birds of the air,  
Look out for the beasts of the field—



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

They'll tell you how and where  
The other side's concealed.  
When the blackbird bolts from the copse,  
Or the cattle are staring about,  
The wise commander stops  
And (*chorus*) All Patrols look out!

Look out when your front is clear,  
And you feel you are bound to win.  
Look out for your flank and your rear—  
That's where surprises begin.  
For the rustle that isn't a rat,  
For the splash that isn't a trout,  
For the boulder that may be a hat  
(*Chorus*) All Patrols look out!

For the innocent knee-high grass,  
For the ditch that never tells,  
Look out! Look out ere you pass—  
And look out for everything else!  
A sign mis-read as you run  
May turn retreat to a rout—  
For all things under the sun  
(*Chorus*) All Patrols look out!

Look out when your temper goes  
At the end of a losing game;  
When your boots are too tight for your toes;  
And you answer and argue and blame.  
It's the hardest part of the Law,  
But it has to be learnt by the Scout—  
For whining and shirking and "jaw"  
(*Chorus*) All Patrols look out!

### THE TRUCE OF THE BEAR

1898

Y<sup>E</sup>ARLY, with tent and rifle, our careless white men go  
By the Pass called Muttianee, to shoot in the vale below.  
Yearly by Muttianee he follows our white men in—  
Matun, the old blind beggar, bandaged from brow to chin.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Eyeless, noseless, and lipless—toothless, broken of speech,  
Seeking a dole at the doorway he mumbles his tale to each;  
Over and over the story, ending as he began:

“ Make ye no truce with Adam-zad—the Bear that walks like  
a Man!

“ There was a flint in my musket—pricked and primed was  
the pan,  
When I went hunting Adam-zad—the Bear that stands like  
a Man.

I looked my last on the timber, I looked my last on the snow,  
When I went hunting Adam-zad fifty summers ago!

“ I knew his times and his seasons, as he knew mine, that fed  
By night in the ripened maizefield and robbed my house of  
bread.

I knew his strength and cunning, as he knew mine, that crept  
At dawn to the crowded goat-pens and plundered while I slept.

“ Up from his stony playground—down from his well-digged  
lair—

Out on the naked ridges ran Adam-zad the Bear—  
Groaning, grunting, and roaring, heavy with stolen meals,  
Two long marches to northward, and I was at his heels!

“ Two long marches to northward, at the fall of the second  
night,

I came on mine enemy Adam-zad all panting from his flight.  
There was a charge in the musket—pricked and primed was  
the pan—

My finger crooked on the trigger—when he reared up like  
a man.

“ Horrible, hairy, human, with paws like hands in prayer,  
Making his supplication rose Adam-zad the Bear!

I looked at the swaying shoulders, at the paunch's swag and  
swing,

And my heart was touched with pity for the monstrous, plead-  
ing thing.

“ Touched with pity and wonder, I did not fire then . . .

I have looked no more on women—I have walked no more  
with men.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Nearer he tottered and nearer, with paws like hands that  
pray—  
From brow to jaw that steel-shod paw, it ripped my face  
away!

"Sudden, silent, and savage, searing as flame the blow—  
Faceless I fell before his feet, fifty summers ago.  
I heard him grunt and chuckle—I heard him pass to his den.  
He left me blind to the darkened years and the little mercy of  
men.

"Now ye go down in the morning with guns of the newer style,  
That load (I have felt) in the middle and range (I have heard)  
a mile?  
Luck to the white man's rifle, that shoots so fast and true,  
But—pay, and I lift my bandage and show what the Bear  
can do!"

(Flesh like slag in the furnace, knobbed and withered and  
grey—  
Matun, the old blind beggar, he gives good worth for his  
pay.)  
"Rouse him at noon in the bushes, follow and press him  
hard—  
Not for his ragings and roarings flinch ye from Adam-zad.

"But (pay, and I put back the bandage) *this* is the time to fear,  
When he stands up like a tired man, tottering near and near;  
When he stands up as pleading, in wavering, man-brute guise,  
When he veils the hate and cunning of his little, swinish eyes;

"When he shows as seeking quarter, with paws like hands in  
prayer,  
*That* is the time of peril—the time of the Truce of the Bear!"

Eyeless, noseless, and lipless, asking a dole at the door,  
Matun, the old blind beggar, he tells it o'er and o'er;  
Fumbling and feeling the rifles, warming his hands at the  
flame,  
Hearing our careless white men talk of the morrow's game;

Over and over the story, ending as he began:—  
"*There is no truce with Adam-zad, the Bear that looks like a  
Man!*"

DEFINITIVE EDITION

RUSSIA TO THE PACIFISTS

1918

GOD rest you, peaceful gentlemen, let nothing you  
dismay,  
But—leave your sports a little while—the dead are borne  
this way!

Armies dead and Cities dead, past all count or care.  
God rest you, merry gentlemen, what portent see you there?  
Singing:—Break ground for a wearied host  
That have no ground to keep.  
Give them the rest that they covet most . .  
And who shall be next to sleep, good sirs,  
In such a trench to sleep?

God rest you, peaceful gentlemen, but give us leave to  
pass.  
We go to dig a nation's grave as great as England was.  
For this Kingdom and this Glory and this Power and this  
Pride,  
Three hundred years it flourished—in three hundred days it  
died.

Singing:—Pour oil for a frozen throng  
That lie about the ways.  
Give them the warmth they have lacked so  
long . . .  
And what shall be next to blaze, good sirs,  
On such a pyre to blaze?

God rest you, thoughtful gentlemen, and send your sleep is  
light!  
Remains of this dominion no shadow, sound, or sight,  
Except the sound of weeping and the sight of burning fire,  
And the shadow of a people that is trampled into mire.

Singing:—Break bread for a starving folk  
That perish in the field.  
Give them their food as they take the yoke . . .  
And who shall be next to yield, good sirs,  
For such a bribe to yield?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

God rest you, merry gentlemen, and keep you in your mirth!  
Was ever Kingdom turned so soon to ashes, blood, and earth?  
'Twixt the summer and the snow—seeding-time and frost—  
Arms and victual, hope and counsel, name and country lost!

Singing:—*Let down by the foot and the head—*

*Shovel and smooth it all!*

*So do we bury a Nation dead . . .*

And who shall be next to fall, good sirs,  
With your good help to fall?

### THE PEACE OF DIVES

1903

THE Word came down to Dives in Torment where he  
lay:

“Our World is full of wickedness, My Children maim and  
slay,

“And the Saint and Seer and Prophet

“Can make no better of it

“Than to sanctify and prophesy and pray.

“Rise up, rise up, thou Dives, and take again thy gold,

“And thy women and thy housen as they were to thee of  
old.

“It may be grace hath found thee

“In the furnace where We bound thee,

“And that thou shalt bring the peace My Son foretold.”

Then merrily rose Dives and leaped from out his fire,  
And walked abroad with diligence to do the Lord's desire;  
And anon the battles ceased,  
And the captives were released,  
And Earth had rest from Goshen to Gadire.

The Word came down to Satan that raged and roared alone,  
'Mid the shouting of the peoples by the cannon overthrown  
(But the Prophets, Saints, and Seers  
Set each other by the ears,  
For each would claim the marvel as his own):

DEFINITIVE EDITION

“ Rise up, rise up, thou Satan, upon the Earth to go,  
“ And prove the Peace of Dives if it be good or no:  
“ For all that he hath planned  
“ We deliver to thy hand,  
“ As thy skill shall serve, to break it or bring low.”

Then mightily rose Satan, and about the Earth he hied,  
And breathed on Kings in idleness and Princes drunk with  
pride.  
But for all the wrong he breathed  
There was never sword unsheathed,  
And the fires he lighted flickered out and died.

Then terribly rose Satan, and darkened Earth afar,  
Till he came on cunning Dives where the money-changers  
are;  
And he saw men pledge their gear  
For the gold that buys the spear,  
And the helmet and the habergeon of war.

Yea, to Dives came the Persian and the Syrian and the  
Mede—  
And their hearts were nothing altered, nor their cunning nor  
their greed—  
And they pledged their flocks and farms  
For the King-compelling arms,  
And Dives lent according to their need.

Then Satan said to Dives:—“ Return again with me,  
“ Who hast broken His Commandment in the day He set thee  
free,  
“ Who grindest for thy greed  
“ Man’s belly-pinch and need,  
“ And the blood of Man to filthy usury!”

Then softly answered Dives where the money - changers  
sit:—  
“ My Refuge is Our Master, O My Master in the Pit.  
“ But behold all Earth is laid  
“ In the Peace which I have made,  
“ And behold I wait on thee to trouble it!”

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Then angrily turned Satan, and about the Seas he fled,  
To shake the new-sown peoples with insult, doubt, and  
dread;

But, for all the sleight he used,  
There was never squadron loosed,  
And the brands he flung flew dying and fell dead.

But to Dives came Atlantis and the Captains of the West—  
And their hates were nothing weakened nor their angers nor  
unrest—

And they pawned their utmost trade  
For the dry, decreeing blade;  
And Dives lent and took of them their best.

Then Satan said to Dives:—"Declare thou by The Name,  
"The secret of thy subtlety that turneth mine to shame.

"It is known through all the Hells  
"How my peoples mocked my spells,  
"And my faithless Kings denied me ere I came."

Then answered cunning Dives: "Do not gold and hate  
abide

"At the heart of every Magic, yea, and senseless fear beside?

"With gold and fear and hate  
"I have harnessed state to state,  
"And by hate and fear and gold their hates are tied.

"For hate men seek a weapon, for fear they seek a shield—  
"Keener blades and broader targes than their frantic neigh-  
bours wield—

"For gold I arm their hands,  
"And for gold I buy their lands,  
"And for gold I sell their enemies the yield.

"Their nearest foes may purchase, or their furthest friends  
may lease,

"One by one from Ancient Accad to the Islands of the  
Seas.

"And their covenants they make  
"For the naked iron's sake,  
"But I—I trap them armoured into peace.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"The flocks that Egypt pledged me to Assyria I drave,  
"And Pharaoh hath the increase of the herds that Sargon  
gave.

"Not for Ashdod overthrown

"Will the Kings destroy their own,

"Or their peoples wake the strife they feign to brave.

"Is not Carchemish like Calno? For the steeds of their  
desire

"They have sold me seven harvests that I sell to Crowning  
Tyre;

"And the Tyrian sweeps the plains

"With a thousand hired wains,

"And the Cities keep the peace and—share the hire.

"Hast thou seen the pride of Moab? For the swords about  
his path,

"His bond is to Philistia, in half of all he hath.

"And he dare not draw the sword

"Till Gaza give the word,

"And he show release from Askalon and Gath.

"Wilt thou call again thy peoples, wilt thou craze anew thy  
Kings?

"Lo! my lightnings pass before thee, and their whistling  
servant brings,

"Ere the drowsy street hath stirred,

"Every masked and midnight word,

"And the nations break their fast upon these things.

"So I make a jest of Wonder, and a mock of Time and Space,

"The roofless Seas an hostel, and the Earth a market-place,

"Where the anxious traders know

"Each is surety for his foe,

"And none may thrive without his fellows' grace.

"Now this is all my subtlety and this is all my wit,

"God give thee good enlightenment, My Master in the Pit.

"But behold all Earth is laid

"In the Peace which I have made,

"And behold I wait on thee to trouble it!"



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

A SONG OF THE WHITE MEN

1899

Now, this is the cup the White Men drink  
When they go to right a wrong,  
And that is the cup of the old world's hate—  
Cruel and strained and strong.  
We have drunk that cup—and a bitter, bitter cup—  
And tossed the dregs away.  
But well for the world when the White Men drink  
To the dawn of the White Man's day!

Now, this is the road that the White Men tread  
When they go to clean a land—  
Iron underfoot and levin overhead  
And the deep on either hand.  
We have trod that road—and a wet and windy road—  
Our chosen star for guide.  
Oh, well for the world when the White Men tread  
Their highway side by side!

Now, this is the faith that the White Men hold  
When they build their homes afar—  
"Freedom for ourselves and freedom for our sons  
And, failing freedom, War."  
We have proved our faith—bear witness to our faith,  
Dear souls of freemen slain!  
Oh, well for the world when the White Men join  
To prove their faith again!

THE ROWERS

1902

*(When Germany proposed that England should help her in a  
naval demonstration to collect debts from Venezuela.)*

THE banked oars fell an hundred strong,  
And backed and threshed and ground,  
But bitter was the rowers' song  
As they brought the war-boat round.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

They had no heart for the rally and roar  
That makes the whale-bath smoke—  
When the great blades cleave and hold and leave  
As one on the racing stroke.

They sang:—"What reckoning do you keep,  
And steer her by what star,  
If we come unscathed from the Southern deep  
To be wrecked on a Baltic bar?

"Last night you swore our voyage was done,  
But seaward still we go.  
And you tell us now of a secret vow  
You have made with an open foe!

"That we must lie off a lightless coast  
And haul and back and veer,  
At the will of the breed that have wronged us most  
For a year and a year and a year!

"There was never a shame in Christendie  
They laid not to our door—  
And you say we must take the winter sea  
And sail with them once more?

"Look South! The gale is scarce o'erpast  
That stripped and laid us down,  
When we stood forth but they stood fast  
And prayed to see us drown.

"Our dead they mocked are scarcely cold,  
Our wounds are bleeding yet—  
And you tell us now that our strength is sold  
To help them press for a debt!

"'Neath all the flags of all mankind  
That use upon the seas,  
Was there no other fleet to find  
That you strike hands with these?

"Of evil times that men can choose  
On evil fate to fall,  
What brooding Judgment let you loose  
To pick the worst of all?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

“ In sight of peace—from the Narrow Seas  
O'er half the world to run—  
With a cheated crew, to league anew  
With the Goth and the shameless Hun! ”

### AN IMPERIAL RESCRIPT

1890

Now this is the tale of the Council the German Kaiser  
decreed,  
To ease the strong of their burden, to help the weak in their  
need,  
He sent a word to the peoples, who struggle, and pant, and  
sweat,  
That the straw might be counted fairly and the tally of bricks  
be set.

The Lords of Their Hands assembled. From the East and  
the West they drew—  
Baltimore, Lille, and Essen, Brummagem, Clyde, and Crewe.  
And some were black from the furnace, and some were brown  
from the soil,  
And some were blue from the dye-vat; but all were wearied  
of toil.

And the young King said:—“ I have found it, the road to  
the rest ye seek:  
“ The strong shall wait for the weary, the hale shall halt for  
the weak:  
“ With the even tramp of an army where no man breaks from  
the line,  
“ Ye shall march to peace and plenty in the bond of brother-  
hood—sign! ”

The paper lay on the table, the strong heads bowed thereby,  
And a wail went up from the peoples:—“ Ay, sign—give  
rest, for we die! ”  
A hand was stretched to the goose-quill, a fist was cramped  
to scrawl,  
When—the laugh of a blue-eyed maiden ran clear through  
the Council-hall.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

And each one heard Her laughing as each one saw Her  
plain—  
Sadie, Mimi, or Olga, Gretchen, or Mary Jane.  
And the Spirit of Man That is in Him to the light of the  
vision woke;  
And the men drew back from the paper, as a Yankee delegate  
spoke:—

“There’s a girl in Jersey City who works on the tele-  
phone;  
“We’re going to hitch our horses and dig for a house of our  
own,  
“With gas and water connections, and steam-heat through to  
the top;  
“And, W. Hohenzollern, I guess I shall work till I drop.”

And an English delegate thundered:—“The weak an’ the  
lame be blowed!  
“I’ve a berth in the Sou’-West workshops, a home in the  
Wandsworth Road;  
“And till the ’sociation has footed my buryin’ bill,  
“I work for the kids an’ the missus. Pull up! I’ll be damned  
if I will!”

And over the German benches the bearded whisper  
ran:—  
“Lager, der girls und der dollars, dey makes or dey breaks  
a man.  
“If Schmitt haf collared der dollars, he collars der girl  
deremit;  
“But if Schmitt bust in der pizness, we collars der girl from  
Schmitt.”

They passed one resolution:—“Your sub-committee believe  
“You can lighten the curse of Adam when you’ve lifted the  
curse of Eve.  
“But till we are built like the angels—with hammer and  
chisel and pen,  
“We will work for ourselves and a woman, for ever and ever,  
amen.”

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Now this is the tale of the Council the German Kaiser held—  
The day that they razored the Grindstone, the day that the  
    Cat was belled,  
The day of the Figs from Thistles, the day of the Twisted  
    Sands,  
The day that the laugh of a maiden made light of the Lords  
    of Their Hands.

### A DEATH-BED

1918

“THIS is the State above the Law.  
    The State exists for the State alone.”  
[*This is a gland at the back of the jaw,  
    And an answering lump by the collar-bone.*]

Some die shouting in gas or fire;  
    Some die silent, by shell and shot.  
Some die desperate, caught on the wire;  
    Some die suddenly. This will not.

“Regis suprema voluntas Lex”  
[*It will follow the regular course of—throats.*]  
Some die pinned by the broken decks,  
    Some die sobbing between the boats.

Some die eloquent, pressed to death  
    By the sliding trench, as their friends can hear.  
Some die wholly in half a breath.  
    Some—give trouble for half a year.

“There is neither Evil nor Good in life  
    Except as the needs of the State ordain.”  
[*Since it is rather too late for the knife,  
    All we can do is to mask the pain.*]

Some die saintly in faith and hope—  
    One died thus in a prison-yard—  
Some die broken by rape or the rope;  
    Some die easily. This dies hard.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

"I will dash to pieces who bar my way.  
Woe to the traitor! Woe to the weak!"  
[*Let him write what he wishes to say.*  
*It tires him out if he tries to speak.*]

Some die quietly. Some abound  
In loud self-pity. Others spread  
Bad morale through the cots around . . .  
This is a type that is better dead.

"The war was forced on me by my foes.  
All that I sought was the right to live."  
[*Don't be afraid of a triple dose;*  
*The pain will neutralize half we give.*]

*Here are the needles. See that he dies*  
*While the effects of the drug endure. . . .*  
*What is the question he asks with his eyes?—*  
*Yes, All-Highest, to God, be sure.]*

## ET DONA FERENTES

1896

I <sup>N</sup> EXTENDED observation of the ways and works of  
man,  
From the Four-mile Radius roughly to the Plains of  
Hindustan:  
I have drunk with mixed assemblies, seen the racial ruction  
rise,  
And the men of half Creation damning half Creation's eyes.

I have watched them in their tantrums, all that pentecostal  
crew,  
French, Italian, Arab, Spaniard, Dutch and Greek, and Russ  
and Jew,  
Celt and savage, buff and ochre, cream and yellow, mauve  
and white,  
But it never really mattered till the English grew polite;

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Till the men with polished toppers, till the men in long  
frock-coats,  
Till the men who do not duel, till the men who war with  
votes,  
Till the breed that take their pleasures as Saint Lawrence  
took his grid,  
Began to "beg your pardon" and—the knowing croupier hid.

Then the bandsmen with their fiddles, and the girls that  
bring the beer,  
Felt the psychological moment, left the lit Casino clear;  
But the uninstructed alien, from the Teuton to the Gaul,  
Was entrapped, once more, my country, by that suave,  
deceptive drawl.

As it was in ancient Suez or 'neath wilder, milder skies,  
I "observe with apprehension" how the racial ructions rise;  
And with keener apprehension, if I read the times aright,  
Hear the old Casino order: "Watch your man, but be  
polite.

"Keep your temper. Never answer (*that* was why they spat  
and swore).

Don't hit first, but move together (there's no hurry) to the  
door.

Back to back, and facing outward while the linguist tells 'em  
how—

"*Nous sommes allong ar notre batteau, nous ne voulong pas  
un row.*"

So the hard, pent rage ate inward, till some idiot went too  
far . . .

"Let 'em have it!" and they had it, and the same was merry  
war—

Fist, umbrella, cane, decanter, lamp and beer-mug, chair and  
boot—

Till behind the fleeing legions rose the long, hoarse yell for  
loot.

Then the oil-cloth with its numbers, like a banner fluttered  
free;

Then the grand piano cantered, on three castors, down the  
quay;

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

White, and breathing through their nostrils, silent, systematic, swift—

They removed, effaced, abolished all that man could heave or lift.

Oh, my country, bless the training that from cot to castle runs—

The pitfall of the stranger but the bulwark of thy sons—

Measured speech and ordered action, sluggish soul and unperturbed,

Till we wake our Island-Devil—nowise cool for being curbed!

When the heir of all the ages “has the honour to remain,”

When he will not hear an insult, though men make it ne’er so plain,

When his lips are schooled to meekness, when his back is bowed to blows—

Well the keen *aas-vogels* know it—well the waiting jackal knows.

Build on the flanks of Etna where the sullen smoke-puffs float—

Or bathe in tropic waters where the lean fin dogs the boat—

Cock the gun that is not loaded, cook the frozen dynamite—

But oh, beware my Country, when my Country grows polite!

## THE HOLY WAR

1917

(“For here lay the excellent wisdom of him that built Mansoul, that the walls could never be broken down nor hurt by the most mighty adverse potentate unless the townsmen gave consent thereto.”—BUNYAN’S *Holy War*.)

*A* TINKER out of Bedford,  
A vagrant oft in quod,  
A private under Fairfax,  
A minister of God—  
Two hundred years and thirty  
Ere Armageddon came  
His single hand portrayed it,  
And Bunyan was his name!



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

He mapped for those who follow,  
The world in which we are—  
"This famous town of Mansoul"  
That takes the Holy War.  
Her true and traitor people,  
The Gates along her wall,  
From Eye Gate unto Feel Gate,  
John Bunyan showed them all.

All enemy divisions,  
Recruits of every class,  
And highly screened positions  
For flame or poison-gas;  
The craft that we call modern,  
The crimes that we call new,  
John Bunyan had 'em typed and filed  
In Sixteen Eighty-two.

Likewise the Lords of Looseness  
That hamper faith and works,  
The Perseverance-Doubters,  
And Present-Comfort shirks,  
With brittle intellectuals  
Who crack beneath a strain—  
John Bunyan met that helpful set  
In Charles the Second's reign.

Emmanuel's vanguard dying  
For right and not for rights,  
My Lord Apollyon lying  
To the State-kept Stockholmites,  
The Pope, the swithering Neutrals,  
The Kaiser and his Gott—  
Their rôles, their goals, their naked souls—  
He knew and drew the lot.

Now he hath left his quarters,  
In Bunhill Fields to lie,  
The wisdom that he taught us  
Is proven prophecy—  
One watchword through our Armies,  
One answer from our Lands:—  
"No dealings with Diabolus  
As long as Mansoul stands!"

DEFINITIVE EDITION

*A pedlar from a hovel,  
The lowest of the low—  
The Father of the Novel,  
Salvation's first Defoe—  
Eight blinded generations  
Ere Armageddon came,  
He showed us how to meet it,  
And Bunyan was his name!*

FRANCE

1913

*BROKE to every known mischance, lifted over all  
By the light sane joy of life, the buckler of the Gaul;  
Furious in luxury, merciless in toil,  
Terrible with strength that draws from her tireless soil;  
Strictest judge of her own worth, gentlest of man's mind,  
First to follow Truth and last to leave old Truths behind—  
France, beloved of every soul that loves its fellow-kind!*

Ere our birth (rememberest thou?) side by side we lay  
Fretting in the womb of Rome to begin our fray.  
Ere men knew our tongues apart, our one task was known—  
Each to mould the other's fate as he wrought his own.  
To this end we stirred mankind till all Earth was ours,  
Till our world-end strifes begat wayside Thrones and  
Powers—

Puppets that we made or broke to bar the other's path—  
Necessary, outpost-folk, hirelings of our wrath.  
To this end we stormed the seas, tack for tack, and burst  
Through the doorways of new worlds, doubtful which was  
first,  
Hand on hilt (rememberest thou?) ready for the blow—  
Sure, whatever else we met, we should meet our foe.  
Spurred or balked at every stride by the other's strength,  
So we rode the ages down and every ocean's length!

Where did you refrain from us or we refrain from you?  
Ask the wave that has not watched war between us two!  
Others held us for a while, but with weaker charms,  
These we quitted at the call for each other's arms.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Eager toward the known delight, equally we strove—  
Each the other's mystery, terror, need, and love.  
To each other's open court with our proofs we came.  
Where could we find honour else, or men to test our claim?  
From each other's throat we wrenched — valour's last  
reward—

That extorted word of praise gasped 'twixt lunge and guard.  
In each other's cup we poured mingled blood and tears,  
Brutal joys, unmeasured hopes, intolerable fears—  
All that soiled or salted life for a thousand years.  
Proved beyond the need of proof, matched in every clime,  
O Companion, we have lived greatly through all time!

Yoked in knowledge and remorse, now we come to rest,  
Laughing at old villainies that Time has turned to jest;  
Pardoning old necessities no pardon can efface—  
That undying sin we shared in Rouen market-place.

Now we watch the new years shape, wondering if they hold  
Fiercer lightnings in their heart than we launched of old.  
Now we hear new voices rise, question, boast or gird,  
As we raged (rememberest thou?) when our crowds were  
stirred.

Now we count new keels afloat, and new hosts on land,  
Massed like ours (rememberest thou?) when our strokes were  
planned.

We were schooled for dear life's sake, to know each other's  
blade.

What can Blood and Iron make more than we have made?  
We have learned by keenest use to know each other's mind.  
What shall Blood and Iron loose that we cannot bind?  
We who swept each other's coast, sacked each other's home,  
Since the sword of Brennus clashed on the scales at Rome,  
Listen, count and close again, wheeling girth to girth,  
In the linked and steadfast guard set for peace on earth!

Broke to every known mischance, lifted over all  
By the light sane joy of life, the buckler of the Gaul;  
Furious in luxury, merciless in toil,  
Terrible with strength renewed from a tireless soil;  
Strictest judge of her own worth, gentlest of man's mind,  
First to face the Truth and last to leave old Truths behind—  
France, beloved of every soul that loves or serves its kind!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

“BEFORE A MIDNIGHT BREAKS IN STORM”

1903

BEFORE a midnight breaks in storm,  
Or herded sea in wrath,  
Ye know what wavering gusts inform  
The greater tempest's path;  
Till the loosed wind  
Drive all from mind,  
Except Distress, which, so will prophets cry,  
O'ercame them, houseless, from the unhinting sky.

Ere rivers league against the land  
In piracy of flood,  
Ye know what waters steal and stand  
Where seldom water stood.  
Yet who will note,  
Till fields afloat,  
And washen carcass and the returning well,  
Trumpet what these poor heralds strove to tell?

Ye know who use the Crystal Ball  
(To peer by stealth on Doom),  
The Shade that, shaping first of all,  
Prepares an empty room.  
Then doth It pass  
Like breath from glass,  
But, on the extorted Vision bowed intent,  
No man considers why It came or went.

Before the years reborn behold  
Themselves with stranger eye,  
And the sport-making Gods of old,  
Like Samson slaying, die,  
Many shall hear  
The all-pregnant sphere,  
Bow to the birth and sweat, but—speech denied—  
Sit dumb or—dealt in part—fall weak and wide.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Yet instant to fore-shadowed need  
The eternal balance swings;  
That wingèd men the Fates may breed  
So soon as Fate hath wings.  
These shall possess  
Our littleness,  
And in the imperial task (as worthy) lay  
Up our lives' all to piece one giant Day.

THE BELL BUOY

1896

THEY christened my brother of old—  
And a saintly name he bears—  
They gave him his place to hold  
At the head of the belfry-stairs,  
Where the minster-towers stand  
And the breeding kestrels cry.  
Would I change with my brother a league inland?  
(*Shoal! 'Ware shoal!*) Not I!

In the flush of the hot June prime,  
O'er sleek flood-tides afire,  
I hear him hurry the chime  
To the bidding of checked Desire;  
Till the sweated ringers tire  
And the wild bob-majors die.  
Could I wait for my turn in the godly choir?  
(*Shoal! 'Ware shoal!*) Not I!

When the smoking scud is blown—  
When the greasy wind-rack lowers—  
Apart and at peace and alone,  
He counts the changeless hours.  
He wars with darkling Powers  
(I war with a darkling sea);  
Would he stoop to my work in the gusty mirk?  
(*Shoal! 'Ware shoal!*) Not he!

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

There was never a priest to pray,  
 There was never a hand to toll,  
 When they made me guard of the bay,  
 And moored me over the shoal.  
 I rock, I reel, and I roll—  
 My four great hammers ply—  
 Could I speak or be still at the Church's will?  
 (*Shoal! 'Ware shoal!*) Not I!

The landward marks have failed,  
 The fog-bank glides unguessed,  
 The seaward lights are veiled,  
 The spent deep feigns her rest:  
 But my ear is laid to her breast,  
 I lift to the swell—I cry!  
 Could I wait in sloth on the Church's oath?  
 (*Shoal! 'Ware shoal!*) Not I!

At the careless end of night  
 I thrill to the nearing screw;  
 I turn in the clearing light  
 And I call to the drowsy crew;  
 And the mud boils foul and blue  
 As the blind bow backs away.  
 Will they give me their thanks if they clear the banks?  
 (*Shoal! 'Ware shoal!*) Not they!

The beach-pools cake and skim,  
 The bursting spray-heads freeze,  
 I gather on crown and rim  
 The grey, grained ice of the seas,  
 Where, sheathed from bitt to trees,  
 The plunging colliers lie.  
 Would I barter my place for the Church's grace?  
 (*Shoal! 'Ware shoal!*) Not I!

Through the blur of the whirling snow,  
 Or the black of the inky sleet,  
 The lanterns gather and grow,  
 And I look for the homeward fleet.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Rattle of block and sheet—  
“Ready about—stand by!”  
Shall I ask them a fee ere they fetch the quay?  
(*Shoal! 'Ware shoal!*) Not I!

I dip and I surge and I swing  
In the rip of the racing tide,  
By the gates of doom I sing,  
On the horns of death I ride.  
A ship-length overside,  
Between the course and the sand,  
Fretted and bound I bide  
Peril whereof I cry.  
Would I change with my brother a league inland?  
(*Shoal! 'Ware shoal!*) Not I!

### THE OLD ISSUE

OCTOBER 9, 1899

(*Outbreak of Boer War*)

“*H*ERE is nothing new nor aught unproven,” say the  
Trumpets,  
“Many feet have worn it and the road is old indeed.  
“It is the King—the King we schooled aforetime!”  
(*Trumpets in the marshes—in the eyot at Runnymede!*)  
“Here is neither haste, nor hate, nor anger,” peal the Trumpets,  
“Pardon for his penitence or pity for his fall.  
“It is the King!”—inexorable Trumpets—  
(*Trumpets round the scaffold at the dawning by Whitehall!*)  
“He hath veiled the Crown and hid the Sceptre,” warn the  
Trumpets,  
“He hath changed the fashion of the lies that cloak his will.  
“Hard die the Kings—ah, hard—dooms hard!” declare the  
Trumpets,  
(*Trumpets at the gang-plank where the brawling troop-decks  
fill!*)

DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Ancient and Unteachable, abide—abide the Trumpets!*  
*Once again the Trumpets, for the shuddering ground-swell*  
*brings*  
*Clamour over ocean of the harsh, pursuing Trumpets—*  
*Trumpets of the Vanguard that have sworn no truce with*  
*Kings!*

All we have of freedom, all we use or know—  
This our fathers bought for us long and long ago.

Ancient Right unnoticed as the breath we draw—  
Leave to live by no man's leave, underneath the Law—

Lance and torch and tumult, steel and grey-goose wing,  
Wrenched it, inch and ell and all, slowly from the King.

Till our fathers 'stablished, after bloody years,  
How our King is one with us, first among his peers.

So they bought us freedom—not at little cost—  
Wherefore must we watch the King, lest our gain be lost.

Over all things certain, this is sure indeed,  
Suffer not the old King: for we know the breed.

Give no ear to bondsmen bidding us endure,  
Whining "He is weak and far"; crying "Time shall cure."

(Time himself is witness, till the battle joins,  
Deeper strikes the rottenness in the people's loins.)

Give no heed to bondsmen masking war with peace.  
Suffer not the old King here or overseas.

They that beg us barter—wait his yielding mood—  
Pledge the years we hold in trust—pawn our brother's  
blood—

Howso' great their clamour, whatsoe'er their claim,  
Suffer not the old King under any name!

*Here is naught unproven—here is naught to learn.*  
*It is written what shall fall if the King return.*



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

He shall mark our goings, question whence we came,  
Set his guards about us, as in Freedom's name.

He shall take a tribute; toll of all our ware;  
He shall change our gold for arms—arms we may not bear.

He shall break his Judges if they cross his word;  
He shall rule above the Law calling on the Lord.

He shall peep and mutter; and the night shall bring  
Watchers 'neath our window, lest we mock the King—

Hate and all division; hosts of hurrying spies;  
Money poured in secret; carrion breeding flies.

Strangers of his counsel, hirelings of his pay,  
These shall deal our Justice: sell—deny—delay.

We shall drink dishonour, we shall eat abuse  
For the Land we look to—for the Tongue we use.

We shall take our station, dirt beneath his feet,  
While his hired captains jeer us in the street.

Cruel in the shadow, crafty in the sun,  
Far beyond his borders shall his teachings run.

Sloven, sullen, savage, secret, uncontrolled,  
Laying on a new land evil of the old—

Long-forgotten bondage, dwarfing heart and brain—  
All our fathers died to loose he shall bind again.

*Here is naught at venture, random nor untrue—  
Swings the wheel full-circle, brims the cup anew.*

*Here is naught unproven, here is nothing hid:  
Step for step and word for word—so the old Kings did!*

*Step by step, and word by word: who is ruled may read.  
Suffer not the old Kings: for we know the breed—*

*All the right they promise—all the wrong they bring.  
Stewards of the Judgment, suffer not this King!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE LESSON

1899-1902

(Boer War)

*LET us admit it fairly, as a business people should,  
We have had no end of a lesson: it will do us no end of good.*

Not on a single issue, or in one direction or twain,  
But conclusively, comprehensively, and several times and  
again,  
Were all our most holy illusions knocked higher than Gilde-  
roy's kite.  
We have had a jolly good lesson, and it serves us jolly well  
right!

This was not bestowed us under the trees, nor yet in the shade  
of a tent,  
But swingingly, over eleven degrees of a bare brown conti-  
nent.  
From Lamberts to Delagoa Bay, and from Pietersburg to  
Sutherland,  
Fell the phenomenal lesson we learned—with a fulness  
accorded no other land.

It was our fault, and our very great fault, and *not* the judg-  
ment of Heaven.  
We made an Army in our own image, on an island nine by  
seven,  
Which faithfully mirrored its makers' ideals, equipment, and  
mental attitude—  
And so we got our lesson: and we ought to accept it with  
gratitude.

We have spent two hundred million pounds to prove the fact  
once more,  
That horses are quicker than men afoot, since two and two  
make four;  
And horses have four legs, and men have two legs, and two  
into four goes twice,  
And nothing over except our lesson—and very cheap at the  
price.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

For remember (this our children shall know: we are too near  
for that knowledge)  
Not our mere astonished camps, but Council and Creed and  
College—  
All the obese, unchallenged old things that stifle and overlie  
us—  
Have felt the effects of the lesson we got—an advantage no  
money could buy us!

Then let us develop this marvellous asset which we alone  
command,  
And which, it may subsequently transpire, will be worth as  
much as the Rand.  
Let us approach this pivotal fact in a humble yet hopeful  
mood—  
We have had no end of a lesson. It will do us no end of good!

It was our fault, and our very great fault—and now we must  
turn it to use.  
We have forty million reasons for failure, but not a single  
excuse.  
So the more we work and the less we talk the better results  
we shall get.  
We have had an Imperial lesson. It may make us an Empire  
yet!

## MESOPOTAMIA

1917

THEY shall not return to us, the resolute, the young,  
The eager and whole-hearted whom we gave:  
But the men who left them thriftily to die in their own dung,  
Shall they come with years and honour to the grave?

They shall not return to us, the strong men coldly slain  
In sight of help denied from day to day:  
But the men who edged their agonies and chid them in their  
pain,  
Are they too strong and wise to put away?

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Our dead shall not return to us while Day and Night divide—  
Never while the bars of sunset hold.  
But the idle-minded overlings who quibbled while they died,  
Shall they thrust for high employments as of old?

Shall we only threaten and be angry for an hour?  
When the storm is ended shall we find  
How softly but how swiftly they have sidled back to power  
By the favour and contrivance of their kind?

Even while they soothe us, while they promise large amends,  
Even while they make a show of fear,  
Do they call upon their debtors, and take counsel with their  
friends,  
To confirm and re-establish each career?

Their lives cannot repay us—their death could not undo—  
The shame that they have laid upon our race.  
But the slothfulness that wasted and the arrogance that slew,  
Shall we leave it unabated in its place?

## THE ISLANDERS

1902

*N*O DOUBT but ye are the People—your throne is above  
the King's.

*Whoso speaks in your presence must say acceptable things:  
Bowing the head in worship, bending the knee in fear—  
Bringing the word well smoothen—such as a King should hear.*

Fenced by your careful fathers, ringed by your leaden seas,  
Long did ye wake in quiet and long lie down at ease;  
Till ye said of Strife, "What is it?" of the Sword, "It is  
far from our ken";

Till ye made a sport of your shrunken hosts and a toy of your  
armed men.

Ye stopped your ears to the warning—ye would neither look  
nor heed—

Ye set your leisure before their toil and your lusts above their  
need.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Because of your witless learning and your beasts of warren  
and chase,  
Ye grudged your sons to their service and your fields for their  
camping-place.  
Ye forced them glean in the highways the straw for the  
bricks they brought;  
Ye forced them follow in byways the craft that ye never  
taught.  
Ye hampered and hindered and crippled; ye thrust out of  
sight and away  
Those that would serve you for honour and those that served  
you for pay.  
Then were the judgments loosened; then was your shame  
revealed,  
At the hands of a little people, few but apt in the field.  
Yet ye were saved by a remnant (and your land's long-suffer-  
ing star),  
When your strong men cheered in their millions while your  
striplings went to the war.  
Sons of the sheltered city—unmade, unhandled, unmeet—  
Ye pushed them raw to the battle as ye picked them raw from  
the street.  
And what did ye look they should compass? Warcraft  
learned in a breath,  
Knowledge unto occasion at the first far view of Death?  
So? And ye train your horses and the dogs ye feed and  
prize?  
How are the beasts more worthy than the souls, your sacrifice?  
But ye said, "Their valour shall show them"; but ye said,  
"The end is close."  
And ye sent them comfits and pictures to help them harry  
your foes:  
And ye vaunted your fathomless power, and ye flaunted  
your iron pride,  
Ere—ye fawned on the Younger Nations for the men who  
could shoot and ride!  
Then ye returned to your trinkets; then ye contented your  
souls  
With the flannelled fools at the wicket or the muddled oafs  
at the goals.  
Given to strong delusion, wholly believing a lie,  
Ye saw that the land lay fenceless, and ye let the months  
go by

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Waiting some easy wonder, hoping some saving sign—

Idle—openly idle—in the lee of the forespent Line.

Idle—except for your boasting—and what is your boasting worth

If ye grudge a year of service to the lordliest life on earth?

Ancient, effortless, ordered, cycle on cycle set,

Life so long untroubled, that ye who inherit forget

It was not made with the mountains, it is not one with the deep.

Men, not gods, devised it. Men, not gods, must keep.

Men, not children, servants, or kinsfolk called from afar,

But each man born in the Island broke to the matter of war.

Soberly and by custom taken and trained for the same,

Each man born in the Island entered at youth to the game—

As it were almost cricket, not to be mastered in haste,

But after trial and labour, by temperance, living chaste.

As it were almost cricket—as it were even your play,

Weighed and pondered and worshipped, and practised day and day.

So ye shall bide sure-guarded when the restless lightnings wake

In the womb of the blotting war-cloud, and the pallid nations quake.

So, at the haggard trumpets, instant your soul shall leap

Forthright, accoutred, accepting—alert from the wells of sleep.

So at the threat ye shall summon—so at the need ye shall send

Men, not children or servants, tempered and taught to the end;

Cleansed of servile panic, slow to dread or despise,

Humble because of knowledge, mighty by sacrifice. . . .

But ye say, "It will mar our comfort." Ye say, "It will minish our trade."

Do ye wait for the spattered shrapnel ere ye learn how a gun is laid?

For the low, red glare to southward when the raided coast-towns burn?

(Light ye shall have on that lesson, but little time to learn.)

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Will ye pitch some white pavilion, and lustily even the  
odds,  
With nets and hoops and mallets, with rackets and bats and  
rods?  
Will the rabbit war with your foemen—the red deer horn  
them for hire?  
Your kept cock-pheasant keep you?—he is master of many  
a shire.

Arid, aloof, incurious, unthinking, unthanking, gelt,  
Will ye loose your schools to flout them till their brow-beat  
columns melt?

Will ye pray them or preach them, or print them, or bullet  
them back from your shore?

Will your workmen issue a mandate to bid them strike no  
more?

Will ye rise and dethrone your rulers? (Because ye were idle  
both?

Pride by Insolence chastened? Indolence purged by Sloth?)  
No doubt but ye are the People; who shall make you  
afraid?

Also your gods are many; no doubt but your gods shall  
aid.

Idols of greasy altars built for the body's ease;  
Proud little brazen Baals and talking fetishes;  
Teraphs of sept and party and wise wood-pavement gods—  
*These* shall come down to the battle and snatch you from  
under the rods?

From the gusty, flickering gun-roll with viewless salvoes  
rent,

And the pitted hail of the bullets that tell not whence they  
were sent.

When ye are ringed as with iron, when ye are scourged as  
with whips,

When the meat is yet in your belly, and the boast is yet on  
your lips;

When ye go forth at morning and the noon beholds you broke,  
Ere ye lie down at even, your remnant, under the yoke?

*No doubt but ye are the People—absolute, strong, and wise ;  
Whatever your heart has desired ye have not withheld from your  
eyes.*

*On your own heads, in your own hands, the sin and the saving  
lies !*

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### THE VETERANS

*(Written for the gathering of survivors of the Indian Mutiny,  
Albert Hall, 1907)*

**T**O-DAY, across our fathers' graves,  
The astonished years reveal  
The remnant of that desperate host  
Which cleansed our East with steel.

Hail and farewell! We greet you here,  
With tears that none will scorn—  
O Keepers of the House of old,  
Or ever we were born!

One service more we dare to ask—  
Pray for us, heroes, pray,  
That when Fate lays on us our task  
We do not shame the Day!

### THE DYKES

1902

**W**E HAVE no heart for the fishing—we have no hand for  
the oar—  
All that our fathers taught us of old pleases us now no more.  
All that our own hearts bid us believe we doubt where we do  
not deny—  
There is no proof in the bread we eat nor rest in the toil we ply.

Look you, our foreshore stretches far through sea-gate, dyke,  
and groin—  
Made land all, that our fathers made, where the flats and the  
fairway join.  
They forced the sea a sea-league back. They died, and their  
work stood fast.  
We were born to peace in the lee of the dykes, but the time  
of our peace is past.



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Far off, the full tide clambers and slips, mouthing and testing  
all,  
Nipping the flanks of the water-gates, baying along the wall;  
Turning the shingle, returning the shingle, changing the set  
of the sand . . .  
We are too far from the beach, men say, to know how the  
outworks stand.

So we come down, uneasy, to look; uneasily pacing the  
beach.  
These are the dykes our fathers made: we have never known  
a breach.  
Time and again has the gale blown by and we were not  
afraid;  
Now we come only to look at the dykes—at the dykes our  
fathers made.

O'er the marsh where the homesteads cower apart the har-  
ried sunlight flies,  
Shifts and considers, wanes and recovers, scatters and  
sickens and dies—  
An evil ember bedded in ash—a spark blown west by the  
wind . . .  
We are surrendered to night and the sea—the gale and the  
tide behind!

At the bridge of the lower saltings the cattle gather and  
blare,  
Roused by the feet of running men, dazed by the lantern-  
glare.  
Unbar and let them away for their lives—the levels drown as  
they stand,  
Where the flood-wash forces the sluices aback and the ditches  
deliver inland.

Ninefold deep to the top of the dykes the galloping breakers  
stride,  
And their overcarried spray is a sea—a sea on the landward  
side.  
Coming, like stallions they paw with their hooves, going they  
snatch with their teeth,  
Till the bents and the furze and the sand are dragged out,  
and the old-time hurdles beneath.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Bid men gather fuel for fire, the tar, the oil, and the tow—  
Flame we shall need, not smoke, in the dark if the riddled  
    sea-banks go.  
Bid the ringers watch in the tower (who knows how the dawn  
    shall prove?)  
Each with his rope between his feet and the trembling bells  
    above.

Now we can only wait till the day, wait and apportion our shame.  
These are the dykes our fathers left, but we would not look to the same.  
Time and again were we warned of the dykes, time and again we delayed:  
Now, it may fall, we have slain our sons, as our fathers we have betrayed.

Walking along the wreck of the dykes, watching the work of  
the seas!  
These were the dykes our fathers made to our great profit  
and ease.  
But the peace is gone and the profit is gone, with the old sure  
days withdrawn . . .  
That our own houses show as strange when we come back in  
the dawn!

## THE DECLARATION OF LONDON

JUNE 29, 1911

(On the reassembling of Parliament after the Coronation, the Government have no intention of allowing their followers to vote according to their convictions on the Declaration of London, but insist on a strictly party vote.—DAILY PAPERS.)

WE WERE all one heart and one race  
When the Abbey trumpets blew.  
For a moment's breathing-space  
We had forgotten you.  
Now you return to your honoured place  
Panting to shame us anew.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

We have walked with the Ages dead—  
With our Past alive and ablaze.  
And you bid us pawn our honour for bread,  
This day of all the days!  
And you cannot wait till our guests are sped,  
Or last week's wreath decays?

The light is still in our eyes  
Of Faith and Gentlehood,  
Of Service and Sacrifice;  
And it does not match our mood,  
To turn so soon to your treacheries  
That starve our land of her food.

Our ears still carry the sound  
Of our once-Imperial seas,  
Exultant after our King was crowned,  
Beneath the sun and the breeze.  
It is too early to have them bound  
Or sold at your decrees.

Wait till the memory goes,  
Wait till the visions fade,  
We may betray in time, God knows,  
But we would not have it said,  
When you make report to our scornful foes,  
That we kissed as we betrayed!

### THE WAGE-SLAVES

1902

OH, GLORIOUS are the guarded heights  
Where guardian souls abide—  
Self-exiled from our gross delights—  
Above, beyond, outside:  
An ampler arc their spirit swings—  
Commands a juster view—  
We have their word for all these things,  
No doubt their words are true.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Yet we, the bondslaves of our day,  
Whom dirt and danger press—  
Co-heirs of insolence, delay,  
And leagued unfaithfulness—  
Such is our need must seek indeed  
And, having found, engage  
The men who merely do the work  
For which they draw the wage.

From forge and farm and mine and bench,  
Deck, altar, outpost lone—  
Mill, school, battalion, counter, trench,  
Rail, senate, sheepfold, throne—  
Creation's cry goes up on high  
From age to cheated age:  
"Send us the men who do the work  
"For which they draw the wage!"

Words cannot help nor wit achieve,  
Nor e'en the all-gifted fool,  
Too weak to enter, bide, or leave  
The lists he cannot rule.  
Beneath the sun we count on none  
Our evil to assuage,  
Except the men that do the work  
For which they draw the wage.

When through the Gates of Stress and Strain  
Comes forth the vast Event—  
The simple, sheer, sufficing, sane  
Result of labour spent—  
They that have wrought the end unthought  
Be neither saint nor sage,  
But only men who did the work  
For which they drew the wage.

Wherefore to these the Fates shall bend  
(And all old idle things)  
Wherefore on these shall Power attend  
Beyond the grip of kings:

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Each in his place, by right, not grace,  
Shall rule his heritage—  
The men who simply do the work  
For which they draw the wage.

Not such as scorn the loitering street,  
Or waste, to earn its praise,  
Their noontide's unreturning heat  
About their morning ways;  
But such as dower each mortgaged hour  
Alike with clean courage—  
Even the men who do the work  
For which they draw the wage—  
Men, like to Gods, that do the work  
For which they draw the wage—  
Begin—continue—close that work  
For which they draw the wage!

THE SONG OF THE LATHES

1918

*(Being the words of the tune hummed at her lathe by  
Mrs. L. Embsay, widow)*

THE fans and the beltings they roar round me.  
The power is shaking the floor round me  
Till the lathes pick up their duty and the midnight-shift  
takes over.  
It is good for me to be here!

*Guns in Flanders—Flanders guns!  
(I had a man that worked 'em once!)  
Shells for guns in Flanders, Flanders!  
Shells for guns in Flanders, Flanders!  
Shells for guns in Flanders! Feed the guns!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

The cranes and the carriers they boom over me,  
The bays and the galleries they loom over me,  
With their quarter-mile of pillars growing little in the  
distance—

It is good for me to be here!

The Zeppelins and Gothas they raid over us.  
Our lights give warning, and fade over us.  
(Seven thousand women keeping quiet in the darkness!)  
Oh, it's good for me to be here!

The roofs and the buildings they grow round me,  
Eating up the fields I used to know round me;  
And the shed that I began in is a sub-inspector's office—  
So long have I been here!

I've seen six hundred mornings make our lamps grow dim,  
Through the bit that isn't painted round our sky-light rim,  
And the sunshine through the window slope according to  
the seasons,  
Twice since I've been here.

The trains on the sidings they call to us  
With the hundred thousand blanks that they haul to us;  
And we send 'em what we've finished, and they take it  
where it's wanted,  
For that is why we are here!

Man's hate passes as his love will pass.  
God made Woman what she always was.  
Them that bear the burden they will never grant forgiveness  
So long as they are here!

Once I was a woman, but that's by with me.  
All I loved and looked for, it must die with me;  
But the Lord has left me over for a servant of the Judgment,  
And I serve His Judgments here!

*Guns in Flanders—Flanders guns!*  
*(I had a son that worked 'em once!)*  
*Shells for guns in Flanders, Flanders!*  
*Shells for guns in Flanders, Flanders!*  
*Shells for guns in Flanders! Feed the guns!*

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

RIMMON

1903

(*After Boer War*)

DULY with knees that feign to quake—  
Bent head and shaded brow,—  
Yet once again, for my father's sake,  
In Rimmon's House I bow.

The curtains part, the trumpet blares,  
And the eunuchs howl aloud;  
And the gilt, swag-bellied idol glares  
Insolent over the crowd.

"*This is Rimmon, Lord of the Earth—  
"Fear Him and bow the knee!"*  
And I watch my comrades hide their mirth  
That rode to the wars with me.

For we remember the sun and the sand  
And the rocks whereon we trod,  
Ere we came to a scorched and a scornful land  
That did not know our God;

As we remember the sacrifice,  
Dead men an hundred laid—  
Slain while they served His mysteries,  
And that He would not aid—

Not though we gashed ourselves and wept,  
For the high-priest bade us wait;  
Saying He went on a journey or slept,  
Or was drunk or had taken a mate.

(*Praise ye Rimmon, King of Kings,  
Who ruleth Earth and Sky!*  
And again I bow as the censer swings  
And the God Enthroned goes by.)

Ay, we remember His sacred ark  
And the virtuous men that knelt  
To the dark and the hush behind the dark  
Wherein we dreamed He dwelt;

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Until we entered to hale Him out,  
And found no more than an old  
Uncleanly image girded about  
The loins with scarlet and gold.

Him we o'erset with the butts of our spears—  
Him and his vast designs—  
To be the scorn of our muleteers  
And the jest of our halted lines.

By the picket-pins that the dogs defile,  
In the dung and the dust He lay,  
Till the priests ran and chattered awhile  
And wiped Him and took Him away.

Hushing the matter before it was known,  
They returned to our fathers afar,  
And hastily set Him afresh on His throne  
Because he had won us the war.

Wherefore with knees that feign to quake—  
Bent head and shaded brow—  
To this dead dog, for my father's sake,  
In Rimmon's House I bow!

## THE SONG OF THE OLD GUARD

Army Reform—After Boer War

(“The Army of a Dream”—*Traffics and Discoveries*)

“**K** NOW this, my brethren, Heaven is clear  
And all the clouds are gone—  
The Proper Sort shall flourish now,  
Good times are coming on”—  
The evil that was threatened late  
To all of our degree  
Hath passed in discord and debate,  
And, *Hey then up go we!*

A common people strove in vain  
To shame us unto toil,



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

But they are spent and we remain,  
And we shall share the spoil  
According to our several needs  
As Beauty shall decree,  
As Age ordains or Birth concedes,  
And, *Hey then up go we!*

And they that with accursèd zeal  
Our Service would amend,  
Shall own the odds and come to heel  
Ere worse befall their end:  
For though no naked word he wrote  
Yet plainly shall they see  
What pinneth Orders on their coat,  
And, *Hey then up go we!*

Our doorways that, in time of fear,  
We opened overwide  
Shall softly close from year to year  
Till all be purified;  
For though no fluttering fan be heard  
Nor chaff be seen to flee—  
The Lord shall winnow the Lord's Preferred---  
And, *Hey then up go we!*

Our altars which the heathen brake  
Shall rankly smoke anew,  
And anise, mint and cummin take  
Their dread and sovereign due,  
Whereby the buttons of our trade  
Shall soon restored be  
With curious work in gilt and braid,  
And, *Hey then up go we!*

Then come, my brethren, and prepare  
The candlesticks and bells,  
The scarlet, brass, and badger's hair  
Wherein our Honour dwells,  
And straitly fence and strictly keep  
The Ark's integrity  
Till Armageddon break our sleep . . .  
And, *Hey then up go we!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

“THE CITY OF BRASS”

1909

*“Here was a people whom after their works thou shalt see wept over for their lost dominion: and in this palace is the last information respecting lords collected in the dust.”—THE ARABIAN NIGHTS.*

*I*N A land that the sand overlays—the ways to her gates are untrod—  
A multitude ended their days whose fates were made splendid by God,  
Till they grew drunk and were smitten with madness and went to their fall,  
And of these is a story written: but Allah Alone knoweth all!

When the wine stirred in their heart their bosoms dilated.  
They rose to suppose themselves kings over all things created—  
To decree a new earth at a birth without labour or sorrow—  
To declare: “We prepare it to-day and inherit to-morrow.”  
They chose themselves prophets and priests of minute understanding,  
Men swift to see done, and outrun, their extremest commanding—  
Of the tribe which describe with a jibe the perversions of Justice—  
Panders avowed to the crowd whatsoever its lust is.

Swiftly these pulled down the walls that their fathers had made them—  
The impregnable ramparts of old, they razed and relaid them  
As playgrounds of pleasure and leisure, with limitless entries,  
And havens of rest for the wastrels where once walked the sentries;  
And because there was need of more pay for the shouters and marchers,  
They disbanded in face of their foemen their yeomen and archers.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

They replied to their well-wishers' fears—to their enemies'  
laughter,  
Saying: "Peace! We have fashioned a God Which shall  
save us hereafter.  
We ascribe all dominion to man in his factions conferring,  
And have given to numbers the Name of the Wisdom un-  
erring."

They said: "Who has hate in his soul? Who has envied  
his neighbour?  
Let him arise and control both that man and his labour."  
They said: "Who is eaten by sloth? Whose unthrift has  
destroyed him?  
He shall levy a tribute from all because none have employed  
him."  
They said: "Who hath toiled, who hath striven, and  
gathered possession?  
Let him be spoiled. He hath given full proof of transgres-  
sion."  
They said: "Who is irked by the Law? *Though we may not  
remove it,  
If he lend us his aid in this raid, we will set him above it!*"  
So the robber did judgment again upon such as displeased  
him,  
The slayer, too, boasted his slain, and the judges released  
him.

As for their kinsmen far off, on the skirts of the nation,  
They harried all earth to make sure none escaped repro-  
bation.  
They awakened unrest for a jest in their newly-won  
borders,  
And jeered at the blood of their brethren betrayed by their  
orders.  
They instructed the ruled to rebel, their rulers to aid  
them;  
And, since such as obeyed them not fell, their Viceroys  
obeyed them.  
When the riotous set them at naught they said: "Praise the  
upheaval!  
For the show and the word and the thought of Dominion is  
evil!"

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

They unwound and flung from them with rage, as a rag that  
defiled them,  
The imperial gains of the age which their forefathers piled  
them.  
They ran panting in haste to lay waste and embitter for  
ever  
The wellsprings of Wisdom and Strength which are Faith  
and Endeavour.  
They nosed out and digged up and dragged forth and  
exposed to derision  
All doctrine of purpose and worth and restraint and pre-  
vision:

And it ceased, and God granted them all things for which  
they had striven,  
And the heart of a beast in the place of a man's heart was  
given. . . .

. . . . .  
When they were fullest of wine and most flagrant in error,  
Out of the sea rose a sign—out of Heaven a terror.  
Then they saw, then they heard, then they knew—for none  
troubled to hide it,  
An host had prepared their destruction, but still they  
denied it.  
They denied what they dared not abide if it came to the  
trial;  
But the Sword that was forged while they lied did not heed  
their denial.  
It drove home, and no time was allowed to the crowd that  
was driven.  
The preposterous-minded were cowed—they thought time  
would be given.  
There was no need of a steed nor a lance to pursue them;  
It was decreed their own deed, and not chance, should undo  
them.  
The tares they had laughingly sown were ripe to the  
reaping.  
The trust they had leagued to disown was removed from their  
keeping.  
The eaters of other men's bread, the exempted from hard-  
ship,  
The excusers of impotence fled, abdicating their wardship,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

For the hate they had taught through the State brought the  
State no defender,  
And it passed from the roll of the Nations in headlong  
surrender!

### THE HYÆNAS

AFTER the burial-parties leave  
And the baffled kites have fled;  
The wise hyænas come out at eve  
To take account of our dead.

How he died and why he died  
Troubles them not a whit.  
They snout the bushes and stones aside  
And dig till they come to it.

They are only resolute they shall eat  
That they and their mates may thrive,  
And they know that the dead are safer meat  
Than the weakest thing alive.

(For a goat may butt, and a worm may sting,  
And a child will sometimes stand;  
But a poor dead soldier of the King  
Can never lift a hand.)

They whoop and halloo and scatter the dirt  
Until their tushes white  
Take good hold of the Army shirt,  
And tug the corpse to light,

And the pitiful face is shewn again  
For an instant ere they close;  
But it is not discovered to living men—  
Only to God and to those

Who, being soulless, are free from shame,  
Whatever meat they may find.  
Nor do they defile the dead man's name—  
That is reserved for his kind.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE REFORMERS

1901

*NOT in the camp his victory lies  
Or triumph in the market-place,  
Who is his Nation's sacrifice  
To turn the judgment from his race.*

Happy is he who, bred and taught  
By sleek, sufficing Circumstance—  
Whose Gospel was the appavelled thought,  
Whose Gods were Luxury and Chance—

Sees, on the threshold of his days,  
The old life shrivel like a scroll,  
And to unheralded dismissals  
Submits his body and his soul:

The fatted shows wherein he stood  
Forgoing, and the idiot pride,  
That he may prove with his own blood  
All that his easy sires denied—

Ultimate issues, primal springs,  
Demands, abasements, penalties—  
The imperishable plinth of things  
Seen and unseen, that touch our peace.

For, though ensnaring ritual dim  
His vision through the after-years,  
Yet virtue shall go out of him—  
Example profiting his peers.

With great things charged he shall not hold  
Alloof till great occasion rise,  
But serve, full-harnessed, as of old,  
The Days that are the Destinies.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

He shall forswear and put away  
The idols of his sheltered house:  
And to Necessity shall pay  
Unflinching tribute of his vows.

He shall not plead another's act,  
Nor bind him in another's oath  
To weigh the Word above the Fact,  
Or make or take excuse for sloth.

The yoke he bore shall press him still,  
And, long-ingrained effort goad  
To find, to fashion, and fulfil  
The cleaner life, the sterner code.

*Not in the camp his victory lies—  
The world (unheeding his return)  
Shall see it in his children's eyes  
And from his grandson's lips shall learn.*

THE COVENANT

1914

WE THOUGHT we ranked above the chance of ill.  
Others might fall, not we, for we were wise—  
Merchants in freedom. So, of our free-will  
We let our servants drug our strength with lies.  
The pleasure and the poison had its way  
On us as on the meanest, till we learned  
That he who lies will steal, who steals will slay.  
Neither God's judgment nor man's heart was turned.

Yet there remains His Mercy—to be sought  
Through wrath and peril till we cleanse the wrong  
By that last right which our forefathers claimed  
When their Law failed them and its stewards were bought.  
This is our cause. God help us, and make strong  
Our will to meet Him later, unashamed!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE OLD MEN

1902

*THIS is our lot if we live so long and labour unto th  
end—  
That we outlive the impatient years and the much too patient  
friend:  
And because we know we have breath in our mouth and thin  
we have thoughts in our head,  
We shall assume that we are alive, whereas we are really dead*

We shall not acknowledge that old stars fade or stronger  
planets arise  
(That the sere bush buds or the desert blooms or the ancier  
well-head dries),  
Or any new compass wherewith new men adventure 'neath  
new skies.

We shall lift up the ropes that constrained our youth, to bin  
on our children's hands;  
We shall call to the water below the bridges to return and  
replenish our lands;  
We shall harness horses (Death's own pale horses) and  
scholarly plough the sands.

We shall lie down in the eye of the sun for lack of a light c  
our way—  
We shall rise up when the day is done and chirrup, "Behold  
it is day!"  
We shall abide till the battle is won ere we amble into th  
fray.

We shall peck out and discuss and dissect, and evert and  
extrude to our mind,  
The flaccid tissues of long-dead issues offensive to God and  
mankind—  
(Precisely like vultures over an ox that the Army has left  
behind).



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

We shall make walk preposterous ghosts of the glories we once  
created—  
Immodestly smearing from muddled palettes amazing pig-  
ments mismated—  
And our friends will weep when we ask them with boasts if  
our natural force be abated.

The Lamp of our Youth will be utterly out, but we shall  
subsist on the smell of it;  
And whatever we do, we shall fold our hands and suck our  
gums and think well of it.  
Yes, we shall be perfectly pleased with our work, and that  
is the Perfectest Hell of it!

*This is our lot if we live so long and listen to those who love  
us—  
That we are shunned by the people about and shamed by the  
Powers above us.  
Wherefore be free of your harness betimes; but, being free, be  
assured,  
That he who hath not endured to the death, from his birth he  
hath never endured!*

## THE OUTLAWS

1914

THROUGH learned and laborious years  
They set themselves to find  
Fresh terrors and undreamed-of fears  
To heap upon mankind.

All that they drew from Heaven above  
Or digged from earth beneath,  
They laid into their treasure-trove  
And arsenals of death:

While, for well-weighed advantage sake,  
Ruler and ruled alike  
Built up the faith they meant to break  
When the fit hour should strike.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

They traded with the careless earth,  
And good return it gave:  
They plotted by their neighbour's hearth  
The means to make him slave.

When all was ready to their hand  
They loosed their hidden sword,  
And utterly laid waste a land  
Their oath was pledged to guard.

Coldly they went about to raise  
To life and make more dread  
Abominations of old days,  
That men believed were dead.

They paid the price to reach their goal  
Across a world in flame;  
But their own hate slew their own soul  
Before that victory came.

### THE WHITE MAN'S BURDEN

1899

*(The United States and the Philippine Islands)*

TAKE up the White Man's burden—  
Send forth the best ye breed—  
Go bind your sons to exile  
To serve your captives' need;  
To wait in heavy harness  
On fluttered folk and wild—  
Your new-caught, sullen peoples,  
Half devil and half child.

Take up the White Man's Burden—  
In patience to abide,  
To veil the threat of terror  
And check the show of pride;  
By open speech and simple,  
An hundred times made plain,  
To seek another's profit,  
And work another's gain.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Take up the White Man's burden—  
The savage wars of peace—  
Fill full the mouth of Famine  
And bid the sickness cease;  
And when your goal is nearest  
The end for others sought,  
Watch Sloth and heathen Folly  
Bring all your hope to nought.

Take up the White Man's burden—  
No tawdry rule of kings,  
But toil of serf and sweeper—  
The tale of common things.  
The ports ye shall not enter,  
The roads ye shall not tread,  
Go make them with your living,  
And mark them with your dead!

Take up the White Man's burden—  
And reap his old reward:  
The blame of those ye better,  
The hate of those ye guard—  
The cry of hosts ye humour  
(Ah, slowly!) toward the light:—  
“Why brought ye us from bondage,  
“Our loved Egyptian night?”

Take up the White Man's burden—  
Ye dare not stoop to less—  
Nor call too loud on Freedom  
To cloak your weariness;  
By all ye cry or whisper,  
By all ye leave or do,  
The silent, sullen peoples  
Shall weigh your Gods and you.

Take up the White Man's burden—  
Have done with childish days—  
The lightly proffered laurel,  
The easy, ungrudged praise.  
Comes now, to search your manhood  
Through all the thankless years,  
Cold-edged with dear-bought wisdom,  
The judgment of your peers!

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

HYMN BEFORE ACTION

1896

THE earth is full of anger,  
The seas are dark with wrath,  
The Nations in their harness  
Go up against our path:  
Ere yet we loose the legions—  
Ere yet we draw the blade,  
Jehovah of the Thunders,  
Lord God of Battles, aid!

High lust and froward bearing,  
Proud heart, rebellious brow—  
Deaf ear and soul uncaring,  
We seek Thy mercy now!  
The sinner that forswore Thee,  
The fool that passed Thee by,  
Our times are known before Thee—  
Lord, grant us strength to die!

For those who kneel beside us  
At altars not Thine own,  
Who lack the lights that guide us,  
Lord, let their faith atone!  
If wrong we did to call them,  
By honour bound they came;  
Let not Thy Wrath befall them,  
But deal to us the blame.

From panic, pride, and terror,  
Revenge that knows no rein—  
Light haste and lawless error,  
Protect us yet again.  
Cloke Thou our undeserving,  
Make firm the shuddering breath,  
In silence and unswerving  
To taste Thy lesser death.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Ah, Mary pierced with sorrow,  
Remember, reach and save  
The soul that comes to-morrow  
Before the God that gave!  
Since each was born of woman,  
For each at utter need—  
True comrade and true foeman—  
Madonna, intercede!

E'en now their vanguard gathers,  
E'en now we face the fray—  
As Thou didst help our fathers,  
Help Thou our host to-day.  
Fulfilled of signs and wonders,  
In life, in death made clear—  
Jehovah of the Thunders,  
Lord God of Battles, hear!

A SONG AT COCK-CROW

1918

*"Ille autem iterum negavit."*

THE first time that Peter denied his Lord  
He shrank from the cudgel, the scourge and the cord,  
But followed far off to see what they would do,  
Till the cock crew—till the cock crew—  
After Gethsemane, till the cock crew!

The first time that Peter denied his Lord  
'Twas only a maid in the palace who heard,  
As he sat by the fire and warmed himself through.  
Then the cock crew! Then the cock crew!  
("Thou also art one of them.") Then the cock crew!

The first time that Peter denied his Lord  
He had neither the Throne, nor the Keys nor the Sword—  
A poor silly fisherman, what could he do,  
When the cock crew—when the cock crew—  
But weep for his wickedness when the cock crew?

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The next time that Peter denied his Lord  
He was Fisher of Men, as foretold by the Word,  
With the Crown on his brow and the Cross on his shoe,  
When the cock crew—when the cock crew—  
*In Flanders and Picardy when the cock crew!*

The next time that Peter denied his Lord  
'Twas Mary the Mother in Heaven Who heard,  
And She grieved for the maidens and wives that they slew  
When the cock crew—when the cock crew—  
*At Tirmonde and Aerschott when the cock crew!*

The next time that Peter denied his Lord  
The Babe in the Manger awakened and stirred,  
And He stretched out His arms for the playmates He knew—  
When the cock crew—when the cock crew—  
*But the waters had covered them when the cock crew!*

The next time that Peter denied his Lord  
'Twas Earth in her agony waited his word,  
But he sat by the fire and naught would he do,  
Though the cock crew—though the cock crew—  
*Over all Christendom, though the cock crew!*

The last time that Peter denied his Lord,  
The Father took from him the Keys and the Sword,  
And the Mother and Babe brake his Kingdom in two,  
When the cock crew—when the cock crew—  
*(Because of his wickedness) when the cock crew!*

## THE QUESTION

1916<sup>1</sup>

BRETHREN, how shall it fare with me  
When the war is laid aside,  
If it be proven that I am he  
For whom a world has died?

<sup>1</sup> Attitude of the United States of America during the first two years, seven months and four days of the Great War.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

If it be proven that all my good,  
And the greater good I will make,  
Were purchased me by a multitude  
Who suffered for my sake?

That I was delivered by mere mankind  
Vowed to one sacrifice,  
And not, as I hold them, battle-blind,  
But dying with open eyes?

That they did not ask me to draw the sword  
When they stood to endure their lot—  
That they only looked to me for a word,  
And I answered I knew them not?

If it be found, when the battle clears,  
Their death has set me free,  
Then how shall I live with myself through the years  
Which they have bought for me?

Brethren, how must it fare with me,  
Or how am I justified,  
If it be proven that I am he  
For whom mankind has died—  
If it be proven that I am he  
Who, being questioned, denied?

RECESSIONAL

1897

**G**OD of our fathers, known of old,  
Lord of our far-flung battle-line,  
Beneath whose awful Hand we hold  
Dominion over palm and pine—  
Lord God of Hosts, be with us yet,  
Lest we forget—lest we forget!

The tumult and the shouting dies;  
The Captains and the Kings depart:  
Still stands Thine ancient sacrifice,  
An humble and a contrite heart.  
Lord God of Hosts, be with us yet,  
Lest we forget—lest we forget!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Far-called, our navies melt away;  
On dune and headland sinks the fire:  
Lo, all our pomp of yesterday  
Is one with Nineveh and Tyre!  
Judge of the Nations, spare us yet,  
Lest we forget—lest we forget!

If, drunk with sight of power, we loose  
Wild tongues that have not Thee in awe,  
Such boastings as the Gentiles use,  
Or lesser breeds without the Law—  
Lord God of Hosts, be with us yet,  
Lest we forget—lest we forget!

For heathen heart that puts her trust  
In reeking tube and iron shard,  
All valiant dust that builds on dust,  
And guarding, calls not Thee to guard,  
For frantic boast and foolish word—  
Thy mercy on Thy People, Lord!

“FOR ALL WE HAVE AND ARE”

1914

FOR all we have and are,  
For all our children's fate,  
Stand up and take the war.  
The Hun is at the gate!  
Our world has passed away,  
In wantonness o'erthrown.  
There is nothing left to-day  
But steel and fire and stone!  
Though all we knew depart,  
The old Commandments stand:—  
“In courage keep your heart,  
In strength lift up your hand.”

Once more we hear the word  
That sickened earth of old:—  
“No law except the Sword  
Unsheathed and uncontrolled.”



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Once more it knits mankind,  
Once more the nations go  
To meet and break and bind  
A crazed and driven foe.

Comfort, content, delight,  
The ages' slow-bought gain,  
They shrivelled in a night.  
Only ourselves remain  
To face the naked days  
In silent fortitude,  
Through perils and dismays  
Renewed and re-renewed.  
    Though all we made depart,  
    The old Commandments stand:—  
    " In patience keep your heart,  
    In strength lift up your hand."

No easy hope or lies  
Shall bring us to our goal,  
But iron sacrifice  
Of body, will, and soul.  
There is but one task for all—  
One life for each to give.  
What stands if Freedom fall?  
Who dies if England live?

### THE THREE-DECKER

1894

*"The three-volume novel is extinct."*

FULL thirty foot she towered from waterline to rail.  
It took a watch to steer her, and a week to shorten sail;  
But, spite all modern notions, I've found her first and best—  
The only certain packet for the Islands of the Blest.

Fair held the breeze behind us—'twas warm with lovers'  
prayers.  
We'd stolen wills for ballast and a crew of missing heirs.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

They shipped as Able Bastards till the Wicked Nurse confessed,  
And they worked the old three-decker to the Islands of the Blest.

By ways no gaze could follow, a course unspoiled of Cook,  
Per Fancy, fleetest in man, our titled berths we took,  
With maids of matchless beauty and parentage unguessed,  
And a Church of England parson for the Islands of the Blest.

We asked no social questions—we pumped no hidden shame—  
We never talked obstetrics when the Little Stranger came:  
We left the Lord in Heaven, we left the fiends in Hell.  
We weren't exactly Yussufs, but—Zuleika didn't tell.

No moral doubt assailed us, so when the port we neared,  
The villain had his flogging at the gangway, and we cheered.  
'Twas fiddle in the foc's'le—'twas garlands on the mast,  
For every one got married, and I went ashore at last.

I left 'em all in couples a-kissing on the decks.  
I left the lovers loving and the parents signing cheques.  
In endless English comfort, by county-folk caressed,  
I left the old three-decker at the Islands of the Blest! . . .

That route is barred to steamers: you'll never lift again  
Our purple-painted headlands or the lordly keeps of Spain.  
They're just beyond your skyline, howe'er so far you cruise  
In a ram-you-damn-you liner with a brace of bucking screws.

Swing round your aching searchlight—'twill show no haven's  
peace.  
Ay, blow your shrieking sirens at the deaf, grey-bearded seas!  
Boom out the dripping oil-bags to skin the deep's unrest—  
And you aren't one knot the nearer to the Islands of the Blest.

But when you're threshing, crippled, with broken bridge and  
rail,  
At a drogue of dead convictions to hold you head to gale,  
Calm as the Flying Dutchman, from truck to taffrail dressed,  
You'll see the old three-decker for the Islands of the Blest.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

You'll see her tiering canvas in sheeted silver spread;  
You'll hear the long-drawn thunder 'neath her leaping figure-head;  
While far, so far above you, her tall poop-lanterns shine  
Unvexed by wind or weather like the candles round a shrine!

Hull down—hull down and under—she dwindles to a speck,  
With noise of pleasant music and dancing on her deck.  
All's well—all's well aboard her—she's left you far behind,  
With a scent of old-world roses through the fog that ties you blind.

Her crews are babes or madmen? Her port is all to make?  
You're manned by Truth and Science, and you steam for steaming's sake?  
Well, tinker up your engines—you know your business best—  
*She's* taking tired people to the Islands of the Blest!

### THE RHYME OF THE THREE CAPTAINS

1890

*[This ballad appears to refer to one of the exploits of the notorious Paul Jones, an American pirate. It is founded on fact.]*

. . . **A**T THE close of a winter day,  
Their anchors down, by London town, the Three  
Great Captains lay;  
And one was Admiral of the North from Solway Firth to Skye,  
And one was Lord of the Wessex coast and all the lands  
thereby,  
And one was Master of the Thames from Limehouse to  
Blackwall,  
And he was Chaplain of the Fleet—the bravest of them all.  
Their good guns guarded their great grey sides that were  
thirty foot in the sheer,  
When there came a certain trading brig with news of a  
privateer.  
Her rigging was rough with the clotted drift that drives in  
a Northern breeze,  
Her sides were clogged with the lazy weed that spawns in the  
Eastern seas.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Light she rode in the rude tide-rip, to left and right she  
rolled,  
And the skipper sat on the scuttle-butt and stared at an empty  
hold.  
"I ha' paid Port dues for your Law," quoth he, "and where  
is the Law ye boast  
"If I sail unscathed from a heathen port to be robbed on a  
Christian coast?  
"Ye have smoked the hives of the Laccadives as we burn the  
lice in a bunk,  
"We tack not now for a Gallang prow or a plunging Pei-ho  
junk;  
"I had no fear but the seas were clear as far as a sail might  
fare  
"Till I met with a lime-washed Yankee brig that rode off  
Finisterre.  
"There were canvas blinds to his bow-gun ports to screen  
the weight he bore,  
"And the signals ran for a merchantman from Sandy Hook  
to the Nore.  
"He would not fly the Rovers' flag—the bloody or the black,  
"But now he floated the Gridiron and now he flaunted the  
Jack.  
"He spoke of the Law as he crimped my crew—he swore  
it was only a loan;  
"But when I would ask for my own again, he swore it was  
none of my own.  
"He has taken my little parrakeets that nest beneath the  
Line,  
"He has stripped my rails of the shaddock-frails and the  
green unripened pine.  
"He has taken my bale of dammer and spice I won beyond  
the seas,  
"He has taken my grinning heathen gods—and what should  
he want o' these?  
"My foremast would not mend his boom, my deck-house  
patch his boats;  
"He has whittled the two, this Yank Yahoo, to peddle for  
shoe-peg oats.  
"I could not fight for the failing light and a rough beam-sea  
beside,  
"But I hulled him once for a clumsy crimp and twice because  
he lied.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

" Had I had guns (as I had goods) to work my Christian harm,  
 " I had run him up from his quarter-deck to trade with his  
     own yard-arm;  
 " I had nailed his ears to my capstan-head, and ripped them  
     off with a saw,  
 " And soused them in the bilgewater, and served them to him  
     raw;  
 " I had flung him blind in a rudderless boat to rot in the rock-  
     ing dark,  
 " I had towed him aft of his own craft, a bait for his brother  
     shark;  
 " I had lapped him round with cocoa-husk, and drenched him  
     with the oil,  
 " And lashed him fast to his own mast to blaze above my  
     spoil;  
 " I had stripped his hide for my hammock-side, and tasselled  
     his beard in the mesh,  
 " And spitted his crew on the live bamboo that grows through  
     the gangrened flesh;  
 " I had hove him down by the mangroves brown, where the  
     mud-reef sucks and draws,  
 " Moored by the heel to his own keel to wait for the land-crab's  
     claws.  
 " He is lazar within and lime without; ye can nose him far  
     enow,  
 " For he carries the taint of a musky ship—the reek of the  
     slaver's dhow."  
 The skipper looked at the tiering guns and the bulwarks tall  
     and cold,  
 And the Captains Three full courteously peered down at the  
     gutted hold,  
 And the Captains Three called courteously from deck to  
     scuttle-butt:—  
 " Good Sir, we ha' dealt with that merchantman or ever your  
     teeth were cut.  
 " Your words be words of a lawless race, and the Law it  
     standeth thus:  
 " He comes of a race that have never a Law, and he never has  
     boarded us.  
 " We ha' sold him canvas and rope and spar—we know that  
     his price is fair,  
 " And we know that he weeps for the lack of a Law as he rides  
     off Finisterre.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"And since he is damned for a gallows-thief by you and better than you,

"We hold it meet that the English fleet should know that we hold him true."

The skipper called to the tall taffrail:—"And what is that to me?

"Did ever you hear of a Yankee brig that rifled a Seventy-three?

"Do I loom so large from your quarter-deck that I lift like a ship o' the Line?

"He has learned to run from a shotted gun and harry such craft as mine.

"There is never a law on the Cocos Keys, to hold a white man in,

"But we do not steal the niggers' meal, for that is a nigger's sin.

"Must he have his Law as a quid to chew, or laid in brass on his wheel?

"Does he steal with tears when he buccaneers? 'Fore Gad, then, why does he steal?"

The skipper bit on a deep-sea word, and the word it was not sweet,

For he could see the Captains Three had signalled to the Fleet.

But three and two, in white and blue, the whimpering flags began:—

"We have heard a tale of a—foreign sail, but he is a merchantman."

The skipper peered beneath his palm and swore by the Great Horn Spoon:—

"'Fore Gad, the Chaplain of the Fleet would bless my picaroon!"

By two and three the flags blew free to lash the laughing air:—

"We have sold our spars to the merchantman—we know that his price is fair."

The skipper winked his Western eye, and swore by a China storm:—

"They ha' rigged him a Joseph's jury-coat to keep his honour warm."

The halliards twanged against the tops, the bunting bellied broad,

The skipper spat in the empty hold and mourned for a wasted cord.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Masthead — masthead, the signal sped by the line o' the  
British craft:  
The skipper called to his Lascar crew, and put her about and  
laughed:—  
“ It's mainsail haul, my bully boys all—we'll out to the seas  
again—  
“ Ere they set us to paint their pirate saint, or scrub at his  
grapnel-chain.  
“ It's fore-sheet free, with her head to the sea, and the swing  
of the unbought brine—  
“ We'll make no sport in an English court till we come as a  
ship o' the Line:  
“ Till we come as a ship o' the Line, my lads, of thirty foot in  
the sheer,  
“ Lifting again from the outer main with news of a privateer;  
“ Flying his pluck at our mizzen-truck for weft of Admiralty,  
“ Heaving his head for our dipsy-lead in sign that we keep  
the sea.  
“ Then fore-sheet home as she lifts to the foam—we stand on  
the outward tack,  
“ We are paid in the coin of the white man's trade—the  
bezant is hard, ay, and black.  
“ The frigate-bird shall carry my word to the Kling and the  
Orang-Laut  
“ How a man may sail from a heathen coast to be robbed in  
a Christian port;  
“ How a man may be robbed in Christian port while Three  
Great Captains there  
“ Shall dip their flag to a slaver's rag—to show that his trade  
is fair!”

## THE CONUNDRUM OF THE WORKSHOPS

1890

WHEN the flush of a new-born sun fell first on Eden's  
green and gold,  
Our father Adam sat under the Tree and scratched with a  
stick in the mould;  
And the first rude sketch that the world had seen was joy to  
his mighty heart,  
Till the Devil whispered behind the leaves, “ It's pretty, but  
is it Art ? ”

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Wherefore he called to his wife, and fled to fashion his work  
anew—

The first of his race who cared a fig for the first, most dread  
review;

And he left his lore to the use of his sons—and that was a  
glorious gain

When the Devil chuckled “Is it Art?” in the ear of the  
branded Cain.

They builded a tower to shiver the sky and wrench the stars  
apart,

Till the Devil grunted behind the bricks: “It’s striking, but  
is it Art?”

The stone was dropped at the quarry-side and the idle  
derrick swung,

While each man talked of the aims of Art, and each in an alien  
tongue.

They fought and they talked in the North and the South;  
they talked and they fought in the West,

Till the waters rose on the pitiful land, and the poor Red Clay  
had rest—

Had rest till that dank blank-canvas dawn when the Dove was  
preened to start,

And the Devil bubbled below the keel: “It’s human, but  
is it Art?”

The tale is as old as the Eden Tree—and new as the new-cut  
tooth—

For each man knows ere his lip-thatch grows he is master of  
Art and Truth;

And each man hears as the twilight nears, to the beat of his  
dying heart,

The Devil drum on the darkened pane: “You did it, but  
was it Art?”

We have learned to whittle the Eden Tree to the shape of a  
surplice-peg,

We have learned to bottle our parents twain in the yelk of an  
addled egg,

We know that the tail must wag the dog, for the horse is  
drawn by the cart;

But the Devil whoops, as he whooped of old: “It’s clever,  
but is it Art?”



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

When the flicker of London sun falls faint on the Club-  
room's green and gold,  
The sons of Adam sit them down and scratch with their pens  
in the mould—  
They scratch with their pens in the mould of their graves,  
and the ink and the anguish start,  
For the Devil mutters behind the leaves: "It's pretty, but  
is it Art?"

Now, if we could win to the Eden Tree where the Four Great  
Rivers flow,  
And the Wreath of Eve is red on the turf as she left it long  
ago,  
And if we could come when the sentry slept and softly scurry  
through,  
By the favour of God we might know as much—as our father  
Adam knew!

## EVARRA AND HIS GODS

1890

*READ here:*  
*This is the story of Evarra—man—*  
*Maker of Gods in lands beyond the sea.*  
Because the city gave him of her gold,  
Because the caravans brought turquoises,  
Because his life was sheltered by the King,  
So that no man should maim him, none should steal,  
Or break his rest with babble in the streets  
When he was weary after toil, he made  
An image of his God in gold and pearl,  
With turquoise diadem and human eyes,  
A wonder in the sunshine, known afar,  
And worshipped by the King; but, drunk with pride,  
Because the city bowed to him for God,  
He wrote above the shrine: "*Thus Gods are made,*  
*And whoso makes them otherwise shall die.*"  
And all the city praised him. . . . Then he died.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Read here the story of Evarra—man—*

*Maker of Gods in lands beyond the sea.*

Because the city had no wealth to give,  
Because the caravans were spoiled afar,  
Because his life was threatened by the King,  
So that all men despised him in the streets,  
He hewed the living rock, with sweat and tears,  
And reared a God against the morning-gold,  
A terror in the sunshine, seen afar,  
And worshipped by the King; but, drunk with pride,  
Because the city fawned to bring him back,  
He carved upon the plinth: "*Thus Gods are made,*  
*"And whoso makes them otherwise shall die."*  
And all the people praised him. . . . Then he died.

*Read here the story of Evarra—man—*

*Maker of Gods in lands beyond the sea.*

Because he lived among a simple folk,  
Because his village was between the hills,  
Because he smeared his cheeks with blood of ewes,  
He cut an idol from a fallen pine,  
Smeared blood upon its cheeks, and wedged a shell  
Above its brow for eye, and gave it hair  
Of trailing moss, and plaited straw for crown.  
And all the village praised him for his craft,  
And brought him butter, honey, milk, and curds.  
Wherefore, because the shoutings drove him mad,  
He scratched upon that log: "*Thus Gods are made,*  
*"And whoso makes them otherwise shall die."*  
And all the people praised him. . . . Then he died.

*Read here the story of Evarra—man—*

*Maker of Gods in lands beyond the sea.*

Because his God decreed one clot of blood  
Should swerve one hair's-breadth from the pulse's path,  
And chafe his brain, Evarra mowed alone,  
Rag-wrapped, among the cattle in the fields,  
Counting his fingers, jesting with the trees,  
And mocking at the mist, until his God  
Drove him to labour. Out of dung and horns  
Dropped in the mire he made a monstrous God,  
Uncleanly, shapeless, crowned with plantain tufts,  
And when the cattle lowed at twilight-time,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

He dreamed it was the clamour of lost crowds,  
And howled among the beasts: "*Thus Gods are made,*  
*"And whoso makes them otherwise shall die."*  
Thereat the cattle bellowed. . . . Then he died.

Yet at the last he came to Paradise,  
And found his own four Gods, and that he wrote;  
And marvelled, being very near to God,  
What oaf on earth had made his toil God's law,  
Till God said mocking: "Mock not. These be thine."  
Then cried Evarra: "I have sinned!" "Not so.  
"If thou hadst written otherwise, thy Gods  
"Had rested in the mountain and the mine,  
"And I were poorer by four wondrous Gods,  
"And thy more wondrous law, Evarra. Thine,  
"Servant of shouting crowds and lowing kine!"  
Thereat, with laughing mouth, but tear-wet eyes,  
Evarra cast his Gods from Paradise.

*This is the story of Evarra—man—  
Maker of Gods in lands beyond the sea.*

## THE BENEFACTORS

*A<sup>H</sup>! What avails the classic bent  
And what the cultured word,  
Against the undoctored incident  
That actually occurred?*

*And what is Art whereto we press  
Through paint and prose and rhyme—  
When Nature in her nakedness  
Defeats us every time?*

*It is not learning, grace nor gear,  
Nor easy meat and drink,  
But bitter pinch of pain and fear  
That makes creation think.*

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

When in this world's unpleasing youth  
Our godlike race began,  
The longest arm, the sharpest tooth,  
Gave man control of man;

Till, bruised and bitten to the bone  
And taught by pain and fear,  
He learned to deal the far-off stone,  
And poke the long, safe spear.

So tooth and nail were obsolete  
As means against a foe,  
Till, bored by uniform defeat,  
Some genius built the bow.

Then stone and javelin proved as vain  
As old-time tooth and nail;  
Till, spurred anew by fear and pain,  
Man fashioned coats of mail.

Then was there safety for the rich  
And danger for the poor,  
Till someone mixed a powder which  
Redressed the scale once more.

Helmet and armour disappeared  
With sword and bow and pike,  
And, when the smoke of battle cleared,  
All men were armed alike. . . .

And when ten million such were slain  
To please one crazy king,  
Man, schooled in bulk by fear and pain,  
Grew weary of the thing;

And, at the very hour designed  
To enslave him past recall,  
His tooth-stone-arrow-gun-shy mind  
Turned and abolished all.

*All Power, each Tyrant, every Mob  
Whose head has grown too large,  
Ends by destroying its own job  
And works its own discharge;*

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*And Man, whose mere necessities  
Move all things from his path,  
Trembles meanwhile at their decrees,  
And deprecates their wrath!*

IN THE NEOLITHIC AGE

1895

IN THE Neolithic Age savage warfare did I wage  
For food and fame and woolly horses' pelt.  
I was singer to my clan in that dim, red Dawn of Man,  
And I sang of all we fought and feared and felt.

Yea, I sang as now I sing, when the Prehistoric spring  
Made the piled Biscayan ice-pack split and shove;  
And the troll and gnome and dwerg, and the Gods of Cliff  
and Berg  
Were about me and beneath me and above.

But a rival, of Solutr , told the tribe my style was *outr *—  
'Neath a tomahawk, of diorite, he fell.  
And I left my views on Art, barbed and tanged, below the  
heart  
Of a mammothistic etcher at Grenelle.

Then I stripped them, scalp from skull, and my hunting-dogs  
fed full,  
And their teeth I threaded neatly on a thong;  
And I wiped my mouth and said, "It is well that they are  
dead,  
"For I know my work is right and theirs was wrong."

But my Totem saw the shame; from his ridgepole-shrine he  
came,  
And he told me in a vision of the night:—  
"There are nine and sixty ways of constructing tribal lays,  
"And every single one of them is right!"

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Then the silence closed upon me till They put new clothing  
on me

Of whiter, weaker flesh and bone more frail;  
And I stepped beneath Time's finger, once again a tribal  
singer,  
And a minor poet certified by Traill!

Still they skirmish to and fro, men my messmates on the  
snow,

When we headed off the aurochs turn for turn;  
When the rich Allobrogenses never kept amanuenses,  
And our only plots were piled in lakes at Berne.

Still a cultured Christian age sees us scuffle, squeak, and rage,  
Still we pinch and slap and jabber, scratch and dirk;  
Still we let our business slide—as we dropped the half-  
dressed hide—

To show a fellow-savage how to work.

Still the world is wondrous large,—seven seas from marge to  
marge—

And it holds a vast of various kinds of man;  
And the wildest dreams of Kew are the facts of Khatmandhu,  
And the crimes of Clapham chaste in Martaban.

Here's my wisdom for your use, as I learned it when the  
moose

And the reindeer roamed where Paris roars to-night:—  
“*There are nine and sixty ways of constructing tribal lays,*  
“*And—every—single—one—of—them—is—right!*”

## NATURAL THEOLOGY

### PRIMITIVE

I ATE my fill of a whale that died  
And stranded after a month at sea. . . .  
There is a pain in my inside.  
Why have the Gods afflicted me?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Ow! I am purged till I am a wraith!  
Wow! I am sick till I cannot see!  
What is the sense of Religion and Faith?  
Look how the Gods have afflicted me!

### PAGAN

How can the skin of rat or mouse hold  
Anything more than a harmless flea? . . .  
The burning plague has taken my household.  
Why have my Gods afflicted me?  
All my kith and kin are deceased,  
Though they were as good as good could be.  
I will out and batter the family priest,  
Because my Gods have afflicted me!

### MEDIÆVAL

My privy and well drain into each other  
After the custom of Christendie. . . .  
Fevers and fluxes are wasting my mother.  
Why has the Lord afflicted me?  
The Saints are helpless for all I offer—  
So are the clergy I used to fee.  
Henceforward I keep my cash in my coffer,  
Because the Lord has afflicted me.

### MATERIAL

I run eight hundred hens to the acre.  
They die by dozens mysteriously. . . .  
I am more than doubtful concerning my Maker.  
Why has the Lord afflicted me?  
What a return for all my endeavour—  
Not to mention the L. S. D.!  
I am an atheist now and for ever,  
Because this God has afflicted me!

### PROGRESSIVE

Money spent on an Army or Fleet  
Is homicidal lunacy. . . .  
My son has been killed in the Mons retreat.  
Why is the Lord afflicting me?

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Why are murder, pillage and arson  
And rape allowed by the Deity?  
I will write to the *Times*, deriding our parson,  
Because my God has afflicted me.

### CHORUS

We had a kettle: we let it leak:  
Our not repairing it made it worse.  
We haven't had any tea for a week. . . .  
The bottom is out of the Universe!

### CONCLUSION

This was none of the good Lord's pleasure,  
For the Spirit He breathed in Man is free;  
But what comes after is measure for measure  
And not a God that afflicteth thee.  
As was the sowing so the reaping  
Is now and evermore shall be.  
Thou art delivered to thine own keeping.  
Only Thyself hath afflicted thee!

## THE STORY OF UNG

1894

ONCE, on a glittering ice-field, ages and ages ago,  
Ung, a maker of pictures, fashioned an image of snow.  
Fashioned the form of a tribesman—gaily he whistled and  
sung,  
Working the snow with his fingers. *Read ye the story of Ung!*

Pleased was his Tribe with that image—came in their  
hundreds to scan,  
Handled it, smelt it, and grunted: "Verily, this is a man!  
"Thus do we carry our lances—thus is a war-belt slung.  
"Lo! it is even as we are. Glory and honour to Ung!"



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Later he pictured an aurochs—later he pictured a bear—  
Pictured the sabre-tooth tiger dragging a man to his lair—  
Pictured the mountainous mammoth, hairy, abhorrent,  
                  alone—  
Out of the love that he bore them, scriving them clearly on  
                  bone.

Swift came his Tribe to behold them, peering and pushing  
                  and still—  
Men of the berg-battered beaches, men of the boulder-  
                  hatched hill—  
Hunters and fishers and trappers, presently whispering  
                  low:  
“Yea, they are like—and it may be. But how does the  
                  Picture-man know?”

“Ung—hath he slept with the Aurochs—watched where the  
                  Mastodon roam?  
“Spoke on the ice with the Bow-head—followed the Sabre-  
                  tooth home?  
“Nay! These are toys of his fancy! If he have cheated  
                  us so,  
“How is there truth in his image—the man that he fashioned  
                  of snow?”

Wroth was that maker of pictures—hotly he answered the  
                  call:  
“Hunters and fishers and trappers, children and fools are ye  
                  all!  
“Look at the beasts when ye hunt them!” Swift from the  
                  tumult he broke,  
Ran to the cave of his father and told him the shame that  
                  they spoke.

And the father of Ung gave answer, that was old and wise in  
                  the craft,  
Maker of pictures aforetime, he leaned on his lance and  
                  laughed:  
“If they could see as thou seest they would do what thou hast  
                  done,  
“And each man would make him a picture, and—what would  
                  become of my son?”

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"There would be no pelts of the reindeer, flung down at thy cave for a gift,

"Nor dole of the oily timber that comes on the Baltic drift;

"No store of well-drilled needles, nor ouches of amber pale;

"No new-cut tongues of the bison, nor meat of the stranded whale.

"*Thou* hast not toiled at the fishing when the sodden trammels freeze,

"Nor worked the war-boats outward through the rush of the rock-staked seas,

"Yet they bring thee fish and plunder—full meal and an easy bed—

"And all for the sake of thy pictures." And Ung held down his head.

"*Thou* hast not stood to the Aurochs when the red snow reeks of the fight.

"Men have no time at the houghing to count his curls aright.

"And the heart of the hairy Mammoth, thou sayest, they do not see,

"Yet they save it whole from the beaches and broil the best for thee.

"And now do they press to thy pictures, with opened mouth and eye,

"And a little gift in the doorway, and the praise no gift can buy:

"But—sure they have doubted thy pictures, and that is a grievous stain—

"Son that can see so clearly, return them their gifts again!"

And Ung looked down at his deerskins—their broad shell-tasselled bands—

And Ung drew forward his mittens and looked at his naked hands;

And he gloved himself and departed, and he heard his father, behind:

"Son that can see so clearly, rejoice that thy Tribe is blind!"

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Straight on the glittering ice-field, by the caves of the lost  
Dordogne,  
Ung, a maker of pictures, fell to his scriving on bone—  
Even to mammoth editions. Gaily he whistled and sung,  
Blessing his Tribe for their blindness. *Heed ye the Story of  
Ung!*

### THE CRAFTSMAN

ONCE, after long-drawn revel at The Mermaid,  
He to the overbearing Boanerges  
Jonson, uttered (if half of it were liquor,  
Blessed be the vintage!)

Saying how, at an alehouse under Cotswold,  
He had made sure of his very Cleopatra  
Drunk with enormous, salvation-contemning  
Love for a tinker.

How, while he hid from Sir Thomas's keepers,  
Crouched in a ditch and drenched by the midnight  
Dews, he had listened to gipsy Juliet  
Rail at the dawning.

How at Bankside, a boy drowning kittens  
Winced at the business; whereupon his sister—  
Lady Macbeth aged seven—thrust 'em under,  
Sombrely scornful.

How on a Sabbath, hushed and compassionate—  
She being known since her birth to the townsfolk—  
Stratford dredged and delivered from Avon  
Dripping Ophelia.

So, with a thin third finger marrying  
Drop to wine-drop domed on the table,  
Shakespeare opened his heart till the sunrise  
Entered to hear him.

London waked and he, imperturbable,  
Passed from waking to hurry after shadows . . .  
Busied upon shows of no earthly importance?  
Yes, but he knew it!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

SAMUEL PEPYS

1933

LIKE as the Oak whose roots descend  
Through earth and stillness seeking food  
Most apt to furnish in the end  
That dense, indomitable wood

Which, felled, may arm a seaward flank  
Of Ostia's mole or—bent to frame  
The beaked Liburnian's triple bank—  
Carry afar the Roman name;

But which, a tree, the season moves  
Through gentler Gods than Wind or Tide,  
Delightedly to harbour doves,  
Or take some clasping vine for bride;

So this man—prescient to ensure  
(Since even now his orders hold)  
A little State might ride secure  
At sea from foes her sloth made bold,—

Turned in his midmost harried round,  
As Venus drove or Liber led,  
And snatched from any shrine he found  
The Stolen Draught, the Secret Bread.

Nor these alone. His life betrayed  
No gust unslaked, no pleasure missed.  
He called the obedient Nine to aid  
The varied chase. And Clio kissed;

Bidding him write each sordid love,  
Shame, panic, stratagem, and lie  
In full, that sinners undiscovered,  
like ourselves, might say:—" 'Tis I! "

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

## THE BONFIRES

1933

"*Gesture . . . outlook . . . vision . . . avenue . . . example . . . achievement . . . appeasement . . . limit of risk.*"—COMMON POLITICAL FORM.

WE KNOW the Rocket's upward whizz;  
We know the Boom before the Bust.  
We know the whistling Wail which is  
The Stick returning to the Dust.  
We know how much to take on trust  
Of any promised Paradise.  
We know the Pie—likewise the Crust.  
We know the Bonfire on the Ice.

We know the Mountain and the Mouse.  
We know Great Cry and Little Wool.  
We know the purseless Ears of Sows.  
We know the Frog that aped the Bull.  
We know, whatever Trick we pull,  
(Ourselves have gambled once or twice)  
A Bobtailed Flush is not a Full.  
We know the Bonfire on the Ice.

We know that Ones and Ones make Twos—  
Till Demos votes them Three or Nought.  
We know the Fenris Wolf is loose.  
We know what Fight has not been fought.  
We know the Father to the Thought  
Which argues Babe and Cockatrice  
Would play together, were they taught.  
We know *that* Bonfire on the Ice.

We know that Thriving comes by Thrift.  
We know the Key must keep the Door.  
We know his Boot-straps cannot lift  
The frightened Waster off the Floor.  
We know these things, and we deplore  
That not by any Artifice  
Can they be altered. Furthermore  
We know the Bonfires on the Ice!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### “WHEN ’OMER SMOTE ’IS BLOOMIN’ LYRE”

*(Introduction to the Barrack-Room Ballads in  
“The Seven Seas”)*

WHEN ’Omer smote ’is bloomin’ lyre,  
He’d ’eard men sing by land an’ sea;  
An’ what he thought ’e might require,  
’E went an’ took—the same as me!

The market-girls an’ fishermen,  
The shepherds an’ the sailors, too,  
They ’eard old songs turn up again,  
But kep’ it quiet—same as you!

They knew ’e stole; ’e knew they knowed.  
They didn’t tell, nor make a fuss,  
But winked at ’Omer down the road,  
An’ ’e winked back—the same as us!

## THE FILES

1903

*(The Sub-editor speaks)*

FILES—  
The Files—  
Office Files!  
Oblige me by referring to the Files.  
Every question man can raise,  
Every phrase of every phase  
Of that question is on record in the Files—  
(Threshed out threadbare—fought and finished in the Files).  
Ere the Universe at large  
Was our new-tipped arrows’ targe—  
Ere we rediscovered Mammon and his wiles—  
Faenza, gentle reader, spent her—five-and-twentieth leader—  
(You will find him, and some others, in the Files).  
Warn all coming Robert Brownings and Carlyles,  
It will interest them to hunt among the Files

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Where unvisited, a-cold,  
 Lie the crowded years of old  
 In that Kensal-Green of greatness called the Files  
 (In our newspaPère-la-Chaise the Office Files),  
 Where the dead men lay them down  
 Meekly sure of long renown,  
 And above them, sere and swift,  
 Packs the daily deepening drift  
 Of the all-recording, all-effacing Files—  
 The obliterating, automatic Files.  
 Count the mighty men who slung  
 Ink, Evangel, Sword, or Tongue  
 When Reform and you were young—  
 Made their boasts and spake according in the Files—  
 (Hear the ghosts that wake applauding in the Files!)  
 Trace each all-forgot career  
 From long primer through brevier  
 Unto Death, a para minion in the Files  
 (Para minion—solid—bottom of the Files). . . .  
 Some successful Kings and Queens adorn the Files.  
 They were great, their views were leaded,  
 And their deaths were triple-headed,  
 So they catch the eye in running through the Files  
 (Show as blazes in the mazes of the Files);  
 For their "paramours and priests,"  
 And their gross, jack-booted feasts,  
 And their "epoch-marking actions" see the Files.  
 Was it Bomba fled the blue Sicilian isles?  
 Was it Saffi, a professor  
 Once of Oxford, brought redress or  
 Garibaldi? Who remembers  
 Forty-odd-year-old Septembers?—  
 Only sextons paid to dig among the Files  
 (Such as I am, born and bred among the Files).  
 You must hack through much deposit  
 Ere you know for sure who was it  
 Came to burial with such honour in the Files  
 (Only seven seasons back beneath the Files).  
 "Very great our loss and grievous—  
 "So our best and brightest leave us,  
 "And it ends the Age of Giants," say the Files;  
 All the '60—'70—'80—'90 Files  
 (The open-minded, opportunist Files—

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The easy "O King, live for ever" Files).  
It is good to read a little in the Files;  
'Tis a sure and sovereign balm  
Unto philosophic calm,  
Yea, and philosophic doubt when Life beguiles.  
When you know Success is Greatness,  
When you marvel at your lateness  
In apprehending facts so plain to Smiles  
(Self-helpful, wholly strenuous Samuel Smiles).  
When your Imp of Blind Desire  
Bids you set the Thames afire,  
You'll remember men have done so—in the Files.  
You'll have seen those flames transpire—in the Files  
(More than once that flood has run so—in the Files).  
When the Conchimarian horns  
Of the reboantic Norns  
Usher gentlemen and ladies  
With new lights on Heaven and Hades,  
Guaranteeing to Eternity  
All yesterday's modernity;  
When Brocken-spectres made by  
Some one's breath on ink parade by,  
Very earnest and tremendous,  
Let not shows of shows offend us.  
When of everything we like we  
Shout ecstatic: "*Quod ubique*,  
"*Quod ab omnibus* means *semper*!"  
Oh, my brother, keep your temper!  
Light your pipe and take a look along the Files.  
You've a better chance to guess  
At the meaning of Success  
(Which is Greatness—*vide* Press)  
When you've seen it in perspective in the Files!

## THE VIRGINITY

TRY as he will, no man breaks wholly loose  
From his first love, no matter who she be.  
Oh, was there ever sailor free to choose,  
That didn't settle somewhere near the sea?



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Myself, it don't excite me nor amuse  
To watch a pack o' shipping on the sea;  
But I can understand my neighbour's views  
From certain things which have occurred to me.

Men must keep touch with things they used to use  
To earn their living, even when they are free;  
And so come back upon the least excuse—  
Same as the sailor settled near the sea.

He knows he's never going on no cruise—  
He knows he's done and finished with the sea;  
And yet he likes to feel she's there to use—  
If he should ask her—as she used to be.

Even though she cost him all he had to lose,  
Even though she made him sick to hear or see,  
Still, what she left of him will mostly choose  
Her skirts to sit by. How comes such to be?

*Parsons in pulpits, tax-payers in pews,  
Kings on your thrones, you know as well as me,  
We've only one virginity to lose,  
And where we lost it there our hearts will be!*

### THE LEGENDS OF EVIL

1890

#### I

THIS is the sorrowful story  
Told as the twilight fails  
And the monkeys walk together  
Holding their neighbours' tails:—

“Our fathers lived in the forest,  
“Foolish people were they,  
“They went down to the cornland  
“To teach the farmers to play.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

" Our fathers frisked in the millet,  
" Our fathers skipped in the wheat;  
" Our fathers hung from the branches,  
" Our fathers danced in the street.

" Then came the terrible farmers,  
" Nothing of play they knew,  
" Only . . . they caught our fathers  
" And set them to labour too!

" Set them to work in the cornland  
" With ploughs and sickles and flails,  
" Put them in mud-walled prisons,  
" And—cut off their beautiful tails!

" Now, we can watch our fathers,  
" Sullen and bowed and old,  
" Stooping over the millet,  
" Sharing the silly mould;

" Driving a foolish furrow,  
" Mending a muddy yoke,  
" Sleeping in mud-walled prisons,  
" Steeping their food in smoke.

" We may not speak with our fathers,  
" For if the farmers knew  
" They would come up to the forest  
" And set us to labour too."

This is the horrible story  
Told as the twilight fails  
And the monkeys walk together  
Holding their neighbours' tails.

## II

'T WAS when the rain fell steady an' the Ark was pitched  
an' ready,  
That Noah got his orders for to take the bastes below;  
He dragged them all together by the horn an' hide an'  
feather,  
An' all excipt the Donkey was agreeable to go.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S . VERSE

First Noah spoke him fairly, thin talked to him seavirely,  
An' thin he cursed him squarely to the glory av the  
Lord:—

“Divil take the ass that bred you, and the greater ass that  
fed you!

“Divil go wid ye, ye spalpeen!” an’ the Donkey wint  
aboard.

But the wind was always failin’, an’ ’twas most onaisy sailin’,  
An’ the ladies in the cabin couldn’t stand the stable air;  
An’ the bastes betwuxt the hatches, they tuk an’ died in  
batches,

Till Noah said:—“There’s wan av us that hasn’t paid his  
fare!”

For he heard a flusteration ’mid the bastes av all creation—  
The trumpetin’ av elephints an’ bellowin’ av whales;

An’ he saw forinist the windy whin he wint to stop the  
shindy

The Divil wid a stable-fork bedivillin’ their tails.

The Divil cursed outrageous, but Noah said umbrageous:—

“To what am I indebted for this tenant-right invasion?”

An’ the Divil gave for answer: “Evict me if you can, sir,

“For I came in wid the Donkey—on Your Honour’s  
invitation!”

## PAN IN VERMONT

1893

*(About the 15th of this month you may expect our Mr. —, with the usual  
Spring Seed, etc., Catalogues.—FLORISTS’ ANNOUNCEMENT)*

**I**T’s forty in the shade to-day, the spouting eaves declare;  
The boulders nose above the drift, the southern slopes  
are bare;

Hub-deep in slush Apollo’s car swings north along the Zodi-  
ac. Good lack, the Spring is back, and Pan is on the road!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

His house is Gee & Tellus' Sons,—so goes his jest with  
men—  
He sold us Zeus knows what last year; he'll take us in  
again.  
Disguised behind a livery-team, fur-coated, rubber-shod—  
Yet Apis from the bull-pen lows—he knows his brother  
God!

Now down the lines of tasselled pines the yearning whispers  
wake—  
Pithys of old thy love behold! Come in for Hermes' sake!  
How long since that so-Boston boot with reeling Mænads  
ran?  
*Numen adest!* Let be the rest. Pipe and we pay, O Pan.

(What though his phlox and hollyhocks ere half a month  
demised?  
What though his ampelopsis clambered not as advertised?  
Though every seed was guaranteed and every standard  
true—  
Forget, forgive they did not live! Believe, and buy  
anew!)

Now o'er a careless knee he flings the painted page abroad—  
Such bloom hath never eye beheld this side the Eden Sword;  
Such fruit Pomona marks her own, yea, Liber oversees,  
That we may reach (one dollar each) the Lost Hesperides!

Serene, assenting, unabashed, he writes our orders down:—  
Blue Asphodel on all our paths—a few true bays for  
crown—  
Uncankered bud, immortal flower, and leaves that never  
fall—  
Apples of Gold, of Youth, of Health—and—thank you, Pan,  
that's all. . . .

He's off along the drifted pent to catch the Windsor train,  
And swindle every citizen from Keene to Lake Champlain;  
But where his goat's-hoof cut the crust—beloved, look  
below—  
He's left us (I'll forgive him all) the may-flower 'neath her  
snow!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

VERSES ON GAMES

(To "An Almanac of Twelve Sports", by W. Nicholson, 1898)

*HERE is a horse to tame—  
Here is a gun to handle—  
God knows you can enter the game  
If you'll only pay for the same,  
And the price of the game is a candle—  
A single flickering candle!*

JANUARY      Certes, it is a noble sport,  
(*Hunting*)      And men have quitted selle and swum for't.  
But I am of the meeker sort  
And I prefer Surtees in comfort.

Reach me my *Handley Cross* again,  
My run, where never danger lurks, is  
With Jorrocks and his deathless train—  
Pigg, Binjimin, and Artaxerxes.

FEBRUARY    Most men harry the world for fun—  
(*Coursing*)    Each man seeks it a different way,  
But "of all the daft devils under the sun,  
A greyhound's the daftest," says Jorrocks J.

MARCH        The horse is ridden—the jockey rides—  
(*Racing*)      The backers back—the owners own—  
But . . . there are lots of things besides,  
And *I* should let this game alone.

APRIL         The Pope of Rome he could not win  
(*Rowing*)      From pleasant meats and pleasant sin  
These who, replying not, submit  
Unto the curses of the Pit  
Which that stern Coach (oh, greater shame)  
Flings forth by number not by name.  
Can Triple Crown or Jesuit's oath  
Do what one wrathful trainer doth?

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

- MAY Behold a parable. A fished for B  
(*Fishing*) C took her bait; her heart being set on D.  
Thank Heaven who cooled your blood and  
cramped your wishes,  
Men and not Gods torment you, little fishes!
- JUNE Thank God who made the British Isles  
(*Cricket*) And taught me how to play,  
I do not worship crocodiles,  
Or bow the knee to clay!  
Give me a willow wand and I  
With hide and cork and twine  
From century to century  
Will gambol round my shrine!
- JULY The child of the Nineties considers with laughter  
(*Archery*) The maid whom his sire in the Sixties ran after,  
While careering himself in pursuit of a girl whom  
The Twenties will dub a "last-century heirloom."
- AUGUST The Pious Horse to church may trot,  
(*Coaching*) A maid may work a man's salvation. . . .  
Four horses and a girl are not,  
However, roads to reformation.
- SEPTEMBER "Peace upon Earth, Goodwill to men"  
(*Shooting*) So greet we Christmas Day!  
Oh, Christian, load your gun and then,  
Oh, Christian, out and slay.
- OCTOBER Why Golf is Art and Art is Golf  
(*Golf*) We have not far to seek—  
So much depends upon the lie,  
So much upon the cleek.
- NOVEMBER Read here the moral roundly writ  
(*Boxing*) For him who into battle goes—  
Each soul that, hitting hard or hit,  
Endureth gross or ghostly foes.  
Prince, blown by many overthrows  
Half blind with shame, half choked with dirt,  
*Man cannot tell, but Allah knows*  
*How much the other side was hurt!*

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

DECEMBER Over the ice she flies  
(*Skating*): Perfect and poised and fair.  
Stars in my true-love's eyes  
Teach me to do and dare.  
Now will I fly as she flies—  
Woe for the stars that misled.  
Stars I beheld in her eyes  
Now do I see in my head!

*Now we must come away.  
What are you out of pocket?  
'Sorry to spoil your play  
But somebody says we must pay,  
And the candle's down to the socket—  
Its horrible tallowy socket.*

TOMLINSON

1891

NOW Tomlinson gave up the ghost at his house in  
Berkeley Square,  
And a Spirit came to his bedside and gripped him by the  
hair—  
A Spirit gripped him by the hair and carried him far away,  
Till he heard as the roar of a rain-fed ford the roar of the  
Milky Way:  
Till he heard the roar of the Milky Way die down and drone  
and cease,  
And they came to the Gate within the Wall where Peter holds  
the keys.  
“Stand up, stand up now, Tomlinson, and answer loud and  
high  
“The good that ye did for the sake of men or ever ye came to  
die—  
“The good that ye did for the sake of men on little Earth so  
lone!”  
And the naked soul of Tomlinson grew white as a rain-  
washed bone.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"O I have a friend on Earth," he said, "that was my priest  
and guide,  
"And well would he answer all for me if he were at my  
side."  
—"For that ye strove in neighbour-love it shall be written  
fair,  
"But now ye wait at Heaven's Gate and not in Berkeley  
Square:  
"Though we called your friend from his bed this night, he  
could not speak for you,  
"For the race is run by one and one and never by two and  
two."  
Then Tomlinson looked up and down, and little gain was  
there,  
For the naked stars grinned overhead, and he saw that his  
soul was bare.  
The Wind that blows between the Worlds, it cut him like a  
knife,  
And Tomlinson took up the tale and spoke of his good in  
life.  
"O this I have read in a book," he said, "and that was told  
to me,  
"And this I have thought that another man thought of a  
Prince in Muscovy."  
The good souls flocked like homing doves and bade him clear  
the path,  
And Peter twirled the jangling Keys in weariness and  
wrath.  
"Ye have read, ye have heard, ye have thought," he said,  
"and the tale is yet to run:  
"By the worth of the body that once ye had, give answer—  
what ha' ye done?"  
Then Tomlinson looked back and forth, and little good it  
bore,  
For the darkness stayed at his shoulder-blade and Heaven's  
Gate before:—  
"O this I have felt, and this I have guessed, and this I have  
heard men say,  
"And this they wrote that another man wrote of a carl in  
Norroway."  
"Ye have read, ye have felt, ye have guessed, good lack!  
Ye have hampered Heaven's Gate;  
"There's little room between the stars in idleness to prate!



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"For none may reach by hired speech of neighbour, priest,  
and kin  
"Through borrowed deed to God's good meed that lies so  
fair within;  
"Get hence, get hence to the Lord of Wrong, for the doom  
has yet to run,  
"And . . . the faith that ye share with Berkeley Square  
uphold you, Tomlinson!"

The Spirit gripped him by the hair, and sun by sun they  
fell  
Till they came to the belt of Naughty Stars that rim the  
mouth of Hell.  
The first are red with pride and wrath, the next are white  
with pain,  
But the third are black with clinkered sin that cannot burn  
again.  
They may hold their path, they may leave their path, with  
never a soul to mark:  
They may burn or freeze, but they must not cease in the  
Scorn of the Outer Dark.  
The Wind that blows between the Worlds, it nipped him to  
the bone,  
And he yearned to the flare of Hell-gate there as the light of  
his own hearth-stone.  
The Devil he sat behind the bars, where the desperate legions  
drew,  
But he caught the hasting Tomlinson and would not let him  
through.  
"Wot ye the price of good pit-coal that I must pay?"  
said he,  
"That ye rank yoursel' so fit for Hell and ask no leave of  
me?  
"I am all o'er-sib to Adam's breed that ye should give me  
scorn,  
"For I strove with God for your First Father the day that he  
was born.  
"Sit down, sit down upon the slag, and answer loud and  
high  
"The harm that ye did to the Sons of Men or ever you came  
to die."  
And Tomlinson looked up and up, and saw against the  
night

DEFINITIVE EDITION

The belly of a tortured star blood-red in Hell-Mouth  
light;  
And Tomlinson looked down and down, and saw beneath his  
feet  
The frontlet of a tortured star milk-white in Hell-Mouth  
heat.  
“O I had a love on earth,” said he, “that kissed me to my  
fall;  
“And if ye would call my love to me I know she would  
answer all.”  
—“All that ye did in love forbid it shall be written fair,  
“But now ye wait at Hell-Mouth Gate and not in Berkeley  
Square:  
“Though we whistled your love from her bed to-night, I  
trow she would not run,  
“For the sin ye do by two and two ye must pay for one by  
one!”  
The Wind that blows between the Worlds, it cut him like a  
knife,  
And Tomlinson took up the tale and spoke of his sins in  
life:—  
“Once I ha’ laughed at the power of Love and twice at the  
grip of the Grave,  
“And thrice I ha’ patted my God on the head that men  
might call me brave.”  
The Devil he blew on a brandered soul and set it aside to  
cool:—  
“Do ye think I would waste my good pit-coal on the hide of  
a brain-sick fool?  
“I see no worth in the hobnailed mirth or the jolthead jest ye  
did  
“That I should waken my gentlemen that are sleeping three  
on a grid.”  
Then Tomlinson looked back and forth, and there was little  
grace,  
For Hell-Gate filled the houseless soul with the Fear of  
Naked Space.  
“Nay, this I ha’ heard,” quo’ Tomlinson, “and this was  
noised abroad,  
“And this I ha’ got from a Belgian book on the word of a  
dead French lord.”  
—“Ye ha’ heard, ye ha’ read, ye ha’ got, good lack! and the  
tale begins afresh—

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"Have ye sinned one sin for the pride o' the eye or the sinful lust of the flesh?"

Then Tomlinson he gripped the bars and yammered, "Let me in—

"For I mind that I borrowed my neighbour's wife to sin the deadly sin."

The Devil he grinned behind the bars, and banked the fires high:

"Did ye read of that sin in a book?" said he; and Tomlinson said, "Ay!"

The Devil he blew upon his nails, and the little devils ran, And he said: "Go husk this whimpering thief that comes in the guise of a man:

"Winnow him out 'twixt star and star, and sieve his proper worth:

"There's sore decline in Adam's line if this be spawn of Earth."

Empusa's crew, so naked-new they may not face the fire, But weep that they bin too small to sin to the height of their desire,

Over the coal they chased the Soul, and racked it all abroad;

As children rifle a caddis-case or the raven's foolish hoard.

And back they came with the tattered Thing, as children after play,

And they said: "The soul that he got from God he has bartered clean away.

"We have threshed a stook of print and book, and winnowed a chattering wind,

"And many a soul\wherefrom he stole, but his we cannot find.

"We have handled him, we have dandled him, we have seared him to the bone,

"And, Sire, if tooth and nail show truth he has no soul of his own."

The Devil he bowed his head on his breast and rumbled deep and low:—

"I'm all o'er-sib to Adam's breed that I should bid him go.

"Yet close we lie, and deep we lie, and if I gave him place,

"My gentlemen that are so proud would flout me to my face;

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

- “ They’d call my house a common stew and me a careless  
host,  
“ And—I would not anger my gentlemen for the sake of a  
shiftless ghost.”  
The Devil he looked at the mangled Soul that prayed to feel  
the flame,  
And he thought of Holy Charity, but he thought of his own  
good name:—  
“ Now ye could haste my coal to waste, and sit ye down to  
fry.  
“ Did ye think of that theft for yourself?” said he; and  
Tomlinson said, “ Ay!”  
The Devil he blew an outward breath, for his heart was free  
from care:—  
“ Ye have scarce the soul of a louse,” he said, “ but the roots  
of sin are there,  
“ And for that sin should ye come in were I the lord alone,  
“ But sinful pride has rule inside—ay, mightier than my  
own.  
“ Honour and Wit, fore-damned they sit, to each his Priest  
and Whore;  
“ Nay, scarce I dare myself go there, and you they’d torture  
sore.  
“ Ye are neither spirit nor spirk,” he said; “ ye are neither  
book nor brute—  
“ Go, get ye back to the flesh again for the sake of Man’s  
repute.  
“ I’m all o’er-sib to Adam’s breed that I should mock your  
pain,  
‘ But look that ye win to worthier sin ere ye come back  
again.  
“ Get hence, the hearse is at your door—the grim black  
stallions wait—  
“ They bear your clay to place to-day. Speed, lest ye come  
too late!  
“ Go back to Earth with a lip unsealed—go back with an open  
eye,  
“ And carry my word to the Sons of Men or ever ye come to  
die:  
“ That the sin they do by two and two they must pay for one  
by one,  
“ And . . . the God that you took from a printed book  
be with you, Tomlinson!”

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

EN-DOR

1914-19—?

*"Behold there is a woman that hath a familiar spirit at En-dor."*  
1 SAMUEL xxviii. 7.

THE road to En-dor is easy to tread  
For Mother or yearning Wife.  
There, it is sure, we shall meet our Dead  
As they were even in life.  
Earth has not dreamed of the blessing in store  
For desolate hearts on the road to En-dor.

Whispers shall comfort us out of the dark—  
Hands—ah, God!—that we knew!  
Visions and voices—look and hark!—  
Shall prove that the tale is true,  
And that those who have passed to the further shore  
May be hailed—at a price—on the road to En-dor.

But they are so deep in their new eclipse  
Nothing they say can reach,  
Unless it be uttered by alien lips  
And framed in a stranger's speech.  
The son must send word to the mother that bore,  
Through an hireling's mouth. 'Tis the rule of En-dor.

And not for nothing these gifts are shown  
By such as delight our Dead.  
They must twitch and stiffen and slaver and groan  
Ere the eyes are set in the head,  
And the voice from the belly begins. Therefore,  
We pay them a wage where they ply at En-dor.

Even so, we have need of faith  
And patience to follow the clue.  
Often, at first, what the dear one saith  
Is babble, or jest, or untrue.  
(Lying spirits perplex us sore  
Till our loves—and their lives—are well known at  
En-dor). . . .

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Oh, the road to En-dor is the oldest road  
And the craziest road of all!  
Straight it runs to the Witch's abode,  
As it did in the days of Saul,  
And nothing has changed of the sorrow in store  
For such as go down on the road to En-dor!*

## THE FEMALE OF THE SPECIES

### I 9 I I

WHEN the Himalayan peasant meets the he-bear in his  
pride,  
He shouts to scare the monster, who will often turn aside.  
But the she-bear thus accosted rends the peasant tooth and  
nail.  
For the female of the species is more deadly than the male.

When Nag the basking cobra hears the careless foot of  
man,  
He will sometimes wriggle sideways and avoid it if he  
can.  
But his mate makes no such motion where she camps beside  
the trail.  
For the female of the species is more deadly than the male.

When the early Jesuit fathers preached to Hurons and  
Choctaws,  
They prayed to be delivered from the vengeance of the  
squaws.  
'Twas the women, not the warriors, turned those stark  
enthusiasts pale.  
For the female of the species is more deadly than the male.

Man's timid heart is bursting with the things he must not say,  
For the Woman that God gave him isn't his to give away;  
But when hunter meets with husband, each confirms the  
other's tale—  
The female of the species is more deadly than the male.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Man, a bear in most relations—worm and savage otherwise,—  
Man propounds negotiations, Man accepts the compromise.  
Very rarely will he squarely push the logic of a fact  
To its ultimate conclusion in unmitigated act.

Fear, or foolishness, impels him, ere he lay the wicked low,  
To concede some form of trial even to his fiercest foe.  
Mirth obscene diverts his anger—Doubt and Pity oft perplex  
Him in dealing with an issue—to the scandal of The Sex!

But the Woman that God gave him, every fibre of her frame  
Proves her launched for one sole issue, armed and engined for  
the same;  
And to serve that single issue, lest the generations fail,  
The female of the species must be deadlier than the male.

She who faces Death by torture for each life beneath her  
breast  
May not deal in doubt or pity—must not swerve for fact or  
jest.  
These be purely male diversions—not in these her honour  
dwells.  
She the Other Law we live by, is that Law and nothing else.

She can bring no more to living than the powers that make  
her great  
As the Mother of the Infant and the Mistress of the Mate.  
And when Babe and Man are lacking and she strides  
unclaimed to claim  
Her right as femme (and baron), her equipment is the same.

She is wedded to convictions—in default of grosser ties;  
Her contentions are her children, Heaven help him who  
denies!—  
He will meet no suave discussion, but the instant, white-hot,  
wild,  
Wakened female of the species warring as for spouse and  
child.

Unprovoked and awful charges—even so the she-bear fights,  
Speech that drips, corrodes, and poisons—even so the cobra  
bites,

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Scientific vivisection of one nerve till it is raw  
And the victim writhes in anguish—like the Jesuit with the  
squaw!

So it comes that Man, the coward, when he gathers to confer  
With his fellow-braves in council, dare not leave a place for  
her  
Where, at war with Life and Conscience, he uplifts his erring  
hands  
To some God of Abstract Justice—which no woman under-  
stands.

And Man knows it! Knows, moreover, that the Woman  
that God gave him  
Must command but may not govern—shall enthral but not  
enslave him.  
And *She* knows, because She warns him, and Her instincts  
never fail,  
That the Female of Her Species is more deadly than the  
Male.

## A RECANTATION

1917

(TO LYDE OF THE MUSIC HALLS)

*WHAT boots it on the Gods to call?  
Since, answered or unheard,  
We perish with the Gods and all  
Things made—except the Word.*

Ere certain Fate had touched a heart  
By fifty years made cold,  
I judged thee, Lyde, and thy art  
O'erblown and over-bold.

But he—but he, of whom bereft  
I suffer vacant days—  
He on his shield not meanly left—  
He cherished all thy lays.



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And when they bore me overmuch, I will not shake mine  
ears,  
Recalling many thousand such whom I have bored to tears.  
And when they labour to impress, I will not doubt nor  
scoff;  
Since I myself have done no less and—sometimes pulled  
it off!  
Yea, as we are and we are not, and we pretend to be,  
The people, Lord, Thy people, are good enough for me!

And when they work me random wrong, as oftentimes hath  
been,  
I will not cherish hate too long (my hands are none too  
clean).  
And when they do me random good I will not feign surprise;  
No more than those whom I have cheered with wayside  
courtesies.  
But, as we give and as we take—whate'er our takings be—  
The people, Lord, Thy people, are good enough for me!

But when I meet with frantic folk who sinfully declare  
There is no pardon for their sin, the same I will not spare  
Till I have proved that Heaven and Hell which in our hearts  
we have  
Show nothing irredeemable on either side the grave.  
For as we live and as we die—if utter Death there be—  
The people, Lord, Thy people, are good enough for me!

Deliver me from every pride—the Middle, High, and  
Low—  
That bars me from a brother's side, whatever pride he  
show.  
And purge me from all heresies of thought and speech and  
pen  
That bid me judge him otherwise than I am judged. *Amen!*  
That I may sing of Crowd or King or road-borne company,  
That I may labour in my day, vocation and degree,  
To prove the same by deed and name, and hold unshakenly  
(Where'er I go, whate'er I know, whoe'er my neighbour be)  
This single faith in Life and Death and to Eternity:  
"The people, Lord, Thy people, are good enough for me!"

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### THE ANSWER

1892

A ROSE, in tatters on the garden path,  
Cried out to God and murmured 'gainst His Wrath,  
Because a sudden wind at twilight's hush  
Had snapped her stem alone of all the bush.  
And God, Who hears both sun-dried dust and sun,  
Had pity, whispering to that luckless one.  
"Sister, in that thou sayest We did not well—  
"What voices heardst thou when thy petals fell?"  
And the Rose answered, "In that evil hour  
"A voice said, 'Father, wherefore falls the flower?  
"'For lo, the very gossamers are still.'  
"And a voice answered, 'Son, by Allah's Will!'"

Then softly as a rain-mist on the sward,  
Came to the Rose the Answer of the Lord:  
"Sister, before We smote the Dark in twain,  
"Ere yet the Stars saw one another plain,  
"Time, Tide, and Space, We bound unto the task  
"That thou shouldst fall, and such an one should ask."  
Whereat the withered flower, all content,  
Died as they die whose days are innocent;  
While he who questioned why the flower fell  
Caught hold of God and saved his soul from Hell.

### MARY'S SON

1911

IF YOU stop to find out what your wages will be  
And how they will clothe and feed you,  
Willie, my son, don't you go on the Sea,  
For the Sea will never need you.

If you ask for the reason of every command,  
And argue with people about you,  
Willie, my son, don't you go on the Land,  
For the Land will do better without you.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

If you stop to consider the work you have done  
And to boast what your labour is worth, dear,  
Angels may come for you, Willie, my son,  
But you'll never be wanted on Earth, dear!

THE GIFT OF THE SEA

1890

THE dead child lay in the shroud,  
And the widow watched beside;  
And her mother slept, and the Channel swept  
The gale in the teeth of the tide.

But the mother laughed at all.  
"I have lost my man in the sea,  
"And the child is dead. Be still," she said,  
"What more can ye do to me?"

The widow watched the dead,  
And the candle guttered low,  
And she tried to sing the Passing Song  
That bids the poor soul go.

And "Mary take you now," she sang,  
"That lay against my heart."  
And "Mary smooth your crib to-night,"  
But she could not say "Depart."

Then came a cry from the sea,  
But the sea-rime blinded the glass,  
And "Heard ye nothing, mother?" she said,  
"'Tis the child that waits to pass."

And the nodding mother sighed:  
"'Tis a lambing ewe in the whin,  
"For why should the christened soul cry out  
"That never knew of sin?"

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"O feet I have held in my hand,  
"O hands at my heart to catch,  
"How should they know the road to go,  
"And how should they lift the latch?"

They laid a sheet to the door,  
With the little quilt atop,  
That it might not hurt from the cold or the dirt,  
But the crying would not stop.

The widow lifted the latch  
And strained her eyes to see,  
And opened the door on the bitter shore  
To let the soul go free.

There was neither glimmer nor ghost,  
There was neither spirit nor spark,  
And "Heard ye nothing, mother?" she said,  
" 'Tis crying for me in the dark."

And the nodding mother sighed:  
" 'Tis sorrow makes ye dull;  
"Have ye yet to learn the cry of the tern,  
"Or the wail of the wind-blown gull?"

"The terns are blown inland,  
"The grey gull follows the plough.  
" 'Twas never a bird, the voice I heard,  
"O mother, I hear it now!"

"Lie still, dear lamb, lie still;  
"The child is passed from harm,  
" 'Tis the ache in your breast that broke your rest,  
"And the feel of an empty arm."

She put her mother aside,  
"In Mary's name let be!  
"For the peace of my soul I must go," she said,  
And she went to the calling sea.

In the heel of the wind-bit pier,  
Where the twisted weed was piled,  
She came to the life she had missed by an hour,  
For she came to a little child.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

She laid it into her breast,  
And back to her mother she came,  
But it would not feed and it would not heed,  
Though she gave it her own child's name.

And the dead child dripped on her breast,  
And her own in the shroud lay stark;  
And "God forgive us, mother," she said,  
"We let it die in the dark!"

### THE KING

1894

"FAREWELL, Romance!" the Cave-men said;  
"With bone well carved He went away.  
"Flint arms the ignoble arrowhead,  
"And jasper tips the spear to-day.  
"Changed are the Gods of Hunt and Dance,  
"And He with these. Farewell, Romance!"

"Farewell, Romance!" the Lake-folk sighed;  
"We lift the weight of flatling years;  
"The caverns of the mountain-side  
"Hold Him who scorns our hutted piers.  
"Lost hills whereby we dare not dwell,  
"Guard ye His rest. Romance, Farewell!"

"Farewell, Romance!" the Soldier spoke;  
"By sleight of sword we may not win,  
"But scuffle 'mid uncleanly smoke  
"Of arquebus and culverin.  
"Honour is lost, and none may tell  
"Who paid good blows. Romance, farewell!"

"Farewell, Romance!" the Traders cried;  
"Our keels have lain with every sea.  
"The dull-returning wind and tide  
"Heave up the wharf where we would be;  
"The known and noted breezes swell  
"Our trudging sails. Romance, farewell!"

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

" Good-bye, Romance! " the Skipper said;  
" He vanished with the coal we burn.  
" Our dial marks full-steam ahead,  
" Our speed is timed to half a turn.  
" Sure as the ferried barge we ply  
" 'Twixt port and port. Romance, good-bye! "

" Romance! " the season-tickets mourn,  
" *He* never ran to catch His train,  
" But passed with coach and guard and horn—  
" And left the local —late again!  
" Confound Romance! " . . . And all unseen  
Romance brought up the nine-fifteen.

His hand was on the lever laid,  
His oil-can soothed the worrying cranks,  
His whistle waked the snowbound grade,  
His fog-horn cut the reeking Banks;  
By dock and deep and mine and mill  
The Boy-god reckless laboured still!

Robed, crowned and throned, He wove His spell,  
Where heart-blood beat or hearth-smoke curled,  
With unconsidered miracle,  
Hedged in a backward-gazing world:  
Then taught His chosen bard to say:  
" Our King was with us—yesterday! "

THE LAST RHYME OF TRUE THOMAS

1 8 9 3

**T**HE King has called for priest and cup,  
The King has taken spur and blade  
To dub True Thomas a belted knight,  
And all for the sake of the songs he made.

They have sought him high, they have sought him low,  
They have sought him over down and lea.  
They have found him by the milk-white thorn  
That guards the Gates of Faerie.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*'Twas bent beneath and blue above:  
Their eyes were held that they might not see  
The kine that grazed beneath the knowes,  
Oh, they were the Queens of Faerie!*

"Now cease your song," the King he said,  
"Oh, cease your song and get you dight  
"To vow your vow and watch your arms,  
"For I will dub you a belted knight.

"For I will give you a horse o' pride,  
"Wi' blazon and spur and page and squire;  
"Wi' keep and tail and seizin and law,  
"And land to hold at your desire."

True Thomas smiled above his harp,  
And turned his face to the naked sky,  
Where, blown before the wastrel wind,  
The thistle-down she floated by.

"I ha' vowed my vow in another place,  
"And bitter oath it was on me.  
"I ha' watched my arms the lee-long night,  
"Where five-score fighting men would flee.

"My lance is tipped o' the hammered flame,  
"My shield is beat o' the moonlight cold;  
"And I won my spurs in the Middle World,  
"A thousand fathom beneath the mould.

"And what should I make wi' a horse o' pride,  
"And what should I make wi' a sword so brown,  
"But spill the rings of the Gentle Folk  
"And flyte my kin in the Fairy Town?

"And what should I make wi' blazon and belt,  
"Wi' keep and tail and seizin and fee,  
"And what should I do wi' page and squire  
"That am a king in my own countrie?

"For I send east and I send west,  
"And I send far as my will may flee,  
"By dawn and dusk and the drinking rain,  
"And syne my Sendings return to me.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"They come wi' news of the groanin' earth,  
"They come wi' news of the roarin' sea.  
"Wi' word of Spirit and Ghost and Flesh,  
"And man, that's mazed among the three."

The King he bit his nether lip,  
And smote his hand upon his knee:  
"By the faith of my soul, True Thomas," he said,  
"Ye waste no wit in courtesie!

"As I desire, unto my pride,  
"Can I make Earls by three and three,  
"To run before and ride behind  
"And serve the sons o' my body."

"And what care I for your row-foot earls,  
"Or all the sons o' your body?  
"Before they win to the Pride o' Name,  
"I trow they all ask leave o' me.

"For I make Honour wi' muckle mouth,  
"As I make Shame wi' mincing feet,  
"To sing wi' the priests at the market-cross,  
"Or run wi' the dogs in the naked street.

"And some they give me the good red gold,  
"And some they give me the white money,  
"And some they give me a clout o' meal,  
"For they be people of low degree.

"And the song I sing for the counted gold  
"The same I sing for the white money,  
"But best I sing for the clout o' meal  
"That simple people given me."

The King cast down a silver groat,  
A silver groat o' Scots money,  
"If I come wi' a poor man's dole," he said,  
"True Thomas, will ye harp to me?"

"Whenas I harp to the children small,  
"They press me close on either hand.  
"And who are you," True Thomas said,  
"That you should ride while they must stand?"



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"Light down, light down from your horse o' pride,  
"I trow ye talk too loud and hie,  
"And I will make you a triple word,  
"And syne, if ye dare, ye shall 'noble me."

He has lighted down from his horse o' pride,  
And set his back against a stone.  
"Now guard you well," True Thomas said,  
"Ere I rax your heart from your breast-bone!"

True Thomas played upon his harp,  
The fairy harp that couldna lee,  
And the first least word the proud King heard,  
It harpit the salt tear out o' his e'e.

"Oh, I see the love that I lost long syne,  
"I touch the hope that I may not see,  
"And all that I did of hidden shame,  
"Like little snakes they hiss at me.

"The sun is lost at noon—at noon!  
"The dread of doom has grippit me.  
"True Thomas, hide me under your cloak,  
"God wot, I'm little fit to dee!"

*'Twas bent beneath and blue above—  
'Twas open field and running flood—  
Where, hot on heath and dyke and wall,  
The high sun warmed the adder's brood.*

"Lie down, lie down," True Thomas said.  
"The God shall judge when all is done,  
"But I will bring you a better word  
"And lift the cloud that I laid on."

True Thomas played upon his harp,  
That birlled and brattled to his hand,  
And the next least word True Thomas made,  
It garred the King take horse and brand.

"Oh, I hear the tread o' the fighting-men,  
"I see the sun on splent and spear.  
"I mark the arrow outhen the fern  
"That flies so low and sings so clear!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"Advance my standards to that war,  
"And bid my good knights prick and ride;  
"The gled shall watch as fierce a fight  
"As e'er was fought on the Border-sidel"

*'Twas bent beneath and blue above,  
'Twas nodding grass and naked sky,  
Where, ringing up the wastrel wind,  
The eyass stooped upon the pye.*

True Thomas sighed above his harp,  
And turned the song on the midmost string;  
And the last least word True Thomas made,  
He harpit his dead youth back to the King.

"Now I am prince, and I do well  
"To love my love withouten fear;  
"To walk with man in fellowship,  
"And breathe my horse behind the deer.

"My hounds they bay unto the death,  
"The buck has couched beyond the burn,  
"My love she waits at her window  
"To wash my hands when I return.

"For that I live am I content  
"(Oh! I have seen my true love's eyes)  
"To stand with Adam in Eden-glade,  
"And run in the woods o' Paradise!"

*'Twas naked sky and nodding grass,  
'Twas running flood and wastrel wind,  
Where, checked against the open pass,  
The red deer turned to wait the hind.*

True Thomas laid his harp away,  
And louted low at the saddle-side;  
He has taken stirrup and hauden rein,  
And set the King on his horse o' pride.

"Sleep ye or wake," True Thomas said,  
"That sit so still, that muse so long?  
"Sleep ye or wake?—till the Latter Sleep  
"I trow ye'll not forget my song.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"I ha' harpit a Shadow out o' the sun  
"To stand before your face and cry;  
"I ha' armed the earth beneath your heel,  
"And over your head I ha' dusked the sky.

"I ha' harpit ye up to the Throne o' God,  
"I ha' harpit your midmost soul in three.  
"I ha' harpit ye down to the Hinges o' Hell,  
"And—ye—would—make—a Knight o' me!"

### THE SONS OF MARTHA

1907

THE Sons of Mary seldom bother, for they have inherited  
that good part;  
But the Sons of Martha favour their Mother of the careful  
soul and the troubled heart.  
And because she lost her temper once, and because she was  
rude to the Lord her Guest,  
Her Sons must wait upon Mary's Sons, world without end,  
reprieve, or rest.

It is their care in all the ages to take the buffet and cushion  
the shock.  
It is their care that the gear engages; it is their care that the  
switches lock.  
It is their care that the wheels run truly; it is their care to  
embark and entrain,  
Tally, transport, and deliver duly the Sons of Mary by land  
and main.

They say to mountains, "Be ye removed." They say to the  
lesser floods, "Be dry."  
Under their rods are the rocks reprovèd—they are not afraid  
of that which is high.  
Then do the hill-tops shake to the summit—then is the bed  
of the deep laid bare,  
That the Sons of Mary may overcome it, pleasantly sleeping  
and unaware.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

They finger death at their gloves' end where they piece and  
repiece the living wires.

He rears against the gates they tend: they feed him hungry  
behind their fires.

Early at dawn, ere men see clear, they stumble into his  
terrible stall,

And hale him forth like a haltered steer, and goad and turn  
him till evenfall.

To these from birth is Belief forbidden; from these till death  
is Relief afar.

They are concerned with matters hidden—under the earth—  
line their altars are—

The secret fountains to follow up, waters withdrawn to  
restore to the mouth,

And gather the floods as in a cup, and pour them again at a  
city's drouth.

They do not preach that their God will rouse them a little  
before the nuts work loose.

They do not teach that His Pity allows them to drop their  
job when they dam'-well choose.

As in the thronged and the lighted ways, so in the dark and  
the desert they stand,

Wary and watchful all their days that their brethren's days  
may be long in the land.

Raise ye the stone or cleave the wood to make a path more  
fair or flat—

Lo, it is black already with blood some Son of Martha spilled  
for that!

Not as a ladder from earth to Heaven, not as a witness to any  
creed,

But simple service simply given to his own kind in their  
common need.

And the Sons of Mary smile and are blessèd—they know the  
Angels are on their side.

They know in them is the Grace confessèd, and for them are  
the Mercies multiplied.

They sit at the Feet—they hear the Word—they see how  
truly the Promise runs.

They have cast their burden upon the Lord, and—the Lord  
He lays it on Martha's Sons!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"I ha' harpit a Shadow out o' the sun  
"To stand before your face and cry;  
"I ha' armed the earth beneath your heel,  
"And over your head I ha' dusked the sky.

"I ha' harpit ye up to the Throne o' God,  
"I ha' harpit your midmost soul in three.  
"I ha' harpit ye down to the Hinges o' Hell,  
"And—ye—would—make—a Knight o' me!"

### THE SONS OF MARTHA

1907

THE Sons of Mary seldom bother, for they have inherited  
that good part;  
But the Sons of Martha favour their Mother of the careful  
soul and the troubled heart.  
And because she lost her temper once, and because she was  
rude to the Lord her Guest,  
Her Sons must wait upon Mary's Sons, world without end,  
reprieve, or rest.

It is their care in all the ages to take the buffet and cushion  
the shock.  
It is their care that the gear engages; it is their care that the  
switches lock.  
It is their care that the wheels run truly; it is their care to  
embark and entrain,  
Tally, transport, and deliver duly the Sons of Mary by land  
and main.

They say to mountains, "Be ye removèd." They say to the  
lesser floods, "Be dry."  
Under their rods are the rocks reprovèd—they are not afraid  
of that which is high.  
Then do the hill-tops shake to the summit—then is the bed  
of the deep laid bare,  
That the Sons of Mary may overcome it, pleasantly sleeping  
and unaware.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

They finger death at their gloves' end where they piece and  
repiece the living wires.

He rears against the gates they tend: they feed him hungry  
behind their fires.

Early at dawn, ere men see clear, they stumble into his  
terrible stall,

And hale him forth like a haltered steer, and goad and turn  
him till evenfall.

To these from birth is Belief forbidden; from these till death  
is Relief afar.

They are concerned with matters hidden—under the earth-  
line their altars are—

The secret fountains to follow up, waters withdrawn to  
restore to the mouth,

And gather the floods as in a cup, and pour them again at a  
city's drouth.

They do not preach that their God will rouse them a little  
before the nuts work loose.

They do not teach that His Pity allows them to drop their  
job when they dam'-well choose.

As in the thronged and the lighted ways, so in the dark and  
the desert they stand,

Wary and watchful all their days that their brethren's days  
may be long in the land.

Raise ye the stone or cleave the wood to make a path more  
fair or flat—

Lo, it is black already with blood some Son of Martha spilled  
for that!

Not as a ladder from earth to Heaven, not as a witness to any  
creed,

But simple service simply given to his own kind in their  
common need.

And the Sons of Mary smile and are blessèd—they know the  
Angels are on their side.

They know in them is the Grace confessèd, and for them are  
the Mercies multiplied.

They sit at the Feet—they hear the Word—they see how  
truly the Promise runs.

They have cast their burden upon the Lord, and—the Lord  
He lays it on Martha's Sons!

HYMN OF BREAKING STRAIN

1935

THE careful text-books measure  
 (Let all who build beware!)  
 The load, the shock, the pressure  
 Material can bear.

So, when the buckled girder  
 Lets down the grinding span,  
 The blame of loss, or murder,  
 Is laid upon the man.  
*Not on the Stuff—the Man!*

But, in our daily dealing  
 With stone and steel, we find  
 The Gods have no such feeling  
 Of justice toward mankind.  
 To no set gauge they make us,—  
 For no laid course prepare—  
 And presently o’ertake us  
 With loads we cannot bear:  
*Too merciless to bear.*

The prudent text-books give it  
 In tables at the end—  
 The stress that shears a rivet  
 Or makes a tie-bar bend—  
 What traffic wrecks macadam—  
 What concrete should endure—  
 But we, poor Sons of Adam,  
 Have no such literature,  
*To warn us or make sure!*

We hold all Earth to plunder—  
 All Time and Space as well—  
 Too wonder-stale to wonder  
 At each new miracle;  
 Till, in the mid-illusion  
 Of Godhead ’neath our hand,  
 Falls multiple confusion  
 On all we did or planned—  
*The mighty works we planned.*

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

We only of Creation  
    (*Oh, luckier bridge and rail!*)  
Abide the twin-damnation—  
    To fail and know we fail.  
Yet we—by which sole token  
    We know we once were Gods—  
Take shame in being broken  
    However great the odds—  
    *The Burden or the Odds.*

Oh, veiled and secret Power  
    Whose paths we seek in vain,  
Be with us in our hour  
    Of overthrow and pain;  
That we—by which sure token  
    We know Thy ways are true—  
In spite of being broken,  
    *Because of being broken,*  
    *May rise and build anew.*  
    *Stand up and build anew!*

### THE PALACE

1902

WHEN I was a King and a Mason—a Master proven and  
    skilled—  
I cleared me ground for a Palace such as a King should build.  
I decreed and dug down to my levels. Presently, under the  
    silt,  
I came on the wreck of a Palace such as a King had built.

There was no worth in the fashion—there was no wit in the  
    plan—  
Hither and thither, aimless, the ruined footings ran—  
Masonry, brute, mishandled, but carven on every stone:  
“*After me cometh a Builder. Tell him, I too have known.*”

Swift to my use in my trenches, where my well-planned  
    ground-works grew,



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I tumbled his quoins and his ashlars, and cut and reset them  
anew.

Lime I milled of his marbles; burned it, slacked it, and  
spread;

Taking and leaving at pleasure the gifts of the humble dead.

Yet I despised not nor gloried; yet, as we wrenched them  
apart,

I read in the razed foundations the heart of that builder's  
heart.

As he had risen and pleaded, so did I understand

The form of the dream he had followed in the face of the  
thing he had planned.

When I was a King and a Mason—in the open noon of my  
pride,

They sent me a Word from the Darkness. They whispered  
and called me aside.

They said—"The end is forbidden." They said—"Thy  
use is fulfilled.

"Thy Palace shall stand as that other's—the spoil of a King  
who shall build."

I called my men from my trenches, my quarries, my wharves,  
and my sheers.

All I had wrought I abandoned to the faith of the faithless  
years.

Only I cut on the timber—only I carved on the stone:

*"After me cometh a Builder. Tell him, I too have known!"*

## EPITAPHS OF THE WAR

1914-18

### "EQUALITY OF SACRIFICE"

A. "I was a Have." B. "I was a 'have-not.'"  
(*Together.*) "What hast thou given which I gave  
not?"

### A SERVANT

We were together since the War began.  
He was my servant—and the better man.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### A SON

My son was killed while laughing at some jest. I would I  
knew  
What it was, and it might serve me in a time when jests are  
few.

### AN ONLY SON

I have slain none except my Mother. She  
(Blessing her slayer) died of grief for me.

### EX-CLERK

Pity not! The Army gave  
Freedom to a timid slave:  
In which Freedom did he find  
Strength of body, will, and mind:  
By which strength he came to prove  
Mirth, Companionship, and Love:  
For which Love to Death he went:  
In which Death he lies content.

### THE WONDER

Body and Spirit I surrendered whole  
To harsh Instructors—and received a soul . . .  
If mortal man could change me through and through  
From all I was—what may The God not do?

### HINDU SEPOY IN FRANCE

This man in his own country prayed we know not to what  
Powers.  
We pray Them to reward him for his bravery in ours.

### THE COWARD

I could not look on Death, which being known,  
Men led me to him, blindfold and alone.

### SHOCK

My name, my speech, my self I had forgot.  
My wife and children came—I knew them not.  
I died. My Mother followed. At her call  
And on her bosom I remembered all.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### A GRAVE NEAR CAIRO

Gods of the Nile, should this stout fellow here  
Get out—get out! He knows not shame nor fear.

### PELICANS IN THE WILDERNESS

#### *A Grave near Halfa*

The blown sand heaps on me, that none may learn  
Where I am laid for whom my children grieve. . . .  
O wings that beat at dawning, ye return  
Out of the desert to your young at eve!

### TWO CANADIAN MEMORIALS

#### I

We giving all gained all.  
Neither lament us nor praise.  
Only in all things recall,  
It is Fear, not Death that slays.

#### II

From little towns in a far land we came,  
To save our honour and a world aflame.  
By little towns in a far land we sleep;  
And trust that world we won for you to keep!

### THE FAVOUR

Death favoured me from the first, well knowing I could not  
endure  
To wait on him day by day. He quitted my betters and  
came  
Whistling over the fields, and, when he had made all sure,  
“Thy line is at end,” he said, “but at least I have saved its  
name.”

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### THE BEGINNER

On the first hour of my first day  
In the front trench I fell.  
(Children in boxes at a play  
Stand up to watch it well.)

### R.A.F. (AGED EIGHTEEN)

Laughing through clouds, his milk-teeth still unshed,  
Cities and men he smote from overhead.  
His deaths delivered, he returned to play  
Childlike, with childish things now put away.

### THE REFINED MAN

I was of delicate mind. I stepped aside for my needs,  
Disdaining the common office. I was seen from afar and  
killed. . . .  
How is this matter for mirth? Let each man be judged by  
his deeds.  
*I have paid my price to live with myself on the terms that I  
willed.*

### NATIVE WATER-CARRIER (M.E.F.)

Prometheus brought down fire to men.  
This brought up water.  
The Gods are jealous—now, as then,  
Giving no quarter.

### BOMBED IN LONDON

On land and sea I strove with anxious care  
To escape conscription. It was in the air!

### THE SLEEPY SENTINEL

Faithless the watch that I kept: now I have none to keep.  
I was slain because I slept: now I am slain I sleep.  
Let no man reproach me again, whatever watch is unkept—  
I sleep because I am slain. They slew me because I slept.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### BATTERIES OUT OF AMMUNITION

If any mourn us in the workshop, say  
We died because the shift kept holiday.

### COMMON FORM

If any question why we died,  
Tell them, because our fathers lied.

### A DEAD STATESMAN

I could not dig: I dared not rob:  
Therefore I lied to please the mob.  
Now all my lies are proved untrue  
And I must face the men I slew.  
What tale shall serve me here among  
Mine angry and defrauded young?

### THE REBEL

If I had clamoured at Thy Gate  
For gift of Life on Earth,  
And, thrusting through the souls that wait,  
Flung headlong into birth—  
Even then, even then, for gin and snare  
About my pathway spread,  
Lord, I had mocked Thy thoughtful care  
Before I joined the Dead!  
But now? . . . I was beneath Thy Hand  
Ere yet the Planets came.  
And now—though Planets pass, I stand  
The witness to Thy shame!

### THE OBEDIENT

Daily, though no ears attended,  
Did my prayers arise.  
Daily, though no fire descended,  
Did I sacrifice.  
Though my darkness did not lift,  
Though I faced no lighter odds,  
Though the Gods bestowed no gift,  
None the less,  
None the less, I served the Gods!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### A DRIFTER OFF TARENTUM

He from the wind-bitten North with ship and companions  
descended,

Searching for eggs of death spawned by invisible hulls.  
Many he found and drew forth. Of a sudden the fishery  
ended

In flame and a clamorous breath known to the eye-pecking  
gulls.

### DESTROYERS IN COLLISION

For Fog and Fate no charm is found  
To lighten or amend.

I, hurrying to my bride, was drowned—  
Cut down by my best friend.

### CONVOY ESCORT

I was a shepherd to fools  
Causelessly bold or afraid.  
They would not abide by my rules.  
Yet they escaped. For I stayed.

### UNKNOWN FEMALE CORPSE

Headless, lacking foot and hand,  
Horrible I come to land.  
I beseech all women's sons  
Know I was a mother once.

### RAPED AND REVENGED

One used and butchered me: another spied  
Me broken—for which thing an hundred died.  
So it was learned among the heathen hosts  
How much a freeborn woman's favour costs.

### SALONIKAN GRAVE

I have watched a thousand days  
Push out and crawl into night  
Slowly as tortoises.  
Now I, too, follow these.  
It is fever, and not the fight—  
Time, not battle,—that slays.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

THE BRIDEGROOM

Call me not false, beloved,  
If, from thy scarce-known breast  
So little time removed,  
In other arms I rest.

For this more ancient bride,  
Whom coldly I embrace,  
Was constant at my side  
Before I saw thy face.

Our marriage, often set—  
By miracle delayed—  
At last is consummate,  
And cannot be unmade.

Live, then, whom Life shall cure,  
Almost, of Memory,  
And leave us to endure  
Its immortality.

V.A.D. (MEDITERRANEAN)

Ah, would swift ships had never been, for then we ne'er had  
found,  
These harsh Ægean rocks between, this little virgin drowned,  
Whom neither spouse nor child shall mourn, but men she  
nursed through pain  
And—certain keels for whose return the heathen look in vain.

ACTORS

*On a Memorial Tablet in Holy Trinity Church,  
Stratford-on-Avon*

We counterfeited once for your disport  
Men's joy and sorrow: but our day has passed.  
We pray you pardon all where we fell short—  
Seeing we were your servants to this last.

JOURNALISTS

*On a Panel in the Hall of the Institute of Journalists*

We have served our day.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

JUSTICE

OCTOBER, 1918

*A*CROSS a world where all men grieve  
And grieving strive the more,  
The great days range like tides and leave  
Our dead on every shore.  
Heavy the load we undergo,  
And our own hands prepare,  
If we have parley with the foe,  
The load our sons must bear.

Before we loose the word  
That bids new worlds to birth,  
Needs must we loosen first the sword  
Of Justice upon earth;  
Or else all else is vain  
Since life on earth began,  
And the spent world sinks back again  
Hopeless of God and Man.

A People and their King  
Through ancient sin grown strong,  
Because they feared no reckoning  
Would set no bound to wrong;  
But now their hour is past,  
And we who bore it find  
Evil Incarnate held at last  
To answer to mankind.

For agony and spoil  
Of nations beat to dust,  
For poisoned air and tortured soil  
And cold, commanded lust,  
And every secret woe  
The shuddering waters saw—  
Willed and fulfilled by high and low—  
Let them relearn the Law:

That when the dooms are read,  
Not high nor low shall say:—  
“My haughty or my humble head  
Has saved me in this day.”



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

That, till the end of time,  
Their remnant shall recall  
Their fathers' old, confederate crime  
    Availed them not at all:

That neither schools nor priests,  
Nor Kings may build again  
A people with the heart of beasts  
    Made wise concerning men.  
Whereby our dead shall sleep  
    In honour, unbetrayed,  
And we in faith and honour keep  
    That peace for which they paid.

### SEVEN WATCHMEN

1918

SEVEN Watchmen sitting in a tower,  
Watching what had come upon mankind,  
Showed the Man the Glory and the Power,  
    And bade him shape the Kingdom to his mind.  
"All things on Earth your will shall win you"  
    ('Twas so their counsel ran).  
"But the Kingdom—the Kingdom is within you,"  
    Said the Man's own mind to the Man.  
    For time—and some time—  
As it was in the bitter years before  
    So it shall be in the over-sweetened hour—  
That a man's mind is wont to tell him more  
    Than Seven Watchmen sitting in a tower.

---

### TO THOMAS ATKINS

*(Prelude to Barrack-Room Ballads which follow)*

I HAVE made for you a song,  
And it may be right or wrong,  
But only you can tell me if it's true.  
I have tried for to explain  
    Both your pleasure and your pain,  
And, Thomas, here's my best respects to you!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

*O there'll surely come a day  
When they'll give you all your pay,  
And treat you as a Christian ought to do;  
So, until that day comes round,  
Heaven keep you safe and sound,  
And, Thomas, here's my best respects to you!*

“ BOBS ”

1898

*(Field-Marshal Lord Roberts of Kandahar: died in  
France 1914)*

THERE'S a little red-faced man,  
Which is Bobs,  
Rides the tallest 'orse 'e can—  
Our Bobs.  
If it bucks or kicks or rears,  
'E can sit for twenty years  
With a smile round both 'is ears—  
Can't yer, Bobs?

Then 'ere's to Bobs Bahadur—little Bobs, Bobs, Bobs!  
'E's our pukka Kandaharder—  
Fightin' Bobs, Bobs, Bobs!  
'E's the Dook of *Aggy Chel*; <sup>1</sup>  
'E's the man that done us well,  
An' we'll follow 'im to 'ell—  
Won't we, Bobs?

If a limber's slipped a trace,  
'Ook on Bobs.  
If a marker's lost 'is place,  
Dress by Bobs.  
For 'e's eyes all up 'is coat,  
An' a bugle in 'is throat,  
An' you will not play the goat  
Under Bobs.

<sup>1</sup> Get ahead.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

'E's a little down on drink,  
                 Chaplain Bobs;  
 But it keeps us outer Clink—  
                 Don't it, Bobs?  
 So we will not complain  
 Tho' 'e's water on the brain,  
 If 'e leads us straight again—  
                 Blue-light <sup>1</sup> Bobs.

If you stood 'im on 'is head,  
                 Father Bobs,  
 You could spill a quart of lead  
                 Outer Bobs.  
 'E's been at it thirty years,  
 An-amassin' souveneers  
 In the way o' slugs an' spears—  
                 Ain't yer, Bobs?

What 'e does not know o' war,  
                 Gen'ral Bobs,  
 You can arst the shop next door—  
                 Can't they, Bobs?  
 Oh, 'e's little but he's wise,  
 'E's terror for 'is size,  
 An'—'e—*does—not—advertise—*  
                 Do yer, Bobs?

Now they've made a bloomin' Lord  
                 Outer Bobs,  
 Which was but 'is fair reward—  
                 Weren't it, Bobs?  
 So 'e'll wear a coronet  
 Where 'is 'elmet used to set;  
 But we know you won't forget—  
                 Will yer, Bobs?

Then 'ere's to Bobs Bahadur—little Bobs, Bobs, Bobs,  
 Pocket-Wellin'ton an' *arder* <sup>2</sup>—  
                 Fightin' Bobs, Bobs, Bobs!  
 This ain't no bloomin' ode,  
 But you've 'elped the soldier's load,  
 An' for benefits bestowed,  
                 Bless yer, Bobs!

<sup>1</sup> Temperance.

<sup>2</sup> And a half.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

DANNY DEEVER

“WHAT are the bugles blowin’ for?” said Files-on-Parade.

“To turn you out, to turn you out,” the Colour-Sergeant said.

“What makes you look so white, so white?” said Files-on-Parade.

“I’m dreadin’ what I’ve got to watch,” the Colour-Sergeant said.

For they’re hangin’ Danny Deever, you can hear the  
Dead March play,

The Regiment’s in ’ollow square—they’re hangin’ him  
to-day;

They’ve taken of his buttons off an’ cut his stripes away,  
An’ they’re hangin’ Danny Deever in the mornin’.

“What makes the rear-rank breathe so ’ard?” said Files-on-Parade.

“It’s bitter cold, it’s bitter cold,” the Colour-Sergeant said.

“What makes that front-rank man fall down?” said Files-on-Parade.

“A touch o’ sun, a touch o’ sun,” the Colour-Sergeant said.  
They are hangin’ Danny Deever, they are marchin’ of  
’im round,

They ’ave ’alted Danny Deever by ’is coffin on the  
ground;

An’ ’e’ll swing in ’arf a minute for a sneakin’ shootin’  
hound—

O they’re hangin’ Danny Deever in the mornin’!

“’Is cot was right-’and cot to mine,” said Files-on-Parade.

“’E’s sleepin’ out an’ far to-night,” the Colour-Sergeant said.

“I’ve drunk ’is beer a score o’ times,” said Files-on-Parade.

“’E’s drinkin’ bitter beer alone,” the Colour-Sergeant said.  
They are hangin’ Danny Deever, you must mark ’im to  
’is place,

For ’e shot a comrade sleepin’—you must look ’im in  
the face;

Nine ’undred of ’is county an’ the Regiment’s disgrace,  
While they’re hangin’ Danny Deever in the mornin’.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"What's that so black agin the sun?" said Files-on-Parade.  
"It's Danny fightin' 'ard for life," the Colour-Sergeant said.  
"What's that that whimpers over'ead?" said Files-on-Parade.  
"It's Danny's soul that's passin' now," the Colour-Sergeant said.

For they're done with Danny Deeever, you can 'ear the  
    quickstep play,  
The Regiment's in column, an' they're marchin' us  
    away;  
Ho! the young recruits are shakin', an' they'll want  
    their beer to-day,  
After hangin' Danny Deeever in the mornin'!

### TOMMY

I WENT into a public-'ouse to get a pint o' beer,  
The publican 'e up an' sez, "We serve no red-coats here."  
The girls be'ind the bar they laughed an' giggled fit to die,  
I outs into the street again an' to myself sez I:

O it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Tommy, go  
    away";

But it's "Thank you, Mister Atkins," when the band  
    begins to play—

The band begins to play, my boys, the band begins to  
    play,

O it's "Thank you, Mister Atkins," when the band  
    begins to play.

I went into a theatre as sober as could be,  
They gave a drunk civilian room, but 'adn't none for me;  
They sent me to the gallery or round the music-'alls,  
But when it comes to fightin', Lord! they'll shove me in the  
    stalls!

For it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Tommy,  
    wait outside";

But it's "Special train for Atkins" when the trooper's  
    on the tide—

The troopship's on the tide, my boys, the troopship's on  
    the tide,

O it's "Special train for Atkins" when the trooper's on  
    the tide.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Yes, makin' mock o' uniforms that guard you while you sleep

Is cheaper than them uniforms, an' they're starvation cheap;  
An' hustlin' drunken soldiers when they're goin' large a bit

Is five times better business than paradin' in full kit.

Then it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Tommy,  
'ow's yer soul?"

But it's "Thin red line of 'eroes" when the drums begin to roll—

The drums begin to roll, my boys, the drums begin to roll,

O it's "Thin red line of 'eroes" when the drums begin to roll.

We aren't no thin red 'eroes, nor we aren't no blackguards too,

But single men in barricks, most remarkable like you;

An' if sometimes our conduct isn't all your fancy paints,

Why, single men in barricks don't grow into plaster saints;

While it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Tommy,  
fall be'ind,"

But it's "Please to walk in front, sir," when there's trouble in the wind—

There's trouble in the wind, my boys, there's trouble in the wind,

O it's "Please to walk in front, sir," when there's trouble in the wind.

You talk o' better food for us, an' schools, an' fires, an' all:

We'll wait for extry rations if you treat us rational.

Don't mess about the cook-room slops, but prove it to our face

The Widow's Uniform is not the soldier-man's disgrace.

For it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' "Chuck him out, the brute!"

But it's "Saviour of 'is country" when the guns begin to shoot;

An' it's Tommy this, an' Tommy that, an' anything you please;

An' Tommy ain't a bloomin' fool—you bet that Tommy sees!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"FUZZY-WUZZY"

*(Soudan Expeditionary Force. Early Campaigns)*

WE'VE fought with many men acrost the seas,  
An' some of 'em was brave an' some was not:  
The Paythan an' the Zulu an' Burmese;  
But the Fuzzy was the finest o' the lot.  
We never got a ha'porth's change of 'im:  
'E squatted in the scrub an' 'ocked our 'orses,  
'E cut our sentries up at Suakim,  
An' 'e played the cat an' banjo with our forces.  
So 'ere's *to* you, Fuzzy-Wuzzy, at your 'ome in the  
Soudan;  
You're a pore benighted 'eathen but a first-class fightin'  
man;  
We gives you your certificate, an' if you want it signed  
We'll come an' 'ave a romp with you whenever you're  
inclined.

We took our chanst among the Kyber 'ills,  
The Boers knocked us silly at a mile,  
The Burman give us Irriwaddy chills,  
An' a Zulu *impi* dished us up in style:  
But all we ever got from such as they  
Was pop to what the Fuzzy made us swaller;  
We 'eld our bloomin' own, the papers say,  
But man for man the Fuzzy knocked us 'oller.  
Then 'ere's *to* you, Fuzzy-Wuzzy, an' the missis and the  
kid;  
Our orders was to break you, an' of course we went an'  
did.  
We sloshed you with Martinis, an' it wasn't 'ardly  
fair;  
But for all the odds agin' you, Fuzzy-Wuz, you broke  
the square.

'E 'asn't got no papers of 'is own,  
'E 'asn't got no medals nor rewards,  
So *we* must certify the skill 'e's shown  
In usin' of 'is long two-'anded swords:

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

When 'e's 'oppin' in an' out among the bush  
With 'is coffin-'eaded shield an' shovel-spear,  
An' 'appy day with Fuzzy on the rush  
Will last an' 'ealthy Tommy for a year.  
So 'ere's *to* you, Fuzzy-Wuzzy, an' your friends which  
are no more,  
If we 'adn't lost some messmates we would 'elp you to  
deplore.  
But give an' take's the gospel, an' we'll call the bargain  
fair,  
For if you 'ave lost more than us, you crumpled up the  
square!

'E rushes at the smoke when we let drive,  
An', before we know, 'e's 'ackin' at our 'ead;  
'E's all 'ot sand an' ginger when alive,  
An' 'e's generally shammin' when 'e's dead.  
'E's a daisy, 'e's a ducky, 'e's a lamb!  
'E's a injia-rubber idiot on the spree,  
'E's the on'y thing that doesn't give a damn  
For a Regiment o' British Infan-tree!  
So 'ere's *to* you, Fuzzy-Wuzzy, at your 'ome in the  
Soudan;  
You're a pore benighted 'eathen but a first-class fightin'  
man;  
An' 'ere's *to* you, Fuzzy-Wuzzy, with your 'ayrick 'ead  
of 'air—  
You big black boundin' beggar—for you broke a British  
square!

## SOLDIER, SOLDIER

“SOLDIER, soldier come from the wars,  
“Why don't you march with my true love?”  
“We're fresh from off the ship an' 'e's, maybe, give the slip,  
“An' you'd best go look for a new love.”

New love! True love!  
Best go look for a new love,  
The dead they cannot rise, an' you'd better dry your  
eyes,  
An' you'd best go look for a new love.



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"Soldier, soldier come from the wars,  
"What did you see o' my true love?"  
"I seen 'im serve the Queen in a suit o' rifle-green,  
"An' you'd best go look for a new love."

"Soldier, soldier come from the wars,  
"Did ye see no more o' my true love?"  
"I seen 'im runnin' by when the shots begun to fly—  
"But you'd best go look for a new love."

"Soldier, soldier come from the wars,  
"Did aught take 'arm to my true love?"  
"I couldn't see the fight, for the smoke it lay so white—  
"And you'd best go look for a new love."

"Soldier, soldier come from the wars,  
"I'll up an' tend to my true love!"  
"'E's lying on the dead with a bullet through 'is 'ead,  
"An' you'd best go look for a new love."

"Soldier, soldier come from the wars,  
"I'll down an' die with my true love!"  
"The pit we dug'll 'ide 'im an' the twenty more beside 'im—  
"An' you'd best go look for a new love."

"Soldier, soldier come from the wars,  
"Do you bring no sign from my true love?"  
"I bring a lock of 'air that 'e allus used to wear,  
"An' you'd best go look for a new love."

"Soldier, soldier come from the wars,  
"O then I know it's true I've lost my true love!"  
"An' I tell you truth again—when you've lost the feel o' pain  
"You'd best take me for your new love."

True love! New love!  
Best take 'im for a new love,  
The dead they cannot rise, an' you'd better dry your  
eyes  
An' you'd best take 'im for your new love.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### SCREW-GUNS

S MOKIN' my pipe on the mountings, sniffin' the mornin'-  
cool,  
I walks in my old brown gaiters along o' my old brown mule,  
With seventy gunners be'ind me, an' never a beggar forgets  
It's only the pick of the Army that handles the dear little pets  
—'Tss! 'Tss!

For you all love the screw-guns—the screw-guns they all  
love you!

So when we call round with a few guns, o' course you will  
know what to do—hoo! hoo!

Jest send in your Chief an' surrender—it's worse if you  
fights or you runs:

You can go where you please, you can skid up the trees,  
but you don't get away from the guns!

They sends us along where the roads are, but mostly we goes  
where they ain't.

We'd climb up the side of a sign-board an' trust to the stick  
o' the paint:

We've chivied the Naga an' Looshai; we've give the Afreedee-  
man fits;

For we fancies ourselves at two thousand, we guns that are  
built in two bits—'Tss! 'Tss!

For you all love the screw-guns . . .

If a man doesn't work, why, we drills 'im an' teaches 'im 'ow  
to behave.

If a beggar can't march, why, we kills 'im an' rattles 'im into  
is grave.

You've got to stand up to our business an' spring without  
snatchin' or fuss.

D'you say that you sweat with the field-guns? By God, you  
must lather with us—'Tss! 'Tss!

For you all love the screw-guns . . .

The eagles is screamin' around us, the river's a-moanin'  
below,

We're clear o' the pine an' the oak-scrub, we're out on the  
rocks an' the snow,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

An' the wind is as thin as a whip-lash what carries away to  
the plains  
The rattle an' stamp o' the lead-mules—the jinglety-jink o'  
the chains—'Tss! 'Tss!  
For you all love the screw-guns . . .

There's a wheel on the Horns o' the Mornin', an' a wheel on  
the edge o' the Pit,  
An' a drop into nothin' beneath you as straight as a beggar  
can spit:  
With the sweat runnin' out o' your shirt-sleeves, an' the sun  
off the snow in your face,  
An' 'arf o' the men on the drag-ropes to hold the old gun in 'er  
place—'Tss! 'Tss!  
For you all love the screw-guns . . .

Smokin' my pipe on the mountings, sniffin' the mornin'-cool,  
I climbs in my old brown gaiters along o' my old brown mule.  
The monkey can say what our road was—the wild-goat 'e  
knows where we passed.  
Stand easy, you long-eared old darlin's! Out drag-ropes!  
With shrapnel! Hold fast—'Tss! 'Tss!  
For you all love the screw-guns—the screw-guns they  
all love you!  
So when we take tea with a few guns, o' course you will  
know what to do—hoo! hoo!  
Jest send in your Chief an' surrender—it's worse if you  
fights or you runs:  
You may hide in the caves, they'll be only your graves,  
but you can't get away from the guns!

## CELLS

I've a head like a concertina, I've a tongue like a button-  
stick,  
I've a mouth like an old potato, and I'm more than a little  
sick,  
But I've had my fun o' the Corp'ral's Guard; I've made the  
cinders fly,  
And I'm here in the Clink for a thundering drink and black-  
ing the Corporal's eye.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

With a second-hand overcoat under my head,  
And a beautiful view of the yard,  
O it's pack-drill for me and a fortnight's C.B.  
For "drunk and resisting the Guard!"  
Mad drunk and resisting the Guard—  
'Strewth, but I socked it them hard!  
So it's pack-drill for me and a fortnight's C.B.  
For "drunk and resisting the Guard."

I started o' canteen porter, I finished o' canteen beer,  
But a dose o' gin that a mate slipped in, it was that that  
brought me here.  
'Twas that and an extry double Guard that rubbed my nose  
in the dirt—  
But I fell away with the Corp'ral's stock and the best of the  
Corp'ral's shirt.

I left my cap in a public-house, my boots in the public  
road,  
And Lord knows where—and I don't care—my belt and my  
tunic goed.  
They'll stop my pay, they'll cut away the stripes I used to  
wear,  
But I left my mark on the Corp'ral's face, and I think he'll  
keep it there!

My wife she cries on the barrack-gate, my kid in the barrack-  
yard.  
It ain't that I mind the Ord'ly-room—it's *that* that cuts so  
hard.  
I'll take my oath before them both that I will sure abstain,  
But as soon as I'm in with a mate and gin, I know I'll do it  
again!

With a second-hand overcoat under my head,  
And a beautiful view of the yard,  
Yes, it's pack-drill for me and a fortnight's C.B.  
For "drunk and resisting the Guard!"  
Mad drunk and resisting the Guard—  
'Strewth, but I socked it them hard!  
So it's pack-drill for me and a fortnight's C.B.  
For "drunk and resisting the Guard."

GUNGA DIN

**Y**ou may talk o' gin and beer  
 When you're quartered safe out 'ere,  
 An' you're sent to penny-fights an' Aldershot it;  
 But when it comes to slaughter  
 You will do your work on water,  
 An' you'll lick the bloomin' boots of 'im that's got it.  
 Now in Injia's sunny clime,  
 Where I used to spend my time  
 A-servin' of 'Er Majesty the Qucen,  
 Of all them blackfaced crew  
 The finest man I knew  
 Was our regimental bhisti, Gunga Din.  
     He was "Din! Din! Din!"  
 "You limpin' lump o' brick-dust, Gunga Din!  
     "Hi! Slippy *hitherao!*  
     "Water, get it! *Panee lao,*<sup>1</sup>  
 "You squidgy-nosed old idol, Gunga Din."

The uniform 'e wore  
 Was nothin' much before,  
 An' rather less than 'arf o' that be'ind,  
 For a piece o' twisty rag  
 An' a goatskin water-bag  
 Was all the field-equipment 'e could find.  
 When the sweatin' troop-train lay  
 In a sidin' through the day,  
 Where the 'eat would make your bloomin' eyebrows crawl,  
 We shouted "Harry By!"<sup>2</sup>  
 Till our throats were brick-dry,  
 Then we wopped 'im 'cause 'e couldn't serve us all.  
     It was "Din! Din! Din!"  
 "You 'eathen, where the mischief 'ave you been?  
     "You put some *juldee*<sup>3</sup> in it  
     "Or I'll *marrow*<sup>4</sup> you this minute  
 "If you don't fill up my helmet, Gunga Din!"

<sup>1</sup> Bring water swiftly.

<sup>2</sup> Be quick.

<sup>3</sup> O brother.

<sup>4</sup> Hit you.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

'E would dot an' carry one  
Till the longest day was done;  
An' 'e didn't seem to know the use o' fear.  
If we charged or broke or cut,  
You could bet your bloomin' nut,  
'E'd be waitin' fifty paces right flank rear.  
With 'is mussick<sup>1</sup> on 'is back,  
'E would skip with our attack,  
An' watch us till the bugles made "Retire,"  
An' for all 'is dirty 'ide  
'E was white, clear white, inside  
When 'e went to tend the wounded under fire!  
    It was "Din! Din! Din!"  
    With the bullets kickin' dust-spots on the green.  
    When the cartridges ran out,  
    You could hear the front-ranks shout,  
    "Hi! ammunition-mules an' Gunga Din!"

I shan't forgit the night  
When I dropped be'ind the fight  
With a bullet where my belt-plate should 'a' been.  
I was chokin' mad with thirst,  
An' the man that spied me first  
Was our good old grinnin', gruntin' Gunga Din.  
'E lifted up my 'ead,  
An' he plugged me where I bled,  
An' 'e guv me 'arf-a-pint o' water green.  
It was crawlin' and it stunk,  
But of all the drinks I've drunk,  
I'm gratefulest to one from Gunga Din.  
    It was "Din! Din! Din!"  
    "'Ere's a beggar with a bullet through 'is spleen;  
    "'E's chawin' up the ground,  
    "'An' 'e's kickin' all around:  
    " For Gawd's sake git the water, Gunga Din!"

'E carried me away  
To where a dooli lay,  
An' a bullet come an' drilled the beggar clean.

<sup>1</sup> Water-skin.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

'E put me safe inside,  
 An' just before 'e died,  
 "I 'ope you liked your drink," sez Gunga Din.  
 So I'll meet 'im later on  
 At the place where 'e is gone—  
 Where it's always double drill and no canteen.  
 'E'll be squattin' on the coals  
 Givin' drink to poor damned souls,  
 An' I'll get a swig in hell from Gunga Din!  
     Yes, Din! Din! Din!  
 You Lazarushian-leather Gunga Din!  
     Though I've belted you and flayed you,  
     By the livin' Gawd that made you,  
 You're a better man than I am, Gunga Din!

## OONTS

### *(Northern India Transport Train)*

**W**OT makes the soldier's 'eart to penk, wot makes 'im to  
 perspire?  
 It isn't standin' up to charge nor lyin' down to fire;  
 But it's everlastin' waitin' on a everlastin' road  
 For the commissariat camel an' 'is commissariat load.  
     O the oont,<sup>1</sup> O the oont, O the commissariat oont!  
     With 'is silly neck a-bobbin' like a basket full o'  
     snakes;  
 We packs 'im like an idol, an' you ought to 'ear 'im  
 grunt,  
 An' when we get 'im loaded up 'is blessed girth-rope  
 breaks.

Wot makes the rear-guard swear so 'ard when night is drorin'  
 in,  
 An' every native follower is shiverin' for 'is skin?  
 It ain't the chanst o' being rushed by Paythans from the  
 'ills,  
 It's the commissariat camel puttin' on 'is bloomin' frills!

<sup>1</sup> Camel :—oo is pronounced like u in "bull," but by Mr. Atkins to  
 rhyme with "front."

DEFINITIVE EDITION

O the oont, O the oont, O the hairy scary oont!  
A-trippin' over tent-ropes when we've got the night  
alarm!  
We socks 'im with a stretcher-pole an' 'eads 'im off in  
front,  
An' when we've saved 'is bloomin' life 'e chaws our  
bloomin' arm.

The 'orse 'e knows above a bit, the bullock's but a fool,  
The elephant's a gentleman, the battery-mule's a mule;  
But the commissariat cam-u-el, when all is said an' done,  
'E's a devil an' a ostrich an' a orphan-child in one.  
O the oont, O the oont, O the Gawd-forsaken oont!  
The lumpy-'umpy 'ummin'-bird a-singin' where 'e  
lies,  
'E's blocked the whole division from the rear-guard to  
the front,  
An' when we get him up again—the beggar goes an'  
dies!

'E'll gall an' chafe an' lame an' fight—'e smells most awful  
vile.  
'E'll lose 'isself for ever if you let 'im stray a mile.  
'E's game to graze the 'ole day long an' 'owl the 'ole night  
through,  
An' when 'e comes to greasy ground 'e splits 'isself in two.  
O the oont, O the oont, O the floppin', droppin' oont,  
When 'is long legs give from under an' 'is meltin' eye  
is dim!  
The Tribes is up be'ind us, and the Tribes is out in  
front—  
It ain't no jam for Tommy, but it's kites an' crows for  
'im.

So when the cruel march is done, an' when the roads is blind,  
An' when we sees the camp in front an' 'ears the shots be'ind,  
Ho! then we strips 'is saddle off, and all 'is woes is past.  
'E thinks on us that used 'im so, and gets revenge at last.  
O the oont, O the oont, O the floatin', bloatin' oont!  
The late lamented camel in the water-cut 'e lies;  
We keeps a mile be'ind 'im an' we keeps a mile in front,  
But 'e gets into the drinkin'-casks, and then o' course  
we dies!



LOOT

**I**F YOU'VE ever stole a pheasant-egg be'ind the keeper's  
back,

If you've ever snigged the washin' from the line,  
If you've ever crammed a gander in your bloomin' 'aversack,  
You will understand this little song o' mine.

But the service rules are 'ard, an' from such we are debarred,  
For the same with English morals does not suit.

(*Cornet*: Toot! toot!)

Why, they call a man a robber if 'e stuffs 'is marchin' clobber<sup>1</sup>  
With the—

(*Chorus*) Loo! loo! Lulu! lulu! Loo! loo! Loot! loot!  
loot!

Ow, the loot!

Bloomin' loot!

That's the thing to make the boys git up an' shoot!

It's the same with dogs an' men,

If you'd make 'em come again

Clap 'em forward with a Loo! loo! Lulu! Loot!

(*ff*) Whoopee! Tear 'im, puppy! Loo! loo! Lulu!  
Loot! loot! loot!

If you've knocked a nigger edgeways when 'e's thrustin' for  
your life,

You must leave 'im very careful where 'e fell;  
An' may thank your stars an' gaiters if you didn't feel 'is  
knife

That you ain't told off to bury 'im as well.  
Then the sweatin' Tommies wonder as they spade the beggars  
under

Why lootin' should be entered as a crime.  
So, if my song you'll 'ear, I will learn you plain an' clear  
'Ow to pay yourself for fightin' overtime.

(*Chorus*) With the loot, . . .

Now remember when you're 'acking round a gilded Burma  
god

That 'is eyes is very often precious stones;  
An' if you treat a nigger to a dose o' cleanin'-rod  
'E's like to show you everything 'e owns.

<sup>1</sup> Clothes.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

When 'e won't prodooce no more, pour some water on the  
floor

Where you 'ear it answer 'ollow to the boot

(*Cornet*: Toot! toot!)

When the ground begins to sink, shove your baynick down  
the chink,

An' you're sure to touch the—

(*Chorus*) Loo! loo! Lulu! Loot! loot! loot!

Ow, the loot! . . .

When from 'ouse to 'ouse you're 'unting, you must always  
work in pairs—

It 'alves the gain, but safer you will find—

For a single man gets bottled on them twisty-wisty stairs,

An' a woman comes and clobbs 'im from be'ind.

When you've turned 'em inside out, an' it seems beyond a  
doubt

As if there weren't enough to dust a flute

(*Cornet*: Toot! toot!)

Before you sling your 'ook, at the 'ousetops take a look,

For it's underneath the tiles they 'ide the loot.

(*Chorus*) Ow, the loot! . . .

You can mostly square a Sergint an' a Quartermaster too,

If you only take the proper way to go.

I could never keep my pickin's, but I've learned you all I  
knew—

But don't you never say I told you so.

An' now I'll bid good-bye, for I'm gettin' rather dry,

An' I see another tunin' up to toot

(*Cornet*: Toot! toot!)

So 'ere's good-luck to those that wears the Widow's clo'es,

An' the Devil send 'em all they want o' loot!

(*Chorus*) Yes, the loot,  
Bloomin' loot!

In the tunic an' the mess-tin an' the boot!

It's the same with dogs an' men,

If you'd make 'em come again

(*fff*) Whoop 'em forward with a Loo! loo! Lulu! Loot!  
loot! loot!

Heeya! Sick 'im, puppy! Loo! loo! Lulu! Loot!  
loot! loot!

"SNARLEYOW"

THIS 'appened in a battle to a batt'ry of the corps  
Which is first among the women an' amazin' first in  
war;

An' what the bloomin' battle was I don't remember now,  
But Two's off-lead <sup>1</sup> 'e answered to the name o' *Snarleyow*.  
Down in the Infantry, nobody cares;  
Down in the Cavalry, Colonel 'e swears;  
But down in the lead with the wheel at the flog  
Turns the bold Bombardier to a little whipped dog!

They was movin' into action, they was needed very sore,  
To learn a little schoolin' to a native army-core,  
They 'ad nipped against an uphill, they was tuckin' down the  
brow,  
When a tricky trundlin' roundshot give the knock to *Snarley-*  
*ow*.

'They cut 'im loose an' left 'im—'e was almost tore in two—  
But he tried to follow after as a well-trained 'orse should do;  
'E went an' fouled the limber, an' the Driver's Brother  
squeals:

"Pull up, pull up for *Snarleyow*—'is head's between 'is 'eels!"

The Driver 'umped 'is shoulder, for the wheels was goin'  
round,  
An' there ain't no "Stop, conductor!" when a batt'ry's  
chargin' ground;  
Sez 'e: "I broke the beggar in, an' very sad I feels,  
"But I couldn't pull up, not for *you*—your 'ead between  
your 'eels!"

'E 'adn't 'ardly spoke the word, before a droppin' shell  
A little right the batt'ry an' between the sections fell;  
An' when the smoke 'ad cleared away, before the limber-  
wheels,  
There lay the Driver's Brother with 'is 'ead between 'is 'eels.

<sup>1</sup> The leading right-hand horse of No. 2 gun.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Then sez the Driver's Brother, an' 'is words was very plain,  
"For Gawd's own sake get over me, an' put me out o' pain."  
They saw 'is wounds was mortal, an' they judged that it was  
best,  
So they took an' drove the limber straight across 'is back an'  
chest.

The Driver 'e give nothin' 'cept a little coughin' grunt,  
But 'e swung 'is 'orses 'andsome when it came to "Action  
Front!"

An' if one wheel was juicy, you may lay your Monday head  
'Twas juicier for the niggers when the case begun to spread.

The moril of this story, it is plainly to be seen:  
You 'aven't got no families when servin' of the Queen—  
You 'aven't got no brothers, fathers, sisters, wives, or sons—  
If you want to win your battles take an' work your bloomin'  
guns!

Down in the Infantry, nobody cares;  
Down in the Cavalry, Colonel 'e swears;  
But down in the lead with the wheel at the flog  
Turns the bold Bombardier to a little whipped dog!

## THE WIDOW AT WINDSOR

'AVE you 'eard o' the Widow at Windsor  
With a hairy gold crown on 'er 'ead?  
She 'as ships on the foam—she 'as millions at 'ome,  
An' she pays us poor beggars in red.  
(Ow, poor beggars in red!)

There's 'er nick on the cavalry 'orses,  
There's 'er mark on the medical stores—  
An' 'er troopers you'll find with a fair wind be'ind  
That takes us to various wars.  
(Poor beggars!—barbarious wars!)

Then 'ere's to the Widow at Windsor,  
An' 'ere's to the stores an' the guns,  
The men an' the 'orses what makes up the forces  
O' Missis Victorier's sons.  
(Poor beggars! Victorier's sons!)

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Walk wide o' the Widow at Windsor,  
 For 'alf o' Creation she owns:  
 We 'ave bought 'er the same with the sword an' the flame,  
 An' we've salted it down with our bones.  
 (Poor beggars!--it's blue with our bones!)

Hands off o' the sons o' the Widow,  
 Hands off o' the goods in 'er shop,  
 For the Kings must come down an' the Emperors frown  
 When the Widow at Windsor says "Stop!"  
 (Poor beggars!--we're sent to say "Stop!")

Then 'ere's to the Lodge o' the Widow,  
 From the Pole to the 'Tropics it runs --  
 To the Lodge that we tile with the rank an' the file,  
 An' open in form with the guns.  
 (Poor beggars!--it's always they guns!)

We 'ave 'eard o' the Widow at Windsor,  
 It's safest to leave 'er alone:  
 For 'er sentries we stand by the sea an' the land  
 Wherever the bugles are blown.  
 (Poor beggars!--an' don't we get blown!)

Take 'old o' the Wings o' the Mornin',  
 An' flop round the earth till you're dead;  
 But you won't get away from the tune that they play  
 To the bloomin' old rag over'ead.  
 (Poor beggars!--it's 'ot over'ead!)

Then 'ere's to the Sons o' the Widow,  
 Wherever, 'owever they roam.  
 'Ere's all they desire, an' if they require  
 A speedy return to their 'ome.  
 (Poor beggars!--they'll never see 'ome!)

## BELTS

**T**HERE was a row in Silver Street that's near to Dublin  
 Quay,  
 Between an Irish regiment an' English cavalree;  
 It started at Revelly an' it lasted on till dark:  
 The first man dropped at Harrison's, the last forninst the  
 Park.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

For it was:—"Belts, belts, belts, an' that's one for  
you!"  
An' it was "Belts, belts, belts, an' that's done for  
you!"  
O buckle an' tongue  
Was the song that we sung  
From Harrison's down to the Park!

There was a row in Silver Street—the regiments was out,  
They called us "Delhi Rebels," an' we answered "Threes  
about!"

That drew them like a hornets' nest—we met them good an'  
large,  
The English at the double an' the Irish at the charge.  
Then it was:—"Belts, &c."

There was a row in Silver Street—an' I was in it too;  
We passed the time o' day, an' then the belts went whirraru!  
I misremember what occurred, but, subsequent the storm,  
A *Freeman's Journal Supplement* was all my uniform.  
O it was:—"Belts, &c."

There was a row in Silver Street—they sent the Polis there,  
The English were too drunk to know, the Irish didn't care;  
But when they grew impertinent we simultaneous rose,  
Till half o' them was Liffey mud an' half was tattered clo'es.  
For it was:—"Belts, &c."

There was a row in Silver Street—it might ha' raged till now,  
But some one drew his side-arm clear, an' nobody knew how;  
'Twas Hogan took the point an' dropped; we saw the red  
blood run:  
An' so we all was murderers that started out in fun.  
While it was: "Belts, &c."

There was a row in Silver Street—but that put down the  
shine,  
Wid each man whisperin' to his next:—" 'Twas never work  
o' mine!"  
We went away like beaten dogs, an' down the street we bore  
him,  
The poor dumb corpse that couldn't tell the bhoys were sorry  
for him.  
When it was:—"Belts, &c."

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There was a row in Silver Street—it isn't over yet,  
For half of us are under guard wid punishments to get;  
'Tis all a merricle to me as in the Clink I lie:  
There was a row in Silver Street—begod, I wonder why!  
    But it was:—"Belts, belts, belts, an' that's one for  
        you!"  
    An' it was "Belts, belts, belts, an' that's done for  
        you!"  
    O buckle an' tongue  
    Was the song that we sung  
    From Harrison's down to the Park!

THE YOUNG BRITISH SOLDIER

WHEN the 'arf-made recruity goes out to the East  
'E acts like a babe an' 'e drinks like a beast,  
An' 'e wonders because 'e is frequent deceased  
    Ere 'e's fit for to serve as a soldier.  
    Serve, serve, serve as a soldier,  
    Serve, serve, serve as a soldier,  
    Serve, serve, serve as a soldier,  
    So-oldier of the Queen!

Now all you recruities what's drafted to-day,  
You shut up your rag-box an' 'ark to my lay.  
An' I'll sing you a soldier as far as I may:  
    A soldier what's fit for a soldier.  
    Fit, fit, fit for a soldier . . .

First mind you steer clear o' the grog-sellers' huts,  
For they sell you Fixed Bay'nets that rots out your guts—  
Ay, drink that 'ud eat the live steel from your butts—  
    An' it's bad for the young British soldier.  
    Bad, bad, bad for the soldier . . .

When the cholera comes—as it will past a doubt—  
Keep out of the wet and don't go on the shout,  
For the sickness gets in as the liquor dies out,  
    An' it crumples the young British soldier.  
    Crum-, crum-, crumples the soldier . . .

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

But the worst o' your foes is the sun over'ead:  
You *must* wear your 'elmet for all that is said:  
If 'e finds you uncovered 'e'll knock you down dead,  
    An' you'll die like a fool of a soldier.  
    Fool, fool, fool of a soldier . . .

If you're cast for fatigue by a sergeant unkind,  
Don't grouse like a woman nor crack on nor blind;  
Be handy and civil, and then you will find  
    That it's beer for the young British soldier.  
    Beer, beer, beer for the soldier . . .

Now, if you must marry, take care she is old—  
A troop-sergeant's widow's the nicest, I'm told,  
For beauty won't help if your rations is cold,  
    Nor love ain't enough for a soldier.  
    'Nough, 'nough, 'nough for a soldier . . .

If the wife should go wrong with a comrade, be loth  
To shoot when you catch 'em—you'll swing, on my oath!—  
Make 'im take 'er and keep 'er: that's Hell for them both,  
    An' you're shut o' the curse of a soldier.  
    Curse, curse, curse of a soldier . . .

When first under fire an' you're wishful to duck  
Don't look nor take 'eed at the man that is struck.  
Be thankful you're livin', and trust to your luck  
    And march to your front like a soldier.  
    Front, front, front like a soldier . . .

When 'arf of your bullets fly wide in the ditch,  
Don't call your Martini a cross-eyed old bitch;  
She's human as you are—you treat her as sich,  
    An' she'll fight for the young British soldier.  
    Fight, fight, fight for the soldier . . .

When shakin' their bustles like ladies so fine,  
The guns o' the enemy wheel into line,  
Shoot low at the limbers an' don't mind the shine,  
    For noise never startles the soldier.  
    Start-, start-, startles the soldier . . .



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

If your officer's dead and the sergeants look white,  
Remember it's ruin to run from a fight:  
So take open order, lie down, and sit tight,  
And wait for supports like a soldier.  
Wait, wait, wait like a soldier . . .

When you're wounded and left on Afghanistan's plains,  
And the women come out to cut up what remains,  
Jest roll to your rifle and blow out your brains  
An' go to your Gawd like a soldier.  
Go, go, go like a soldier,  
Go, go, go like a soldier,  
Go, go, go like a soldier,  
So-oldier *of* the Queen!

### MANDALAY

**B**Y THE old Moulmein Pagoda, lookin' lazy at the sea,  
There's a Burma girl a-settin', and I know she thinks o'  
me;  
For the wind is in the palm-trees, and the temple-bells they  
say:  
"Come you back, you British soldier; come you back to  
Mandalay!"  
Come you back to Mandalay,  
Where the old Flotilla lay:  
Can't you 'ear their paddles chunkin' from Rangoon  
to Mandalay?  
On the road to Mandalay,  
Where the flyin'-fishes play,  
An' the dawn comes up like thunder outer China  
'crost the Bay!

'Er petticoat was yaller an' 'er little cap was green,  
An' 'er name was Supi-yaw-lat—jes' the same as Theebaw's  
Queen,  
An' I seed her first a-smokin' of a whackin' white cheroot,  
An' a-wastin' Christian kisses on an 'eathen idol's foot:

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Bloomin' idol made o' mud—  
Wot they called the Great Gawd Budd—  
Plucky lot she cared for idols when I kissed 'er  
where she stud!  
On the road to Mandalay . . .

When the mist was on the rice-fields an' the sun was droppin'  
slow,  
She'd git 'er little banjo an' she'd sing "*Kulla-lo-lo!*"  
With 'er arm upon my shoulder an' 'er cheek agin my  
cheek  
We useter watch the steamers an' the *hathis* pilin' teak.  
Elephints a-pilin' teak  
In the sludgy, sjudgy creek,  
Where the silence 'ung that 'eavy you was 'arf afraid  
to speak!  
On the road to Mandalay . . .

But that's all shove be'ind me—long ago an' fur away,  
An' there ain't no 'buses runnin' from the Bank to Mandalay;  
An' I'm learnin' 'ere in London what the ten-year soldier  
tells:  
"If you've 'eard the East a-callin', you won't never 'eed  
naught else."  
No! you won't 'eed nothin' else  
But them spicy garlic smells,  
An' the sunshine an' the palm-trees an' the tinkly  
temple-bells;  
On the road to Mandalay . . .

I am sick o' wastin' leather on these gritty pavin'-stones,  
An' the blasted English drizzle wakes the fever in my bones;  
Tho' I walks with fifty 'ousemaids outer Chelsea to the  
Strand,  
An' they talks a lot o' lovin', but wot do they understand?  
Beefy face an' grubby 'and—  
Law! wot do they understand?  
I've a neater, sweeter maiden in a cleaner, greener  
land!  
On the road to Mandalay . . .

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Ship me somewheres east of Suez, where the best is like the  
    worst,  
Where there aren't no Ten Commandments an' a man can  
    raise a thirst;  
For the temple-bells are callin', an' it's there that I would be—  
By the old Moulmein Pagoda, looking lazy at the sea;  
    On the road to Mandalay,  
    Where the old Flotilla lay,  
    With our sick beneath the awnings when we went  
        to Mandalay!  
    O the road to Mandalay,  
    Where the flyin'-fishes play,  
    An' the dawn comes up like thunder outer China  
        'crost the Bay!

### TROOPIN'

*(Old English Army in the East)*

TROOPIN', troopin', troopin' to the sea:  
'Ere's September come again—the six-year men are free.  
O leave the dead be'ind us, for they cannot come away  
To where the ship's a-coalin' up that takes us 'ome to-day.  
    We're goin' 'ome, we're goin' 'ome,  
    Our ship is *at* the shore,  
    An' you must pack your 'aversack,  
    For we won't come back no more.  
    Ho, don't you grieve for me,  
    My lovely Mary-Ann!  
    For I'll marry you yit on a fourp'ny bit  
    As a time-expired man.

The *Malabar's* in 'arbour with the *Junner* at 'er tail,  
An' the time-expired's waitin' of 'is orders for to sail.  
Ho! the weary waitin' when on Khyber 'ills we lay,  
But the time-expired's waitin' of 'is orders 'ome to-day.

They'll turn us out at Portsmouth wharf in cold an' wet an'  
    rain,  
All wearin' Injian cotton kit, but we will not complain.  
They'll kill us of pneumonia—for that's their little way—  
But damn the chills and fever, men, we're goin' 'ome to-day!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Troopin', troopin', winter's round again!  
See the new draf's pourin' in for the old campaign;  
Ho, you poor recruits, but you've got to earn your pay—  
What's the last from Lunnon, lads? We're goin' there to-day.

Troopin', troopin', give another cheer—  
'Ere's to English women an' a quart of English beer.  
The Colonel an' the Regiment an' all who've got to stay,  
Gawd's Mercy strike 'em gentle! Whoop! we're goin' 'ome  
to-day.

We're goin' 'ome, we're goin' 'ome,  
Our ship is *at* the shore,  
An' you must pack your 'aversack,  
For we won't come back no more.  
Ho, don't you grieve for me,  
My lovely Mary-Ann!  
For I'll marry you yit on a fourp'ny bit  
As a time-expired man.

## THE WIDOW'S PARTY

“**W**HERE have you been this while away,  
                    Johnnie, Johnnie?”  
Out with the rest on a picnic lay.  
                    Johnnie, my Johnnie, aha!  
They called us out of the barrack-yard  
To Gawd knows where from Gosport Hard,  
And you can't refuse when you get the card,  
                    And the Widow gives the party.  
                    (*Bugle: Ta—rara—ra-ra-rara!*)

“What did you get to eat and drink,  
                    Johnnie, Johnnie?”  
Standing water as thick as ink,  
                    Johnnie, my Johnnie, aha!  
A bit o' beef that were three year stored,  
A bit o' mutton as tough as a board,  
And a fowl we killed with a sergeant's sword,  
                    When the Widow give the party.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

“What did you do for knives and forks,  
                    Johnnie, Johnnie?”  
We carries 'em with us wherever we walks,  
                    Johnnie, my Johnnie, aha!  
And some was sliced and some was halved,  
And some was crimped and some was carved,  
And some was gutted and some was starved,  
                    When the Widow give the party.

“What ha' you done with half your mess,  
                    Johnnie, Johnnie?”  
They couldn't do more and they wouldn't do less.  
                    Johnnie, my Johnnie, aha!  
They ate their whack and they drank their fill,  
And I think the rations has made them ill,  
For half my comp'ny's lying still  
                    Where the Widow give the party.

“How did you get away—away,  
                    Johnnie, Johnnie?”  
On the broad o' my back at the end o' the day,  
                    Johnnie, my Johnnie, aha!  
I comed away like a bleedin' toff,  
For I got four niggers to carry me off,  
As I lay in the bight of a canvas trough,  
                    When the Widow give the party.

“What was the end of all the show,  
                    Johnnie, Johnnie?”  
Ask my Colonel, for I don't know,  
                    Johnnie, my Johnnie, aha!  
We broke a King and we built a road—  
A court-house stands where the Reg'ment goed.  
And the river's clean where the raw blood flowed  
                    When the Widow give the party.  
                    (*Bugle: Ta—rara—ra-ra-rara!*)

DEFINITIVE EDITION

FORD O' KABUL RIVER

KABUL town's by Kabul river—  
Blow the trumpet, draw the sword—  
There I lef' my mate for ever,  
Wet an' drippin' by the ford.  
Ford, ford, ford o' Kabul river,  
Ford o' Kabul river in the dark!  
There's the river up and brimmin', an' there's 'arf a  
squadron swimmin'  
'Cross the ford o' Kabul river in the dark.

Kabul town's a blasted place—  
Blow the trumpet, draw the sword—  
'Strewth I shan't forget 'is face  
Wet an' drippin' by the ford!  
Ford, ford, ford o' Kabul river,  
Ford o' Kabul river in the dark!  
Keep the crossing-stakes beside you, an' they will  
surely guide you  
'Cross the ford o' Kabul river in the dark.

Kabul town is sun and dust—  
Blow the trumpet, draw the sword—  
I'd ha' sooner drowned fust  
'Stead of 'im beside the ford.  
Ford, ford, ford o' Kabul river,  
Ford o' Kabul river in the dark!  
You can 'ear the 'orses threshin'; you can 'ear the  
men a-splashin',  
'Cross the ford o' Kabul river in the dark.

Kabul town was ours to take—  
Blow the trumpet, draw the sword—  
I'd ha' left it for 'is sake—  
'Im that left me by the ford.  
Ford, ford, ford o' Kabul river,  
Ford o' Kabul river in the dark!  
It's none so bloomin' dry there; ain't you never  
comin' nigh there,  
'Cross the ford o' Kabul river in the dark?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Kabul town'll go to hell—  
 Blow the trumpet, draw the sword—  
 'Fore I see him 'live an' well—  
 'Im the best beside the ford.  
     Ford, ford, ford o' Kabul river,  
     Ford o' Kabul river in the dark!  
 Gawd 'elp 'em if they blunder, for their boots'll pull  
     'em under,  
 By the ford o' Kabul river in the dark.

Turn your 'orse from Kabul town—  
 Blow the trumpet, draw the sword—  
 'Im an' 'arf my troop is down,  
 Down and drowned by the ford.  
     Ford, ford, ford o' Kabul river,  
     Ford o' Kabul river in the dark!  
 There's the river low an' fallin', but it ain't no use  
     a-callin'  
 'Cross the ford o' Kabul river in the dark!

## GENTLEMEN-RANKERS

**T**O THE legion of the lost ones, to the cohort of the  
 damned,  
 To my brethren in their sorrow overseas,  
 Sings a gentleman of England cleanly bred, machinely  
 crammed,  
 And a trooper of the Empress, if you please.  
 Yes, a trooper of the forces who has run his own six horses,  
 And faith he went the pace and went it blind,  
 And the world was more than kin while he held the ready tin,  
 But to-day the Sergeant's something less than kind.  
     We're poor little lambs who've lost our way,  
     Baa! Baa! Baa!  
     We're little black sheep who've gone astray,  
     Baa—aa—aa!  
 Gentlemen-rankers out on the spree,  
 Damned from here to Eternity,  
 God ha' mercy on such as we,  
     Baa! Yah! Bah!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Oh, it's sweet to sweat through stables, sweet to empty  
kitchen slops,  
And it's sweet to hear the tales the troopers tell,  
To dance with blowzy housemaids at the regimental hops  
And thrash the cad who says you waltz too well.  
Yes, it makes you cock-a-hoop to be "Rider" to your troop,  
And branded with a blasted worsted spur,  
When you envy, O how keenly, one poor Tommy living  
cleanly  
Who blacks your boots and sometimes calls you "Sir."

If the home we never write to, and the oaths we never  
keep,  
And all we know most distant and most dear,  
Across the snoring barrack-room return to break our sleep,  
Can you blame us if we soak ourselves in beer?  
When the drunken comrade mutters and the great guard-  
lantern gutters  
And the horror of our fall is written plain,  
Every secret, self-revealing on the aching whitewashed  
ceiling,  
Do you wonder that we drug ourselves from pain?

We have done with Hope and Honour, we are lost to Love  
and Truth,  
We are dropping down the ladder rung by rung,  
And the measure of our torment is the measure of our  
youth.  
God help us, for we knew the worst too young!  
Our shame is clean repentance for the crime that brought the  
sentence,  
Our pride it is to know no spur of pride,  
And the Curse of Reuben holds us till an alien turf enfolds us  
And we die, and none can tell Them where we died.  
We're poor little lambs who've lost our way,  
Baa! Baa! Baa!  
We're little black sheep who've gone astray,  
Baa—aa—aa!  
Gentlemen-rankers out on the spree,  
Damned from here to Eternity,  
God ha' mercy on such as we,  
Baa! Yah! Bah!



ROUTE MARCHIN'

WE'RE marchin' on relief over Injia's sunny plains,  
 A little front o' Christmas-time an' just be'ind the  
 Rains;  
 Ho! get away, you bullock-man, you've 'eard the bugle  
 blowed,  
 There's a regiment a-comin' down the Grand Trunk Road;  
 With its best foot first  
 And the road a-sliding past,  
 An' every blooming campin'-ground exactly like  
 the last;  
 While the Big Drum says,  
 With 'is "*rowdy-dowdy-dow!*"—  
 "*Kiko kissywarsti* don't you *hamsher argy jow?*"<sup>1</sup>

Oh, there's them Injian temples to admire when you see.  
 There's the peacock round the corner an' the monkey up the  
 tree,  
 An' there's that rummy silver-grass a-wavin' in the wind,  
 An' the old Grand Trunk a-trailin' like a rifle-sling be'ind.  
 While it's best foot first, . . .

At half-past five's Revelly, an' our tents they down must  
 come,  
 Like a lot of button-mushrooms when you pick 'em up at  
 'ome.  
 But it's over in a minute, an' at six the column starts,  
 While the women and the kiddies sit an' shiver in the carts.  
 An' it's best foot first, . . .

Oh, then it's open order, an' we lights our pipes an' sings,  
 An' we talks about our rations an' a lot of other things,  
 An' we thinks o' friends in England, an' we wonders what  
 they're at,  
 An' 'ow they would admire for to hear us sling the *bat*.<sup>2</sup>  
 An' it's best foot first, . . .

<sup>1</sup> Why don't you get on?

<sup>2</sup> Language. Thomas's first and firmest conviction is that he is a profound Orientalist and a fluent speaker of Hindustani. As a matter of fact, he depends largely on the sign-language.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

It's none so bad o' Sundays, when you're lyin' at your ease,  
To watch the kites a-wheelin' round them feather-'eaded  
trees,  
For although there ain't no women, yet there ain't no barrick-  
yards,  
So the officers goes shootin' an' the men they plays at cards.  
Till it's best foot first, . . .

So 'ark an' 'eed, you rookies, which is always grumblin' sore,  
'There's worser things than marchin' from Umballa to Cawn-  
pore;  
An' if your 'eels are blistered an' they feels to 'urt like 'ell,  
You drop some tallow in your socks an' that will make 'em  
well.  
For it's best foot first, . . .

We're marchin' on relief over Injia's coral strand,  
Eight 'undred fightin' Englishmen, the Colonel, and the Band;  
Ho! get away, you bullock-man, you've 'eard the bugle  
blowed,  
There's a regiment a-comin' down the Grand Trunk Road;  
With its best foot first  
And the road a-sliding past,  
An' every bloomin' campin'-ground exactly like  
the last;  
While the Big Drum says,  
With 'is "*rowdy-dowdy-dow!*"—  
"*Kiko kissywarsti don't you hamsher argy jow?*"

## PRIVATE ORTHERIS'S SONG

("The Courting of Dinah Shadd"—*Life's Handicap*)

**M**Y GIRL she give me the go onest,  
When I was a London lad;  
An' I went on the drink for a fortnight,  
An' then I went to the bad.  
The Queen she give me a shillin'  
To fight for 'er over the seas;  
But Guv'ment built me a fever-trap,  
An' Injia give me disease.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

(Chorus) Ho! don't you 'eed what a girl says,  
 An' don't you go for the beer;  
 But I was an ass when I was at grass,  
 An' that is why I'm 'ere.

I fired a shot at a Afghan,  
 The beggar 'e fired again,  
 An' I lay on my bed with a 'ole in my 'ed,  
 An' missed the next campaign!  
 I up with my gun at a Burman  
 Who carried a bloomin' *dah*,  
 But the cartridge stuck and the bay'nit bruk,  
 An' all I got was the scar.

(Chorus) Ho! don't you aim at a Afghan,  
 When you stand on the skyline clear;  
 An' don't you go for a Burman  
 If none o' your friends is near.

I served my time for a Corp'ral,  
 An' wetted my stripes with pop,  
 For I went on the bend with a intimate friend,  
 An' finished the night in the "shop."  
 I served my time for a Sergeant;  
 The Colonel 'e sez "No!  
 The most you'll see is a full C.B."  
 An' . . . very next night 'twas so!

(Chorus) Ho! don't you go for a Corp'ral  
 Unless your 'ed is clear;  
 But I was an ass when I was at grass,  
 An' that is why I'm 'ere.

I've tasted the luck o' the Army  
 In barrack an' camp an' clink,  
 An' I lost my tip through the bloomin' trip  
 Along o' the women an' drink.  
 I'm down at the heel o' my service,  
 An' when I am laid on the shelf,  
 My very worst friend from beginning to end  
 By the blood of a mouse was myself!

(Chorus) Ho! don't you 'eed what a girl says,  
 An' don't you go for the beer;  
 But I was an ass when I was at grass,  
 An' that is why I'm 'ere!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

SHILLIN' A DAY

**M**Y NAME is O'Kelly, I've heard the Revelly  
From Birr to Bareilly, from Leeds to Lahore,  
Hong-Kong and Peshawur,  
Lucknow and Etawah,  
And fifty-five more all endin' in "pore."  
Black Death and his quickness, the depth and the thickness  
Of sorrow and sickness I've known on my way,  
But I'm old and I'm nervis,  
I'm cast from the Service,  
And all I deserve is a shillin' a day.

(*Chorus*) Shillin' a day,  
Bloomin' good pay—  
Lucky to touch it, a shillin' a day!

Oh, it drives me half crazy to think of the days I  
Went slap for the Ghazi, my sword at my side,  
When we rode Hell-for-leather  
Both squadrons together,  
That didn't care whether we lived or we died.  
But it's no use despairin', my wife must go charin'  
An' me commissairin', the pay-bills to better,  
So if me you be'old  
In the wet and the cold,  
By the Grand Metropold, won't you give me a letter?

(*Full chorus*) Give 'im a letter—  
'Can't do no better,  
Late Troop-Sergeant-Major an'—runs with  
a letter!  
Think what 'e's been,  
Think what 'e's seen.  
Think of his pension an'—  
GAWD SAVE THE QUEEN!

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

“ BACK TO 'THE ARMY AGAIN ”

I'M 'ERE in a ticky ulster an' a broken billycock 'at,  
LA-layin' on to the sergeant I don't know a gun from a  
bat;  
My shirt's doin' duty for jacket, my sock's stickin' out o'  
my boots,  
An' I'm leearnin' the damned old goose-step along o' the new  
recruits!

Back to the Army again, sergeant,  
Back to the Army again.  
Don't look so 'ard, for I 'aven't no card,  
I'm back to the Army again!

I done my six years' service. 'Er Majesty sez: “ Good day—  
You'll please to come when you're rung for, an' 'ere's your  
'ole back-pay;  
An' fourpence a day for baccy--an' bloomin' gen'rous, too;  
An' now you can make your fortune—the same as your  
orf'cers do.”

Back to the Army again, sergeant,  
Back to the Army again.  
'Ow did I learn to do right-about-turn?  
I'm back to the Army again!

A man o' four-an'-twenty that 'asn't learned of a trade—  
Beside “ Reserve ” agin' him—'e'd better be never made.  
I tried my luck for a quarter, an' that was enough for me,  
An' I thought of 'Er Majesty's barricks, an' I thought I'd  
go an' see.

Back to the Army again, sergeant,  
Back to the Army again.  
'Tisn't my fault if I dress when I 'alt—  
I'm back to the Army again!

The sergeant arst no questions, but 'e winked the other eye,  
'E sez to me, “ 'Shun! ” an' I shunted, the same as in days  
gone by;  
For 'e saw the set o' my shoulders, an' I couldn't 'elp 'oldin'  
straight  
When me an' the other rookies come under the barrick-gate.

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

Back to the Army again, sergeant;

Back to the Army again.

'Oo would ha' thought I could carry an' port?<sup>1</sup>

I'm back to the Army again!

I took my bath, an' I wallered—for, Gawd, I needed it so!

I smelt the smell o' the barricks, I 'eard the bugles go.

I 'eard the feet on the gravel—the feet o' the men what drill—

An' I sez to my flutterin' 'eart-strings, I sez to 'em, "Peace, be still!"

Back to the Army again, sergeant,

Back to the Army again.

'Oo said I knew when the troopship was due?

I'm back to the Army again!

I carried my slops to the tailor; I sez to 'im, "None o' your lip!

You tight 'em over the shoulders, an' loose 'em over the 'ip,

For the set o' the tunic's 'orrid." An' 'e sez to me, "Strike me dead,

But I thought you was used to the business!" an' so 'e done what I said.

Back to the Army again, sergeant,

Back to the Army again.

Rather too free with my fancies? Wot—me?

I'm back to the Army again!

Next week I'll 'ave 'em fitted; I'll buy me a swagger-cane;

They'll let me free o' the barricks to walk on the Hoe again,

In the name o' William Parsons, that used to be Edward Clay,

An'—any pore beggar that wants it can draw my fourpence a day!

Back to the Army again, sergeant,

Back to the Army again.

Out o' the cold an' the rain, sergeant,

Out o' the cold an' the rain.

'Oo's there?

<sup>1</sup> Carry and port his rifle.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

A man that's too good to be lost you,  
A man that is 'andled an' made—  
A man that will pay what 'e cost you  
In learnin' the others their trade—parade!  
You're droppin' the pick o' the Army  
Because you don't 'elp 'em remain,  
But drives 'em to cheat to get out o' the street  
An' back to the Army again!

### "BIRDS OF PREY" MARCH

*(Troops for Foreign Service)*

**M**ARCH! The mud is cakin' good about our trousers.  
Front!—eyes front, an' watch the Colour-casin's  
drip.

Front! The faces of the women in the 'ouses  
Ain't the kind o' things to take aboard the ship.

*Cheer! An' we'll never march to victory.*

*Cheer! An' we'll never live to 'ear the cannon roar!*

*The Large Birds o' Prey*

*They will carry us away,*

*An' you'll never see your soldiers any more!*

Wheel! Oh, keep your touch; we're goin' round a corner.

Time!—mark time, an' let the men be'ind us close.

Lord! The transport's full, an' 'alf our lot not on 'er—

Cheer, Oh, cheer! We're going off where no one knows.

March! The Devil's none so black as 'e is painted!

Cheer! We'll 'ave some fun before we're put away.

'Alt an' 'and 'er out—a woman's gone and fainted!

Cheer! Get on!—Gawd 'elp the married men to-day!

Hoi! Come up, you 'ungry beggars, to yer sorrow.

('Ear them say they want their tea, an' want it quick!)

You won't have no mind for slingers,<sup>1</sup> not to-morrow—

No; you'll put the 'tween-decks stove out, bein' sick!

'Alt! The married kit 'as all to go before us!

'Course it's blocked the bloomin' gangway up again!

Cheer, Oh, cheer the 'Orse Guards watchin' tender o'er us,

Keepin' us since eight this mornin' in the rain!

<sup>1</sup> Bread soaked in tea.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Stuck in 'eavy marchin'-order, sopped and wringin'—

Sick, before our time to watch 'er 'eave an' fall,  
'Ere's your 'appy 'ome at last, an' stop your singin'.

'Alt! Fall in along the troop-deck! Silence all!

*Cheer! For we'll never live to see no bloomin' victory!*

*Cheer! An' we'll never live to 'ear the cannon roar!*

*(One cheer more!)*

*The jackal an' the kite*

*'Ave an 'ealthy appetite,*

*An' you'll never see your soldiers any more! ('Ip! Urroar!)*

*The eagle an' the crow*

*They are waitin' ever so,*

*An' you'll never see your soldiers any more! ('Ip! Urroar!)*

*Yes, the Large Birds o' Prey*

*They will carry us away,*

*An' you'll never see your soldiers any more!*

### “SOLDIER AN' SAILOR TOO”

*(The Royal Regiment of Marines)*

As I WAS spittin' into the Ditch aboard o' the *Crocodile*,  
I seed a man on a man-o'-war got up in the Reg'lars'  
style.

'E was scrapin' the paint from off of 'er plates, an' I sez to  
'im, “'Oo are you?”

Sez 'e, “I'm a Jolly—'Er Majesty's Jolly—soldier an' sailor  
tool!”

Now 'is work begins by Gawd knows when, and 'is work is  
never through;

'E isn't one o' the reg'lar Line, nor 'e isn't one of the crew.  
'E's a kind of a giddy harumfrodite—soldier an' sailor too!

An', after, I met 'im all over the world, a-doin' all kinds of  
things,

Like landin' 'isself with a Gatlin' gun to talk to them 'eathen  
kings;

'E sleeps in an 'ammick instead of a cot, an' 'e drills with the  
deck on a slew,

An' 'e sweats like a Jolly—'Er Majesty's Jolly—soldier  
an' sailor tool!



# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

For there isn't a job on the top o' the earth the beggar don't  
know, nor do—

You can leave 'im at night on a bald man's 'cad, to paddle 'is  
own canoe—

'E's a sort of a bloomin' cosmopolouse—soldier an' sailor too.

We've fought 'em in trooper, we've fought 'em in dock, and  
drunk with 'em in between,

When they called us the seasick scull'ry-maids, an' we called  
'em the Ass-Marines;

But, when we was down for a double fatigue, from Woolwich  
to Bernardmyo,

We sent for the Jollies—'Er Majesty's Jollies—soldier an'  
sailor too!

They think for 'emselves, an' they steal for 'emselves, and  
they never ask what's to do,

But they're camped an' fed an' they're up an' fed before our  
bugle's blew.

Ho! they ain't no limp'in' procrastitutes—soldier an' sailor too.

You may say we are fond of an 'arness-cut, or 'ootin' in  
barrick-yards,

Or startin' a Board School mutiny along o' the Onion Guards;<sup>1</sup>  
But once in a while we can finish in style for the ends of the  
earth to view,

The same as the Jollies—'Er Majesty's Jollies—soldier an'  
sailor too!

They come of our lot, they was brothers to us; they was  
beggars we'd met an' knew;

Yes, barrin' an inch in the chest an' the arm, they was doubles  
o' me an' you;

For they weren't no special chrysanthemums—soldier an'  
sailor too!

To take your chance in the thick of a rush, with firing all  
about,

Is nothing so bad when you've cover to 'and, an' leave an'  
likin' to shout;

But to stand an' be still to the *Birken'ead* drill<sup>2</sup> is a damn'  
tough bullet to chew,

<sup>1</sup> Long ago, a battalion of the Guards was sent to Bermuda as a punishment for riotous conduct in barracks.

<sup>2</sup> In 1852 the *Birkenhead* transport was sunk off Simon's Bay. The Marines aboard her went down as drawn up on her deck.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

An' they done it, the Jollies—'Er Majesty's Jollies—  
soldier an' sailor too!  
Their work was done when it 'adn't begun; they was younger  
nor me an' you;  
Their choice it was plain between drownin' in 'eaps an' bein'  
mopped by the screw,  
So they stood an' was still to the *Birken'ead* drill, soldier an'  
sailor too!

We're most of us liars, we're 'arf of us thieves, an' the rest  
are as rank as can be,  
But once in a while we can finish in style (which I 'ope it  
won't 'appen to me).  
But it makes you think better o' you an' your friends, an' the  
work you may 'ave to do,  
When you think o' the sinkin' *Victorier's*<sup>1</sup> Jollies—soldier an'  
sailor too!  
Now there isn't no room for to say ye don't know—they  
'ave proved it plain and true—  
That, whether it's Widow, or whether it's ship, Victorier's  
work is to do,  
An' they done it, the Jollies—'Er Majesty's Jollies—soldier  
an' sailor too!

## SAPPERS

(*Royal Engineers*)

WHEN the Waters were dried an' the Earth did appear,  
("It's all one," says the Sapper),  
The Lord He created the Engineer,  
Her Majesty's Royal Engineer,  
With the rank and pay of a Sapper!

When the Flood come along for an extra monsoon,  
'Twas Noah constructed the first pontoon  
To the plans of Her Majesty's, etc.

But after fatigue in the wet an' the sun,  
Old Noah got drunk, which he wouldn't ha' done  
If he'd trained with, etc.

<sup>1</sup> Admiral Tryon's flagship, sunk in collision in 1893.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

When the Tower o' Babel had mixed up men's *bat*,<sup>1</sup>  
Some clever civilian was managing that,  
An' none of, etc.

When the Jews had a fight at the foot of a hill,  
Young Joshua ordered the sun to stand still,  
For he was a Captain of Engineers, etc.

When the Children of Israel made bricks without straw,  
They were learnin' the regular work of our Corps,  
The work of, etc.

For ever since then, if a war they would wage,  
Behold us a-shinin' on history's page—  
First page for, etc.

We lay down their sidings an' help 'em entrain,  
An' we sweep up their mess through the bloomin' campaign,  
In the style of, etc.

They send us in front with a fuse an' a mine  
To blow up the gates that are rushed by the Line,  
But bent by, etc.

They send us behind with a pick an' a spade,  
To dig for the guns of a bullock-brigade  
Which has asked for, etc.

We work under escort in trousers and shirt,  
An' the heathen they plug us tail-up in the dirt,  
Annoying, etc.

We blast out the rock an' we shovel the mud,  
We make 'em good roads an'—they roll down the *khud*,<sup>2</sup>  
Reporting, etc.

We make 'em their bridges, their wells, an' their huts,  
An' the telegraph-wire the enemy cuts,  
An' it's blamed on, etc.

An' when we return, an' from war we would cease,  
They grudge us adornin' the billets of peace,  
Which are kept for, etc.

<sup>1</sup> Talk.

<sup>2</sup> Hillside.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

We build 'em nice barracks—they swear they are bad,  
That our Colonels are Methodist, married or mad,  
Insultin', etc.

They haven't no manners nor gratitude too,  
For the more that we help 'em, the less will they do,  
But mock at, etc.

Now the Line's but a man with a gun in his hand,  
An' Cavalry's only what horses can stand,  
When helped by, etc.

Artillery moves by the leave o' the ground,  
But *we* are the men that do something all round,  
For *we* are, etc.

I have stated it plain, an' my argument's thus  
("It's all one," says the Sapper)  
There's only one Corps which is perfect—that's us;  
An' they call us Her Majesty's Engineers,  
Her Majesty's Royal Engineers,  
With the rank and pay of a Sapper!

## THAT DAY

**I**T GOT beyond all orders an' it got beyond all 'ope;  
It got to shammin' wounded an' retirin' from the 'alt.  
'Ole companies was lookin' for the nearest road to slope;  
It were just a bloomin' knock-out—an' our fault!

*Now there ain't no chorus 'ere to give,  
Nor there ain't no band to play;  
An' I wish I was dead 'fore I done what I did,  
Or seen what I seed that day!*

We was sick o' bein' punished, an' we let 'em know it, too;  
An' a company-commander up an' 'it us with a sword,  
An' some one shouted "'Ook it!" an' it come to *sove-ki-poo*,  
An' we chucked our rifles from us—O my Gawd!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There was thirty dead an' wounded on the ground we  
wouldn't keep—

No, there wasn't more than twenty when the front begun  
to go—

But, Christ! along the line o' flight they cut us up like sheep,  
An' that was all we gained by doin' so!

I 'eard the knives be'ind me, but I dursn't face my man,  
Nor I don't know where I went to, 'cause I didn't 'alt to see,  
Till I 'eard a beggar squealin' out for quarter as 'e ran,  
An' I thought I knew the voice an'—it was me!

We was 'idin' under bedsteads more than 'arf a march away;  
We was lyin' up like rabbits all about the country-side;  
An' the Major cursed 'is Maker 'cause 'e'd lived to see that  
day,  
An' the Colonel broke 'is sword acrost, an' cried.

We was rotten 'fore we started—we was never disciplined;  
We made it out a favour if an order was obeyed.  
Yes, every little drummer 'ad 'is rights an' wrongs to mind,  
So we had to pay for teachin'—an' we paid!

The papers 'id it 'andsome, but you know the Army knows;  
We was put to groomin' camels till the regiments withdrew,  
An' they gave us each a medal for subduin' England's foes,  
An' I 'ope you like my song—because it's true!

*An' there ain't no chorus 'ere to give,  
Nor there ain't no band to play;  
But I wish I was dead 'fore I done what I did,  
Or seen what I seed that day!*

### “THE MEN THAT FOUGHT AT MINDEN”

*(In the Lodge of Instruction)*

THE men that fought at Minden, they was rookies in their  
time—

So was them that fought at Waterloo!  
All the 'ole command, yuss, from Minden to Maiwand,  
They was once dam' sweeps like you!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Then do not be discouraged, 'Eaven is your 'elper,  
We'll learn you not to forget;  
An' you musn't swear an' curse, or you'll only catch it  
worse,  
For we'll make you soldiers yet!*

The men that fought at Minden, they 'ad stocks beneath  
their chins,  
Six inch 'igh an' more;  
But fatigue it was their pride, and they *would* not be denied  
To clean the cook-'ouse floor.

The men that fought at Minden, they had anarchistic bombs  
Served to 'em by name of 'and-grenades;  
But they got it in the eye (same as you will by-an'-by)  
When they clubbed their field-parades.

The men that fought at Minden, they 'ad buttons up an'  
down,  
Two-an'-twenty dozen of 'em told;  
But they didn't grouse an' shirk at an hour's extry work,  
They kept 'em bright as gold.

The men that fought at Minden, they was armed with  
musketoons,  
Also, they was drilled by 'alberdiers.  
I don't know what they were, but the sergeants took good care  
They washed be'ind their ears.

The men that fought at Minden, they 'ad ever cash in 'and  
Which they did not bank nor save,  
But spent it gay an' free on their betters—such as me—  
For the good advice I gave.

The men that fought at Minden, they was civil—yuss, they  
was—  
Never didn't talk o' rights an' wrongs,  
But they got it with the toe (same as you will get it—so!)—  
For interrupting songs.

The men that fought at Minden, they was several other things  
Which I don't remember clear;  
But *that's* the reason why, now the six-year men are dry,  
The rooks will stand the beer!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*Then do not be discouraged, 'Eaven is your 'elper,  
We'll learn you not to forget.  
An' you mustn't swear an' curse, or you'll only catch it  
worse,  
An' we'll make you soldiers yet!*

*Soldiers yet, if you've got it in you—  
All for the sake of the Core;  
Soldiers yet, if we 'ave to skin you—  
Run an' get the beer, Johnny Raw—Johnny Raw!  
Ho! run an' get the beer, Johnny Raw!*

### CHOLERA CAMP

*(Infantry in India)*

**W**E'VE got the cholerer in camp—it's worse than forty  
fights;  
We're dyin' in the wilderness the same as Isrulites.  
It's before us, an' be'ind us, an' we cannot get away,  
An' the doctor's just reported we've ten more to-day!

*Oh, strike your camp an' go, the bugle's callin',  
The Rains are fallin'—  
The dead are bushed an' stoned to keep 'em safe below.  
The Band's a-doin' all she knows to cheer us;  
The Chaplain's gone and prayed to Gawd to 'ear us—  
To 'ear us—  
O Lord, for it's a-killin' of us so!*

Since August, when it started, it's been stickin' to our tail,  
Though they've 'ad us out by marches an' they've 'ad us  
back by rail;  
But it runs as fast as troop trains, and we cannot get away,  
An' the sick-list to the Colonel makes ten more to-day.

There ain't no fun in women nor there ain't no bite to drink;  
It's much too wet for shootin'; we can only march and think;  
An' at evenin', down the *nullahs*, we can 'ear the jackals say,  
“Get up, you rotten beggars, you've ten more to-day!”

DEFINITIVE EDITION

'Twould make a monkey cough to see our way o' doin'  
things—

Lieutenants takin' companies an' Captains takin' wings,  
An' Lances actin' Sergeants—eight file to obey—  
For we've lots o' quick promotion on ten deaths a day!

Our Colonel's white an' twitterly—'e gets no sleep nor food,  
But mucks about in 'orspital where nothing does no good.  
'E sends us 'eaps o' comforts, all bought from 'is pay—  
But there aren't much comfort 'andy on ten deaths a day.

Our Chaplain's got a banjo, an' a skinny mule 'e rides,  
An' the stuff he says an' sings us, Lord, it makes us split our  
sides!

With 'is black coat-tails a-bobbin' to *Ta-ra-ra Boom-der-ay!*  
'E's the proper kind o' *padre* for ten deaths a day.

An' Father Victor 'elps 'im with our Roman Catholicks—  
He knows an 'eap of Irish songs an' rummy conjurin'-tricks;  
An' the two they works together when it comes to play or  
pray.

So we keep the ball a-rollin' on ten deaths a day.

We've got the cholerer in camp—we've got it 'ot an'  
sweet.

It ain't no Christmas dinner, but it's 'elped an' we must  
eat.

We've gone beyond the funkin', 'cause we've found it doesn't  
pay,

An' we're rockin' round the Districk on ten deaths a day!

*Then strike your camp an' go, the Rains are fallin',*

*The Bugle's callin'!*

*The dead are bushed an' stoned to keep 'em safe below!*

*An' them that do not like it they can lump it,*

*An' them that cannot stand it they can jump it;*

*We've got to die somewhere—some way—some'ow—*

*We might as well begin to do it now!*

*Then, Number One, let down the tent-pole slow,*

*Knock out the pegs an' 'old the corners—so!*

*Fold in the flies, furl up the ropes, an' stow!*

*Oh, strike—oh, strike your camp an' go!*

*(Gawd 'elp us!)*



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### THE LADIES

I 'VE taken my fun where I've found it;  
I've rogued an' I've ranged in my time;  
I've 'ad my pickin' o' sweethearts,  
An' four o' the lot was prime.  
One was an 'arf-caste widow,  
One was a woman at Prome,  
One was the wife of a *jemadar-sais*,<sup>1</sup>  
An' one is a girl at 'ome.

*Now I aren't no 'and with the ladies,  
For, takin' 'em all along,  
You never can say till you've tried 'em,  
An' then you are like to be wrong.  
There's times when you'll think that you mightn't,  
There's times when you'll know that you might;  
But the things you will learn from the Yellow an' Brown,  
They'll 'elp you a lot with the White!*

I was a young un at 'Oogli,  
Shy as a girl to begin;  
Aggie de Castrer she made me,  
An' Aggie was clever as sin;  
Older than me, but my first un—  
More like a mother she were—  
Showed me the way to promotion an' pay,  
An' I learned about women from 'er!

Then I was ordered to Burma,  
Actin' in charge o' Bazar,  
An' I got me a tiddy live 'eathen  
Through buyin' supplies off 'er pa.  
Funny an' yellow an' faithful—  
Doll in a teacup she were—  
But we lived on the square, like a true-married pair,  
An' I learned about women from 'er!

<sup>1</sup> Head-groom.

# D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

Then we was shifted to Neemuch  
 (Or I might ha' been keepin' 'er now),  
 An' I took with a shiny she-devil,  
     The wife of a nigger at Mhow;  
 'Taught me the gipsy-folks' *bole*; <sup>1</sup>  
     Kind o' volcano she were,  
 For she knifed me one night 'cause I wished she was  
     white,  
 And I learned about women from 'er!

Then I come 'ome in a trooper,  
     'Long of a kid o' sixteen—  
 'Girl from a convent at Meerut,  
     The straightest I ever 'ave seen.  
 Love at first sight was 'er trouble,  
     *She* didn't know what it were;  
 An' I wouldn't do such, 'cause I liked 'er too much,  
     But—I learned about women from 'er!

I've taken my fun where I've found it,  
     An' now I must pay for my fun,  
 For the more you 'ave known o' the others  
     The less will you settle to one;  
 An' the end of it's sittin' and thinkin',  
     An' dreamin' Hell-fires to see;  
 So be warned by my lot (which I know you will not),  
     An' learn about women from me!

*What did the Colonel's Lady think?*  
*Nobody never knew.*  
*Somebody asked the Sergeant's Wife,*  
*An' she told 'em true!*  
*When you get to a man in the case,*  
*They're like as a row of pins—*  
*For the Colonel's Lady an' Judy O'Grady*  
*Are sisters under their skins!*

<sup>1</sup> Slang.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### BILL 'AWKINS

" 'AS ANYBODY seen Bill 'Awkins? "  
" Now 'ow in the devil would I know? "  
" 'E's taken my girl out walkin',  
    An' I've got to tell 'im so—  
        Gawd—bless—'im!  
    I've got to tell 'im so."  
  
" D'yer know what 'e's like, Bill 'Awkins? "  
    " Now what in the devil would I care? "  
" 'E's the livin', breathin' image of an organ-grinder's  
    monkey,  
    With a pound of grease in 'is 'air—  
        Gawd—bless—'im!  
    An' a pound o' grease in 'is 'air."  
  
" An' s'pose you met Bill 'Awkins,  
    Now what in the devil 'ud ye do? "  
" I'd open 'is cheek to 'is chin-strap buckle,  
    An' bung up 'is both eyes, too—  
        Gawd—bless—'im!  
    An' bung up 'is both eyes, too! "  
  
" Look 'ere, where 'e comes, Bill 'Awkins!  
    Now, what in the devil will you say? "  
" It isn't fit an' proper to be fightin' on a Sunday,  
    So I'll pass 'im the time o' day—  
        Gawd—bless—'im!  
    I'll pass 'im the time o' day! "

### THE MOTHER-LODGE

THERE was Rundle, Station Master,  
    An' Beazeley of the Rail,  
An' 'Ackman, Commissariat,  
    An' Donkin o' the Jail;  
An' Blake, Conductor-Sergeant,  
    Our Master twice was 'e,  
With 'im that kept the Europe-shop,  
    Old Framjee Eduljee.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Outside—"Sergeant! Sir! Salute! Salaam!"*

*Inside—"Brother," an' it doesn't do no 'arm.*

*We met upon the Level an' we parted on the Square,*

*An' I was Junior Deacon in my Mother-Lodge out there!*

We'd Bola Nath, Accountant,  
An' Saul the Aden Jew,  
An' Din Mohammed, draughtsman  
Of the Survey Office too;  
There was Babu Chuckerbutty,  
An' Amir Singh the Sikh,  
An' Castro from the fittin'-sheds,  
The Roman Catholick!

We 'adn't good regalia,  
An' our Lodge was old an' bare,  
But we knew the Ancient Landmarks,  
An' we kep' 'em to a hair;  
An' lookin' on it backwards  
It often strikes me thus,  
There ain't such things as infidels,  
Excep', per'aps, it's us.

For monthly, after Labour,  
We'd all sit down and smoke  
(We dursn't give no banquets,  
Lest a Brother's caste were broke),  
An' man on man got talkin'  
Religion an' the rest,  
An' every man comparin'  
Of the God 'e knew the best.

So man on man got talkin',  
An' not a Brother stirred  
Till mornin' waked the parrots  
An' that dam' brain-fever-bird;  
We'd say 'twas 'ighly curious,  
An' we'd all ride 'ome to bed,  
With Mo'ammed, God, an' Shiva  
Changin' pickets in our 'ead.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Full oft on Guv'ment service  
 This rovin' foot 'ath pressed,  
 An' bore fraternal greetin's  
 To the Lodges east an' west,  
 Accordin' as commanded,  
 From Kohat to Singapore,  
 But I wish that I might see them  
 In my Mother-Lodge once more!

I wish that I might see them,  
 My Brethren black an' brown,  
 With the trichies smellin' pleasant  
 An' the *hog-darn* <sup>1</sup> passin' down;  
 An' the old khansamah <sup>2</sup> snorin'  
 On the bottle-khana <sup>3</sup> floor,  
 Like a Master in good standing  
 With my Mother-Lodge once more.

*Outside—"Sergeant! Sir! Salute! Salaam!"*

*Inside—"Brother," an' it doesn't do no 'arm.*

*We met upon the Level an' we parted on the Square,*

*An' I was Junior Deacon in my Mother-Lodge out there!*

## "FOLLOW ME 'OME"

**T**HERE was no one like 'im, 'Orse or Foot,  
 Nor any o' the Guns I knew;  
 An' because it was so, why, o' course 'e went an' died,  
 Which is just what the best men do.

*So it's knock out your pipes an' follow me!  
 An' it's finish up your swipes an' follow me!  
 Oh, 'ark to the big drum callin',  
 Follow me—follow me 'ome!*

'Is mare she neighs the 'ole day long,  
 She paws the 'ole night through,  
 An' she won't take 'er feed 'cause o' waitin' for 'is step,  
 Which is just what a beast would do.

<sup>1</sup> Cigar-lighter.

<sup>2</sup> Butler.

<sup>3</sup> Pantry.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

'Is girl she goes with a bombardier  
Before 'er month is through;  
An' the banns are up in church, for she's got the beggar  
hooked,  
Which is just what a girl would do.

We fought 'bout a dog—last week it were—  
No more than a round or two;  
But I strook 'im cruel 'ard, an' I wish I 'adn't now,  
Which is just what a man can't do.

'E was all that I 'ad in the way of a friend,  
An' I've 'ad to find one new;  
But I'd give my pay an' stripe for to get the beggar back,  
Which it's just too late to do!

*So it's knock out your pipes an' follow me!  
An' it's finish up your swipes an' follow me!  
Oh, 'ark to the fifes a-crawlin'!  
Follow me—follow me 'ome!*

*Take 'im away! 'E's gone where the best men go.  
Take 'im away! An' the gun-wheels turnin' slow.  
Take 'im away! There's more from the place 'e come.  
Take 'im away, with the limber an' the drum.*

*For it's "Three rounds blank" an' follow me,  
An' it's "Thirteen rank" an' follow me;  
Oh, passin' the love o' women,  
Follow me—follow me 'ome!*

## THE SERGEANT'S WEDDIN'

'E WAS warned agin 'er—  
That's what made 'im look:  
She was warned agin' 'im—  
That is why she took.  
'Wouldn't 'ear no reason,  
'Went an' done it blind;  
We know all about 'em,  
They've got all to find!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*Cheer for the Sergeant's weddin' —  
Give 'em one cheer more!  
Grey gun-horses in the lando,  
An' a rogue is married to, etc.*

What's the use o' tellin'  
'Arf the lot she's been?  
'E's a bloomin' robber,  
An' 'e keeps canteen.  
'Ow did 'e get 'is buggy?  
Gawd, you needn't ask!  
'Made 'is forty gallon  
Out of every cask!

Watch 'im, with 'is 'air cut,  
Count us filin' by—  
Won't the Colonel praise 'is  
Pop—u—lar—i—ty!  
We 'ave scores to settle —  
Scores for more than beer;  
She's the girl to pay 'em—  
That is why we're 'ere!

See the Chaplain thinkin'?  
See the women smile?  
'Twig the married winkin'  
As they take the aisle?  
Keep your side-arms quiet,  
Dressin' by the Band.  
Ho! You 'oly beggars,  
Cough be'ind your 'and!

Now it's done an' over,  
'Ear the organ squeak,  
" 'Voice that breathed o'er Eden "—  
Ain't she got the cheek!  
White an' laylock ribbons,  
'Think yourself so fine!  
I'd pray Gawd to take yer  
'Fore I made yer mine!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Escort to the kerridge,  
Wish 'im luck, the brute!  
Chuck the slippers after—  
(Pity 'tain't a boot!)  
Bowin' like a lady,  
Blushin' like a lad—  
'Oo would say to see 'em  
Both is rotten bad?

*Cheer for the Sergeant's weddin'—  
Give 'em one cheer more!  
Grey gun-'orses in the lando,  
An' a rogue is married to, etc.*

### THE JACKET

*(Royal Horse Artillery)*

**T**HROUGH the Plagues of Egypt we was chasin' Arabi,  
Gettin' down an' shovin' in the sun;  
An' you might 'ave called us dirty, an' you might ha' called us  
dry,  
An' you might 'ave 'eard us talkin' at the gun.  
But the Captain 'ad 'is jacket, an' the jacket it was new—  
( 'Orse Gunners, listen to my song! )  
An' the wettin' of the jacket is the proper thing to do,  
Nor we didn't keep 'im waiting very long.

One day they gave us orders for to shell a sand redoubt,  
Loadin' down the axle-arms with case;  
But the Captain knew 'is dooty, an' he took the crackers out  
An' he put some proper liquor in its place.  
An' the Captain saw the shrapnel, which is six-an'-thirty  
clear.  
( 'Orse Gunners, listen to my song! )  
" Will you draw the weight," sez 'e, " or will you draw the  
beer? "  
An' we didn't keep 'im waiting very long.

*For the Captain, etc.*



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Then we trotted gentle, not to break the bloomin' glass,  
Though the Arabites 'ad all their ranges marked;  
But we dursn't 'ardly gallop, for the most was bottled Bass,  
An' we'd dreamed of it since we was disembarked.  
So we fired economic with the shells we 'ad in 'and,  
(Orse Gunners, listen to my song!)  
But the beggars under cover 'ad the impidence to stand,  
An' we couldn't keep 'em waitin' very long.

*And the Captain, etc.*

So we finished 'arf the liquor (an' the Captain took champagne),  
An' the Arabites was shootin' all the while;  
An' we left our wounded 'appy with the empties on the plain,  
An' we used the bloomin' guns for projectile!  
We limbered up an' galloped—there were nothin' else to do—  
(Orse Gunners, listen to my song!)  
An' the Battery come a-boundin' like a boundin' kangaroo,  
But they didn't watch us comin' very long.

*As the Captain, etc.*

We was goin' most extended—we was drivin' very fine,  
An' the Arabites were loosin' 'igh an' wide,  
Till the Captain took the glaxis with a rattlin' "right incline,"  
An' we dropped upon their 'eads the other side.  
Then we give 'em quarter—such as 'adn't up and cut  
(Orse Gunners, listen to my song!)  
An' the Captain stood a limberful of fizzy somethin' Brutt,  
But we didn't leave it fizzing very long.

*For the Captain, etc.*

We might ha' been court-martialled, but it all come out all right.  
When they signalled us to join the main command,  
There was every round expended, there was every gunner tight,  
An' the Captain waved a corkscrew in 'is 'and!

*But the Captain 'ad 'is jacket, etc.*

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### THE 'EATHEN

THE 'eathen in 'is blindness bows down to wood an'  
stone;  
'E don't obey no orders unless they is 'is own;  
'E keeps 'is side-arms awful: 'e leaves 'em all about,  
An' then comes up the Regiment an' pokes the 'eathen out.

*All along o' dirtiness, all along o' mess,  
All along o' doin' things rather-more-or-less,  
All along of abby-nay,<sup>1</sup> kul,<sup>2</sup> an' hazar-ho,<sup>3</sup>  
Mind you keep your rifle an' yourself jus' so!*

The young recruit is 'aughty—'e draf's from Gawd knows  
where;  
They bid 'im show 'is stockin's an' lay 'is mattress square;  
'E calls it bloomin' nonsense—'e doesn't know, no more—  
An' thenup comes 'is Company an' kicks 'im round the floor!

The young recruit is 'ammered—'e takes it very hard;  
'E 'angs 'is 'ead an' mutters—'e sulks about the yard;  
'E talks o' "cruel tyrants" which 'e'll swing for by-an'-by,  
An' the others 'ears an' mocks 'im, an' the boy goes orf to cry.

The young recruit is silly—'e thinks o' suicide.  
'E's lost 'is gutter-devil; 'e 'asn't got 'is pride;  
But day by day they kicks 'im, which 'elps 'im on a bit,  
Till 'e finds 'isself one mornin' with a full an' proper kit.

*Gettin' clear o' dirtiness, gettin' done with mess,  
Gettin' shut o' doin' things rather-more-or-less;  
Not so fond of abby-nay, kul, nor hazar-ho,  
Learns to keep 'is rifle an' 'isself jus' so!*

The young recruit is 'appy—'e throws a chest to suit;  
You see 'im grow mustaches; you 'ear 'im slap 'is boot.  
'E learns to drop the "bloodies" from every word 'e slings,  
An' 'e shows an 'ealthy brisket when 'e strips for bars an'  
rings.

<sup>1</sup> Not now.

<sup>2</sup> To-morrow.

<sup>3</sup> Wait a bit.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

The cruel-tyrant-sergeants they watch 'im 'arf a year;  
 They watch 'im with 'is comrades, they watch 'im with 'is  
 beer;  
 They watch 'im with the women at the regimental dance,  
 And the cruel-tyrant-sergeants send 'is name along for  
 "Lance."

An' now 'e's 'arf o' nothin', an' all a private yet,  
 'Is room they up an' rags 'im to see what they will get.  
 They rags 'im low an' cunnin', each dirty trick they can,  
 But 'e learns to sweat 'is temper an' 'e learns to sweat 'is man.

An', last, a Colour-Sergeant, as such to be obeyed,  
 'E schools 'is men at cricket, 'e tells 'em on parade;  
 They sees 'im quick an' 'andy, uncommon set an' smart,  
 An' so 'e talks to oficers which 'ave the Core at 'cart.

'E learns to do 'is watchin' without it showin' plain;  
 'E learns to save a dummy, an' shove 'im straight again;  
 'E learns to check a ranker that's buyin' leave to shirk;  
 An' 'e learns to make men like 'im so they'll learn to like their  
 work.

An' when it comes to marchin' he'll see their socks are right,  
 An' when it comes to action 'e shows 'em how to sight.  
 'E knows their ways of thinkin' and just what's in their mind;  
 'E knows when they are takin' on an' when they've fell be'ind.

'E knows each talkin' corp'ral that leads a squad astray;  
 'E feels 'is innards 'eavin', 'is bowels givin' way;  
 'E sees the blue-white faces all tryin' 'ard to grin,  
 An' 'e stands an' waits an' suffers till it's time to cap 'em in.

An' now the hugly bullets come peckin' through the dust,  
 An' no one wants to face 'em, but every beggar must;  
 So, like a man in irons, which isn't glad to go,  
 They moves 'em off by companies uncommon stiff an' slow.

Of all 'is five years' schoolin' they don't remember much  
 Excep' the not retreatin', the step an' keepin' touch.  
 It looks like teachin' wasted when they duck an' spread an'  
 'op—  
 But if 'e 'adn't learned 'em they'd be all about the shop.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

An' now it's " 'Oo goes backward? " an' now it's " 'Oo comes on? "

And now it's " Get the doolies," an' now the Captain's gone;  
An' now it's bloody murder, but all the while they 'ear  
'Is voice, the same as barrick-drill, a-shepherdin' the rear.

'E's just as sick as they are, 'is 'eart is like to split,  
But 'e works 'em, works 'em, works 'em till he feels 'em take  
the bit;

The rest is 'oldin' steady till the watchful bugles play,  
An' 'e lifts 'em, lifts 'em, lifts 'em through the charge that  
wins the day!

*The 'eathen in 'is blindness bows down to wood an' stone ;  
'E don't obey no orders unless they is 'is own.  
The 'eathen in 'is blindness must end where 'e began,  
But the backbone of the Army is the Non-commissioned Man !*

*Keep away from dirtiness—keep away from mess,  
Don't get into doin' things rather-more-or-less !  
Let's ha' done with abby-nay, kul, and hazar-ho ;  
Mind you keep your rifle an' yourself jus' so !*

## THE SHUT-EYE SENTRY

SEZ the Junior Orderly Sergeant  
To the Senior Orderly Man:

" Our Orderly Orf'cer's *hokee-mut*,<sup>1</sup>

" You 'elp 'im all you can.

" For the wine was old and the night is cold,

" An' the best we may go wrong;

" So, 'fore 'e gits to the sentry-box,

" You pass the word along."

So it was " Rounds! What Rounds? " at two of a frosty night,  
'E's 'oldin' on by the sergeant's sash, but, sentry, shut your  
eye.

An' it was " Pass! All's well! Oh, ain't 'e drippin' tight!  
'E'll need an affidavit pretty badly by-an'-by."

<sup>1</sup> Very drunk.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

The moon was white on the barracks,  
 The road was white an' wide,  
 An' the Orderly Orficer took it all,  
 An' the ten-foot ditch beside.  
 An' the corporal pulled an' the sergeant pushed,  
 An' the three they danced along,  
 But I'd shut my eyes in the sentry-box,  
 So I didn't see nothin' wrong.

*Though it was "Rounds! What Rounds?" O corporal, 'old  
 'im up!  
 'E's usin' 'is cap as it shouldn't be used, but, sentry, shut  
 your eye.  
 An' it was "Pass! All's well! Ho, shun the foam in'  
 cup!  
 'E'll need," etc.*

'Twas after four in the mornin';  
 We 'ad to stop the fun,  
 An' we sent 'im 'ome on a bullock-cart,  
 With 'is belt an' stock undone;  
 But we sluiced 'im down an' we washed 'im out,  
 An' a first-class job we made,  
 When we saved 'im, smart as a bombardier,  
 For six o'clock parade.

*It 'ad been "Rounds! What Rounds? Oh, shove 'im straight  
 again!  
 'E's usin' 'is sword for a bicycle, but, sentry, shut your eye."  
 An' it was "Pass! All's well! 'E's called me 'Darlin'  
 Jane!  
 'E'll need," etc.*

The drill was long an' 'eavy,  
 The sky was 'ot an' blue.  
 An' 'is eye was wild an' 'is 'air was wet,  
 But 'is sergeant pulled 'im through.  
 Our men was good old trusties—  
 They'd done it on their 'ead—  
 But you ought to 'ave 'eard 'em markin' time  
 To 'ide the things 'e said!

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

*For it was "Right flank—wheel!" for "'Alt, an' stand at ease!"*

*An' "Left extend!" for "Centre close!" O marker, shut your eye!*

*An' it was, "'Ere, sir, 'ere! before the Colonel sees!"*

*So he needed affidavits pretty badly by-an'-by.*

There was two-an'-thirty sergeants,  
 There was corp'rals forty-one,  
 There was just nine 'undred rank an' file  
 To swear to a touch o' sun.  
 There was me 'e'd kissed in the sentry-box,  
 As I 'ave not told in my song,  
 But I took my oath, which were Bible-truth,  
 I 'adn't seen nothin' wrong.

There's them that's 'ot an' 'aughty,  
 There's them that's cold an' 'ard,  
 But there comes a night when the best gets tight,  
 And then turns out the Guard.  
 I've seen them 'ide their liquor  
 In every kind o' way,  
 But most depends on makin' friends  
 With Privit Thomas A.!

*When it is "Rounds! What Rounds? 'E's breathin' through 'is nose.*

*'E's reelin', rollin', roarin', tight, but, sentry, shut your eye."*

*An' it is "Pass! All's well!" An' that's the way it goes:*

*We'll 'elp 'im for 'is mother, an' 'e'll 'elp us by-an'-by!*

## "MARY, PITY WOMEN!"

**Y**OU call yourself a man,  
 For all you used to swear,  
 An' leave me, as you can,  
 My certain shame to bear?  
 I 'ear! You do not care—  
 You done the worst you know.  
 I 'ate you, grinnin' there. . . .  
 Ah, Gawd, I love you sol

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*Nice while it lasted, an' now it is over—  
Tear out your 'eart an' good-bye to your lover!  
What's the use o' grievin', when the mother that bore you  
(Mary, pity women!) knew it all before you?*

It aren't no false alarm,  
The finish to your fun;  
You—you 'ave brung the 'arm,  
An' I'm the ruined one!  
An' now you'll off an' run  
With some new fool in tow.  
Your 'eart? You 'aven't none. . . .  
Ah, Gawd, I love you so!

*When a man is tired there is naught will bind 'im;  
All 'e solemn promised 'e will shore be'ind 'im.  
What's the good o' prayin' for The Wrath to strike 'im  
(Mary, pity women!), when the rest are like 'im?*

What 'ope for me or—it?  
What's left for us to do?  
I've walked with men a bit,  
But this—but this is you.  
So 'elp me, Christ, it's true!  
Where can I 'ide or go?  
You coward through and through! . . .  
Ah, Gawd, I love you so!

*All the more you give 'em the less are they for givin'—  
Love lies dead, an' you cannot kiss 'im livin'.  
Down the road 'e led you there is no returnin'  
(Mary, pity women!), but you're late in learnin'!*

You'd like to treat me fair?  
You can't, because we're pore?  
We'd starve? What do I care!  
We might, but *this* is shore!  
I want the name—no more—  
The name, an' lines to show,  
An' not to be an 'ore. . . .  
Ah, Gawd, I love you so!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

*What's the good o' pleadin', when the mother that bore you  
(Mary, pity women!) knew it all before you?  
Sleep on 'is promises an' wake to your sorrow  
(Mary, pity women!), for we sail to-morrow!*

"FOR TO ADMIRE"

THE Injian Ocean sets an' smiles  
So sof', so bright, so bloomin' blue;  
There aren't a wave for miles an' miles  
Excep' the jiggle from the screw.  
The ship is swep', the day is done,  
The bugle's gone for smoke and play;  
An' black ag'in the settin' sun  
The Lascar sings, "*Hum deckty hai!*"<sup>1</sup>

*For to admire an' for to see,  
For to be'old this world so wide—  
It never done no good to me,  
But I can't drop it if I tried!*

I see the sergeants pitchin' quoits,  
I 'ear the women laugh an' talk,  
I spy upon the quarter-deck  
The oficers an' lydies walk.  
I thinks about the things that was,  
An' leans an' looks acrost the sea,  
Till, spite of all the crowded ship,  
There's no one lef' alive but me.

The things that was which I 'ave seen,  
In barrick, camp, an' action too,  
I tells them over by myself,  
An' sometimes wonders if they're true;  
For they was odd—most awful odd—  
But all the same, now they are o'er,  
There must be 'eaps o' plenty such,  
An' if I wait I'll see some more.

<sup>1</sup> I'm looking out.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Oh, I 'ave come upon the books,  
An' frequent broke a barrick-rule,  
An' stood beside an' watched myself  
Be'avin' like a bloomin' fool.  
I paid my price for findin' out,  
Nor never grutched the price I paid,  
But sat in Clink without my boots,  
Admirin' 'ow the world was made.

Be'old a cloud upon the beam,  
An' 'umped above the sea appears  
Old Aden, like a barrick-stove  
That no one's lit for years an' years.  
I passed by that when I began,  
An' I go 'ome the road I came,  
A time-expired soldier-man  
With six years' service to 'is name.

My girl she said, "Oh, stay with me!"  
My mother 'eld me to 'er breast.  
They've never written none, an' so  
They must 'ave gone with all the rest—  
With all the rest which I 'ave seen  
An' found an' known an' met along.  
I cannot say the things I feel,  
And so I sing my evenin' song:

*For to admire an' for to see,  
For to be'old this world so wide—  
It never done no good to me,  
But I can't drop it if I tried!*

---

### "THE SERVICE MAN"

*(Prelude to "Service Songs" in "The Five Nations")*

"**T**OMMY" you was when it began,  
But now that it is o'er  
You shall be called The Service Man  
'Enceforward, evermore.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Batt'ry, brigade, flank, centre, van,  
Defaulter, Army-corps—  
From first to last, The Service Man  
'Enceforward, evermore.*

*From 'Alifax to 'Industan,  
From York to Singapore—  
'Orse, foot, an' guns, The Service Man  
'Enceforward, evermore!*

### THE ABSENT-MINDED BEGGAR

WHEN you've shouted "Rule Britannia," when you've  
sung "God save the Queen,"

When you've finished killing Kruger with your mouth,  
Will you kindly drop a shilling in my little tambourine

For a gentleman in khaki ordered South?

He's an absent-minded beggar, and his weaknesses are  
great—

But we and Paul must take him as we find him—

He is out on active service, wiping something off a slate—

And he's left a lot of little things behind him!

Duke's son—cook's son—son of a hundred kings—

(Fifty thousand horse and foot going to Table Bay!)

Each of 'em doing his country's work

(and who's to look after their things?)

Pass the hat for your credit's sake,

and pay—pay—pay!

There are girls he married secret, asking no permission to,

For he knew he wouldn't get it if he did.

There is gas and coals and vittles, and the house-rent falling  
due,

And it's more than rather likely there's a kid.

There are girls he walked with casual. They'll be sorry now  
he's gone,

For an absent-minded beggar they will find him,

But it ain't the time for sermons with the winter coming on.

We must help the girl that Tommy's left behind him!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Cook's son—Duke's son—son of a belted Earl—  
Son of a Lambeth publican—it's all the same to-day!  
Each of 'em doing his country's work  
(and who's to look after the girl?)  
Pass the hat for your credit's sake,  
and pay—pay—pay!

There are families by thousands, far too proud to beg or  
speak,  
And they'll put their sticks and bedding up the spout,  
And they'll live on half o' nothing, paid 'em punctual once a  
week,  
'Cause the man that earns the wage is ordered out.  
He's an absent-minded beggar, but he heard his country  
call,  
And his reg'ment didn't need to send to find him!  
He chucked his job and joined it—so the job before us all  
Is to help the home that Tommy's left behind him!  
Duke's job—cook's job—gardener, baronet, groom,  
Mews or palace or paper-shop, there's someone gone  
away!  
Each of 'em doing his country's work  
(and who's to look after the room?)  
Pass the hat for your credit's sake,  
and pay—pay—pay!

Let us manage so as, later, we can look him in the face,  
And tell him—what he'd very much prefer—  
That, while he saved the Empire, his employer saved his  
place,  
And his mates (that's you and me) looked out for *her*.  
He's an absent-minded beggar and he may forget it all,  
But we do not want his kiddies to remind him  
That we sent 'em to the workhouse while their daddy  
hammered Paul,  
So we'll help the homes that Tommy left behind him!  
Cook's home—Duke's home—home of a millionaire,  
(Fifty thousand horse and foot going to Table Bay!)  
Each of 'em doing his country's work  
(and what have you got to spare?)  
Pass the hat for your credit's sake,  
and pay—pay—pay!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

## CHANT-PAGAN

(English Irregular, discharged)

ME THAT 'ave been what I've been—  
 Me that 'ave gone where I've gone—  
 Me that 'ave seen what I've seen—  
 'Ow can I ever take on  
 With awful old England again,  
 An' 'ouses both sides of the street,  
 And 'edges two sides of the lane,  
 And the parson an' gentry between,  
 An' touchin' my 'at when we meet—  
 Me that 'ave been what I've been?

Me that 'ave watched 'arf a world  
'Eave up all shiny with dew,  
Kopje on kop to the sun,  
An' as soon as the mist let 'em through  
Our 'elios winkin' like fun—  
Three sides of a ninety-mile square,  
Over valleys as big as a shire—  
“*Are ye there? Are ye there? Are ye there?*”  
An' then the blind drum of our fire . . .  
An' I'm rollin' 'is lawns for the Squire,  
Me!

Me that 'ave rode through the dark  
Forty mile, often, on end,  
Along the Ma'ollisberg Range,  
With only the stars for my mark  
An' only the night for my friend,  
An' things runnin' off as you pass,  
An' things jumpin' up in the grass,  
An' the silence, the shine an' the size  
Of the 'igh, unexpressible skies—  
I am takin' some letters almost  
As much as a mile to the post,  
An' "mind you come back with the change!"

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Me that saw Barberton took  
 When we dropped through the clouds on their 'ead,  
 An' they 'ove the guns over and fled—  
 Me that was through Di'mond 'Ill,  
 An' Pieters an' Springs an' Belfast—  
 From Dundee to Vereeniging all—  
 Me that stuck out to the last  
 (An' five bloomin' bars on my chest)—  
 I am doin' my Sunday-school best,  
 By the 'elp of the Squire an' 'is wife  
 (Not to mention the 'ousemaid an' cook),  
 To come in an' 'ands up an' be still,  
 An' honestly work for my bread,  
 My livin' in that state of life  
 To which it shall please God to call

Me!

Me that 'ave followed my trade  
 In the place where the Lightnin's are made;  
 'Twixt the Rains and the Sun and the Moon—  
 Me that lay down an' got up  
 Three years with the sky for my roof—  
 That 'ave ridden my 'unger an' thirst  
 Six thousand raw mile on the hoof,  
 With the Vaal and the Orange for cup,  
 An' the Brandwater Basin for dish,—  
 Oh! it's 'ard to be'ave as they wish  
 (Too 'ard, an' a little too soon),  
 I'll 'ave to think over it first—

Me!

I will arise an' get 'ence—  
 I will trek South and make sure  
 If it's only my fancy or not  
 That the sunshine of England is pale,  
 And the breezes of England are stale,  
 An' there's somethin' gone small with the lot.  
 For I know of a sun an' a wind,  
 An' some plains and a mountain be'ind,  
 An' some graves by a barb-wire fence,  
 An' a Dutchman I've fought 'oo might give  
 Me a job were I ever inclined

DEFINITIVE EDITION

To look in an' offsaddle an' live  
Where there's neither a road nor a tree—  
But only my Maker an' me,  
And I think it will kill me or cure,  
So I think I will go there an' see.

Me!

M. I.

*(Mounted Infantry of the Line)*

I WISH my mother could see me now, with a fence-post  
under my arm,  
And a knife and a spoon in my putties that I found on a Boer  
farm,  
Atop of a sore-backed Argentine, with a thirst that you  
couldn't buy.  
I used to be in the Yorkshires once  
(Sussex, Lincolns, and Rifles once),  
Hampshires, Glosters, and Scottish once! (*ad lib.*)  
But now I am M. I.

That is what we are known as—that is the name you must  
call  
If you want officers' servants, pickets an' 'orseguards an' all—  
Details for buryin'-parties, company-cooks or supply—  
Turn out the chronic Ikonas! Roll up the ——<sup>1</sup> M. I.!

My 'ands are spotty with veldt-sores, my shirt is a button an'  
frill,  
An' the things I've used my bay'nit for would make a tinker  
ill!  
An' I don't know whose dam' column I'm in, nor where we're  
trekking nor why.  
I've trekked from the Vaal to the Orange once—  
From the Vaal to the greasy Pongolo once—  
(Or else it was called the Zambesi once)—  
For now I am M. I.

<sup>1</sup> Number according to taste and service of audience.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

That is what we are known as—we are the push you require  
For outposts all night under freezin', an' rearguard all day  
under fire.

Anything 'ot or unwholesome? Anything dusty or dry?  
Borrow a bunch of Ikonas! Trot out the —— M. I.!

Our Sergeant-Major's a subaltern, our Captain's a Fusilier—  
Our Adjutant's "late of Somebody's 'Orse," an' a Melbourne  
auctioneer;

But you couldn't spot us at 'arf a mile from the crackest  
caval-ry.

They used to talk about Lancers once,  
Hussars, Dragoons, an' Lancers once,  
'Elmets, pistols, an' carbines once,  
But now we are M. I.!

That is what we are known as—we are the orphans they  
blame

For beggin' the loan of an 'ead-stall an' makin' a mount to the  
same.

'Can't even look at their 'orselines but some one goes bellerin'  
"Hi!

" 'Ere comes a burglin' Ikona! Footsack, you —— M. I.!"

We're trekkin' our twenty miles a day an' bein' loved by the  
Dutch,

But we don't hold on by the mane no more, nor lose our  
stirrups—much;

An' we scout with a senior man in charge where the 'oly white  
flags fly.

We used to think they were friendly once,  
Didn't take any precautions once  
(Once, my ducky, an' only once!)

But now we are M. I.!

That is what we are known as—we are the beggars that got  
Three days "to learn equitation," an' six month o' bloomin'  
well trot!

Cow-guns, an' cattle, an' convoys—an' Mister De Wet on the  
fly—

We are the rollin' Ikonas! We are the —— M. I.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

The new fat regiments come from home, imaginin' vain  
V.C.'s

(The same as your talky-fighty men which are often Number  
Threes<sup>1</sup>),

But our words o' command are " Scatter " an' " Close " an'  
" Let your wounded lie."

We used to rescue 'em noble once,—

Givin' the range as we raised 'em once—

Gettin' 'em killed as we saved 'em once—

But now we are M. I.

That is what we are known as—we are the lanterns you view  
After a fight round the kopjes, lookin' for men that we knew;  
Whistlin' an' callin' together, 'altin' to catch the reply:—

" 'Elp me! O 'elp me, Ikonas! This way, the —— M. I.!"

I wish my mother could see me now, a-gatherin' news on my  
own,

When I ride like a General up to the scrub and ride back like  
Tod Sloan,

Remarkable close to my 'orse's neck to let the shots go by.

We used to fancy it risky once

(Called it a reconnaissance once),

Under the charge of an orf'cer once,

But now we are M. I.!

That is what we are known as—that is the song you must say  
When you want men to be Mausered at one and a penny a  
day;

We are no five-bob Colonials—we are the 'ome-made supply,  
Ask for the London Ikonas! Ring up the —— M. I.!

I wish myself could talk to myself as I left 'im a year ago;  
I could tell 'im a lot that would save 'im a lot on the things  
that 'e ought to know!

When I think o' that ignorant barrack-bird, it almost makes  
me cry.

I used to belong in an Army once

(Gawd! what a rum little Army once),

Red little, dead little Army once!

But now I am M. I.!

<sup>1</sup> Horse-holders when in action, and therefore generally under cover.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

That is what we are known as—we are the men that have  
been  
Over a year at the business, smelt it an' felt it an' seen.  
We 'ave got 'old of the needful—you will be told by and by;  
Wait till you've 'eard the Ikonas, spoke to the old M. I.!

*Mount—march, Ikonas! Stand to your 'orses again!  
Mop off the frost on the saddles, mop up the miles on the plain.  
Out go the stars in the dawnin', up goes our dust to the sky,  
Walk—trot, Ikonas! Trek jou,<sup>1</sup> the old M. I.!*

## COLUMNS

*(Mobile Columns of the Boer War)*

O UT o' the wilderness, dusty an' dry  
(*Time, an' 'igh time to be trekkin' again!*)  
'Oo is it 'eads to the Detail Supply?  
*A section, a pompom,<sup>2</sup> an' six 'undred men.*

'Ere comes the clerk with 'is lantern an' keys  
(*Time, an' 'igh time to be trekkin' again!*)  
“ Surplus of everything—draw what you please  
“ *For the section, the pompom, an' six 'undred men.*”

“ What are our orders an' where do we lay? ”  
(*Time, an' 'igh time to be trekkin' again!*)  
“ You came after dark—you will leave before day,  
“ *You section, you pompom, you six 'undred men!* ”

Down the tin street, 'alf awake an' unfed,  
'Ark to 'em blessin' the Gen'ral in bed!

Now by the church an' the outspan they wind—  
Over the ridge an' it's all lef' be'ind  
*For the section, etc.*

<sup>1</sup> Get ahead.

<sup>2</sup> One-pounder q.f. gun.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Soon they will camp as the dawn's growin' grey.  
Roll up for coffee an' sleep while they may—  
*The section, etc.*

Read their 'ome letters, their papers an' such,  
For they'll move after dark to astonish the Dutch  
*With a section, etc.*

'Untin' for shade as the long hours pass—  
Blankets on rifles or burrows in grass,  
*Lies the section, etc.*

Dossin' or beatin' a shirt in the sun,  
Watching chameleons or cleanin' a gun,  
*Waits the section, etc.*

With nothin' but stillness as far as you please,  
An' the silly mirage stringin' islands an' seas  
*Round the section, etc.*

So they strips off their hide an' they grills in their bones,  
Till the shadows crawl out from beneath the pore stones  
*Towards the section, etc.*

An' the Mauser-bird stops an' the jackals begin,  
An' the 'orse-guard comes up and the Gunners 'ook in  
*As a 'int to the pompom an' six 'undred men. . .*

Off through the dark with the stars to rely on—  
(Alpha Centauri an' somethin' Orion)  
*Moves the section, etc.*

Same bloomin' 'ole which the ant-bear 'as broke,  
Same bloomin' stumble an' same bloomin' joke  
*Down the section, etc.*

Same " Which is right? " where the cart-tracks divide,  
Same " Give it up " from the same clever guide  
*To the section, etc.*

Same tumble-down on the same 'idden farm,  
Same white-eyed Kaffir 'oo gives the alarm  
*Of the section, etc.*

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Same shootin' wild at the end o' the night,  
Same flyin'-tackle, an' same messy fight,  
*By the section, etc.*

Same ugly 'iccup an' same 'orrid squeal,  
When it's too dark to see an' it's too late to feel  
*In the section, etc.*

(Same batch of prisoners, 'airy an' still,  
'Watchin' their comrades bolt over the 'ill  
*From the section, etc.)*

Same chilly glare in the eye of the sun  
As 'e gets up displeased to see what was done  
*By the section, etc.*

Same splash o' pink on the stoep or the kraal,  
An' the same quiet face which 'as finished with all  
*In the section, the pompom, an' six 'undred men.*

*Out o' the wilderness, dusty an' dry*  
*(Time, an' 'igh time to be trekkin' again!)*  
*'Oo is it 'eads to the Detail Supply?*  
*A section, a pompom, an' six 'undred men.*

### THE PARTING OF THE COLUMNS

*" . . . On the —th instant a mixed detachment of Colonials left — for Cape Town, there to rejoin their respective homeward-bound contingents, after fifteen months' service in the field. They were escorted to the station by the regular troops in garrison and the bulk of Colonel ——'s column, which has just come in to refit, preparatory to further operations. The leave-taking was of the most cordial character, the men cheering each other continuously."*

*Any Newspaper, during the South African War.*

**W**E'VE rode and fought and ate and drunk as rations<sup>1</sup>  
come to hand,  
Together for a year and more around this stinkin' land:  
Now you are goin' home again, but we must see it through.  
We needn't tell we liked you well. Good-bye—good luck  
to you!

<sup>1</sup> Convoys were not seldom captured by the Boers.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

You 'ad no special call to come, and so you doubled out,  
And learned us how to camp and cook an' steal a horse and  
scout.

Whatever game we fancied most, you joyful played it too,  
And rather better on the whole. Good-bye—good luck to you!

There isn't much we 'aven't shared, since Kruger cut and  
run,

The same old work, the same old skoff,<sup>1</sup> the same old dust  
and sun;

The same old chance that laid us out, or winked an' let us  
through;

The same old Life, the same old Death. Good-bye—good  
luck to you!

Our blood 'as truly mixed with yours—all down the Red  
Cross train.

We've bit the same thermometer in Bloeming-typhoidtein.<sup>2</sup>

We've 'ad the same old temp'rature—the same relapses too,  
The same old saw-backed fever-chart. Good-bye—good  
luck to you!

But 'twasn't merely this an' that (which all the world may  
know),

'Twas how you talked an' looked at things which made us  
like you so.

All independent, queer an' odd, but most amazin' new.

My word! you shook us up to rights. Good-bye—good  
luck to you!

Think o' the stories round the fire, the tales along the trek—

O' Calgary an' Wellin'ton, an' Sydney and Quebec;

Of mine an' farm, an' ranch an' run, an' moose an' caribou,

An' parrots peckin' lambs to death! Good-bye—good luck  
to you!

We've seen your 'ome by word o' mouth, we've watched your  
rivers shine,

We've 'eard your bloomin' forests blow of eucalyp' and pine;

<sup>1</sup> Food.

<sup>2</sup> There were several thousands of typhoid cases in Bloemfontein.  
Hence its name among the troops.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Your young, gay countries north and south, we feel we own  
    'em too,  
For they was made by rank an' file. Good-bye—good luck  
    to you!

We'll never read the papers now without inquiren' first  
For word from all those friendly dorps where you was born  
    an' nursed.  
Why, Dawson, Galle, an' Montreal—Port Darwin—Timaru,  
They're only just across the road! Good-bye—good luck  
    to you!

Good-bye!—So-long! Don't lose yourselves—nor us, nor  
    all kind friends,  
But tell the girls your side the drift we're comin'—when it  
    ends!  
Good-bye, you bloomin' Atlases! You've taught us some-  
    thin' new:  
The world's no bigger than a kraal. Good-bye—good luck  
    to you!

## TWO KOPJES

*(Made Yeomanry towards the end of Boer War)*

ONLY two African kopjes,  
Only the cart-tracks that wind  
Empty and open between 'em,  
Only the Transvaal behind;  
Only an Aldershot column  
Marching to conquer the land . . .  
Only a sudden and solemn  
Visit, unarmed, to the Rand.

Then scorn not the African kopje,  
The kopje that smiles in the heat,  
The wholly unoccupied kopje,  
The home of Cornelius and Piet.  
You can never be sure of your kopje,  
But of this be you blooming well sure,  
A kopje is always a kopje,  
And a Boojer is always a Boer!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Only two African kopjes,  
Only the vultures above,  
Only baboons—at the bottom,<sup>1</sup>  
Only some buck on the move;  
Only a Kensington draper  
Only pretending to scout . . .  
Only bad news for the paper,  
Only another knock-out.

Then mock not the African kopje,  
And rub not your flank on its side,  
The silent and simmering kopje,  
The kopje beloved by the guide.  
*You can never be, etc.*

Only two African kopjes,  
Only the dust of their wheels,  
Only a bolted commando,  
Only our guns at their heels . . .  
Only a little barb-wire,  
Only a natural fort,  
Only "by sections retire,"  
Only "regret to report!"

Then mock not the African kopje,  
Especially when it is twins,  
One sharp and one table-topped kopje—  
For that's where the trouble begins.  
*You can never be, etc.*

Only two African kopjes  
Baited the same as before—  
Only we've had it so often,  
Only we're taking no more . . .  
Only a wave to our troopers,  
Only our flanks swinging past,  
Only a dozen voorloopers,<sup>2</sup>  
Only *we've* learned it at last!

<sup>1</sup> Showing that men are at the top.    <sup>2</sup> Leading horseman of the Boers.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Then mock not the African kopje,  
But take off your hat to the same,  
The patient, impartial old kopje,  
The kopje that taught us the game!  
For all that we knew in the Columns,  
And all they've forgot on the Staff,  
We learned at the Fight o' Two Kopjes,  
Which lasted two years an' a half.

O mock not the African kopje,  
*Not even when peace has been signed—*  
The kopje that isn't a kopje—  
The kopje that copies its kind.  
You can never be sure of your kopje,  
But of this be you blooming well sure,  
That a kopje is always a kopje,  
And a Boojer is always a Boer!

### THE INSTRUCTOR

*(Non-commissioned Officers of the Line)*

AT TIMES when under cover I 'ave said,  
To keep my spirits up an' raise a laugh,  
'Earin' 'im pass so busy over-'ead—  
Old Nickel-Neck, 'oo isn't on the Staff—  
*"There's one above is greater than us all."*

Before 'im I 'ave seen my Colonel fall,  
An' watched 'im write my Captain's epitaph,  
So that a long way off it could be read—  
He 'as the knack o' makin' men feel small—  
Old Whistle-Tip, 'oo isn't on the Staff.

There is no sense in fleein' (I 'ave fled),  
Better go on an' do the belly-crawl,  
An' 'ope 'e'll 'it some other man instead  
Of you 'e seems to 'unt so speshual—  
Fitzzy van Spitz, 'oo isn't on the Staff.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

An' thus in mem'ry's cinematograph,  
Now that the show is over, I recall  
The peevish voice an' 'oary mushroom 'ead  
Of 'im we owned was greater than us all,  
'Oo give instruction to the quick an' the dead—  
The Shudderin' Beggar—not upon the Staff!

### BOOTS

*(Infantry Columns)*

WE'RE foot—slog—slog—slog—sloggin' over Africa—  
Foot—foot—foot—foot—sloggin' over Africa—  
(Boots—boots—boots—boots—movin' up and down again!)  
There's no discharge in the war!

Seven—six—eleven—five—nine-an'-twenty mile to-day—  
Four—eleven—seventeen—thirty-two the day before—  
(Boots—boots—boots—boots—movin' up and down again!)  
There's no discharge in the war!

Don't—don't—don't—don't—look at what's in front of you.  
(Boots—boots—boots—boots—movin' up an' down again);  
Men—men—men—men—men go mad with watchin' 'em,  
An' there's no discharge in the war!

Try—try—try—try—to think o' something different—  
Oh—my—God—keep—me from goin' lunatic!  
(Boots—boots—boots—boots—movin' up an' down again!)  
There's no discharge in the war!

Count—count—count—count—the bullets in the bandoliers.  
If—your—eyes—drop—they will get atop o' you!  
(Boots—boots—boots—boots—movin' up and down again)—  
There's no discharge in the war!

We—can—stick—out—'unger, thirst, an' weariness,  
But—not—not—not—the chronic sight of 'em—  
Boots—boots—boots—boots—movin' up an' down again,  
An' there's no discharge in the war!



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

'Tain't—so—bad—by—day because o' company,  
But night—brings—long—strings—o' forty thousand million  
Boots—boots—boots—boots—movin' up an' down again.  
There's no discharge in the war!

I—'ave—marched—six—weeks in 'Ell an' certify  
It—is—not—fire—devils, dark, or anything,  
But boots—boots—boots—boots—movin' up an' down again,  
An' there's no discharge in the war!

### THE MARRIED MAN

*(Reservist of the Line)*

THE bachelor 'e fights for one  
As joyful as can be;  
But the married man don't call it fun,  
Because 'e fights for three—  
For 'Im an' 'Er an' It  
(An' Two an' One make Three)  
'E wants to finish 'is little bit,  
An' 'e wants to go 'ome to 'is teal

The bachelor pokes up 'is 'ead  
To see if you are gone;  
But the married man lies down instead,  
An' waits till the sights come on,  
For 'Im an' 'Er an' a hit  
(Direct or ricochee)  
'E wants to finish 'is little bit,  
An' 'e wants to go 'ome to 'is tea.

The bachelor will miss you clear  
To fight another day;  
But the married man, 'e says "No fear!"  
'E wants you out of the way

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Of 'Im an' 'Er an' It  
    (An' 'is road to 'is farm or the sea),  
'E wants to finish 'is little bit,  
    An' 'e wants to go 'ome to 'is tea.

The bachelor 'e fights 'is fight  
    An' stretches out an' snores;  
But the married man sits up all night—  
    For 'e don't like out-o'-doors.  
'E'll strain an' listen an' peer  
    An' give the first alarm—  
For the sake o' the breathin' 'e's used to 'ear,  
    An' the 'ead on the thick of 'is arm.

The bachelor may risk 'is 'ide  
    To 'elp you when you're downed;  
But the married man will wait beside  
    Till the ambulance comes round.  
'E'll take your 'ome address  
    An' all you've time to say,  
Or if 'e sees there's 'ope, 'e'll press  
    Your art'ry 'alf the day—

For 'Im an' 'Er an' It  
    (An' One from Three leaves Two),  
For 'e knows you wanted to finish your bit,  
    An' 'e knows 'oo's wantin' you.  
Yes, 'Im an' 'Er an' It  
    (Our 'oly One in Three),  
We're all of us anxious to finish our bit,  
    An' we want to get 'ome to our tea!

Yes, It an' 'Er an' 'Im,  
    Which often makes me think  
The married man must sink or swim  
    An'—'e can't afford to sink!  
Oh, 'Im an' It an' 'Er  
    Since Adam an' Eve began!  
So I'd rather fight with the bachelor  
    An' be nursed by the married man!

LICHTENBERG

*(New South Wales Contingent)*

SMELLS are surer than sounds or sights  
 To make your heart-strings crack—  
 They start those awful voices o' nights  
 That whisper, "Old man, come back!"  
 That must be why the big things pass  
 And the little things remain,  
 Like the smell of the wattle by Lichtenberg,  
 Riding in, in the rain.

There was some silly fire on the flank  
 And the small wet drizzling down—  
 There were the sold-out shops and the bank  
 And the wet, wide-open town;  
*And* we were doing escort-duty  
 To somebody's baggage-train,  
 And I smelt wattle by Lichtenberg--  
 Riding in, in the rain.

It was all Australia to me—  
 All I had found or missed:  
 Every face I was crazy to see,  
 And every woman I'd kissed:  
 All that I shouldn't ha' done, God knows!  
 (As He knows I'll do it again),  
 That smell of the wattle round Lichtenberg,  
 Riding in, in the rain!

And I saw Sydney the same as ever,  
 The picnics and brass-bands;  
 And my little homestead on Hunter River  
 And my new vines joining hands.  
 It all came over me in one act  
 Quick as a shot through the brain—  
 With the smell of the wattle round Lichtenberg,  
 Riding in, in the rain.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

I have forgotten a hundred fights,  
But one I shall not forget—  
With the raindrops bunging up my sights  
And my eyes bunged up with wet;  
And through the crack and the stink of the cordite,  
(Ah, Christ! My country again!)  
The smell of the wattle by Lichtenberg,  
Riding in, in the rain!

### STELLENBOSCH

*(Composite Columns)*

THE General 'eard the firin' on the flank,  
An' 'e sent a mounted man to bring 'im back  
The silly, pushin' person's name an' rank  
'Oo'd dared to answer Brother Boer's attack:  
For there might 'ave been a serious engagement,  
An' 'e might 'ave wasted 'alf a dozen men;  
So 'e ordered 'im to stop 'is operations round the kopjes,  
An' 'e told 'im off before the Staff at ten!

And it all goes into the laundry,  
But it never comes out in the wash,  
'Ow we're sugared about by the old men  
('Eavy-sterned amateur old men!)  
That 'amper an' 'inder an' scold men  
For fear o' Stellenbosch!<sup>1</sup>

The General 'ad "produced a great effect,"  
The General 'ad the country cleared—almost;  
The General " 'ad no reason to expect,"  
And the Boers 'ad us bloomin' well on toast!  
For we might 'ave crossed the drift before the twilight,  
Instead o' sitting down an' takin' root;  
But we was not allowed, so the Boojers scooped the crowd,  
To the last survivin' bandolier an' boot.

The General saw the farm'ouse in 'is rear,  
With its stoep so nicely shaded from the sun;  
Sez 'e, "I'll pitch my tabernacle 'ere,"  
An' 'e kept us muckin' round till 'e 'ad done.

<sup>1</sup> The more notoriously incompetent commanders used to be sent to the town of Stellenbosch, which name presently became a verb.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

For 'e might 'ave caught the confluent pneumonia  
From sleepin' in his gaiters in the dew;  
So 'e took a book an' dozed while the other columns closed,  
And De Wet's commando out an' trickled through!

The General saw the mountain-range ahead,  
With their 'elios showin' saucy on the 'eight,  
So 'e 'eld us to the level ground instead,  
An' telegraphed the Boojers wouldn't fight.  
For 'e might 'ave gone an' sprayed 'em with a pompom,  
Or 'e might 'ave slung a squadron out to see—  
But 'e wasn't takin' chances in them 'igh an' 'ostile kranzes—  
He was markin' time to earn a K.C.B.

The General got 'is decorations thick  
(The men that backed 'is lies could not complain),  
The Staff 'ad D.S.O.'s till we was sick,  
An' the soldier—'ad the work to do again!  
For 'e might 'ave known the District was an 'otbed,  
Instead of 'andin' over, upside-down,  
'To a man 'oo 'ad to fight 'alf a year to put it right,  
While the General sat an' slandered 'im in town!

An' it all went into the laundry,  
But it never came out in the wash.  
We were sugared about by the old men  
(Panicky, perishin' old men)  
That 'amper an' 'inder an' scold men  
For fear o' Stellenbosch!

### HALF-BALLADE OF WATERVAL

*(Non-commissioned Officers in Charge of Prisoners)*

WHEN by the labour of my 'ands  
I've 'elped to pack a transport tight  
With prisoners for foreign lands,  
I ain't transported with delight.  
I know it's only just an' right,  
But yet it somehow sickens me,  
For I 'ave learned at Waterval<sup>1</sup>  
The meanin' of captivity.

<sup>1</sup> Where the majority of English prisoners were kept by the Boers.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Be'ind the pegged barb-wire strands,  
Beneath the tall electric light,  
*We* used to walk in bare-'ead bands,  
Explainin' 'ow we lost our fight;  
An' that is what they'll do to-night  
Upon the steamer out at sea,  
If I 'ave learned at Waterval  
The meanin' of captivity.

*They'll* never know the shame that brands—  
Black shame no livin' down makes white—  
The mockin' from the sentry-stands,  
The women's laugh, the gaoler's spite.  
*We* are too bloomin'-much polite,  
But that is 'ow I'd 'ave us be . . .  
Since I 'ave learned at Waterval  
The meanin' of captivity.

They'll get those draggin' days all right,  
Spent as a foreigner commands,  
An' 'orrors of the locked-up night,  
With 'Ell's own thinkin' on their 'ands.  
I'd give the gold o' twenty Rands  
(If it was mine) to set 'em free,  
For I 'ave learned at Waterval  
The meanin' of captivity!

## PIET

*(Regular of the Line)*

I DO not love my Empire's foes,  
Nor call 'em angels; still,  
What *is* the sense of 'atin' those  
'Oom you are paid to kill?  
So, barrin' all that foreign lot  
Which only joined for spite,  
Myself, I'd just as soon as not  
Respect the man I fight.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Ah, there, Piet!—'is trousers to 'is knees,  
'Is coat-tails lyin' level in the bullet-sprinkled breeze;  
'E does not lose 'is rifle an' 'e does not lose 'is seat.  
I've known a lot o' people ride a dam' sight worse than  
Piet.

I've 'eard 'im cryin' from the ground  
Like Abel's blood of old,  
An' skirmished out to look, an' found  
The beggar nearly cold.  
I've waited on till 'e was dead  
(Which couldn't 'elp 'im much),  
But many grateful things 'e's said  
To me for doin' such.  
Ah, there, Piet! whose time 'as come to die,  
'Is carcase past rebellion, but 'is eyes inquiren' why.  
Though dressed in stolen uniform with badge o' rank  
complete,  
I've known a lot o' fellers go a dam' sight worse than  
Piet.

An' when there wasn't aught to do  
But camp and cattle-guards,  
I've fought with 'im the 'ole day through  
At fifteen 'undred yards;  
Long afternoons o' lyin' still,  
An' 'earin' as you lay  
The bullets swish from 'ill to 'ill  
Like scythes among the 'ay.  
Ah, there, Piet!—be'ind 'is stony kop—  
With 'is Boer bread an' biltong,<sup>1</sup> an' 'is flask of awful  
Dop;<sup>2</sup>  
'Is Mauser for amusement an' 'is pony for retreat,  
I've known a lot o' fellers shoot a dam' sight worse  
than Piet.

He's shoved 'is rifle 'neath my nose  
Before I'd time to think,  
An' borrowed all my Sunday clo'es  
An' sent me 'ome in pink;

<sup>1</sup> Dried meat.

<sup>2</sup> Cape brandy.

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

An' I 'ave crept (Lord, 'ow I've crept!)  
 On 'ands an' knees I've gone,  
 And spooored and floored and caught and kept  
 An' sent him to Ceylon!<sup>1</sup>  
 Ah, there, Piet!—you've sold me many a pup,  
 When week on week alternate it was you an' me “ 'ands  
 up! ”  
 But though I never made *you* walk man-naked in the 'eat,  
 I've known a lot of fellows stalk a dam' sight worse than  
 Piet.

From Plewman's to Marabastad,  
 From Ookiep to De Aar,  
 Me an' my trusty friend 'ave 'ad,  
 As you might say, a war;  
 But seein' what both parties done  
 Before 'e owned defeat,  
 I ain't more proud of 'avin' won  
 Than I am pleased with Piet.  
 Ah, there, Piet!—picked up be'ind the drive!  
 The wonder wasn't 'ow 'e fought, but 'ow 'e kep'  
 alive,  
 With nothin' in 'is belly, on 'is back, or to 'is feet—  
 I've known a lot o' men behave a dam' sight worse  
 than Piet.

No more I'll 'ear 'is rifle crack  
 Along the block'ouse fence—  
 The beggar's on the peaceful tack,  
 Regardless of expense;  
 For countin' what 'e eats an' draws,  
 An' gifts an' loans as well,  
 'E's gettin' 'alf the Earth, because  
 'E didn't give us 'Ell!  
 Ah, there, Piet! with your brand-new English plough,  
 Your gratis tents an' cattle, an' your most ungrateful  
 frow,  
 You've made the British taxpayer rebuild your country-  
 seat—  
 I've known some pet battalions charge a dam' sight less  
 than Piet.

<sup>1</sup> One of the camps for prisoners of this war was in Ceylon.



"WILFUL-MISSING"

*(Deserters of the Boer War)*

THERE is a world outside the one you know,  
 To which for curiousness 'Ell can't compare—  
 It is the place where "wilful-missings" go,  
 As we can testify, for we are there.

You may 'ave read a bullet laid us low,  
 That we was gathered in "with reverent care"  
 And buried proper. But it was not so,  
 As we can testify,—for we are therel

They can't be certain—faces alter so  
 After the old aasvogel<sup>1</sup>'s 'ad 'is share.  
 The uniform's the mark by which they go—  
 And—ain't it odd?—the one we best can spare.

We might 'ave seen our chance to cut the show—  
 Name, number, record, an' begin elsewhere—  
 Leavin' some not too late-lamented foe  
 One funeral—private—British—for 'is share.

We may 'ave took it yonder in the low  
 Bush-veldt that sends men stragglin' unaware  
 Among the Kaffirs, till their columns go,  
 An' they are left past call or count or care.

We might 'ave been your lovers long ago,  
 'Usbands or children—comfort or despair.  
 Our death (*an'* burial) settles all we owe,  
 An' why we done it is our own affair.

Marry again, and we will not say no,  
 Nor come to barstardise the kids you bear.  
 Wait on in 'ope—you've all your life below  
 Before you'll ever 'ear us on the stair.

<sup>1</sup> Vulture.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

There is no need to give our reasons, though  
Gawd knows we all 'ad reasons which were fair;  
But other people might not judge 'em so—  
And now it doesn't matter what they were.

What man can weigh or size another's woe?  
There are some things too bitter 'ard to bear.  
Suffice it we 'ave finished—Domino!  
As we can testify, for we are there,  
In the side-world where "wilful-missings" go.

## UBIQUE

*(Royal Artillery)*

THERE is a word you often see, pronounce it as you  
may—  
"You bike," "you bykwee," "ubbikwe"—alludin' to R.A.  
It serves 'Orse, Field, an' Garrison as motto for a crest;  
An' when you've found out all it means I'll tell you 'alf the  
rest.

Ubique means the long-range Krupp be'ind the low-range  
'ill—

Ubique means you'll pick it up an', while you do, stand  
still.

Ubique means you've caught the flash an' timed it by the  
sound.

Ubique means five gunners' 'ash before you've loosed a  
round.

Ubique means Blue Fuse,<sup>1</sup> an' make the 'ole to sink the trail.  
Ubique means stand up an' take the Mauser's 'alf-mile 'ail.  
Ubique means the crazy team not God nor man can 'old.  
Ubique means that 'orse's scream which turns your innards  
cold!

<sup>1</sup> Extreme range.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Ubique means "Bank, 'Olborn, Bank—a penny all the way"—

The soothin', jingle-bump-an'-clank from day to peaceful day.

Ubique means "They've caught De Wet, an' now we shan't be long."

Ubique means "I much regret, the beggar's goin' strong!"

Ubique means the tearin' drift where, breech-blocks jammed with mud,

The khaki muzzles duck an' lift across the khaki flood.

Ubique means the dancing plain that changes rocks to Boers.

Ubique means mirage again an' shellin' all outdoors.

Ubique means "Entrain at once for Grootdefeatfontein."

Ubique means "Off-load your guns"—at midnight in the rain!

Ubique means "More mounted men. Return all guns to store."

Ubique means the R.A.M.R. Infantillery Corps.<sup>1</sup>

Ubique means that warnin' grunt the perished linesman knows,

When o'er 'is strung an' sufferin' front the shrapnel sprays 'is foes;

An' as their firin' dies away the 'usky whisper runs  
From lips that 'aven't drunk all day: "The Guns! Thank Gawd, the Guns!"

Extreme, depressed, point-blank or short, end-first or any'ow,

From Colesberg Kop to Quagga's Poort—from Ninety-Nine till now—

By what I've 'eard the others tell an' I in spots 'ave seen,

There's nothin' this side 'Eaven or 'Ell Ubique doesn't mean!

<sup>1</sup> The Royal Artillery Mounted Rifles—when mounted infantry were badly needed.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE RETURN

(*All Arms*)

PEACE is declared, an' I return  
To 'Ackneystadt, but not the same;  
Things 'ave transpired which made me learn  
The size and meanin' of the game.  
I did no more than others did,  
I don't know where the change began.  
I started as a average kid,  
I finished as a thinkin' man.

*If England was what England seems,  
An' not the England of our dreams,  
But only putty, brass, an' paint,  
'Ow quick we'd drop 'er! But she ain't!*

Before my gappin' mouth could speak  
I 'eard it in my comrade's tone.  
I saw it on my neighbour's cheek  
Before I felt it flush my own.  
An' last it come to me—not pride,  
Nor yet conceit, but on the 'ole  
(If such a term may be applied),  
The makin's of a bloomin' soul.

Rivers at night that cluck an' jeer,  
Plains which the moonshine turns to sea,  
Mountains which never let you near,  
An' stars to all eternity;  
An' the quick-breathin' dark that fills  
The 'ollows of the wilderness,  
When the wind worries through the 'ills—  
These may 'ave taught me more or less.

Towns without people, ten times took,  
An' ten times left an' burned at last;  
An' starvin' dogs that come to look  
For owners when a column passed;

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

An' quiet, 'omesick talks between  
Men, met by night, you never knew  
Until—'is face—by shellfire seen—  
Once—an' struck off. *They* taught me too.

The day's lay-out—the mornin' sun  
Beneath your 'at-brim as you sight;  
The dinner-'ush from noon till one,  
An' the full roar that lasts till night;  
An' the pore dead that look so old  
An' was so young an hour ago,  
An' legs tied down before they're cold—  
These are the things which make you know.

Also Time runnin' into years—  
A thousand Places left be'ind—  
An' Men from both two 'emispheres  
Discussin' things of every kind;  
So much more near than I 'ad known,  
So much more great than I 'ad guessed--  
An' me, like all the rest, alone—  
But reachin' out to all the rest!

So 'ath it come to me—not pride,  
Nor yet conceit, but on the 'ole  
(If such a term may be applyed),  
The makin's of a bloomin' soul.  
But now, discharged, I fall away  
To do with little things again. . . .  
Gawd, 'oo knows all I cannot say,  
Look after me in Thamesfontein!<sup>1</sup>

*If England was what England seems,  
An' not the England of our dreams,  
But only putty, brass, an' paint,  
'Ow quick we'd chuck 'er! But she ain't!*

<sup>1</sup> London.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### "CITIES AND THRONES AND POWERS"

("A Centurion of the Thirtieth"—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

CITIES and Thrones and Powers  
Stand in Time's eye,  
Almost as long as flowers,  
Which daily die:  
But, as new buds put forth  
To glad new men,  
Out of the spent and unconsidered Earth  
The Cities rise again.

This season's Daffodil,  
She never hears  
What change, what chance, what chill,  
Cut down last year's;  
But with bold countenance,  
And knowledge small,  
Esteems her seven days' continuance  
To be perpetual.

So Time that is o'er-kind  
To all that be,  
Ordains us e'en as blind,  
As bold as she:  
That in our very death,  
And burial sure,  
Shadow to shadow, well persuaded, saith,  
"See how our works endure!"

### THE RECALL

("An Habitation Enforced"—*Actions and Reactions*)

I AM the land of their fathers.  
In me the virtue stays.  
I will bring back my children,  
After certain days.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Under their feet in the grasses  
My clinging magic runs.  
They shall return as strangers.  
They shall remain as sons.

Over their heads in the branches  
Of their new-bought, ancient trees,  
I weave an incantation  
And draw them to my knees.

Scent of smoke in the evening,  
Smell of rain in the night—  
The hours, the days and the seasons,  
Order their souls aright,

Till I make plain the meaning  
Of all my thousand years—  
Till I fill their hearts with knowledge,  
While I fill their eyes with tears.

### PUCK'S SONG

*(Enlarged from "Puck of Pook's Hill")*

SEE you the ferny ride that steals  
Into the oak-woods far?  
O that was whence they hewed the keels  
That rolled to Trafalgar.

And mark you where the ivy clings  
To Bayham's mouldering walls?  
O there we cast the stout railings  
That stand around St. Paul's.

See you the dimpled track that runs  
All hollow through the wheat?  
O that was where they hauled the guns  
That smote King Philip's fleet.

(Out of the Weald, the secret Weald,  
Men sent in ancient years  
The horse-shoes red at Flodden Field,  
The arrows at Poitiers!)

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

See you our little mill that clacks,  
So busy by the brook?  
She has ground her corn and paid her tax  
Ever since Domesday Book.

See you our stilly woods of oak,  
And the dread ditch beside?  
O that was where the Saxons broke  
On the day that Harold died.

See you the windy levels spread  
About the gates of Rye?  
O that was where the Northmen fled,  
When Alfred's ships came by.

See you our pastures wide and lone,  
Where the red oxen browse?  
O there was a City thronged and known,  
Ere London boasted a house.

And see you, after rain, the trace  
Of mound and ditch and wall?  
O that was a Legion's camping-place,  
When Cæsar sailed from Gaul.

And see you marks that show and fade,  
Like shadows on the Downs?  
O they are the lines the Flint Men made,  
To guard their wondrous towns.

Trackway and Camp and City lost,  
Salt Marsh where now is corn—  
Old Wars, old Peace, old Arts that cease,  
And so was England born!

She is not any common Earth,  
Water or wood or air,  
But Merlin's Isle of Gramarye,  
Where you and I will fare!



THE WAY THROUGH THE WOODS

("Marklake Witches"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

THEY shut the road through the woods  
 Seventy years ago.  
 Weather and rain have undone it again,  
 And now you would never know  
 There was once a road through the woods  
 Before they planted the trees.  
 It is underneath the coppice and heath  
 And the thin anemones.  
 Only the keeper sees  
 That, where the ring-dove broods,  
 And the badgers roll at ease,  
 There was once a road through the woods.

Yet, if you enter the woods  
 Of a summer evening late,  
 When the night-air cools on the trout-ringed pools  
 Where the otter whistles his mate,  
 (They fear not men in the woods,  
 Because they see so few.)  
 You will hear the beat of a horse's feet,  
 And the swish of a skirt in the dew,  
 Steadily cantering through  
 The misty solitudes,  
 As though they perfectly knew  
 The old lost road through the woods. . . .  
 But there is no road through the woods.

A THREE-PART SONG

("Dymchurch Flit"—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

I'M JUST in love with all these three,  
 The Weald and the Marsh and the Down countree.  
 Nor I don't know which I love the most,  
 The Weald or the Marsh or the white Chalk coast!

I've buried my heart in a ferny hill,  
 'Twix' a liddle low shaw an' a great high gill.  
 Oh, hop-bine yaller an' wood-smoke blue,  
 I reckon you'll keep her middling true!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

I've loosed my mind for to out and run  
On a Marsh that was old when Kings begun.  
Oh, Romney Level and Brenzett reeds,  
I reckon you know what my mind needs!

I've given my soul to the Southdown grass,  
And sheep-bells tinkled where you pass.  
Oh, Firle an' Ditchling an' sails at sea,  
I reckon you keep my soul for me!

### THE RUN OF THE DOWNS

(“ The Knife and the Naked Chalk ”—*Rewards and Fairies*)

*T*HE Weald is good, the Downs are best—  
I'll give you the run of 'em, East to West.  
Beachy Head and Winddoor Hill,  
They were once and they are still.  
Firle, Mount Caburn and Mount Harry  
Go back as far as sums'll carry.  
Ditchling Beacon and Chanctonbury Ring,  
They have looked on many a thing,  
And what those two have missed between 'em,  
I reckon Truleigh Hill has seen 'em.  
Highden, Bignor and Duncton Down  
Knew Old England before the Crown.  
Linch Down, Treyford and Sunwood  
Knew Old England before the Flood;  
And when you end on the Hampshire side—  
Butser's old as Time and Tide.  
*The Downs are sheep, the Weald is corn,  
You be glad you are Sussex born!*

### BROOKLAND ROAD

(“ Marklake Witches ”—*Rewards and Fairies*)

**I** WAS very well pleased with what I knewed,  
I reckoned myself no fool—  
Till I met with a maid on the Brookland Road  
That turned me back to school.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*Low down—low down!  
Where the liddle green lanterns shine—  
O maids, I've done with 'ee all but one,  
And she can never be mine!*

'Twas right in the midst of a hot June night,  
With thunder duntin' round,  
And I see her face by the fairy-light  
That beats from off the ground.

She only smiled and she never spoke,  
She smiled and went away;  
But when she'd gone my heart was broke  
And my wits was clean astray.

O, stop your ringing and let me be—  
Let be, O Brookland bells!  
You'll ring Old Goodman<sup>1</sup> out of the sea  
Before I wed one else!

Old Goodman's Farm is rank sea-sand,  
And was this thousand year;  
But it shall turn to rich plough-land  
Before I change my dear.

O, Fairfield Church is water-bound  
From autumn to the spring;  
But it shall turn to high hill-ground  
Before my bells do ring.

O, leave me walk on Brookland Road,  
In the thunder and warm rain—  
O, leave me look where my love goed,  
And p'raps I'll see her again!

*Low down—low down!  
Where the liddle green lanterns shine—  
O maids, I've done with 'ee all but one,  
And she can never be mine!*

<sup>1</sup> Earl Godwin of the Goodwin Sands?

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE SACK OF THE GODS

(Enlarged from "The Naulahka")

STRANGERS drawn from the ends of the earth, jewelled  
and plumed were we;  
I was Lord of the Inca race, and she was Queen of the Sea.  
Under the stars beyond our stars where the new-forged  
meteors glow,  
Hotly we stormed Valhalla, a million years ago!

*Ever 'neath high Valhalla Hall the well-tuned horns begin,  
When the swords are out in the underworld, and the weary Gods  
come in.*

*Ever through high Valhalla Gate the Patient Angel goes.  
He opens the eyes that are blind with hate—he joins the hands  
of foes.*

Dust of the stars was under our feet, glitter of stars above—  
Wrecks of our wrath dropped reeling down as we fought and  
we spurned and we strove.  
Worlds upon worlds we tossed aside, and scattered them to  
and fro,  
The night that we stormed Valhalla, a million years ago!

*They are forgiven as they forgive all those dark wounds and deep.  
Their beds are made on the Lap of Time and they lie down and sleep.  
They are forgiven as they forgive all those old wounds that bleed.  
They shut their eyes from their worshippers; they sleep till the  
world has need.*

She with the star I had marked for my own—I with my set  
desire—  
Lost in the loom of the Night of Nights—lighted by worlds  
afire—  
Met in a war against the Gods where the headlong meteors  
glow,  
Hewing our way to Valhalla, a million years ago!

*They will come back—come back again—as long as the red Earth  
rolls.  
He never wasted a leaf or a tree. Do you think He would  
squander souls?*

THE KINGDOM

*(Enlarged from "The Naulahka")*

Now we are come to our Kingdom,  
And the State is thus and thus;  
Our legions wait at the Palace gate--  
Little it profits us.  
*Now we are come to our Kingdom!*

Now we are come to our Kingdom,  
And the Crown is ours to take--  
With a naked sword at the Council board,  
And under the throne the snake.  
*Now we are come to our Kingdom!*

Now we are come to our Kingdom,  
And the Realm is ours by right,  
With shame and fear for our daily cheer,  
And heaviness at night.  
*Now we are come to our Kingdom!*

Now we are come to our Kingdom,  
But my love's eyelids fall.  
All that I wrought for, all that I fought for.  
Delight her nothing at all.  
My crown is of withered leaves,  
For she sits in the dust and grieves.  
*Now we are come to our Kingdom!*

TARRANT MOSS

*(Enlarged from "Plain Tales from the Hills")*

I CLOSED and drew for my love's sake  
That now is false to me,  
And I slew the Reiver of Tarrant Moss  
And set Dumeny free.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

They have gone down, they have gone down,  
They are standing all arow—  
Twenty knights in the peat-water,  
That never struck a blow!

Their armour shall not dull nor rust,  
Their flesh shall not decay,  
For Tarrant Moss holds them in trust  
Until the Judgment Day.

Their soul went from them in their youth,  
Ah, God, that mine had gone,  
Whenas I leaned on my love's truth  
And not on my sword alone!

Whenas I leaned on lad's belief  
And not on my naked blade—  
And I slew a thief, and an honest thief,  
For the sake of a worthless maid.

They have laid the Reiver low in his place,  
They have set me up on high.  
But the twenty knights in the peat-water  
Are luckier than I!

And ever they give me gold and praise  
And ever I mourn my loss—  
For I struck the blow for my false love's sake  
And not for the Men of the Moss!

### SIR RICHARD'S SONG

(A. D. 1066)

(“ Young Men at the Manor ”—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

I FOLLOWED my Duke ere I was a lover,  
To take from England fief and fee;  
But now this game is the other way over—  
But now England hath taken me!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I had my horse, my shield and banner,  
And a boy's heart, so whole and free;  
But now I sing in another manner—  
But now England hath taken me!

As for my Father in his tower,  
Asking news of my ship at sea,  
He will remember his own hour—  
Tell him England hath taken me!

As for my Mother in her bower,  
That rules my Father so cunningly,  
She will remember a maiden's power—  
Tell her England hath taken me!

As for my Brother in Rouen City,  
A nimble and naughty page is he,  
But he will come to suffer and pity—  
Tell him England hath taken me!

As for my little Sister waiting  
In the pleasant orchards of Normandie,  
Tell her youth is the time for mating—  
Tell her England hath taken me!

As for my comrades in camp and highway,  
That lift their eyebrows scornfully,  
Tell them their way is not my way—  
Tell them England hath taken me!

Kings and Princes and Barons famed,  
Knights and Captains in your degree;  
Hear me a little before I am blamed—  
Seeing England hath taken me!

Howso great man's strength be reckoned,  
There are two things he cannot flee.  
Love is the first, and Death is the second—  
And Love in England hath taken me!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

A TREE SONG

(A. D. 1200)

("Weland's Sword"—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

OF ALL the trees that grow so fair,  
Old England to adorn,  
Greater are none beneath the Sun  
Than Oak, and Ash, and Thorn.  
Sing Oak, and Ash, and Thorn, good sirs,  
(All of a Midsummer morn!)  
Surely we sing no little thing  
In Oak, and Ash, and Thorn!

Oak of the Clay lived many a day  
Or ever Æneas began.  
Ash of the Loam was a lady at home  
When Brut was an outlaw man.  
Thorn of the Down saw New Troy Town  
(From which was London born);  
Witness hereby the ancients  
Of Oak, and Ash, and Thorn!

Yew that is old in churchyard-mould,  
He breedeth a mighty bow.  
Alder for shoes do wise men choose,  
And beech for cups also.  
But when ye have killed, and your bowl is spilled,  
And your shoes are clean outworn,  
Back ye must speed for all that ye need  
To Oak, and Ash, and Thorn!

Ellum she hateth mankind, and waiteth  
Till every gust be laid  
To drop a limb on the head of him  
That anyway trusts her shade.  
But whether a lad be sober or sad,  
Or mellow with ale from the horn,  
He will take no wrong when he lieth along  
'Neath Oak, and Ash, and Thorn!



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Oh, do not tell the Priest our plight,  
Or he would call it a sin;  
But—we have been out in the woods all night,  
A-conjuring Summer in!  
And we bring you news by word of mouth—  
Good news for cattle and corn—  
Now is the Sun come up from the South  
With Oak, and Ash, and Thorn!

Sing Oak, and Ash, and Thorn, good sirs  
(All of a Midsummer morn)!  
England shall bide till Judgment Tide  
By Oak, and Ash, and Thorn!

### THE FLOODS

(“ My Son’s Wife ”—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

THE rain it rains without a stay  
In the hills above us, in the hills;  
And presently the floods break way  
Whose strength is in the hills.  
The trees they suck from every cloud,  
The valley brooks they roar aloud—  
Bank-high for the lowlands, lowlands,  
Lowlands under the hills!

The first wood down is sere and small,  
From the hills—the brishings off the hills;  
And then come by the bats and all  
We cut last year in the hills;  
And then the roots we tried to cleave  
But found too tough and had to leave—  
Polting down through the lowlands, lowlands,  
Lowlands under the hills!

The eye shall look, the ear shall hark  
To the hills, the doings in the hills!  
And rivers mating in the dark  
With tokens from the hills.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Now what is weak will surely go,  
And what is strong must prove it so—  
Stand fast in the lowlands, lowlands,  
Lowlands under the hills!

The floods they shall not be afraid—  
Nor the hills above 'em, nor the hills—  
Of any fence which man has made  
Betwixt him and the hills.  
The waters shall not reckon twice  
For any work of man's device,  
But bid it down to the lowlands, lowlands,  
Lowlands under the hills!

The floods shall sweep corruption clean—  
By the hills, the blessing of the hills—  
That more the meadows may be green  
New-mended from the hills.  
The crops and cattle shall increase,  
Nor little children shall not cease.  
Go—plough the lowlands, lowlands,  
Lowlands under the hills!

## CUCKOO SONG

*(Spring begins in Southern England on the 14th April, on which date the Old Woman lets the Cuckoo out of her basket at Heathfield Fair—locally known as Heffle Cuckoo Fair.)*

TELL it to the locked-up trees,  
Cuckoo, bring your song here!  
Warrant, Act and Summons, please,  
For Spring to pass along here!  
Tell old Winter, if he doubt,  
Tell him squat and square—a!  
Old Woman!  
Old Woman!  
Old Woman's let the Cuckoo out  
At Heffle Cuckoo Fair—a!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

March has searched and April tried—  
'Tisn't long to May now.  
Not so far to Whitsuntide  
And Cuckoo's come to stay now!  
Hear the valiant fellow shout  
Down the orchard bare—a!  
Old Woman!  
Old Woman!  
Old Woman's let the Cuckoo out  
At Heffle Cuckoo Fair—a!

When your heart is young and gay  
And the season rules it—  
Work your works and play your play  
'Fore the Autumn cools it!  
Kiss you turn and turn-about,  
But, my lad, beware—a!  
Old Woman!  
Old Woman!  
Old Woman's let the Cuckoo out  
At Heffle Cuckoo Fair—a!

### A CHARM

*(Introduction to "Rewards and Fairies")*

TAKE of English earth as much  
As either hand may rightly clutch.  
In the taking of it breathe  
Prayer for all who lie beneath.  
Not the great nor well-bespoke,  
But the mere uncounted folk  
Of whose life and death is none  
Report or lamentation.  
Lay that earth upon thy heart,  
And thy sickness shall depart!

It shall sweeten and make whole  
Fevered breath and festered soul.  
It shall mightily restrain  
Over-busied hand and brain.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

It shall ease thy mortal strife  
'Gainst the immortal woe of life,  
Till thyself, restored, shall prove  
By what grace the Heavens do move

Take of English flowers these—  
Spring's full-facèd primroses,  
Summer's wild wide-hearted rose,  
Autumn's wall-flower of the close,  
And, thy darkness to illume,  
Winter's bee-thronged ivy-bloom.  
Seek and serve them where they bide  
From Candlemas to Christmas-tide,  
For these simples, used aright,  
Can restore a failing sight.

These shall cleanse and purify  
Webbed and inward-turning eye;  
These shall show thee treasure hid  
Thy familiar fields amid;  
And reveal (which is thy need)  
Every man a King indeed!

## THE PRAIRIE

*(Canada)*

"I SEE the grass shake in the sun for leagues on either  
hand,  
I see a river loop and run about a treeless land—  
An empty plain, a steely pond, a distance diamond-clear,  
And low blue naked hills beyond. And what is that to  
fear?"

"Go softly by that river-side or, when you would depart,  
You'll find its every winding tied and knotted round your  
heart.  
Be wary as the seasons pass, or you may ne'er outrun  
The wind that sets that yellowed grass a-shiver 'neath the  
sun."

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I hear the summer storm outblown—the drip of the grateful wheat.  
I hear the hard trail telephone a far-off horse's feet.  
I hear the horns of Autumn blow to the wild-fowl overhead;  
And I hear the hush before the snow. And what is that to dread?"

"Take heed what spell the lightning weaves—what charm the echoes shape—  
Or, bound among a million sheaves, your soul shall not escape.  
Bar home the door of summer nights lest those high planets drown  
The memory of near delights in all the longed-for town."

"What need have I to long or fear? Now, friendly, I behold  
My faithful seasons robe the year in silver and in gold.  
Now I possess and am possessed of the land where I would be,  
And the curve of half Earth's generous breast shall soothe and ravish me!"

### JOBSON'S AMEN

("In the Presence"—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

"BLESSED be the English and all their ways and works.  
Cursèd be the Infidels, Hereticks, and Turks!"  
"Amen," quo' Jobson, "but where I used to lie  
Was neither Candle, Bell nor Book to curse my brethren by,  
"But a palm-tree in full bearing, bowing down, bowing down,  
To a surf that drove unsparing at the brown, walled town—  
Conches in a temple, oil-lamps in a dome—  
And a low moon out of Africa said: 'This way home!'"

"Blessèd be the English and all that they profess.  
Cursèd be the Savages that prance in nakedness!"  
"Amen," quo' Jobson, "but where I used to lie  
Was neither shirt nor pantaloons to catch my brethren by:

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

" But a well-wheel slowly creaking, going round, going round,

By a water-channel leaking over drowned, warm ground—  
Parrots very busy in the trellised pepper-vine—  
And a high sun over Asia shouting: ' Rise and shine! ' "

" Blessèd be the English and everything they own.  
Cursèd be the Infidels that bow to wood and stone! "

" Amen," quo' Jobson, " but where I used to lie  
Was neither pew nor Gospelleer to save my brethren by:

" But a desert stretched and stricken, left and right, left and right,

Where the piled mirages thicken under white-hot light—  
A skull beneath a sand-hill and a viper coiled inside—  
And a red wind out of Libya roaring: ' Run and hide! ' "

" Blessèd be the English and all they make or do.  
Cursèd be the Hereticks who doubt that this is true! "

" Amen," quo' Jobson, " but where I mean to die  
Is neither rule nor calliper to judge the matter by:

" But Himalaya heavenward-heading, sheer and vast, sheer and vast,

In a million summits bedding on the last world's past—  
A certain sacred mountain where the scented cedars climb,  
And—the feet of my Belovèd hurrying back through Time! "

## CHAPTER HEADINGS

### PLAIN TALES FROM THE HILLS

LOOK, you have cast out Love! What Gods are these  
You bid me please?  
The Three in One, the One in Three? Not so!  
To my own Gods I go.  
It may be they shall give me greater ease  
Than your cold Christ and tangled Trinities.

*Lispeth.*

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

When the earth was sick and the skies were grey,  
And the woods were rotted with rain,  
The Dead Man rode through the autumn day  
To visit his love again.

His love she neither saw nor heard,  
So heavy was her shame;  
And tho' the babe within her stirred  
She knew not that he came.

*The Other Man.*

Cry "Murder" in the market-place, and each  
Will turn upon his neighbour anxious eyes  
Asking: "Art thou the man?" We hunted Cain  
Some centuries ago across the world.  
This bred the fear our own misdeeds maintain  
To-day.

*His Wedded Wife.*

Go, stalk the red deer o'er the heather,  
Ride, follow the fox if you can!  
But, for pleasure and profit together,  
Allow me the hunting of Man—  
The chase of the Human, the search for the Soul  
To its ruin—the hunting of Man.

*Pig.*

"Stopped in the straight when the race was his own—  
Look at him cutting it—cur to the bone!"  
Ask ere the youngster be rated and chidden  
What did he carry and how was he ridden?  
Maybe they used him too much at the start.  
Maybe Fate's weight-cloth is breaking his heart.

*In the Pride of his Youth.*

"And some are sulky, while some will plunge.  
(So ho! Steady! Stand still, you!)  
Some you must gentle, and some you must lunge.  
(There! There! Who wants to kill you?)  
Some—there are losses in every trade—  
Will break their hearts ere bitted and made,  
Will fight like fiends as the rope cuts hard,  
And die dumb-mad in the breaking-yard."

*Thrown Away.*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

The World hath set its heavy yoke  
Upon the old white-bearded folk  
Who strive to please the King.  
God's mercy is upon the young,  
God's wisdom in the baby tongue  
That fears not anything.

*Tods' Amendment.*

Not though you die to-night, O Sweet, and wail,  
A spectre at my door,  
Shall mortal Fear make Love immortal fail—  
I shall but love you more,  
Who, from Death's House returning, give me still  
One moment's comfort in my matchless ill.

*By Word of Mouth.*

They burnt a corpse upon the sand—  
The light shone out afar;  
It guided home the plunging dhows  
That beat from Zanzibar.  
Spirit of Fire, where'er Thy altars rise,  
Thou art the Light of Guidance to our eyes!

*In Error.*

Ride with an idle whip, ride with an unused heel,  
But, once in a way, there will come a day  
When the colt must be taught to feel  
'The lash that falls, and the curb that galls, and the sting of  
the rowelled steel.

*The Conversion of Aurelian McGoggin.*

It was not in the open fight  
We threw away the sword,  
But in the lonely watching  
In the darkness by the ford.  
The waters lapped, the night-wind blew,  
Full-armed the Fear was born and grew,  
And we were flying ere we knew  
From panic in the night.

*The Rout of the White Hussars.*



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

In the daytime, when she moved about me,  
In the night, when she was sleeping at my side,—  
I was wearied, I was wearied of her presence.  
Day by day and night by night I grew to hate her—  
Would God that she or I had died!

*The Bronckhorst Divorce Case.*

A stone's throw out on either hand  
From that well-ordered road we tread,  
And all the world is wild and strange;  
*Churel*<sup>1</sup> and ghoul and Djinn and sprite  
Shall bear us company to-night,  
For we have reached the Oldest Land  
Wherein the Powers of Darkness range.

*In the House of Suddhoo.*

To-night, God knows what thing shall tide,  
The Earth is racked and fain—  
Expectant, sleepless, open-eyed;  
And we, who from the Earth were made,  
Thrill with our Mother's pain.

*False Dawn.*

Pit where the buffalo cooled his hide,  
By the hot sun emptied, and blistered and dried;  
Log in the plume-grass, hidden and lone;  
Bund where the earth-rat's mounds are strown;  
Cave in the bank where the sly stream steals;  
Aloe that stabs at the belly and heels,  
Jump if you dare on a steed untried—  
Safer it is to go wide—go wide!  
*Hark, from in front where the best men ride;—*  
*"Pull to the off, boys! Wide! Go wide!"*

*Cupid's Arrows.*

He drank strong waters and his speech was coarse;  
He purchased raiment and forbore to pay;  
He stuck a trusting junior with a horse,  
And won gymkhanas in a doubtful way.  
Then, 'twixt a vice and folly, turned aside  
To do good deeds—and straight to cloak them, lied.

*A Bank Fraud.*

<sup>1</sup> The ghost of a woman who has died in childbirth.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Thus, for a season, they fought it fair—  
She and his cousin May—  
Tactful, talented, debonair,  
Decorous foes were they;  
But never can battle of man compare  
With merciless feminine fray.

*The Rescue of Pluffles.*

Then a pile of heads he laid—  
Thirty thousand heaped on high—  
All to please the Kafir maid  
Where the Oxus rippled by.  
Grimly spake Atulla Khan:—  
'Love hath made this thing a Man.'

*His Chance in Life.*

Rosicrucian subtleties  
In the Orient had rise.  
Ye may find their teachers still  
Under Jacatâla's Hill.  
Seek ye Bombast Paracelsus,  
Read what Fludd the Seeker tells us  
Of the Dominant that runs  
Through the cycle of the Suns.  
Read my story last and see  
Luna at her apogee.

*Consequences.*

So we loosed a bloomin' volley  
An' we made the beggars cut,  
An' when our pooch was emptied out  
We used the bloomin' butt.  
Ho! My! Don't you come anigh  
When Tommy is a-playin' with the bay'nit an' the butt!  
*The Taking of Lungtungpen.*

Pleasant it is for the Little Tin Gods  
When great Jove nods;  
But Little Tin Gods make their little mistakes  
In missing the hour when great Jove wakes.  
*A Germ-Destroyer.*

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There is a tide in the affairs of men  
Which, taken any way you please, is bad,  
And strands them in forsaken guts and creeks  
No decent soul would think of visiting.  
You cannot stop the tide; but, now and then,  
You may arrest some rash adventurer,  
Who—h'm—will hardly thank you for your pains.  
*Kidnapped.*

While the snaffle holds or the long-neck stings,  
While the big beam tilts or the last bell rings,  
While horses are horses to train and to race,  
Then women and wine take a second place  
For me—for me—  
While a short 'ten-three'  
Has a field to squander or fence to face.  
*The Broken-Link Handicap.*

Little Blind Fish, thou art marvellous wise!  
Little Blind Fish, who put out thy eyes?  
Open thy ears while I whisper my wish.  
Bring me a lover, thou little Blind Fish!  
*The Bisara of Pooree.*

---

### COLD IRON

("Cold Iron"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

"**G**OLD is for the mistress—silver for the maid—  
Copper for the craftsman cunning at his trade."  
"Good!" said the Baron, sitting in his hall,  
"But Iron—Cold Iron—is master of them all."

So he made rebellion 'gainst the King his liege,  
Camped before his citadel and summoned it to siege.  
"Nay!" said the cannoneer on the castle wall,  
"But Iron—Cold Iron—shall be master of you all!"

Woe for the Baron and his knights so strong,  
When the cruel cannon-balls laid 'em all along;  
He was taken prisoner, he was cast in thrall,  
And Iron—Cold Iron—was master of it all!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Yet his King spake kindly (ah, how kind a Lord!)  
“ What if I release thee now and give thee back thy sword? ”  
“ Nay! ” said the Baron, “ mock not at my fall,  
For Iron—Cold Iron—is master of men all.”

*“ Tears are for the craven, prayers are for the clown—  
Halters for the silly neck that cannot keep a crown.”*  
“ As my loss is grievous, so my hope is small,  
For Iron—Cold Iron—must be master of men all! ”

Yet his King made answer (few such Kings there be!)  
“ Here is Bread and here is Wine—sit and sup with me.  
Eat and drink in Mary’s Name, the whiles I do recall  
How Iron—Cold Iron—can be master of men all! ”

He took the Wine and blessed it. He blessed and brake the  
Bread.  
With His own Hands He served Them, and presently He  
said:  
“ See! These Hands they pierced with nails, outside My  
city wall,  
Show Iron—Cold Iron—to be master of men all.

“ Wounds are for the desperate, blows are for the strong.  
Balm and oil for weary hearts all cut and bruised with  
wrong.  
I forgive thy treason—I redeem thy fall—  
For Iron—Cold Iron—must be master of men all! ”

*“ Crowns are for the valiant—sceptres for the bold!  
Thrones and powers for mighty men who dare to take and  
hold! ”*  
“ Nay! ” said the Baron, kneeling in his hall,  
“ But Iron—Cold Iron—is master of men all!  
Iron out of Calvary is master of men all! ”

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### A SONG OF KABIR

("The Miracle of Purun Bhagat"—  
*The Second Jungle Book*)

OH, LIGHT was the world that he weighed in his hands!  
Oh, heavy the tale of his fiefs and his lands!  
He has gone from the *guddee*<sup>1</sup> and put on the shroud,  
And departed in guise of *bairagi*<sup>2</sup> avowed!

Now the white road to Delhi is mat for his feet.  
The *sal* and the *kikar*<sup>3</sup> must guard him from heat.  
His home is the camp, and the waste, and the crowd—  
He is seeking the Way as *bairagi* avowed!

He has looked upon Man, and his eyeballs are clear—  
(There was One; there is One, and but One, saith Kabir);  
The Red Mist of Doing has thinned to a cloud—  
He has taken the Path for *bairagi* avowed!

To learn and discern of his brother the clod,  
Of his brother the brute, and his brother the God,  
He has gone from the council and put on the shroud,  
("Can ye hear?" saith Kabir), a *bairagi* avowed!

### A CAROL

("The Tree of Justice"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

OUR Lord Who did the Ox command  
To kneel to Judah's King,  
He binds His frost upon the land  
To ripen it for Spring—  
To ripen it for Spring, good sirs,  
According to His Word.  
Which well must be as ye can see—  
And who shall judge the Lord?

When we poor fenmen skate the ice  
Or shiver on the wold,  
We hear the cry of a single tree  
That breaks her heart in the cold—

<sup>1</sup> Seat of Justice.    <sup>2</sup> Wandering holy man.    <sup>3</sup> Wayside trees.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

That breaks her heart in the cold, good sirs,  
And rendeth by the board.  
Which well must be as ye can see—  
And who shall judge the Lord?

Her wood is crazed and little worth  
Excepting as to burn,  
That we may warm and make our mirth  
Until the Spring return—  
Until the Spring return, good sirs,  
When Christians walk abroad;  
Which well must be as ye can see—  
And who shall judge the Lord?

God bless the master of this house,  
And all who sleep therein!  
And guard the fens from pirate folk,  
And keep us all from sin,  
To walk in honesty, good sirs,  
Of thought and deed and word!  
Which shall befriend our latter end. . . .  
And who shall judge the Lord?

“MY NEW-CUT ASHLAR”

(*L'Envoi to “Life's Handicap”*)

**M**y new-cut ashlar takes the light  
Where crimson-blank the windows flare.  
By my own work before the night,  
Great Overseer, I make my prayer.

If there be good in that I wrought  
Thy Hand compelled it, Master, Thine—  
Where I have failed to meet Thy Thought  
I know, through Thee, the blame was mine.

One instant's toil to Thee denied  
Stands all Eternity's offence.  
Of that I did with Thee to guide,  
To Thee, through Thee, be excellence.

The depth and dream of my desire,  
The bitter paths wherein I stray—  
Thou knowest Who hast made the Fire,  
Thou knowest Who hast made the Clay.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Who, lest all thought of Eden fade,  
Bring'st Eden to the craftsman's brain—  
Godlike to muse o'er his own Trade  
And manlike stand with God again!

One stone the more swings into place  
In that dread Temple of Thy worth.  
It is enough that, through Thy Grace,  
I saw nought common on Thy Earth.

Take not that vision from my ken—  
Oh, whatsoe'er may spoil or speed.  
Help me to need no aid from men  
That I may help such men as need!

“NON NOBIS DOMINE!”

(Written for “*The Pageant of Parliament*,” 1934)

**N**ON nobis Domine!—  
Not unto us, O Lord!  
The Praise or Glory be  
Of any deed or word;  
For in Thy Judgment lies  
To crown or bring to nought  
All knowledge or device  
That Man has reached or wrought.

And we confess our blame—  
How all too high we hold  
That noise which men call Fame,  
That dross which men call Gold.  
For these we undergo  
Our hot and godless days,  
But in our hearts we know  
Not unto us the Praise.

O Power by Whom we live—  
Creator, Judge, and Friend,  
Upholdingly forgive  
Nor fail us at the end:  
But grant us well to see  
In all our piteous ways—  
*Non nobis Domine!*—  
Not unto us the Praise!

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

EDDI'S SERVICE

(A. D. 687)

("The Conversion of St. Wilfrid"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

EDDI, priest of St. Wilfrid  
In his chapel at Manhood End,  
Ordered a midnight service  
For such as cared to attend.

But the Saxons were keeping Christmas,  
And the night was stormy as well.  
Nobody came to service,  
Though Eddi rang the bell.

"Wicked weather for walking."  
Said Eddi of Manhood End.  
"But I must go on with the service  
For such as care to attend."

The altar-lamps were lighted,—  
An old marsh-donkey came,  
Bold as a guest invited,  
And stared at the guttering flame.

The storm beat on at the windows,  
The water splashed on the floor,  
And a wet, yoke-weary bullock  
Pushed in through the open door.

"How do I know what is greatest,  
How do I know what is least?  
That is My Father's business,"  
Said Eddi, Wilfrid's priest.

"But—three are gathered together—  
Listen to me and attend.  
I bring good news, my brethren!"  
Said Eddi of Manhood End.

And he told the Ox of a Manger  
And a Stall in Bethlehem,  
And he spoke to the Ass of a Rider  
That rode to Jerusalem.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

They steamed and dripped in the chancel,  
They listened and never stirred,  
While, just as though they were Bishops,  
Eddi preached them The Word,

Till the gale blew off on the marshes  
And the windows showed the day,  
And the Ox and the Ass together  
Wheeled and clattered away.

And when the Saxons mocked him,  
Said Eddi of Manhood End,  
"I dare not shut His chapel  
On such as care to attend."

### OUR LADY OF THE SACKCLOTH

(Ethiopic Version: founded on Brit. Mus. M.S.  
Orient No. 652, Folio 9)

THERE was a Priest at Philæ,  
Tongue-tied, feeble, and old;  
And the daily prayer to the Virgin  
Was all the Office he could.

The others were ill-remembered,  
Mumbled and hard to hear;  
But to Mary, the two-fold Virgin,  
Always his voice rang clear.

And the congregation mocked him,  
And the weight of the years he bore,  
And they sent word to the Bishop  
That he should not serve them more.

*(Never again at the Offering  
When the Bread and the Body are one:  
Oh, never the picture of Mary  
Watching him serve her Son!)*

Kindly and wise was the Bishop.  
Unto the Priest said he:—  
"Patience till thou art stronger,  
And keep meantime with me.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"Patience a little; it may be  
The Lord shall loosen thy tongue  
And then thou shalt serve at the Offering  
As it was when we were young."

And the Priest obeyed and was silent,  
And the Bishop gave him leave  
To walk alone in the desert  
Where none should see him grieve.

*(Never again at the Offering  
When the Wine and the Blood are one!  
Oh, never the picture of Mary  
Watching him honour her Son!)*

Saintly and clean was the Bishop,  
Ruling himself aright  
With prayer and fast in the daytime  
And scourge and vigil at night.

Out of his zeal he was minded  
To add one penance the more—  
A garment of harshest sackcloth  
Under the robes he wore.

He gathered the cloth in secret  
Lest any should know and praise—  
The shears, the palm and the packthread—  
And laboured it many ways.

But he had no skill in the making,  
And failed and fretted the while;  
Till there stood a Woman before him,  
Smiling as Mothers smile.

Her feet were burned by the desert—  
Like a desert-dweller she trod—  
Even the two-fold Virgin,  
Spouse and Bearer of God!

She took the shears and the sacking,  
The needle and stubborn thread,  
She cut, she shaped, and she sewed them,  
And, "This shall be blessed," she said.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

She passed in the white hot noontide,  
On a wave of the quivering air;  
And the Bishop's eyes were opened,  
And he fell on his face in prayer.

But—*far from the smouldering censers—  
Far from the chanted praise—  
Oh, far from the pictures of Mary  
That had watched him all his days—*

Far in the desert by Philæ,  
The old Priest walked forlorn,  
Till he saw at the head of her Riders  
A Queen of the Desert-born.

High she swayed on her camel,  
Beautiful to behold:  
And her beast was belled with silver,  
And her veils were spotted with gold!

Low she leaned from her litter—  
Soft she spoke in his ear:—  
“Nay, I have watched thy sorrow!  
Nay, but the end is near!

“For again thou shalt serve at the Offering  
And thy tongue shall be loosed in praise,  
And again thou shalt sing unto Mary  
Who has watched thee all thy days.

“Go in peace to the Bishop,  
Carry him word from me—  
That the Woman who sewed the sackcloth  
Would have him set thee free!”

### THE LEGEND OF MIRTH

(“The Horse Marines”—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

THE Four Archangels, so the legends tell,  
Raphael, Gabriel, Michael, Azrael,  
Being first of those to whom the Power was shown,  
Stood first of all the Host before The Throne,

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And, when the Charges were allotted, burst  
Tumultuous-winged from out the assembly first.  
Zeal was their spur that bade them strictly heed  
Their own high judgment on their lightest deed.  
Zeal was their spur that, when relief was given,  
Urged them unwearied to new toils in Heaven;  
For Honour's sake perfecting every task  
Beyond what e'en Perfection's self could ask. . . .  
And Allah, Who created Zeal and Pride,  
Knows how the twain are perilous-near allied.

It chanced on one of Heaven's long-lighted days,  
The Four and all the Host being gone their ways  
Each to his Charge, the shining Courts were void  
Save for one Seraph whom no charge employed,  
With folden wings and slumber-threatened brow,  
To whom The Word: "Belovèd, what dost thou?"  
"By the Permission," came the answer soft,  
"Little I do nor do that little oft.  
As is The Will in Heaven so on Earth  
Where by The Will I strive to make men mirth."  
He ceased and sped, hearing The Word once more:  
"Belovèd, go thy way and greet the Four."

Systems and Universes overpast,  
The Seraph came upon the Four, at last,  
Guiding and guarding with devoted mind  
The tedious generations of mankind  
Who lent at most unwilling ear and eye  
When they could not escape the ministry. . . .  
Yet, patient, faithful, firm, persistent, just  
Toward all that gross, indifferent, facile dust,  
The Archangels laboured to discharge their trust  
By precept and example, prayer and law,  
Advice, reproof, and rule, but, labouring, saw  
Each in his fellows' countenance confessed,  
The Doubt that sickens: "Have I done my best?"

Even as they sighed and turned to toil anew,  
The Seraph hailed them with observance due:  
And, after some fit talk of higher things,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Touched tentative on mundane happenings.  
 This they permitting, he, emboldened thus,  
 Prolused of humankind promiscuous.  
 And, since the large contention less avails  
 Than instances observed, he told them tales—  
 Tales of the shop, the bed, the court, the street,  
 Intimate, elemental, indiscreet:  
 Occasion where Confusion smiting swift  
 Piles jest on jest as snow-slides pile the drift  
 Whence, one by one, beneath deriding skies,  
 The victims' bare, bewildered heads arise—  
 Tales of the passing of the spirit, graced  
 With humour blinding as the doom it faced—  
 Stark tales of ribaldry that broke aside  
 To tears, by laughter swallowed ere they dried—  
 Tales to which neither grace nor gain accrue,  
 But only (Allah be exalted!) true,  
 And only, as the Seraph showed that night,  
 Delighting to the limits of delight.

These he rehearsed with artful pause and halt,  
 And such pretence of memory at fault,  
 That soon the Four—so well the bait was thrown—  
 Came to his aid with memories of their own—  
 Matters dismissed long since as small or vain,  
 Whereof the high significance had lain  
 Hid, till the ungirt glosses made it plain.  
 Then, as enlightenment came broad and fast,  
 Each marvelled at his own oblivious past,  
 Until—the Gates of Laughter opened wide—  
 The Four, with that bland Seraph at their side,  
 While they recalled, compared, and amplified,  
 In utter mirth forgot both Zeal and Pride!

High over Heaven the lamps of midnight burned  
 Ere, weak with merriment, the Four returned,  
 Not in that order they were wont to keep—  
 Pinion to pinion answering, sweep for sweep,  
 In awful diapason heard afar—  
 But shoutingly adrift 'twixt star and star;  
 Reeling a planet's orbit left or right  
 As laughter took them in the abysmal Night;  
 Or, by the point of some remembered jest,

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Winged and brought helpless down through gulfs unguessed,  
Where the blank worlds that gather to the birth  
Leaped in the Womb of Darkness at their mirth,  
And e'en Gehenna's bondsmen understood  
They were not damned from human brotherhood. . . .

Not first nor last of Heaven's high Host, the Four  
That night took place beneath The Throne once more.  
O lovelier than their morning majesty,  
The understanding light behind the eye!  
O more compelling than their old command,  
The new-learned friendly gesture of the hand!  
O sweeter than their zealous fellowship,  
The wise half-smile that passed from lip to lip!  
O well and roundly, when Command was given,  
They told their tale against themselves to Heaven,  
And in the silence, waiting on The Word,  
Received the Peace and Pardon of The Lord!

### SHIV AND THE GRASSHOPPER

("Toomai of the Elephants"—*The Jungle Book*)

SHIV, who poured the harvest and made the winds to  
blow,  
Sitting at the doorways of a day of long ago,  
Gave to each his portion, food and toil and fate,  
From the King upon the *guddee*<sup>1</sup> to the Beggar at the gate.  
*All things made he—Shiva the Preserver.*  
*Mahadeo! Mahadeo! He made all,—*  
*Thorn for the camel, fodder for the kine,*  
*And Mother's heart for sleepy head, O little Son of mine!*

Wheat he gave to rich folk, millet to the poor,  
Broken scraps for holy men that beg from door to door;  
Cattle to the tiger, carrion to the kite,  
And rags and bones to wicked wolves without the wall at  
night.

Naught he found too lofty, none he saw too low—  
Parbati beside him watched them come and go;  
Thought to cheat her husband, turning Shiv to jest—

<sup>1</sup> Throne

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Stole the little grasshopper and hid it in her breast.

*So she tricked him, Shiva the Preserver.*

*Mohadeo! Mahadeo, turn and see!*

*Tall are the camels, heavy are the kine,*

*But this was Least of Little Things, O little Son of mine!*

When the dole was ended, laughingly she said,

"Master, of a million mouths is not one unfed?"

Laughing, Shiv made answer, "All have had their part,

Even he, the little one, hidden 'neath thy heart."

From her breast she plucked it, Parbati the thief,

Saw the Least of Little Things gnawed a new-grown leaf!

Saw and feared and wondered, making prayer to Shiv,

Who hath surely given meat to all that live!

*All things made he—Shiva the Preserver.*

*Mahadeo! Mahadeo! He made all,—*

*Thorn for the camel, fodder for the kine,*

*And Mother's heart for sleepy head, O little Son of mine!*

### THE FAIRIES' SIEGE

*(Enlarged from "Kim")*

I HAVE been given my charge to keep—

Well have I kept the same!

Playing with strife for the most of my life,

But this is a different game.

I'll not fight against swords unseen,

Or spears that I cannot view—

Hand him the keys of the place on your knees—

'Tis the Dreamer whose dreams come true!

Ask him his terms and accept them at once.

Quick, ere we anger him, go!

Never before have I flinched from the guns,

But this is a different show.

I'll not fight with the Herald of God

(I know what his Master can do!)

Open the gate, he must enter in state,

'Tis the Dreamer whose dreams come true!

I'd not give way for an Emperor,

I'd hold my road for a King—

To the Triple Crown I would not bow down—

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

But this is a different thing.  
I'll not fight with the Powers of Air,  
Sentry, pass him through!  
Drawbridge let fall, 'tis the Lord of us all,  
The Dreamer whose dreams come true!

### THE QUEST

THE Knight came home from the quest,  
Muddied and sore he came.  
Battered of shield and crest,  
Bannerless, bruised and lame.  
Fighting we take no shame,  
Better is man for a fall.  
Merrily borne, the bugle-horn  
Answered the warder's call:—  
“Here is my lance to mend (Haro!),  
Here is my horse to be shot!  
Ay, they were strong, and the fight was long;  
But I paid as good as I got!”  
“Oh, dark and deep their van,  
That mocked my battle-cry.  
I could not miss my man,  
But I could not carry by:  
Utterly whelmed was I,  
Flung under, horse and all.”  
Merrily borne, the bugle-horn  
Answered the warder's call!  
“My wounds are noised abroad;  
But theirs my foemen cloaked.  
Ye see my broken sword—  
But never the blades she broke;  
Paying them stroke for stroke,  
Good handsel over all.”  
Merrily borne, the bugle-horn  
Answered the warder's call!  
“My shame ye count and know.  
Ye say the quest is vain.  
Ye have not seen my foe.  
Ye have not told his slain.  
Surely he fights again, again;  
But when ye prove his line,



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There shall come to your aid my broken blade  
In the last, lost fight of mine!  
And here is my lance to mend (Haro!),  
And here is my horse to be shot!  
Ay, they were strong, and the fight was long;  
But I paid as good as I got! "

### THE CHILDREN

1914-18

("The Honours of War"—*A Diversity of Creatures*,

THESE were our children who died for our lands: they  
were dear in our sight.  
We have only the memory left of their home-treasured  
sayings and laughter.  
The price of our loss shall be paid to our hands, not  
another's hereafter.  
Neither the Alien nor Priest shall decide on it. That is our  
right.  
*But who shall return us the children?*

At the hour the Barbarian chose to disclose his pretences,  
And raged against Man, they engaged, on the breasts that  
they bared for us,  
The first felon-stroke of the sword he had long-time  
prepared for us—  
Their bodies were all our defence while we wrought our  
defences.

They bought us anew with their blood, forbearing to blame  
us,  
Those hours which we had not made good when the Judgment  
o'ercame us.  
They believed us and perished for it. Our statecraft, our  
learning  
Delivered them bound to the Pit and alive to the burning  
Whither they mirthfully hastened as jostling for honour—  
Not since her birth has our Earth seen such worth loosed  
upon her.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Nor was their agony brief, or once only imposed on them.

The wounded, the war-spent, the sick received no exemption:

Being cured they returned and endured and achieved our redemption,

Hopeless themselves of relief, till Death, marvelling, closed on them.

That flesh we had nursed from the first in all cleanness was given

To corruption unveiled and assailed by the malice of Heaven—

By the heart-shaking jests of Decay where it lolled on the wires—

To be blanched or gay-painted by fumes—to be cindered by fires—

To be senselessly tossed and retossed in stale mutilation  
From crater to crater. For this we shall take expiation.

*But who shall return us our children?*

## A SONG TO MITHRAS

Hymn of the XXX Legion: circa A.D. 350

("On the Great Wall"—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

**M**ITHRAS, God of the Morning, our trumpets waken  
the Wall!

"Rome is above the Nations, but Thou art over all!"

Now as the names are answered, and the guards are marched  
away,

Mithras, also a soldier, give us strength for the day!

Mithras, God of the Noontide, the heather swims in the heat.

Our helmets scorch our foreheads, our sandals burn our feet.

Now in the ungirt hour—now lest we blink and drowse,

Mithras, also a soldier, keep us true to our vows!

Mithras, God of the Sunset, low on the Western main—

Thou descending immortal, immortal to rise again!

Now when the watch is ended, now when the wine is drawn,

Mithras, also a soldier, keep us pure till the dawn!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Mithras, God of the Midnight, here where the great Bull dies,  
Look on Thy children in darkness. Oh, take our sacrifice!  
Many roads Thou hast fashioned—all of them lead to the  
Light!  
Mithras, also a soldier, teach us to die aright!

### THE NEW KNIGHTHOOD

(“A Deal in Cotton”—*Actions and Reactions*)

WHO gives him the Bath?  
“I,” said the wet,  
Rank Jungle-sweat,  
“I’ll give him the Bath!”

Who’ll sing the psalms?  
“We,” said the Palms.  
“As the hot wind becalms,  
“We’ll sing the psalms.”

Who lays on the sword?  
“I,” said the Sun,  
“Before he has done,  
“I’ll lay on the sword.”

Who fastens his belt?  
“I,” said Short-Rations,  
“I know all the fashions  
“Of tightening a belt!”

Who gives him his spur?  
“I,” said his Chief,  
Exact and brief,  
“I’ll give him the spur.”

Who’ll shake his hand?  
“I,” said the Fever,  
“And I’m no deceiver,  
“I’ll shake his hand.”

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Who brings him the wine?

"I," said Quinine,

"It's a habit of mine.

"I'll come with his wine."

Who'll put him to proof?

"I," said All Earth.

"Whatever he's worth,

"I'll put to the proof."

Who'll choose him for Knight?

"I," said his Mother,

"Before any other,

"My very own Knight."

And after this fashion, adventure to seek,  
Was Sir Galahad made—as it might be last week!

## THE WASTER

1930

FROM the date that the doors of his prep-school close  
On the lonely little son  
He is taught by precept, insult, and blows  
The Things that Are Never Done.  
Year after year, without favour or fear,  
From seven to twenty-two,  
His keepers insist he shall learn the list  
Of the things no fellow can do.  
(They are not so strict with the average Pict  
And it isn't set to, etc.)

For this and not for the profit it brings  
Or the good of his fellow-kind  
He is and suffers unspeakable things  
In body and soul and mind.  
But the net result of that Primitive Cult,  
Whatever else may be won,  
Is definite knowledge ere leaving College  
Of the Things that Are Never Done.  
(An interdict which is strange to the Pict  
And was never revealed to, etc.)

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Slack by training and slow by birth,  
 Only quick to despise,  
 Largely assessing his neighbour's worth  
 By the hue of his socks or ties,  
 A loafer-in-grain, his foes maintain,  
 And how shall we combat their view  
 When, atop of his natural sloth, he holds  
 There are Things no Fellow can do?  
 (Which is why he is licked from the first by the Pict  
 And left at the post by, etc.)

## OUTSONG IN THE JUNGLE

("The Spring Running"—*The Second Jungle Book*)

BALOO

FOR the sake of him who showed  
 One wise Frog the Jungle-Road,  
 Keep the Law the Man-Pack make  
 For thy blind old Baloo's sake!  
 Clean or tainted, hot or stale,  
 Hold it as it were the Trail,  
 Through the day and through the night,  
 Questing neither left nor right.  
 For the sake of him who loves  
 Thee beyond all else that moves,  
 When thy Pack would make thee pain,  
 Say: "Tabaqui sings again."  
 When thy Pack would work thee ill,  
 Say: "Shere Khan is yet to kill."  
 When the knife is drawn to slay,  
 Keep the Law and go thy way.  
 (Root and honey, palm and spathe,  
 Guard a cub from harm and scathe!)  
*Wood and Water, Wind and Tree,  
 Jungle-Favour go with thee!*

KAA

Anger is the egg of Fear—  
 Only lidless eyes see clear.  
 Cobra-poison none may leech—  
 Even so with Cobra-speech.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Open talk shall call to thee  
Strength, whose mate is Courtesy.  
Send no lunge beyond thy length.  
Lend no rotten bough thy strength.  
Gauge thy gape with buck or goat,  
Lest thine eye should choke thy throat.  
After gorging, wouldst thou sleep?  
Look thy den be hid and deep,  
Lest a wrong, by thee forgot,  
Draw thy killer to the spot.  
East and West and North and South,  
Wash thy hide and close thy mouth.  
(Pit and rift and blue pool-brim,  
Middle-Jungle follow him!)  
*Wood and Water, Wind and Tree,  
Jungle-Favour go with thee!*

### BAGHEERA

In the cage my life began;  
Well I know the worth of Man.  
By the Broken Lock that freed—  
Man-cub, 'ware the Man-cub's breed!  
Scenting-dew or starlight pale,  
Choose no tangled tree-cat trail.  
Pack or council, hunt or den,  
Cry no truce with Jackal-Men.  
Feed them silence when they say:  
"Come with us an easy way."  
Feed them silence when they seek  
Help of thine to hurt the weak.  
Make no *bandar's* boast of skill;  
Hold thy peace above the kill.  
Let nor call nor song nor sign  
Turn thee from thy hunting-line.  
(Morning mist or twilight clear,  
Serve him, Wardens of the Deer!)  
*Wood and Water, Wind and Tree,  
Jungle-Favour go with thee!*

### THE THREE

*On the trail that thou must tread  
To the thresholds of our dread,*

*Where the Flower blossoms red;  
Through the nights when thou shalt lie  
Prisoned from our Mother-sky,  
Hearing us, thy loves, go by;  
In the dawns when thou shalt wake  
To the toil thou canst not break,  
Heartsick for the Jungle's sake;  
Wood and Water, Wind and Tree,  
Wisdom, Strength, and Courtesy,  
Jungle-Favour go with thee!*

# HARP SONG OF THE DANE WOMEN

("The Knights of the Joyous Venture"—  
*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

**W**HAT is a woman that you forsake her,  
And the hearth-fire and the home-acre,  
To go with the old grey Widow-maker?

She has no house to lay a guest in—  
But one chill bed for all to rest in,  
That the pale suns and the stray bergs nest in.

She has no strong white arms to fold you,  
But the ten-times-fingering weed to hold you—  
Out on the rocks where the tide has rolled you.

Yet, when the signs of summer thicken,  
And the ice breaks, and the birch-buds quicken,  
Yearly you turn from our side, and sicken—

Sicken again for the shouts and the slaughters.  
You steal away to the lapping waters,  
And look at your ship in her winter-quarters.

You forget our mirth, and talk at the tables,  
The kine in the shed and the horse in the stables—  
To pitch her sides and go over her cables.

Then you drive out where the storm-clouds swallow,  
And the sound of your oar-blades, falling hollow,  
Is all we have left through the months to follow.

Ah, what is Woman that you forsake her,  
And the hearth-fire and the home-acre,  
To go with the old grey Widow-maker?

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE THOUSANDTH MAN

(" Simple Simon "—*Rewards and Fairies*)

ONE man in a thousand, Solomon says,  
Will stick more close than a brother.  
And it's worth while seeking him half your days  
If you find him before the other.  
Nine hundred and ninety-nine depend  
On what the world sees in you,  
But the Thousandth Man will stand your friend  
With the whole round world agin you.

'Tis neither promise nor prayer nor show  
Will settle the finding for 'ee.  
Nine hundred and ninety-nine of 'em go  
By your looks, or your acts, or your glory.  
But if he finds you and you find him,  
The rest of the world don't matter;  
For the Thousandth Man will sink or swim  
With you in any water.

You can use his purse with no more talk  
Than he uses yours for his spendings,  
And laugh and meet in your daily walk  
As though there had been no lendings.  
Nine hundred and ninety-nine of 'em call  
For silver and gold in their dealings;  
But the Thousandth Man he's worth 'em all,  
Because you can show him your feelings.

His wrong's your wrong, and his right's your right,  
In season or out of season.  
Stand up and back it in all men's sight—  
With *that* for your only reason!  
Nine hundred and ninety-nine can't bide  
The shame or mocking or laughter,  
But the Thousandth Man will stand by your side  
To the gallows-foot—and after!



THE WINNERS

(" The Story of the Gadsbys ")

WHAT is the moral? Who rides may read.  
When the night is thick and the tracks are blind  
A friend at a pinch is a friend indeed,  
But a fool to wait for the laggard behind.  
Down to Gehenna or up to the Throne,  
He travels the fastest who travels alone.

' White hands cling to the tightened rein,  
Slipping the spur from the booted heel,  
Tenderest voices cry " Turn again! "  
Red lips tarnish the scabbarded steel.  
High hopes faint on a warm hearth-stone—  
He travels the fastest who travels alone.

One may fall but he falls by himself—  
Falls by himself with himself to blame.  
One may attain and to him is pelf—  
Loot of the city in Gold or Fame.  
Plunder of earth shall be all his own  
Who travels the fastest and travels alone.

Wherefore the more ye be holpen and stayed,  
Stayed by a friend in the hour of toil,  
Sing the heretical song I have made—  
His be the labour and yours be the spoil.  
Win by his aid and the aid disown—  
He travels the fastest who travels alone!

A ST. HELENA LULLABY

(" A Priest in spite of Himself "—*Rewards  
and Fairies*)

" HOW far is St. Helena from a little child at play? "  
What makes you want to wander there with all the  
world between?  
Oh, Mother, call your son again or else he'll run away.  
(*No one thinks of winter when the grass is green!*)

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"How far is St. Helena from a fight in Paris Street?"  
I haven't time to answer now—the men are falling fast.  
The guns begin to thunder, and the drums begin to beat.  
*(If you take the first step, you will take the last!)*

"How far is St. Helena from the field of Austerlitz?"  
You couldn't hear me if I told—so loud the cannon roar.  
But not so far for people who are living by their wits.  
*("Gay go up" means "Gay go down" the wide world o'er!)*

"How far is St. Helena from an Emperor of France?"  
I cannot see—I cannot tell—the Crowns they dazzle so.  
The Kings sit down to dinner, and the Queens stand up to  
dance.  
*(After open weather you may look for snow!)*

"How far is St. Helena from the Capes of Trafalgar?"  
A longish way—a longish way—with ten year more to run.  
It's South across the water underneath a falling star.  
*(What you cannot finish you must leave undone!)*

"How far is St. Helena from the Beresina ice?"  
An ill way—a chill way—the ice begins to crack.  
But not so far for gentlemen who never took advice.  
*(When you can't go forward you must e'en come back!)*

"How far is St. Helena from the field of Waterloo?"  
A near way—a clear way—the ship will take you soon.  
A pleasant place for gentlemen with little left to do.  
*(Morning never tries you till the afternoon!)*

"How far from St. Helena to the Gate of Heaven's Grace?"  
That no one knows—that no one knows—and no one ever  
will.  
But fold your hands across your heart and cover up your  
face,  
And after all your trapesings, child, lie still!

CHIL'S SONG

("Red Dog"—*The Second Jungle Book*)

THESE were my companions going forth by night—  
 (For Chil! Look you, for Chil!)  
 Now come I to whistle them the ending of the fight.  
 (Chil! *Vanguards of Chil!*)  
 Word they gave me overhead of quarry newly slain.  
 Word I gave them underfoot of buck upon the plain.  
 Here's an end of every trail—they shall not speak again!

They that cried the hunting-cry—they that followed fast—  
 (For Chil! Look you, for Chil!)  
 They that bade the sambhur wheel, or pinned him as he  
 passed—  
 (Chil! *Vanguards of Chil!*)  
 They that lagged behind the scent—they that ran before—  
 They that shunned the level horn—they that over-bore—  
 Here's an end of every trail—they shall not follow more.

These were my companions. Pity 'twas they died!  
 (For Chil! Look you, for Chil!)  
 Now come I to comfort them that knew them in their pride.  
 (Chil! *Vanguards of Chil!*)  
 Tattered flank and sunken eye, open mouth and red,  
 Locked and lank and lone they lie, the dead upon their dead.  
 Here's an end of every trail—and here my hosts are fed!

THE CAPTIVE

("The Captive"—*Traffics and Discoveries*)

NOT with an outcry to Allah nor any complaining  
 He answered his name at the muster and stood to the  
 chaining.  
 When the twin anklets were nipped on the leg-bars that  
 held them,  
 He brotherly greeted the armourers stooping to weld them.  
 Ere the sad dust of the marshalled feet of the chain-gang  
 swallowed him,  
 Observing him nobly at ease, I alighted and followed him.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Thus we had speech by the way, but not touching his  
sorrow—  
Rather his red Yesterday and his regal To-morrow,  
Wherein he stately moved to the clink of his chains  
unregarded,  
Nowise abashed but contented to drink of the potion awarded.  
Saluting aloofly his Fate, he made haste with his story,  
And the words of his mouth were as slaves spreading carpets  
of glory  
Embroidered with names of the Djinns—a miraculous  
weaving—  
But the cool and perspicuous eye overbore unbelieving.  
So I submitted myself to the limits of rapture—  
Bound by this man we had bound, amid captives his  
capture—  
Till he returned me to earth and the visions departed.  
But on him be the Peace and the Blessing; for he was great-  
hearted!

### THE PUZZLER

(“ The Puzzler ”—*Actions and Reactions*)

THE Celt in all his variants from Buihth to Ballyhoo,  
His mental processes are plain—one knows what he will  
do,  
And can logically predicate his finish by his start;  
But the English—ah, the English!—they are quite a race  
apart.

Their psychology is bovine, their outlook crude and raw.  
They abandon vital matters to be tickled with a straw;  
But the straw that they were tickled with—the chaff that  
they were fed with—  
They convert into a weaver's beam to break their foeman's  
head with.

For undemocratic reasons and for motives not of State,  
They arrive at their conclusions—largely inarticulate.  
Being void of self-expression they confide their views to none;  
But sometimes in a smoking-room, one learns why things  
were done.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Yes, sometimes in a smoking-room, through clouds of "Ers"  
and "Ums,"  
Obliquely and by inference, illumination comes,  
On some step that they have taken, or some action they  
approve—  
Embellished with the *argot* of the Upper Fourth Remove.

In telegraphic sentences, half nodded to their friends,  
They hint a matter's inwardness—and there the matter ends.  
And while the Celt is talking from Valencia to Kirkwall,  
The English—ah, the English!—don't say anything at all.

### THE PRESS

("The Village that Voted the Earth was Flat"  
—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

THE Soldier may forget his Sword,  
The Sailor the Sea,  
The Mason may forget the Word  
And the Priest his Litany:  
The Maid may forget both jewel and gem,  
And the Bride her wedding-dress—  
But the Jew shall forget Jerusalem  
Ere we forget the Press!

Who once hath stood through the loaded hour  
Ere, roaring like the gale,  
The Harrild and the Hoe devour  
Their league-long paper-bale,  
And has lit his pipe in the morning calm  
That follows the midnight stress—  
He hath sold his heart to the old Black Art  
We call the daily Press.

Who once hath dealt in the widest game  
That all of a man can play,  
No later love, no larger fame  
Will lure him long away.  
As the war-horse snuffeth the battle afar,  
The entered Soul, no less,  
He saith: "Ha! Ha!" where the trumpets are  
And the thunders of the Press!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Canst thou number the days that we fulfil,  
Or the *Times* that we bring forth?  
Canst thou send the lightnings to do thy will,  
And cause them reign on earth?  
Hast thou given a peacock goodly wings,  
To please his foolishness?  
Sit down at the heart of men and things,  
Companion of the Press!

The Pope may launch his Interdict,  
The Union its decree,  
But the bubble is blown and the bubble is pricked  
By Us and such as We.  
Remember the battle and stand aside  
While Thrones and Powers confess  
That King over all the children of pride  
Is the Press—the Press—the Press!

## HADRAMAUTI

*(Enlarged from " Plain Tales from the Hills ")*

WHO knows the heart of the Christian? How does he  
reason?  
What are his measures and balances? Which is his season  
For laughter, forbearance or bloodshed, and what devils move  
him  
When he arises to smite us? *I* do not love him.

He invites the derision of strangers—he enters all places.  
Booted, bareheaded he enters. With shouts and embraces  
He asks of us news of the household whom *we* reckon  
nameless.  
Certainly Allah created him forty-fold shameless!

So it is not in the Desert. One came to me weeping—  
The Avenger of Blood on his track—I took him in keeping.  
Demanding not whom he had slain, I refreshed him, I fed him  
As he were even a brother. But Eblis had bred him.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

He was the son of an ape, ill at ease in his clothing.  
He talked with his head, hands and feet. I endured him with  
loathing.

Whatever his spirit conceived his countenance showed it  
As a frog shows in a mud-puddle. Yet I abode it!

I fingered my beard and was dumb, in silence confronting  
him.

*His* soul was too shallow for silence, e'en with Death hunting  
him.

I said: "'Tis his weariness speaks," but, when he had rested,  
He chirped in my face like some sparrow, and, presently,  
jested!

Wherefore slew I that stranger? He brought me dishonour.  
I saddled my mare, Bijli, I set him upon her.  
I gave him rice and goat's flesh. He bared me to laughter.  
When he was gone from my tent, swift I followed after,  
Taking my sword in my hand. The hot wine had filled him.  
Under the stars he mocked me—therefore I killed him!

## CHAPTER HEADINGS

### THE NAULAHKA

THERE was a strife 'twixt man and maid—  
Oh, that was at the birth of time!  
But what befell 'twixt man and maid,  
Oh, that's beyond the grip of rhyme.  
'Twas, "Sweet, I must not bide with you,"  
And "Love, I cannot bide alone";  
For both were young and both were true,  
And both were hard as the nether stone.

Beware the man who's crossed in love;  
For pent-up steam must find its vent.  
Stand back when he is on the move,  
And lend him all the Continent.

Your patience, Sirs. The Devil took me up  
To the burned mountain over Sicily  
(Fit place for me) and thence I saw my Earth—

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

(Not all Earth's splendour, 'twas beyond my need—)  
 And that one spot I love—all Earth to me,  
 And her I love, my Heaven. What said I?  
 My love was safe from all the powers of Hell—  
 For you—e'en you—acquit her of my guilt—  
 But Sula, nestling by our sail-specked sea,  
 My city, child of mine, my heart, my home—  
 Mine and my pride—evil might visit there!  
 It was for Sula and her naked port,  
 Prey to the galleys of the Algerine,  
*Our* city Sula, that I drove my price—  
 For love of Sula and for love of her.  
 The twain were woven—gold on sackcloth—twined  
 Past any sundering till God shall judge  
 The evil and the good.

Now it is not good for the Christian's health to hustle the  
 Aryan brown,  
 For the Christian riles, and the Aryan smiles and he weareth  
 the Christian down;  
 And the end of the fight is a tombstone white with the name  
 of the late deceased,  
 And the epitaph drear: "A Fool lies here who tried to hustle  
 the East."

There is pleasure in the wet, wet clay,  
 When the artist's hand is potting it.  
 There is pleasure in the wet, wet lay,  
 When the poet's pad is blotting it.  
 There is pleasure in the shine of your picture on the line  
 At the Royal Acade-my;  
 But the pleasure felt in these is as chalk to Cheddar cheese  
 When it comes to a well-made Lie.—  
 To a quite unwreckable Lie,  
 To a most impeccable Lie!  
 To a water-tight, fire-proof, angle-iron, sunk-hinge, time-  
 lock, steel-faced Lie!  
 Not a private hansom Lie,  
 But a pair-and-brougham Lie,  
 Not a little-place-at-Tooting, but a country-house-with-  
 shooting  
 And a ring-fence-deer-park Lie.



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

When a lover hies abroad  
Looking for his love,  
Azrael smiling sheathes his sword.  
Heaven smiles above.  
Earth and sea  
His servants be,  
And to lesser compass round,  
'That his love be sooner found!

We meet in an evil land  
'That is near to the gates of Hell.  
I wait for thy command  
To serve, to speed or withstand.  
And thou sayest I do not well?

Oh, Love, the flowers so red  
Are only tongues of flame,  
The earth is full of the dead,  
The new-killed, restless dead.  
There is danger beneath and o'erhead,  
And I guard thy gates in fear  
Of words thou canst not hear,  
Of peril and jeopardy,  
Of signs thou canst not see—  
And thou sayest 'tis ill that I came?

This I saw when the rites were done,  
And the lamps were dead and the Gods alone,  
And the grey snake coiled on the altar-stone—  
Ere I fled from a Fear that I could not see,  
And the Gods of the East made mouths at me.

Beat off in our last fight were we?  
The greater need to seek the sea.  
For Fortune changeth as the moon  
To caravel and picaroon.  
Then Eastward Ho! or Westward Ho!  
Whichever wind may meetest blow.  
Our quarry sails on either sea,  
Fat prey for such bold lads as we,  
And every sun-dried buccaneer  
Must hand and reef and watch and steer,

DEFINITIVE EDITION

And bear great wrath of sea and sky  
Before the plate-ships wallow by.  
Now, as our tall bows take the foam,  
Let no man turn his heart to home,  
Save to desire plunder more  
And larger warehouse for his store,  
When treasure won from Santos Bay  
Shall make our sea-washed village gay.

Because I sought it far from men,  
In deserts and alone,  
I found it burning overhead,  
The jewel of a Throne.

Because I sought—I sought it so  
And spent my days to find—  
It blazed one moment ere it left  
The blacker night behind.

We be the Gods of the East—  
Older than all—  
Masters of Mourning and Feast—  
How shall we fall?

Will they gape for the husks that ye proffer  
Or yearn to your song?  
And we—have we nothing to offer  
Who ruled them so long—  
In the fume of the incense, the clash of the cymbals, the blare  
of the conch and the gong?

Over the strife of the schools  
Low the day burns—  
Back with the kine from the pools  
Each one returns  
To the life that he knows where the altar-flame glows and  
the *tulsi*<sup>1</sup> is trimmed in the urns.

<sup>1</sup> The Holy Basil.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### THE LIGHT THAT FAILED

SO WE settled it all when the storm was done  
As comfy as comfy could be;  
And I was to wait in the barn, my dears,  
Because I was only three.  
And Teddy would run to the rainbow's foot  
Because he was five and a man—  
And that's how it all began, my dears,  
And that's how it all began!

Then we brought the lances down—then the trumpets  
blew—

When we went to Kandahar, ridin' two an' two.  
Ridin'—ridin'—ridin'—two an' two!  
Ta-ra-ra-ra-ra-a!  
All the way to Kandahar,  
Ridin' two an' two.

The wolf-cub at even lay hid in the corn,  
When the smoke of the cooking hung grey.  
He knew where the doe made a couch for her fawn,  
And he looked to his strength for his prey.  
But the moon swept the smoke-wreaths away;  
And he turned from his meal in the villager's close,  
And he bayed to the moon as she rose.

"I have a thousand men," said he,  
"To wait upon my will;  
And towers nine upon the Tyne,  
And three upon the Till."

"And what care I for your men?" said she,  
"Or towers from Tyne to Till?  
Sith you must go with me," said she,  
"To wait upon my will."

And you may lead a thousand men  
Nor ever draw the rein,  
But before you lead the Fairy Queen  
"Twill burst your heart in twain."

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

He has slipped his foot from the stirrup-bar,  
The bridle from his hand,  
And he is bound by hand and foot  
To the Queen of Fairy Land.

“ If I have taken the common clay  
And wrought it cunningly  
In the shape of a God that was digged a clod,  
The greater honour to me.”

“ If thou hast taken the common clay,  
And thy hands be not free  
From the taint of the soil, thou hast made thy spoil  
The greater shame to thee.”

The lark will make her hymn to God,  
The partridge call her brood,  
While I forget the heath I trod,  
The fields wherein I stood.

’Tis dule to know not night from morn,  
But greater dule to know  
I can but hear the hunter’s horn  
That once I used to blow.

There were three friends that buried the fourth,  
The mould in his mouth and the dust in his eyes,  
And they went south and east and north—  
The strong man fights but the sick man dies.

There were three friends that spoke of the dead—  
The strong man fights but the sick man dies—  
“ And would he were here with us now,” they said,  
“ The sun in our face and the wind in our eyes.”

Yet at the last, ere our spearmen had found him,  
Yet at the last, ere a sword-thrust could save,  
Yet at the last, with his masters around him,  
He spoke of the Faith as a master to slave.  
Yet at the last, though the Kafirs had maimed him,  
Broken by bondage and wrecked by the reiver,  
Yet at the last, tho’ the darkness had claimed him,  
He called upon Allah, and died a Believer!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

GALLIO'S SONG

*"And Gallio cared for none of these things."*—ACTS xviii. 17

(*"Little Foxes"*—*Actions and Reactions*)

ALL day long to the judgment-seat  
The crazed Provincials drew—  
All day long at their ruler's feet  
Howled for the blood of the Jew.  
Insurrection with one accord  
Banded itself and woke,  
And Paul was about to open his mouth  
When Achaia's Deputy spoke—

"Whether the God descend from above  
Or the Man ascend upon high,  
Whether this maker of tents be Jove  
Or a younger deity—  
I will be no judge between your gods  
And your godless bickerings.  
Lictor, drive them hence with rods—  
I care for none of these things!

Were it a question of lawful due  
Or Cæsar's rule denied,  
Reason would I should bear with you  
And order it well to be tried;  
But this is a question of words and names.  
I know the strife it brings.  
I will not pass upon any your claims.  
I care for none of these things.

One thing only I see most clear,  
As I pray you also see.  
Claudius Cæsar hath set me here  
Rome's Deputy to be.  
It is Her peace that ye go to break—  
Not mine, nor any king's.  
But, touching your clamour of 'Conscience sake,'  
I care for none of these things.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Whether ye rise for the sake of a creed,  
Or riot in hope of spoil,  
Equally will I punish the deed,  
Equally check the broil;  
Nowise permitting injustice at all  
From whatever doctrine it springs—  
But—whether ye follow Priapus or Paul,  
I care for none of these things! ”

### THE BEES AND THE FLIES

(“ The Mother Hive ”—*Actions and Reactions*)

A FARMER of the Augustan Age  
Perused in Virgil's golden page  
The story of the secret won  
From Proteus by Cyrene's son—  
How the dank sea-god showed the swain  
Means to restore his hives again.  
More briefly, how a slaughtered bull  
Breeds honey by the bellyful.

The egregious rustic put to death  
A bull by stopping of its breath,  
Disposed the carcass in a shed  
With fragrant herbs and branches spread,  
And, having well performed the charm,  
Sat down to wait the promised swarm.

Nor waited long. The God of Day  
Impartial, quickening with his ray  
Evil and good alike, beheld  
The carcass—and the carcass swelled.  
Big with new birth the belly heaves  
Beneath its screen of scented leaves.  
Past any doubt, the bull conceives!

The farmer bids men bring more hives  
To house the profit that arrives;

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Prepares on pan, and key and kettle,  
Sweet music that shall make 'em settle;  
But when to crown the work he goes,  
Gods! What a stink salutes his nose!

Where are the honest toilers? Where  
The gravid mistress of their care?  
A busy scene, indeed, he sees,  
But not a sign or sound of bees.  
Worms of the riper grave unhid  
By any kindly coffin-lid,  
Obscene and shameless to the light,  
Seethe in insatiate appetite,  
Through putrid offal, while above  
The hissing blow-fly seeks his love,  
Whose offspring, supping where they supt,  
Consume corruption twice corrupt.

### ROAD-SONG OF THE *BANDAR-LOG*

(“ Kaa's Hunting ”—*The Jungle Book*)

**H**ERE we go in a flung festoon,  
Half-way up to the jealous moon!  
Don't you envy our pranceful bands?  
Don't you wish you had extra hands?  
Wouldn't you like if your tails were—*so*—  
Curved in the shape of a Cupid's bow?  
Now you're angry, but—never mind,  
*Brother, thy tail hangs down behind!*

Here we sit in a branchy row,  
Thinking of beautiful things we know;  
Dreaming of deeds that we mean to do,  
All complete, in a minute or two—  
Something noble and grand and good,  
Won by merely wishing we could.  
Now we're going to—never mind,  
*Brother, thy tail hangs down behind!*

All the talk we ever have heard  
Uttered by bat or beast or bird—

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Hide or fin or scale or feather—  
Jabber it quickly and all together!  
Excellent! Wonderful! Once again!  
Now we are talking just like men.  
Let's pretend we are . . . Never mind!  
*Brother, thy tail hangs down behind!*  
This is the way of the Monkey-kind!

*Then join our leaping lines that scumfish through the pines,  
That rocket by where, light and high, the wild-grape swings.  
By the rubbish in our wake, and the noble noise we make,  
Be sure—be sure, we're going to do some splendid things!*

## THE FABULISTS

1914-18

("The Vortex"—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

WHEN all the world would keep a matter hid,  
Since Truth is seldom friend to any crowd,  
Men write in fable, as old Æsop did,  
Jesting at that which none will name aloud.  
And this they needs must do, or it will fall  
Unless they please they are not heard at all.

When desperate Folly daily laboureth  
To work confusion upon all we have,  
When diligent Sloth demandeth Freedom's death,  
And banded Fear commandeth Honour's grave—  
Even in that certain hour before the fall,  
Unless men please they are not heard at all.

Needs must all please, yet some not all for need,  
Needs must all toil, yet some not all for gain,  
But that men taking pleasure may take heed,  
Whom present toil shall snatch from later pain.  
Thus some have toiled, but their reward was small  
Since, though they pleased, they were not heard at all.

*This* was the lock that lay upon our lips,  
This was the yoke that we have undergone,



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

Denying us all pleasant fellowships  
As in our time and generation.  
Our pleasures unpursued age past recall,  
And for our pains—we are not heard at all.

What man hears aught except the groaning guns?  
What man heeds aught save what each instant brings?  
When each man's life all imaged life outruns,  
What man shall pleasure in imaginings?  
So it hath fallen, as it was bound to fall,  
We are not, nor we were not, heard at all.

“ OUR FATHERS ALSO ”

(“ Below the Mill Dam ”—*Traffics and Discoveries*)

T HRONES, Powers, Dominions, Peoples, Kings,  
Are changing 'neath our hand.  
Our fathers also see these things  
But they do not understand.

By—they are by with mirth and tears,  
Wit or the works of Desire—  
Cushioned about on the kindly years  
Between the wall and the fire.

The grapes are pressed, the corn is shocked—  
Standeth no more to glean;  
For the Gates of Love and Learning locked  
When they went out between.

All lore our Lady Venus bares,  
Signalled it was or told  
By the dear lips long given to theirs  
And longer to the mould.

All Profit, all Device, all Truth,  
Written it was or said  
By the mighty men of their mighty youth,  
Which is mighty being dead.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

The film that floats before their eyes  
The Temple's Veil they call;  
And the dust that on the Shewbread lies  
Is holy over all.

Warn them of seas that slip our yoke,  
Of slow-conspiring stars—  
The ancient Front of Things unbroke  
But heavy with new wars?

By—they are by with mirth and tears,  
Wit or the waste of Desire—  
Cushioned about on the kindly years  
Between the wall and the fire!

A BRITISH-ROMAN SONG

(A. D. 406)

("A Centurion of the Thirtieth"—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

MY FATHER'S father saw it not,  
And I, belike, shall never come  
To look on that so-holy spot—  
The very Rome—

Crowned by all Time, all Art, all Might,  
The equal work of Gods and Man,  
City beneath whose oldest height—  
The Race began!

Soon to send forth again a brood,  
Unshakeable, we pray, that clings  
To Rome's thrice-hammered hardihood—  
In arduous things.

Strong heart with triple armour bound,  
Beat strongly, for thy life-blood runs,  
Age after Age, the Empire round—  
In us thy Sons

Who, distant from the Seven Hills,  
Loving and serving much, require  
Thee—*thee* to guard 'gainst home-born ills  
The Imperial Fire!

A PICT SONG

("The Winged Hats"—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

ROME never looks where she treads.  
 Always her heavy hooves fall  
 On our stomachs, our hearts or our heads;  
 And Rome never heeds when we bawl.  
 Her sentries pass on—that is all,  
 And we gather behind them in hordes,  
 And plot to reconquer the Wall,  
 With only our tongues for our swords.

We are the Little Folk—we!  
 Too little to love or to hate.  
 Leave us alone and you'll see  
 How we can drag down the State!  
 We are the worm in the wood!  
 We are the rot at the root!  
 We are the taint in the blood!  
 We are the thorn in the foot!

Mistletoe killing an oak—  
 Rats gnawing cables in two—  
 Moths making holes in a cloak—  
 How they must love what they do!  
 Yes—and we Little Folk too,  
 We are busy as they—  
 Working our works out of view—  
 Watch, and you'll see it some day!

No indeed! We are not strong,  
 But we know Peoples that are.  
 Yes, and we'll guide them along  
 To smash and destroy you in War!  
 We shall be slaves just the same?  
 Yes, we have always been slaves,  
 But you—you will die of the shame,  
 And then we shall dance on your graves!

*We are the Little Folk, we, etc.*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE STRANGER

*(Canadian)*

THE Stranger within my gate,  
He may be true or kind,  
But he does not talk my talk—  
I cannot feel his mind.  
I see the face and the eyes and the mouth,  
But not the soul behind.

The men of my own stock,  
They may do ill or well,  
But they tell the lies I am wonted to,  
They are used to the lies I tell;  
And we do not need interpreters  
When we go to buy and sell.

The Stranger within my gates,  
He may be evil or good,  
But I cannot tell what powers control—  
What reasons sway his mood;  
Nor when the Gods of his far-off land  
Shall repossess his blood.

The men of my own stock,  
Bitter bad they may be,  
But, at least, they hear the things I hear,  
And see the things I see;  
And whatever I think of them and their likes  
They think of the likes of me.

This was my father's belief  
And this is also mine:  
Let the corn be all one sheaf—  
And the grapes be all one vine,  
Ere our children's teeth are set on edge  
By bitter bread and wine.

“ R I M I N I ”

Marching Song of a Roman Legion of the Later Empire

(*Enlarged from “ Puck of Pook’s Hill ”*)

W H E N I left Rome for Lalage’s sake,  
 By the Legions’ Road to Rimini,  
 She vowed her heart was mine to take  
 With me and my shield to Rimini—  
 (Till the Eagles flew from Rimini—)  
 And I’ve tramped Britain, and I’ve tramped Gaul,  
 And the Pontic shore where the snow-flakes fall  
 As white as the neck of Lalage—  
 (As cold as the heart of Lalage!)  
 And I’ve lost Britain, and I’ve lost Gaul,  
 And I’ve lost Rome and, worst of all,  
 I’ve lost Lalage!

When you go by the Via Aurelia,  
 As thousands have travelled before,  
 Remember the Luck of the Soldier  
 Who never saw Rome any more!  
 Oh, dear was the sweetheart that kissed him,  
 And dear was the mother that bore;  
 But his shield was picked up in the heather,  
 And he never saw Rome any more!  
 And *he* left Rome, etc.

When you go by the Via Aurelia  
 That runs from the City to Gaul,  
 Remember the Luck of the Soldier  
 Who rose to be master of all!  
 He carried the sword and the buckler,  
 He mounted his guard on the Wall,  
 Till the Legions elected him Cæsar,  
 And he rose to be master of all!

And *he* left Rome, etc.

It’s twenty-five marches to Narbo,  
 It’s forty-five more up the Rhone,  
 And the end may be death in the heather  
 Or life on an Emperor’s throne.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

But whether the Eagles obey us,  
Or we go to the Ravens—alone,  
I'd sooner be Lalage's lover  
Than sit on an Emperor's throne!

We've *all* left Rome for Lalage's sake, etc.

"POOR HONEST MEN"

(A. D. 1800)

("A Priest in spite of Himself"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

YOUR jar of Virginny  
Will cost you a guinea,  
Which you reckon too much by five shillings or ten;  
But light your churchwarden  
And judge it according,  
When I've told you the troubles of poor honest men.

From the Capes of the Delaware,  
As you are well aware,  
We sail with tobacco for England—but then,  
Our own British cruisers,  
They watch us come through, sirs,  
And they press half a score of us poor honest men!

Or if by quick sailing  
(Thick weather prevailing)  
We leave them behind (as we do now and then)  
We are sure of a gun from  
Each frigate we run from,  
Which is often destruction to poor honest men!

Broadsides the Atlantic  
We tumble short-handed,  
With shot-holes to plug and new canvas to bend;  
And off the Azores,  
Dutch, Dons and Monsieurs  
Are waiting to terrify poor honest men.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Napoleon's embargo  
Is laid on all cargo  
Which comfort or aid to King George may intend;  
And since roll, twist and leaf,  
Of all comforts is chief,  
They try for to steal it from poor honest men!

With no heart for fight,  
We take refuge in flight,  
But fire as we run, our retreat to defend;  
Until our stern-chasers  
Cut up her fore-braces,  
And she flies off the wind from us poor honest men!

"Twix' the Forties and Fifties,  
South-eastward the drift is,  
And so, when we think we are making Land's End,  
Alas, it is Ushant  
With half the King's Navy,  
Blockading French ports against poor honest men!

But they may not quit station  
(Which is our salvation)  
So swiftly we stand to the Nor'ard again;  
And finding the tail of  
A homeward-bound convoy,  
We slip past the Scillies like poor honest men.

Twix' the Lizard and Dover,  
We hand our stuff over,  
Though I may not inform how we do it, nor when.  
But a light on each quarter,  
Low down on the water,  
Is well understood by poor honest men.

Even then we have dangers,  
From meddlesome strangers,  
Who spy on our business and are not content  
To take a smooth answer,  
Except with a handspike . . .  
And they say they are murdered by poor honest men!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

To be drowned or be shot  
Is our natural lot,  
Why should we, moreover, be hanged in the end--  
After all our great pains  
For to dangle in chains  
As though we were smugglers, not poor honest men?

“ WHEN THE GREAT ARK ”

WHEN the Great Ark, in Vigo Bay,  
Rode stately through the half-manned fleet,  
From every ship about her way  
She heard the mariners entreat—  
“ Before we take the seas again  
Let down your boats and send us men!

“ We have no lack of victual here  
With work—God knows!—enough for all,  
To hand and reef and watch and steer,  
Because our present strength is small.  
While your three decks are crowded so  
Your crews can scarcely stand or go.

“ In war, your numbers do but raise  
Confusion and divided will;  
In storm, the mindless deep obeys  
Not multitudes but single skill.  
In calm, your numbers, closely pressed,  
Must breed a mutiny or pest.

“ We, even on unchallenged seas,  
Dare not adventure where we would,  
But forfeit brave advantages  
For lack of men to make 'em good;  
Whereby, to England's double cost,  
Honour and profit both are lost! ”



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### PROPHETS AT HOME

(" Hal o' the Draft "—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

**P**ROPHETS have honour all over the Earth,  
Except in the village where they were born,  
Where such as knew them boys from birth  
Nature-ally hold 'em in scorn.

When Prophets are naughty and young and vain,  
They make a won'erful grievance of it;  
(You can see by their writings how they complain),  
But O, 'tis won'erful good for the Prophet!

There's nothing Nineveh Town can give  
(Nor being swallowed by whales between),  
Makes up for the place where a man's folk live,  
Which don't care nothing what he has been.  
He might ha' been that, or he might ha' been this,  
But they love and they hate him for what he is.

### JUBAL AND TUBAL CAIN

(*Canadian*)

**J**UBAL sang of the Wrath of God  
And the curse of thistle and thorn—  
But Tubal got him a pointed rod,  
And scrabbled the earth for corn.  
Old—old as that early mould,  
Young as the sprouting grain—  
Yearly green is the strife between  
Jubal and Tubal Cain!

Jubal sang of the new-found sea,  
And the love that its waves divide—  
But Tubal hollowed a fallen tree  
And passed to the further side.  
Black—black as the hurricane-wrack,  
Salt as the under-main—  
Bitter and cold is the hate they hold—  
Jubal and Tubal Cain!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Jubal sang of the golden years  
When wars and wounds shall cease—  
But Tubal fashioned the hand-flung spears  
And showed his neighbours peace.  
New—new as the Nine-point-Two,  
Older than Lamech's slain—  
Roaring and loud is the feud avowed  
Twix' Jubal and Tubal Cain!

Jubal sang of the cliffs that bar  
And the peaks that none may crown—  
But Tubal clambered by jut and scar  
And there he builded a town.  
High—high as the snowsheds lie,  
Low as the culverts drain—  
Wherever they be they can never agree—  
Jubal and Tubal Cain!

## THE VOORTREKKER

**T**HE gull shall whistle in his wake, the blind wave break  
in fire.  
He shall fulfil God's utmost will, unknowing His desire.  
And he shall see old planets change and alien stars arise,  
And give the gale his seaworn sail in shadow of new skies.  
Strong lust of gear shall drive him forth and hunger arm his  
hand,  
To win his food from the desert rude, his pittance from the  
sand.  
His neighbours' smoke shall vex his eyes, their voices break  
his rest.  
He shall go forth till south is north, sullen and dispossessed.  
He shall desire loneliness and his desire shall bring,  
Hard on his heels, a thousand wheels, a People and a King.  
He shall come back on his own track, and by his scarce-  
cooled camp  
There shall he meet the roaring street, the derrick and the  
stamp:  
There he shall blaze a nation's ways with hatchet and with  
brand,  
Till on his last-won wilderness an Empire's outposts stand!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

A SCHOOL SONG

(Prelude to "Stalky & Co.")

"*LET us now praise famous men*"—  
*L* Men of little showing—  
*For their work continueth,*  
*And their work continueth,*  
*Broad and deep continueth,*  
*Greater than their knowing!*

Western wind and open surge  
Took us from our mothers—  
Flung us on a naked shore  
(Twelve bleak houses by the shore!)  
Seven summers by the shore!)  
'Mid two hundred brothers.

There we met with famous men  
Set in office o'er us;  
And they beat on us with rods—  
Faithfully with many rods—  
Daily beat us on with rods,  
For the love they bore us!

Out of Egypt unto Troy—  
Over Himalaya—  
Far and sure our bands have gone—  
Hy-Brazil or Babylon,  
Islands of the Southern Run,  
And Cities of Cathaia!

*And we all praise famous men—*  
Ancients of the College;  
For they taught us common sense—  
Tried to teach us common sense—  
Truth and God's Own Common Sense,  
Which is more than knowledge!

Each degree of Latitude  
Strung about Creation  
Seeth one or more of us  
(Of one muster each of us),  
Diligent in that he does,  
Keen in his vocation.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

This we learned from famous men,  
Knowing not its uses,  
When they showed, in daily work,  
Man must finish off his work—  
Right or wrong, his daily work—  
And without excuses.

Servants of the Staff and chain,  
Mine and fuse and grapnel—  
Some, before the face of Kings,  
Stand before the face of Kings;  
Bearing gifts to divers Kings—  
Gifts of case and shrapnel.

'This we learned from famous men  
Teaching in our borders,  
Who declared it was best,  
Safest, easiest, and best—  
Expeditious, wise, and best—  
To obey your orders.

Some beneath the rurther stars  
Bear the greater burden:  
Set to serve the lands they rule,  
(Save he serve no man may rule),  
Serve and love the lands they rule;  
Seeking praise nor guerdon.

This we learned from famous men,  
Knowing not we learned it.  
Only, as the years went by—  
Lonely, as the years went by—  
Far from help as years went by,  
Plainer we discerned it.

Wherefore praise we famous men  
From whose bays we borrow—  
They that put aside To-day—  
All the joys of their To-day—  
And with toil of their To-day  
Bought for us To-morrow!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*Bless and praise we famous men—  
Men of little showing—  
For their work continueth,  
And their work continueth,  
Broad and deep continueth,  
Great beyond their knowing!*

### THE LAW OF THE JUNGLE

(“How Fear Came”—*The Second Jungle Book*)

*N*OW this is the Law of the Jungle—as old and as true as  
the sky;  
And the Wolf that shall keep it may prosper, but the Wolf that  
shall break it must die.

*As the creeper that girdles the tree-trunk the Law runneth  
forward and back—  
For the strength of the Pack is the Wolf, and the strength of the  
Wolf is the Pack.*

Wash daily from nose-tip to tail-tip; drink deeply, but never  
too deep;  
And remember the night is for hunting, and forget not the  
day is for sleep.

The Jackal may follow the Tiger, but, Cub, when thy  
whiskers are grown,  
Remember the Wolf is a hunter—go forth and get food of  
thine own.

Keep peace with the Lords of the Jungle—the Tiger, the  
Panther, the Bear;  
And trouble not Hathi the Silent, and mock not the Boar in  
his lair.

When Pack meets with Pack in the Jungle, and neither will  
go from the trail,  
Lie down till the leaders have spoken—it may be fair words  
shall prevail.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

When ye fight with a Wolf of the Pack, ye must fight him  
alone and afar,  
Lest others take part in the quarrel, and the Pack be  
diminished by war.

The Lair of the Wolf is his refuge, and where he has made  
him his home,  
Not even the Head Wolf may enter, not even the Council  
may come.

The Lair of the Wolf is his refuge, but where he has digged it  
too plain,  
The Council shall send him a message, and so he shall change  
it again.

If ye kill before midnight, be silent, and wake not the woods  
with your bay,  
Lest ye frighten the deer from the crops, and the brothers go  
empty away.

Ye may kill for yourselves, and your mates, and your cubs  
as they need, and ye can;  
But kill not for pleasure of killing, and *seven times never kill*  
*Man!*

If ye plunder his Kill from a weaker, devour not all in thy  
pride;  
Pack-Right is the right of the meanest; so leave him the head  
and the hide.

The Kill of the Pack is the meat of the Pack. Ye must eat  
where it lies;  
And no one may carry away of that meat to his lair, or he dies.

The Kill of the Wolf is the meat of the Wolf. He may do  
what he will,  
But, till he has given permission, the Pack may not eat of that  
Kill.

Cub-Right is the right of the Yearling. From all of his Pack  
he may claim  
Full-gorge when the killer has eaten; and none may refuse  
him the same.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Lair-Right is the right of the Mother. From all of her year  
she may claim  
One haunch of each kill for her litter; and none may deny  
her the same.

Cave-Right is the right of the Father—to hunt by himself  
for his own:  
He is freed of all calls to the Pack; he is judged by the  
Council alone.

Because of his age and his cunning, because of his gripe and  
his paw,  
In all that the Law leaveth open, the word of the Head Wolf  
is Law.

*Now these are the Laws of the Jungle, and many and mighty are  
they;  
But the head and the hoof of the Law and the haunch and the  
hump is—Obey!*

### “A SERVANT WHEN HE REIGNETH”

*“For three things the earth is disquieted, and for four which it cannot bear.  
For a servant when he reigneth, and a fool when he is filled with meat; for an  
odious woman when she is married, and an handmaid that is heir to her  
mistress.—PROV. XXX. 21-22-23.”*

THREE things make earth unquiet  
And four she cannot brook  
The godly Agur counted them  
And put them in a book—  
Those Four Tremendous Curses  
With which mankind is cursed;  
But a Servant when He Reigneth  
Old Agur entered first.

An Handmaid that is Mistress  
We need not call upon.  
A Fool when he is full of Meat  
Will fall asleep anon.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

An Odious Woman Married  
May bear a babe and mend;  
But a Servant when He Reigneth  
Is Confusion to the end.

His feet are swift to tumult,  
His hands are slow to toil,  
His ears are deaf to reason,  
His lips are loud in broil.  
He knows no use for power  
Except to show his might.  
He gives no heed to judgment  
Unless it prove him right.

Because he served a master  
Before his Kingship came,  
And hid in all disaster  
Behind his master's name,  
So, when his Folly opens  
The unnecessary hells,  
A Servant when He Reigneth  
Throws the blame on some one else.

His vows are lightly spoken,  
His faith is hard to bind,  
His trust is easy broken,  
He fears his fellow-kind.  
The nearest mob will move him  
To break the pledge he gave—  
Oh, a Servant when He Reigneth  
Is more than ever slave!

### MACDONOUGH'S SONG

(“As Easy as A B C”—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

WHETHER the State can loose and bind  
In Heaven as well as on Earth:  
If it be wiser to kill mankind  
Before or after the birth—



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

These are matters of high concern  
Where State-kept schoolmen are;  
But Holy State (we have lived to learn)  
Endeth in Holy War.

Whether The People be led by The Lord,  
Or lured by the loudest throat:  
If it be quicker to die by the sword  
Or cheaper to die by vote—  
These are things we have dealt with once,  
(And they will not rise from their grave)  
For Holy People, however it runs,  
Endeth in wholly Slave.

Whatsoever, for any cause,  
Seeketh to take or give  
Power above or beyond the Laws,  
Suffer it not to live!  
Holy State or Holy King—  
Or Holy People's Will—  
Have no truck with the senseless thing.  
Order the guns and kill!  
*Saying—after—me:—*

*Once there was The People—Terror gave it birth;  
Once there was The People and it made a Hell of Earth.  
Earth arose and crushed it. Listen, O ye slain!  
Once there was The People—it shall never be again!*

### THE FLIGHT

1930

WHEN the grey geese heard the Fool's tread  
Too near to where they lay,  
They lifted neither voice nor head,  
But took themselves away.

No water broke, no pinion whirred—  
There went no warning call.  
The steely, sheltering rushes stirred  
A little—that was all.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Only the osiers understood,  
And the drowned meadows spied  
What else than wreckage of a flood  
Stole outward on that tide.

But the far beaches saw their ranks  
Gather and greet and grow  
By myriads on the naked banks  
Watching their sign to go;

Till, with a roar of wings that churned  
The shivering shoals to foam,  
Flight after flight took air and turned  
To find a safer home;

And, far below their steadfast wedge,  
They heard (and hastened on)  
Men thresh and clamour through the sedge  
Aghast that they were gone!

And, when men prayed them come anew  
And nest where they were bred,  
"Nay, fools foretell what knaves will do,"  
Was all the grey geese said.

### "OUR FATHERS OF OLD"

("A Doctor of Medicine"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

EXCELLENT herbs had our fathers of old—  
Excellent herbs to ease their pain—  
Alexanders and Marigold,  
Eyebright, Orris, and Elecampane—  
Basil, Rocket, Valerian, Rue,  
(Almost singing themselves they run)  
Vervain, Dittany, Call-me-to-you—  
Cowslip, Melilot, Rose of the Sun.  
Anything green that grew out of the mould  
Was an excellent herb to our fathers of old.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Wonderful tales had our fathers of old,  
Wonderful tales of the herbs and the stars—  
The Sun was Lord of the Marigold,  
Basil and Rocket belonged to Mars.  
Pat as a sum in division it goes—  
(Every herb had a planet bespoke)—  
Who but Venus should govern the Rose?  
Who but Jupiter own the Oak?  
Simply and gravely the facts are told  
In the wonderful books of our fathers of old.

Wonderful little, when all is said,  
Wonderful little our fathers knew.  
Half their remedies cured you dead—  
Most of their teaching was quite untrue—  
“Look at the stars when a patient is ill  
(Dirt has nothing to do with disease),  
Bleed and blister as much as you will,  
Blister and bleed him as oft as you please.”  
Whence enormous and manifold  
Errors were made by our fathers of old.

Yet when the sickness was sore in the land,  
And neither planets nor herbs assuaged,  
They took their lives in their lancet-hand  
And, oh, what a wonderful war they waged!  
Yes, when the crosses were chalked on the door—  
(Yes, when the terrible dead-cart rolled!)  
Excellent courage our fathers bore—  
Excellent heart had our fathers of old.  
None too learned, but nobly bold  
Into the fight went our fathers of old.

If it be certain, as Galen says—  
And sage Hippocrates holds as much—  
“That those afflicted by doubts and dismays  
Are mightily helped by a dead man's touch,”  
Then, be good to us, stars above!  
Then, be good to us, herbs below!  
We are afflicted by what we can prove,  
We are distracted by what we know.  
So—ah, so!  
Down from your heaven or up from your mould,  
Send us the hearts of our fathers of old!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### DOCTORS

1923

MAN dies too soon, beside his works half-planned.  
His days are counted and reprieve is vain:  
Who shall entreat with Death to stay his hand,  
Or cloke the shameful nakedness of pain?

Send here the bold, the seekers of the way—  
The passionless, the unshakeable of soul,  
Who serve the inmost mysteries of man's clay,  
And ask no more than leave to make them whole.

### THE HERITAGE

OUR Fathers in a wondrous age,  
Ere yet the Earth was small,  
Ensured to us an heritage,  
And doubted not at all  
That we, the children of their heart,  
Which then did beat so high,  
In later time should play like part  
For our posterity.

A thousand years they steadfast built,  
To 'vantage us and ours,  
The Walls that were a world's despair,  
The sea-constraining Towers:  
Yet in their midmost pride they knew,  
And unto Kings made known,  
Not all from these their strength they drew,  
Their faith from brass or stone.

Youth's passion, manhood's fierce intent.  
With age's judgment wise,  
They spent, and counted not they spent,  
At daily sacrifice.  
Not lambs alone nor purchased doves  
Or tithe of trader's gold—  
Their lives most dear, their dearer loves,  
They offered up of old.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Refraining e'en from lawful things,  
They bowed the neck to bear  
The unadornèd yoke that brings  
Stark toil and sternest care.  
Wherefore through them is Freedom sure;  
Wherefore through them we stand,  
From all but sloth and pride secure,  
In a delightful land.

Then, fretful, murmur not they gave  
So great a charge to keep,  
Nor dream that awestruck Time shall save  
Their labour while we sleep.  
Dear-bought and clear, a thousand year,  
Our fathers' title runs.  
Make we likewise their sacrifice,  
Defrauding not our sons.

### CHAPTER HEADINGS

*written for*

John Lockwood Kipling's

#### BEAST AND MAN IN INDIA

THEY killed a Child to please the Gods  
In Earth's young penitence,  
And I have bled in that Babe's stead  
Because of innocence.

I bear the sins of sinful men  
That have no sin of my own,  
They drive me forth to Heaven's wrath  
Unpastured and alone.

I am the meat of sacrifice,  
The ransom of man's guilt,  
For they give my life to the altar-knife  
Wherever shrine is built.

*The Goat.*

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Between the waving tufts of jungle-grass,  
Up from the river as the twilight falls,  
Across the dust-beclouded plain they pass  
On to the village walls.

Great is the sword and mighty is the pen,  
But over all the labouring ploughman's blade—  
For on its oxen and its husbandmen  
An Empire's strength is laid.

*The Oxen.*

The torn boughs trailing o'er the tusks aslant,  
The saplings reeling in the path he trod,  
Declare his might—our lord the Elephant,  
Chief of the ways of God.

The black bulk heaving where the oxen pant,  
The bowed head toiling where the guns careen,  
Declare our might—our slave the Elephant,  
And servant of the Queen.

*The Elephant.*

Dark children of the mere and marsh,  
Wallow and waste and lea,  
Outcaste they wait at the village gate  
With folk of low degree.

Their pasture is in no man's land,  
Their food the cattle's scorn;  
Their rest is mire and their desire  
The thicket and the thorn.

But woe to those that break their sleep,  
And woe to those that dare  
To rouse the herd-bull from his keep,  
The wild boar from his lair!

*Pigs and Buffaloes.*

The beasts are very wise,  
Their mouths are clean of lies,  
They talk one to the other,  
Bullock to bullock's brother

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Resting after their labours,  
Each in stall with his neighbours.  
But man with goad and whip  
Breaks up their fellowship,  
Shouts in their silky ears  
Filling their soul with fears.  
When he has ploughed the land,  
He says: "They understand."  
But the beasts in stall together,  
Freed from the yoke and tether,  
Say as the torn flanks smoke:  
"Nay, 'twas the whip that spoke."

---

### LIFE'S HANDICAP

THE doors were wide, the story saith,  
Out of the night came the patient wraith.  
He might not speak, and he could not stir  
A hair of the Baron's miniver.  
Speechless and strengthless, a shadow thin,  
He roved the castle to find his kin.  
And oh! 'twas a piteous sight to see  
The dumb ghost follow his enemy!  
*The Return of Imray.*

Before my Spring I garnered Autumn's gain,  
Out of her time my field was white with grain,  
The year gave up her secrets, to my woe.  
Forced and deflowered each sick season lay,  
In mystery of increase and decay;  
I saw the sunset ere men see the day,  
Who am too wise in all I should not know.  
*Without Benefit of Clergy.*

There's a convict more in the Central Jail,  
Behind the old mud wall;  
There's a lifter less on the Border trail,  
And the Queen's Peace over all,  
Dear boys,  
The Queen's Peace over all!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

For we must bear our leader's blame,  
On us the shame will fall,  
If we lift our hand from a fettered land  
And the Queen's Peace over all,  
Dear boys,  
The Queen's Peace over all!

*The Head of the District.*

The Earth gave up her dead that tide,  
Into our camp he came,  
And said his say and went his way,  
And left our hearts aflame.

Keep tally—on the gun-butt score  
The vengeance we must take  
When God shall bring full reckoning  
For our dead comrade's sake!

*The Man Who Was.*

The sky is lead, and our faces are red,  
And the Gates of Hell are opened and riven,  
And the winds of Hell are loosened and driven,  
And the dust flies up in the face of Heaven,  
And the clouds come down in a fiery sheet,  
Heavy to raise and hard to be borne.  
And the soul of man is turned from his meat,  
Turned from the trifles for which he has striven,  
Sick in his body and heavy-hearted,  
And his soul flies up like the dust in the street—  
Breaks from his flesh and is gone and departed  
Like the blasts that they blow on the cholera-horn.  
*At the End of the Passage.*

## KIM

UNTO whose use the pregnant suns are poised,  
With idiot moons and stars retracting stars?  
Creep thou between—thy coming's all unnoised.  
Heaven hath her high, as Earth her baser, wars.  
Heir to these tumults, this affright, that fray  
(By Adam's, fathers', own, sin bound away);  
Peer up, draw out thy horoscope and say  
Which planet mends thy threadbare fate, or mars.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### MANY INVENTIONS

'LESS you want your toes trod off you'd better get back at  
once,  
For the bullocks are walking two by two,  
The *byles* are walking two by two,  
And the elephants bring the guns.  
Ho! Yuss!  
Great—big—long—black—forty-pounder guns.  
Jiggery-jolty to and fro,  
Each as big as a launch in tow—  
Blind—dumb—broad-breeched—beggars o' battering-guns!  
*My Lord the Elephant.*

### THE DAY'S WORK

WE now, held in captivity,  
Spring to our bondage nor grieve—  
See now, how it is blessed, *eder*,  
Brothers, to give than receive!  
Keep trust, wherefore we were made,  
Paying the debt that we owe;  
For a clean thrust, and the shear of the blade,  
Will carry us where we would go.  
*The Ship that Found Herself.*

ALL the world over, nursing their scars,  
Sit the old fighting-men broke in the wars—  
Sit the old fighting-men, surly and grim  
Mocking the lilt of the conquerors' hymn.

Dust of the battle o'erwhelmed them and hid.  
Fame never found them for aught that they did.  
Wounded and spent to the lazar they drew,  
Lining the road where the Legions roll through.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Sons of the Laurel who press to your meed,  
(Worthy God's pity most—you who succeed!)  
Ere you go triumphing, crowned, to the stars,  
Pity poor fighting-men, broke in the wars!  
*Collected.*

PUT forth to watch, unschooled, alone,  
'Twixt hostile earth and sky;  
The mottled lizard 'neath the stone  
Is wiser here than I.

What stir across the haze of heat?  
What omen down the wind?  
The buck that break before my feet—  
They know, but I am blind!  
*Collected.*

1914-18

FAREWELL and adieu to you, Harwich Ladies,  
Farewell and adieu to you, ladies ashore!  
For we've received orders to work to the eastward  
Where we hope in a short time to strafe 'em some more.

We'll duck and we'll dive like little tin turtles,  
We'll duck and we'll dive underneath the North Seas,  
Until we strike something that doesn't expect us.  
From here to Cuxhaven it's go as you please!

The first thing we did was to dock in a minefield,  
Which isn't a place where repairs should be done;  
And there we lay doggo in twelve-fathom water  
With tri-nitro-toluol hogging our run.

The next thing we did, we rose under a Zeppelin,  
With his shiny big belly half blocking the sky.  
But what in the—Heavens can you do with six-pounders?  
So we fired what we had and we bade him good-bye.  
Farewell and adieu, etc.

*The Fringes of the Fleet.*

SONG OF THE FIFTH RIVER

("The Treasure and the Law"—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

WHEN first by Eden Tree  
The Four Great Rivers ran,  
To each was appointed a Man  
Her Prince and Ruler to be.

But after this was ordained  
(The ancient legends tell),  
There came dark Israel,  
For whom no River remained.

Then He Whom the Rivers obey  
Said to him: "Fling on the ground  
A handful of yellow clay,  
And a Fifth Great River shall run,  
Mightier than these Four,  
In secret the Earth around;  
And Her secret evermore  
Shall be shown to thee and thy Race."

So it was said and done.  
And, deep in the veins of Earth,  
And, fed by a thousand springs  
That comfort the market-place,  
Or sap the power of Kings,  
The Fifth Great River had birth,  
Even as it was foretold—  
The Secret River of Gold!

And Israel laid down  
His sceptre and his crown,  
To brood on that River bank,  
Where the waters flashed and sank  
And burrowed in earth and fell,  
And bided a season below,  
For reason that none might know,  
Save only Israel.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

He is Lord of the Last—  
The Fifth, most wonderful, Flood.  
He hears Her thunder past  
And Her Song is in his blood.  
He can foresay: "She will fall,"  
For he knows which fountain dries  
Behind which desert-belt  
A thousand leagues to the South.

He can foresay: "She will rise."  
He knows what far snows melt  
Along what mountain-wall  
A thousand leagues to the North.  
He snuffs the coming drouth  
As he snuffs the coming rain,  
He knows what each will bring forth,  
And turns it to his gain.

A Ruler without a Throne,  
A Prince without a Sword,  
Israel follows his quest.  
In every land a guest,  
Of many lands a lord,  
In no land King is he.  
But the Fifth Great River keeps  
The secret of Her deeps  
For Israel alone.  
As it was ordered to be.

### THE CHILDREN'S SONG

*(Puck of Pook's Hill)*

LAND of our Birth, we pledge to thee  
Our love and toil in the years to be;  
When we are grown and take our place  
As men and women with our race.

Father in Heaven who lovest all,  
Oh, help Thy children when they call;  
That they may build from age to age  
An undefiled heritage.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Teach us to bear the yoke in youth,  
With steadfastness and careful truth;  
That, in our time, Thy Grace may give  
The Truth whereby the Nations live.

Teach us to rule ourselves alway,  
Controlled and cleanly night and day;  
That we may bring, if need arise,  
No maimed or worthless sacrifice.

Teach us to look in all our ends  
On Thee for judge, and not our friends;  
That we, with Thee, may walk uncowed  
By fear or favour of the crowd.

Teach us the Strength that cannot seek,  
By deed or thought, to hurt the weak;  
That, under Thee, we may possess  
Man's strength to comfort man's distress.

Teach us Delight in simple things,  
And Mirth that has no bitter springs;  
Forgiveness free of evil done,  
And Love to all men 'neath the sun!

*Land of our Birth, our faith, our pride,  
For whose dear sake our fathers died;  
Oh, Motherland, we pledge to thee  
Head, heart, and hand through the years to be!*

### PARADE-SONG OF THE CAMP-ANIMALS

("Her Majesty's Servants"—*The Jungle Book*)

#### ELEPHANTS OF THE GUN-TEAMS

WE LENT to Alexander the strength of Hercules,  
The wisdom of our foreheads, the cunning of our  
knees.  
We bowed our necks to service—they ne'er were loosed  
again,—  
Make way there, way for the ten-foot teams  
Of the Forty-Pounder train!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### GUN-BULLOCKS

Those heroes in their harnesses avoid a cannon-ball,  
And what they know of powder upsets them one and all;  
Then *we* come into action and tug the guns again,—  
Make way there, way for the twenty yoke  
Of the Forty-Pounder train!

### CAVALRY HORSES

By the brand on my withers, the finest of tunes  
Is played by the Lancers, Hussars, and Dragoons,  
And it's sweeter than "Stables" or "Water" to me,  
The Cavalry Canter of "Bonnie Dundee!"

Then feed us and break us and handle and groom,  
And give us good riders and plenty of room,  
And launch us in column of squadron and see  
The Way of the War-horse to "Bonnie Dundee!"

### SCREW-GUN MULES

As me and my companions were scrambling up a hill,  
The path was lost in rolling stones, but we went forward still;  
For we can wriggle and climb, my lads, and turn up every-  
where,  
And it's our delight on a mountain height, with a leg or two  
to spare!

Good luck to every sergeant, then, that lets us pick our road!  
Bad luck to all the driver-men that cannot pack a load!  
For we can wriggle and climb, my lads, and turn up every-  
where,  
And it's our delight on a mountain height, with a leg or two  
to spare!

### COMMISSARIAT CAMELS

We haven't a camelty tune of our own  
To help us trollop along,  
But every neck is a hair-trombone  
(*Rtt-ta-ta-ta!* is a hair-trombone!)  
And this is our marching-song:

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*Can't! Don't! Shan't! Won't!*  
Pass it along the line!  
Somebody's pack has slid from his back,  
'Wish it were only mine!  
Somebody's load has tipped off in the road—  
Cheer for a halt and a row!  
*Urrr! Yarrh! Grr! Arrh!*  
Somebody's catching it now!

### ALL THE BEASTS TOGETHER

Children of the Camp are we,  
Serving each in his degree;  
Children of the yoke and goad,  
Pack and harness, pad and load.  
See our line across the plain,  
Like a heel-rope bent again,  
Reaching, writhing, rolling far,  
Sweeping all away to war!  
While the men that walk beside,  
Dusty, silent, heavy-eyed,  
Cannot tell why we or they  
March and suffer day by day.  
*Children of the Camp are we,  
Serving each in his degree;  
Children of the yoke and goad,  
Pack and harness, pad and load!*

IF——

(“ Brother Square-Toes ”—*Rewards and Fairies*)

**I**F YOU can keep your head when all about you  
Are losing theirs and blaming it on you,  
If you can trust yourself when all men doubt you,  
But make allowance for their doubting too;  
If you can wait and not be tired by waiting,  
Or being lied about, don't deal in lies,  
Or being hated, don't give way to hating,  
And yet don't look too good, nor talk too wise:

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

If you can dream—and not make dreams your master;  
If you can think—and not make thoughts your aim;  
If you can meet with Triumph and Disaster  
And treat those two impostors just the same;  
If you can bear to hear the truth you've spoken  
Twisted by knaves to make a trap for fools,  
Or watch the things you gave your life to, broken,  
And stoop and build 'em up with worn-out tools:

If you can make one heap of all your winnings  
And risk it on one turn of pitch-and-toss,  
And lose, and start again at your beginnings  
And never breathe a word about your loss;  
If you can force your heart and nerve and sinew  
To serve your turn long after they are gone,  
And so hold on when there is nothing in you  
Except the Will which says to them: "Hold on!"

If you can talk with crowds and keep your virtue,  
Or walk with Kings—nor lose the common touch,  
If neither foes nor loving friends can hurt you,  
If all men count with you, but none too much;  
If you can fill the unforgiving minute  
With sixty seconds' worth of distance run,  
Yours is the Earth and everything that's in it,  
And—which is more—you'll be a Man, my son!

## GREAT-HEART

(THEODORE ROOSEVELT)

*"The interpreter then called for a man-servant of his, one Great Heart."*—BUNYAN'S *Pilgrim's Progress*.

CONCERNING brave Captains  
Our age hath made known  
For all men to honour,  
One standeth alone,  
Of whom, o'er both oceans,  
Both peoples may say:  
"Our realm is diminished  
With Great-Heart away."



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

In purpose unsparing,  
In action no less,  
The labours he praised  
He would seek and profess  
Through travail and battle,  
At hazard and pain. . . .  
And our world is none the braver  
Since Great-Heart was ta'en!

Plain speech with plain folk,  
And plain words for false things,  
Plain faith in plain dealing  
'Twixt neighbours or kings,  
He used and he followed,  
However it sped. . . .  
Oh, our world is none more honest  
Now Great-Heart is dead!

The heat of his spirit  
Struck warm through all lands;  
For he loved such as showed  
'Emselves men of their hands;  
In love, as in hate,  
Paying home to the last. . . .  
But our world is none the kinder  
Now Great-Heart hath passed!

Hard-schooled by long power,  
Yet most humble of mind  
Where aught that he was  
Might advantage mankind.  
Leal servant, loved master,  
Rare comrade, sure guide. . . .  
Oh, our world is none the safer  
Now Great-Heart hath died!

Let those who would handle  
Make sure they can wield  
His far-reaching sword  
And his close-guarding shield;  
For those who must journey  
Henceforward alone  
Have need of stout convoy  
Now Great-Heart is gone.

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

## THE PRODIGAL SON

### WESTERN VERSION

*(Enlarged from " Kim ")*

**H**ERE come I to my own again,  
Fed, forgiven and known again,  
Claimed by bone of my bone again  
And cheered by flesh of my flesh.  
The fatted calf is dressed for me,  
But the husks have greater zest for me.  
I think my pigs will be best for me,  
So I'm off to the Yards afresh.

I never was very refined, you see,  
(And it weighs on my brother's mind, you see)  
But there's no reproach among swine, d'you see,  
For being a bit of a swine.  
So I'm off with wallet and staff to eat  
The bread that is three parts chaff to wheat,  
But glory be!—there's a laugh to it,  
Which isn't the case when we dine.

My father glooms and advises me,  
My brother sulks and despises me,  
And Mother catechises me  
Till I want to go out and swear.  
And, in spite of the butler's gravity,  
I know that the servants have it I  
Am a monster of moral depravity,  
And I'm damned if I think it's fair!

I wasted my substance, I know I did,  
On riotous living, so I did,  
But there's nothing on record to show I did  
More than my betters have done.  
They talk of the money I spent out there—  
They hint at the pace that I went out there—  
But they all forget I was sent out there  
Alone as a rich man's son.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

So I was a mark for plunder at once,  
And lost my cash (can you wonder?) at once,  
But I didn't give up and knock under at once.  
I worked in the Yards, for a spell,  
Where I spent my nights and my days with hogs,  
And shared their milk and maize with hogs,  
Till, I guess, I have learned what pays with hogs  
And—I have that knowledge to sell!

So back I go to my job again,  
Not so easy to rob again,  
Or quite so ready to sob again  
On any neck that's around.  
I'm leaving, Pater. Good-bye to you!  
God bless you, Mater! I'll write to you. . . .  
I wouldn't be impolite to you,  
But, Brother, you *are* a hound!

### CAIN AND ABEL

#### WESTERN VERSION

I 9 3 4

**C**AIN and Abel were brothers born.  
(*Koop-la! Come along, cows!*)  
One raised cattle and one raised corn.  
(*Koop-la! Come along! Co-hoe!*)

And Cain he farmed by the river-side,  
So he did not care how much it dried.

For he banked, and he sluiced, and he ditched and he led  
(*And the Corn don't care for the Horn*)—  
A-half Euphrates out of her bed  
To water his dam' Corn!

But Abel herded out on the plains  
Where you have to go by the dams and the rains.

It happened, after a three-year drought,  
The wells, and the springs, and the dams gave out.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The Herd-bulls came to Cain's new house  
(*They wanted water so!—*)  
With the hot red Sun between their brows,  
Sayin' " Give us water for our pore cows! "  
But Cain he told 'em—" No! "

The Cows they came to Cain's big house  
With the cold white Moon between their brows,  
Sayin' " Give some water to us pore cows! "  
But Cain he told 'em—" No! "

The li'l Calves came to Cain's fine house  
With the Evenin' Star between their brows,  
Sayin' " Give us water an' we'll be cows! "  
But Cain he told 'em—" No! "

The Herd-bulls led 'em back again,  
An' Abel went an' said to Cain:—  
" Oh, sell me water, my brother dear,  
Or there will be no beef this year."  
And Cain he answered—" No! "

" Then draw your hatches, my brother true,  
An' let a little water through."  
But Cain he answered:—" No!

" My dams are tight an' my ditches are sound,  
An' not a drop goes through or round  
Till she's done her duty by the Corn

" I will not sell, an' I will not draw,  
An' if you breach, I'll have the Law,  
As sure as you are born! "

Then Abel took his best bull-goad,  
An' holed a dyke on the Eden road.

He opened her up with foot an' hand,  
An' let Euphrates loose on the land.

He spilled Euphrates out on the plain,  
So's all his cattle could drink again.

## R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

Then Cain he saw what Abel done—  
But, in those days, there was no Gun!

So he made him a club of a hickory-limb,  
An' halted Abel an' said to him:—

“ I did not sell an' I did not draw,  
An' now you've breached I'll have the Law.

“ You ride abroad in your hat an' spurs,  
Hell-hoofin' over my cucumbers!

“ You pray to the Lord to send you luck  
An' you loose your steers in my garden-truck:

“ An' now you're bust, as you ought to be,  
You can keep on prayin' but not to me! ”

Then Abel saw it meant the life;  
But, in those days, there was no Knife:

So he up with his big bull-goad instead,  
But—Cain hit first and dropped him dead!

The Herd-bulls ran when they smelt the blood,  
An' horned an' pawed in that Red Mud.  
The Calves they bawled, and the Steers they milled,  
Because it was the First Man Killed;  
An' the whole Herd broke for the Land of Nod,  
An' Cain was left to be judged by God!

But, seein' all he had had to bear,  
I never could call the Judgment fair!

### THE NECESSITARIAN

(“ Steam Tactics ”—*Traffics and Discoveries*)

I KNOW not in Whose hands are laid  
To empty upon earth  
From unsuspected ambuscade  
The very Urns of Mirth;

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Who bids the Heavenly Lark arise  
And cheer our solemn round—  
The Jest beheld with streaming eyes  
And grovellings on the ground;

Who joins the flats of Time and Chance  
Behind the prey preferred,  
And thrones on Shrieking Circumstance  
The Sacredly Absurd,

Till Laughter, voiceless through excess,  
Waves mute appeal and sore,  
Above the midriff's deep distress,  
For breath to laugh once more.

No creed hath dared to hail Him Lord,  
No raptured choirs proclaim,  
And Nature's strenuous Overword  
Hath nowhere breathed His Name.

Yet, it must be, on wayside jape,  
The selfsame Power bestows  
The selfsame power as went to shape  
His Planet or His Rose.

### REBIRTH

1914-18

("The Edge of the Evening"—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

IF ANY God should say,  
"I will restore  
The world her yesterday  
Whole as before  
My Judgment blasted it"—who would not lift  
Heart, eye, and hand in passion o'er the gift?

If any God should will  
To wipe from mind  
The memory of this ill  
Which is mankind  
In soul and substance now—who would not bless  
Even to tears His loving-tenderness?

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

If any God should give  
Us leave to fly  
These present deaths we live,  
And safely die  
In those lost lives we lived ere we were born—  
What man but would not laugh the excuse to scorn?

For we are what we are—  
So broke to blood  
And the strict works of war—  
So long subdued  
To sacrifice, that threadbare Death commands  
Hardly observance at our busier hands.

Yet we were what we were,  
And, fashioned so,  
It pleases us to stare  
At the far show  
Of unbelievable years and shapes that flit,  
In our own likeness, on the edge of it.

THE JESTER

THERE are three degrees of bliss  
At the foot of Allah's Throne,  
And the highest place is his  
Who saves a brother's soul  
At peril of his own.  
There is the Power made known!

There are three degrees of bliss  
In the Gardens of Paradise,  
And the second place is his  
Who saves his brother's soul  
By excellent advice.  
For there the Glory lies!

There are three degrees of bliss  
And three abodes of the Blest,  
And the lowest place is his  
Who has saved a soul by a jest  
And a brother's soul in sport . . .  
But there do the Angels resort!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

PHILADELPHIA

(" Brother Square-Toes "—*Rewards and Fairies*)

IF YOU'RE off to Philadelphia in the morning,  
You mustn't take my stories for a guide.  
There's little left, indeed, of the city you will read of,  
And all the folk I write about have died.

Now few will understand if you mention Talleyrand,  
Or remember what his cunning and his skill did;  
And the cabmen at the wharf do not know Count Zinzendorf,  
Nor the Church in Philadelphia he builded.

It is gone, gone, gone with lost Atlantis,  
(Never say I didn't give you warning).  
In Seventeen Ninety-three 'twas there for all to see,  
But it's not in Philadelphia this morning.

If you're off to Philadelphia in the morning,  
You mustn't go by anything I've said.  
Bob Bicknell's Southern Stages have been laid aside for  
ages,  
But the Limited will take you there instead.  
Toby Hirte can't be seen at One Hundred and Eighteen  
North Second Street—no matter when you call;  
And I fear you'll search in vain for the wash-house down  
the lane  
Where Pharaoh played the fiddle at the ball.

It is gone, gone, gone with Thebes the Golden,  
(Never say I didn't give you warning).  
In Seventeen Ninety-four 'twas a famous dancing  
floor—  
But it's not in Philadelphia this morning.

If you're off to Philadelphia in the morning,  
You must telegraph for rooms at some Hotel.  
You needn't try your luck at Epply's or " The Buck,"  
Though the Father of his Country liked them well.  
It is not the slightest use to inquire for Adam Goos,  
Or to ask where Pastor Meder has removed—so  
You must treat as out of date the story I relate  
Of the Church in Philadelphia he loved so.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

He is gone, gone, gone with Martin Luther  
(Never say I didn't give you warning).  
In Seventeen Ninety-five he was (rest his soul!)  
    alive,  
But he's not in Philadelphia this morning.

If you're off to Philadelphia this morning,  
And wish to prove the truth of what I say,  
I pledge my word you'll find the pleasant land behind  
    Unaltered since Red Jacket rode that way.  
Still the pine-woods scent the noon; still the catbird sings  
    his tune;  
Still autumn sets the maple-forest blazing;  
Still the grape-vine through the dusk flings her soul-compel-  
    ling musk;  
Still the fire-flies in the corn make night amazing!

They are there, there, there with Earth immortal  
(Citizens, I give you friendly warning).  
The things that truly last when men and times  
    have passed,  
They are all in Pennsylvania this morning!

## A SONG OF TRAVEL

*(Canadian)*

WHERE'S the lamp that Hero lit  
Once to call Leander home?  
Equal Time hath shovelled it  
    'Neath the wrack of Greece and Rome.  
Neither wait we any more  
That worn sail which Argo bore.

Dust and dust of ashes close  
All the Vestal Virgins' care;  
And the oldest altar shows  
    But an older darkness there.  
Age-encamped Oblivion  
Tenteth every light that shone.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Yet shall we, for Suns that die,  
Wall our wanderings from desire?  
Or, because the Moon is high,  
Scorn to use a nearer fire?  
Lest some envious Pharaoh stir,  
Make our lives our sepulchre?

Nay! Though Time with petty Fate  
Prison us and Emperors,  
By our Arts do we create  
That which Time himself devours—  
Such machines as well may run  
'Gainst the Horses of the Sun.

When we would a new abode,  
Space, our tyrant King no more,  
Lays the long lance of the road  
At our feet and flees before,  
Breathless, ere we overwhelm,  
To submit a further realm!

### THE TWO-SIDED MAN

*(Enlarged from "Kim")*

MUCH I owe to the Lands that grew—  
More to the Lives that fed—  
But most to Allah Who gave me two  
Separate sides to my head.

Much I reflect on the Good and the True  
In the Faiths beneath the sun,  
But most upon Allah Who gave me two  
Sides to my head, not one.

Wesley's following, Calvin's flock,  
White or yellow or bronze,  
Shaman, Ju-ju or Angekok,  
Minister, Mukamuk, Bonze—

Here is a health, my brothers, to you,  
However your prayers are said,  
And praised be Allah Who gave me two  
Separate sides to my head!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I would go without shirt or shoe,  
Friend, tobacco or bread,  
Sooner than lose for a minute the two  
Separate sides of my head!

A TRANSLATION

HORACE, Bk. V. Ode 3

("Regulus"—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

THERE are whose study is of smells,  
And to attentive schools rehearse  
How something mixed with something else  
Makes something worse.

Some cultivate in broths impure  
The clients of our body—these,  
Increasing without Venus, cure,  
Or cause, disease.

Others the heated wheel extol,  
And all its offspring, whose concern  
Is how to make it farthest roll  
And fastest turn.

Me, much incurious if the hour  
Present, or to be paid for, brings  
Me to Brundisium by the power  
Of wheels or wings;

Me, in whose breast no flame hath burned  
Life-long, save that by Pindar lit,  
Such lore leaves cold. I am not turned  
Aside to it

More than when, sunk in thought profound  
Of what the unaltering Gods require,  
My steward (friend but slave) brings round  
Logs for my fire.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

“ LUKANNON ”

Song of the Seal-Rookeries, Aleutian Islands

(“ The White Seal ”—*The Jungle Book*)

I MET my mates in the morning (and oh, but I am old!)  
Where roaring on the ledges the summer ground-swell  
rolled.  
I heard them lift the chorus that drowned the breakers’  
song—  
The Beaches of Lukannon—two million voices strong!

*The song of pleasant stations beside the salt lagoons,  
The song of blowing squadrons that shuffled down the dunes,  
The song of midnight dances that churned the sea to flame—  
The Beaches of Lukannon—before the sealers came!*

I met my mates in the morning (I’ll never meet them  
more!);  
They came and went in legions that darkened all the shore.  
And through the foam-flecked offing as far as voice could  
reach  
We hailed the landing-parties and we sang them up the  
beach.

*The Beaches of Lukannon—the winter-wheat so tall—  
The dripping, crinkled lichens, and the sea-fog drenching all!  
The platforms of our playground, all shining smooth and worn!  
The Beaches of Lukannon—the home where we were born!*

I meet my mates in the morning, a broken, scattered band.  
Men shoot us in the water and club us on the land;  
Men drive us to the Salt House like silly sheep and tame,  
And still we sing Lukannon—before the sealers came.

*Wheel down, wheel down to southward! Oh, Gooverooska,<sup>1</sup> go!  
And tell the Deep-Sea Viceroys the story of our woe;  
Ere, empty as the shark’s egg the tempest flings ashore,  
The Beaches of Lukannon shall know their sons no more!*

<sup>1</sup> Sea-gull.

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

AN ASTROLOGER'S SONG

(" A Doctor of Medicine "—*Rewards and Fairies*)

T O THE Heavens above us  
O look and behold  
The Planets that love us  
All harnessed in gold!  
*What chariots, what horses*  
*Against us shall bide*  
*While the Stars in their courses*  
*Do fight on our side?*

All thought, all desires,  
That are under the sun,  
Are one with their fires,  
As we also are one.  
All matter, all spirit,  
All fashion, all frame,  
Receive and inherit  
Their strength from the same.

Oh, man that deniest  
All power save thine own,  
Their power in the highest  
Is mightily shown.  
Not less in the lowest  
That power is made clear.  
(Oh, man, if thou knowest,  
What treasure is here!)

Earth quakes in her throes,  
And we wonder for why.  
But the blind planet knows  
When her ruler is nigh;  
And, attuned since Creation  
To perfect accord,  
She thrills in her station  
And yearns to her Lord.

The waters have risen,  
The springs are unbound—  
The floods break their prison,  
And ravin around.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

No rampart withstands 'em,  
Their fury will last,  
Till the Sign that commands 'em  
Sinks low or swings past.

Through abysses unproven,  
O'er gulfs beyond thought,  
Our portion is woven,  
Our burden is brought.  
Yet They that prepare it,  
Whose Nature we share,  
Make us who must bear it  
Well able to bear.

Though terrors o'ertake us  
We'll not be afraid.  
No Power can unmake us  
Save that which has made:  
Nor yet beyond reason  
Or hope shall we fall—  
All things have their season,  
And Mercy crowns all!

Then, doubt not, ye fearful—  
The Eternal is King—  
Up, heart, and be cheerful,  
And lustily sing:—  
*What chariots, what horses,  
Against us shall bide  
While the Stars in their courses  
Do fight on our side?*

### “ THE POWER OF THE DOG ”

(“ Garm—a Hostage ”—*Actions and Reactions*)

THERE is sorrow enough in the natural way  
From men and women to fill our day;  
And when we are certain of sorrow in store,  
Why do we always arrange for more?  
*Brothers and Sisters, I bid you beware  
Of giving your heart to a dog to tear.*

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Buy a pup and your money will buy  
Love unflinching that cannot lie—  
Perfect passion and worship fed  
By a kick in the ribs or a pat on the head.  
*Nevertheless it is hardly fair  
To risk your heart for a dog to tear.*

When the fourteen years which Nature permits  
Are closing in asthma, or tumour, or fits,  
And the vet's unspoken prescription runs  
To lethal chambers or loaded guns,  
*Then you will find—it's your own affair—  
But . . . you've given your heart to a dog to tear.*

When the body that lived at your single will,  
With its whimper of welcome, is stilled (how still!)  
When the spirit that answered your every mood  
Is gone—wherever it goes—for good,  
*You will discover how much you care,  
And will give your heart to a dog to tear.*

We've sorrow enough in the natural way,  
When it comes to burying Christian clay.  
Our loves are not given, but only lent,  
At compound interest of cent per cent.  
Though it is not always the case, I believe,  
That the longer we've kept 'em, the more do we grieve:  
For, when debts are payable, right or wrong,  
A short-time loan is as bad as a long—  
*So why in—Heaven (before we are there)  
Should we give our hearts to a dog to tear?*

### THE RABBI'S SONG

("The House Surgeon"—*Actions and Reactions*)

2 SAMUEL xiv. 14.

IF THOUGHT can reach to Heaven,  
On Heaven let it dwell,  
For fear thy Thought be given  
Like power to reach to Hell.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

For fear the desolation  
And darkness of thy mind  
Perplex an habitation  
Which thou hast left behind.

Let nothing linger after—  
No whimpering ghost remain,  
In wall, or beam, or rafter,  
Of any hate or pain.  
Cleanse and call home thy spirit,  
Deny her leave to cast,  
On aught thy heirs inherit,  
The shadow of her past.

For think, in all thy sadness,  
What road our griefs may take;  
Whose brain reflect our madness,  
Or whom our terrors shake:  
For think, lest any languish  
By cause of thy distress—  
The arrows of our anguish  
Fly farther than we guess.

Our lives, our tears, as water,  
Are spilled upon the ground;  
God giveth no man quarter,  
Yet God a means hath found,  
Though Faith and Hope have vanished,  
And even Love grows dim—  
A means whereby His banished  
Be not expelled from Him!

### THE BEE-BOY'S SONG

(“ ‘ Dymchurch Flit ’ ”—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

*B*EES! Bees! Hark to your bees!  
“ Hide from your neighbours as much as you please,  
But all that has happened, to us you must tell,  
Or else we will give you no honey to sell! ”



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

A maiden in her glory,  
Upon her wedding-day,  
Must tell her Bees the story,  
Or else they'll fly away.  
Fly away—die away—  
Dwindle down and leave you!  
But if you don't deceive your Bees,  
Your Bees will not deceive you.

Marriage, birth or buryin',  
News across the seas,  
All you're sad or merry in,  
You must tell the Bees.  
Tell 'em coming in an' out,  
Where the Fanners fan,  
'Cause the Bees are just about  
As curious as a man!

Don't you wait where trees are,  
When the lightnings play,  
Nor don't you hate where Bees are,  
Or else they'll pine away.  
Pine away—dwindle away—  
Anything to leave you!  
But if you never grieve your Bees,  
Your Bees'll never grieve you.

### THE SONG OF SEVEN CITIES

("The Vortex"—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

I WAS Lord of Cities very sumptuously builded.  
Seven roaring Cities paid me tribute from afar.  
Ivory their outposts were—the guardrooms of them gilded,  
And garrisoned with Amazons invincible in war.

All the world went softly when it walked before my Cities—  
Neither King nor Army vexed my peoples at their toil.  
Never horse nor chariot irked or overbore my Cities.  
Never Mob nor Ruler questioned whence they drew their  
spoil.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Banded, mailed and arrogant from sunrise unto sunset,  
Singing while they sacked it, they possessed the land at  
large.

Yet when men would rob them, they resisted, they made  
onset  
And pierced the smoke of battle with a thousand-sabred  
charge.

So they warred and trafficked only yesterday, my Cities.  
To-day there is no mark or mound of where my Cities  
stood.

For the River rose at midnight and it washed away my  
Cities.

They are evened with Atlantis and the towns before the  
Flood.

Rain on rain-gorged channels raised the water-levels round  
them,

Freshet backed on freshet swelled and swept their world  
from sight;

Till the emboldened floods linked arms and, flashing forward,  
drowned them—

Drowned my Seven Cities and their peoples in one night!

Low among the alders lie their derelict foundations,  
The beams wherein they trusted and the plinths whereon they  
built—

My rulers and their treasure and their unborn populations,  
Dead, destroyed, aborted, and defiled with mud and silt!

The Daughters of the Palace whom they cherished in my  
Cities,

My silver-tongued Princesses, and the promise of their May—  
Their bridegrooms of the June-tide—all have perished in my  
Cities,

With the harsh envenomed virgins that can neither love nor  
play.

I was Lord of Cities—I will build anew my Cities,  
Seven, set on rocks, above the wrath of any flood.  
Nor will I rest from search till I have filled anew my Cities  
With peoples undefeated of the dark, enduring blood.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

To the sound of trumpets shall their seed restore my Cities,  
Wealthy and well-weaponed, that once more may I behold  
All the world go softly when it walks before my Cities,  
And the horses and the chariots fleeing from them as of old!

### THE RETURN OF THE CHILDREN

("They"—*Traffics and Discoveries*)

**N**EITHER the harps nor the crowns amused, nor the  
cherubs' dove-winged races—  
Holding hands forlornly the Children wandered beneath the  
Dome,  
Plucking the splendid robes of the passers-by, and with pitiful  
faces  
Begging what Princes and Powers refused:—"Ah, please  
will you let us go home?"

Over the jewelled floor, nigh weeping, ran to them Mary the  
Mother,  
Kneeled and caressed and made promise with kisses, and  
drew them along to the gateway—  
Yea, the all-iron unbribeable Door which Peter must guard  
and none other.  
Straightway She took the Keys from his keeping, and opened  
and freed them straightway.

Then, to Her Son, Who had seen and smiled, She said: "On  
the night that I bore Thee,  
What didst Thou care for a love beyond mine or a heaven  
that was not my arm?  
Didst Thou push from the nipple, O Child, to hear the angels  
adore Thee  
When we two lay in the breath of the kine?" And He said:—  
"Thou hast done no harm."

So through the Void the Children ran homeward merrily  
hand in hand,  
Looking neither to left nor right where the breathless Heavens  
stood still.  
And the Guards of the Void resheathed their swords, for they  
heard the Command:  
"Shall I that have suffered the Children to come to Me hold  
them against their will?"

DEFINITIVE EDITION

MERROW DOWN

*(Just So Stories)*

I

THERE runs a road by Merrow Down—  
A grassy track to-day it is—  
An hour out of Guildford town,  
Above the river Wey it is.

Here, when they heard the horse-bells ring,  
The ancient Britons dressed and rode  
To watch the dark Phœnicians bring  
Their goods along the Western Road.

Yes, here, or hereabouts, they met  
To hold their racial talks and such—  
To barter beads for Whitby jet,  
And tin for gay shell torques and such.

But long and long before that time  
(When bison used to roam on it)  
Did Taffy and her Daddy climb  
That Down, and had their home on it.

Then beavers built in Broadstonebrook  
And made a swamp where Bramley stands;  
And bears from Shere would come and look  
For Taffimai where Shamley stands.

The Wey, that Taffy called Wagai,  
Was more than six times bigger then;  
And all the Tribe of Tegumai  
They cut a noble figure then!

II

Of all the Tribe of Tegumai  
Who cut that figure, none remain,—  
On Merrow Down the cuckoos cry—  
The silence and the sun remain.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

But as the faithful years return  
And hearts unwounded sing again,  
Comes Taffy dancing through the fern  
To lead the Surrey spring again.

Her brows are bound with bracken-fronds,  
And golden elf-locks fly above;  
Her eyes are bright as diamonds  
And bluer than the sky above.

In mocassins and deer-skin cloak,  
Unfearing, free and fair she flits,  
And lights her little damp-wood smoke  
To show her Daddy where she flits.

For far—oh, very far behind,  
So far she cannot call to him,  
Comes Tegumai alone to find  
The daughter that was all to him!

TO JAMES WHITCOMB RILEY

1890

*(On receiving a copy of his "Rhymes for Children")*

YOUR trail runs to the westward,  
And mine to my own place;  
There is water between our lodges,  
And I have not seen your face.

But since I have read your verses  
'Tis easy to guess the rest,—  
Because in the hearts of the children  
There is neither East nor West.

Born to a thousand fortunes  
Of good or evil hap,  
Once they were kings together,  
Throned in a mother's lap.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Surely they know that secret—  
Yellow and black and white—  
When they meet as kings together  
In innocent dreams at night.

By a moon they all can play with—  
Grubby and grimed and unshod,  
Very happy together,  
And very near to God.

Your trail runs to the westward,  
And mine to my own place:  
There is water between our lodges,  
And you cannot see my face.—

And that is well—for crying  
Should neither be written nor seen,  
But if I call you Smoke-in-the-Eyes,  
I know you will know what I mean.

### OLD MOTHER LAIDINWOOL

*(Enlarged from Old Song)*

OLD Mother Laidinwool had nigh twelve months been  
dead.  
She heard the hops was doing well, an' so popped up her  
head,  
For said she: "The lads I've picked with when I was young  
and fair,  
They're bound to be at hopping and I'm bound to meet 'em  
there!"

*Let me up and go  
Back to the work I know, Lord!  
Back to the work I know, Lord!  
For it's dark where I lie down, My Lord!  
An' it's dark where I lie down!*

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Old Mother Laidinwool, she give her bones a shake,  
An' trotted down the churchyard-path as fast as she could  
make.  
She met the Parson walking, but she says to him, says  
she:—  
“ Oh, don't let no one trouble for a poor old ghost like  
me! ”

’Twas all a warm September an’ the hops had flourished  
grand.  
She saw the folks get into ’em with stockin’s on their hands;  
An’ none of ’em was foreigners but all which she had known,  
And old Mother Laidinwool she blessed ’em every one.

She saw her daughters picking an’ their childern them-  
beside,  
An’ she moved among the babies an’ she stilled ’em when  
they cried.  
She saw their clothes was bought, not begged, an’ they was  
clean an’ fat,  
An’ Old Mother Laidinwool she thanked the Lord for that.

Old Mother Laidinwool she waited on all day  
Until it come too dark to see an’ people went away—  
Until it come too dark to see an’ lights began to show,  
An’ old Mother Laidinwool she hadn’t where to go.

Old Mother Laidinwool she give her bones a shake,  
An’ trotted back to churchyard-mould as fast as she could  
make.  
She went where she was bidden to an’ there laid down her  
ghost, . . .  
An’ the Lord have mercy on you in the Day you need it  
most!

*Let me in again,  
Out of the wet an’ rain, Lord!  
Out of the wet an’ rain, Lord!  
For it’s best as You shall say, My Lord!  
An’ it’s best as You shall say!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE LAND

("Friendly Brook"—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

WHEN Julius Fabricius, Sub-Prefect of the Weald,  
In the days of Diocletian owned our Lower River-field,  
He called to him Hobdenius—a Briton of the Clay,  
Saying: "What about that River-piece for layin' in to hay?"

And the aged Hobden answered: "I remember as a lad  
My father told your father that she wanted dreenin' bad.  
An' the more that you neeglect her the less you'll get her  
clean.

Have it *jest* as you've a mind to, but, if I was you, I'd dreene."

So they drained it long and crossways in the lavish Roman  
style—

Still we find among the river-drift their flakes of ancient tile,  
And in drouthy middle August, when the bones of meadows  
show,

We can trace the lines they followed sixteen hundred years  
ago.

Then Julius Fabricius died as even Prefects do,  
And after certain centuries, Imperial Rome died too.  
Then did robbers enter Britain from across the Northern  
main

And our Lower River-field was won by Ogier the Dane.

Well could Ogier work his war-boat—well could Ogier wield  
his brand—

Much he knew of foaming waters—not so much of farming  
land.

So he called to him a Hobden of the old unaltered blood,  
Saying: "What about that River-piece; she doesn't look no  
good?"

And that aged Hobden answered: "'Tain't for *me* to interfere,  
But I've known that bit o' meadow now for five and fifty year.  
Have it *jest* as you've a mind to, but I've proved it time on  
time,

If you want to change her nature you have *got* to give her  
lime!"



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Ogier sent his wains to Lewes, twenty hours' solemn walk,  
And drew back great abundance of the cool, grey, healing  
chalk.  
And old Hobden spread it broadcast, never heeding what was  
in 't.—  
Which is why in cleaning ditches, now and then we find a  
flint.

Ogier died. His sons grew English—Anglo-Saxon was their  
name—  
Till out of blossomed Normandy another pirate came;  
For Duke William conquered England and divided with his  
men,  
And our Lower River-field he gave to William of Warenne.

But the Brook (you know her habit) rose one rainy autumn  
night  
And tore down sodden flitches of the bank to left and  
right.  
So, said William to his Bailiff as they rode their dripping  
rounds:  
“Hob, what about that River-bit—the Brook's got up no  
bounds?”

And that aged Hobden answered: “’Tain't my business to  
advise,  
But ye might ha' known 'twould happen from the way the  
valley lies.  
Where ye can't hold back the water you must try and save  
the sile.  
Hev it jest as you've a *mind* to, but, if I was you, I'd spile!”

They spiled along the water-course with trunks of willow-  
trees,  
And planks of elms behind 'em and immortal oaken knees.  
And when the spates of Autumn whirl the gravel-beds  
away  
You can see their faithful fragments, iron-hard in iron  
clay.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Georgii Quinti Anno Sexto*, I, who own the River-field,  
Am fortified with title-deeds, attested, signed and sealed,  
Guaranteeing me, my assigns, my executors and heirs  
All sorts of powers and profits which—are neither mine nor  
theirs.

I have rights of chase and warren, as my dignity requires.  
I can fish—but Hobden tickles. I can shoot—but Hobden  
wires.  
I repair, but he reopens, certain gaps which, men allege,  
Have been used by every Hobden since a Hobden swapped  
a hedge.

Shall I dog his morning progress o'er the track-betraying  
dew?  
Demand his dinner-basket into which my pheasant flew?  
Confiscate his evening faggot under which my conies ran,  
And summons him to judgment? I would sooner summons  
Pan.

His dead are in the churchyard—thirty generations laid.  
Their names were old in history when Domesday Book was  
made;  
And the passion and the piety and prowess of his line  
Have seeded, rooted, fruited in some land the Law calls  
mine.

Not for any beast that burrows, not for any bird that  
flies,  
Would I lose his large sound counsel, miss his keen amending  
eyes.  
He is bailiff, woodman, wheelwright, field-surveyor, engineer,  
And if flagrantly a poacher—'tain't for me to interfere.

"Hob, what about that River-bit?" I turn to him again,  
With Fabricius and Ogier and William of Warene.  
"Hev it jest as you've a mind to, *but*"—and here he takes  
command.  
For whoever pays the taxes old Mus' Hobden owns the land.

JUST SO VERSES

WHEN the cabin port-holes are dark and green  
 Because of the seas outside;  
 When the ship goes *wop* (with a wiggle between)  
 And the steward falls into the soup-tureen,  
 And the trunks begin to slide;  
 When Nursey lies on the floor in a heap,  
 'And Mummy tells you to let her sleep,  
 And you aren't waked or washed or dressed,  
 Why, then you will know (if you haven't guessed)  
 You're "Fifty North and Forty West!"  
*How the Whale Got his Throat.*

The Camel's hump is an ugly lump  
 Which well you may see at the Zoo;  
 But uglier yet is the hump we get  
 From having too little to do.

Kiddies and grown-ups too-oo-oo,  
 If we haven't enough to do-oo-oo,  
 We get the hump—  
 Cameelious hump—  
 The hump that is black and blue!

We climb out of bed with a frouzly head,  
 And a snarly-yarly voice.  
 We shiver and scowl and we grunt and we growl  
 At our bath and our boots and our toys;

And there ought to be a corner for me  
 (And I know there is one for you)  
 When we get the hump—  
 Cameelious hump—  
 The hump that is black and blue!

The cure for this ill is not to sit still,  
 Or frowst with a book by the fire;  
 But to take a large hoe and a shovel also,  
 And dig till you gently perspire;

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And then you will find that the sun and the wind,  
And the Djinn of the Garden too,  
    Have lifted the hump—  
    The horrible hump—  
The hump that is black and blue!

I get it as well as you-oo-oo—  
If I haven't enough to do-oo-oo!  
    We all get hump—  
    Cameelious hump—  
Kiddies and grown-ups too!  
                    *How the Camel Got his Hump.*

I am the Most Wise Baviaan, saying in most wise tones,  
“ Let us melt into the landscape—just us two by our lones.”  
People have come—in a carriage—calling. But Mummy is  
there. . . .

Yes, I can go if you take me—Nurse says *she* don't care.  
Let's go up to the pig-styes and sit on the farmyard rails!  
Let's say things to the bunnies, and watch 'em skitter their  
tails!

Let's—oh, *anything*, daddy, so long as it's you and me,  
And going truly exploring, and not being in till tea!  
Here's your boots (I've brought 'em), and here's your cap and  
stick,  
And here's your pipe and tobacco. Oh, come along out of it  
—quick!

*How the Leopard Got his Spots.*

I keep six honest serving-men  
    (They taught me all I knew);  
Their names are What and Why and When  
    And How and Where and Who.  
I send them over land and sea,  
    I send them east and west;  
But after they have worked for me,  
    I give them all a rest.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I let them rest from nine till five,  
For I am busy then,  
As well as breakfast, lunch, and tea,  
For they are hungry men.  
But different folk have different views.  
I know a person small—  
She keeps ten million serving-men,  
Who get no rest at all!

She sends 'em abroad on her own affairs,  
From the second she opens her eyes—  
One million Hows, two million Wheres,  
And seven million Whys!

*The Elephant's Child.*

This is the mouth-filling song of the race that was run by a  
Boomer.

Run in a single burst—only event of its kind—  
Started by Big God Nqong from Warrigaborrigarooma,  
Old Man Kangaroo first, Yellow-Dog Dingo behind.

Kangaroo bounded away, his back-legs working like pistons—  
Bounded from morning till dark, twenty-five feet at a bound.  
Yellow-Dog Dingo lay like a yellow cloud in the distance—  
Much too busy to bark. My! but they covered the ground!

Nobody knows where they went, or followed the track that  
they flew in,

For that Continent hadn't been given a name.  
They ran thirty degrees, from Torres Straits to the Leeuwin  
(Look at the Atlas, please), then they ran back as they came.

S'posing you could trot from Adelaide to the Pacific,  
For an afternoon's run—half what these gentlemen did—  
You would feel rather hot, but your legs would develop  
terrific—

Yes, my importunate son, you'd be a Marvellous Kid!

*The Sing-Song of Old Man Kangaroo.*

I've never sailed the Amazon,  
I've never reached Brazil;  
But the *Don* and *Magdalena*,  
They can go there when they will!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Yes, weekly from Southampton,  
Great steamers, white and gold,  
Go rolling down to Rio  
(Roll down—roll down to Rio!).  
And I'd like to roll to Rio  
Some day before I'm old!

I've never seen a Jaguar,  
Nor yet an Armadill-  
o dilloing in his armour,  
And I s'pose I never will,

Unless I go to Rio  
These wonders to behold—  
Roll down—roll down to Rio—  
Roll really down to Rio!  
Oh, I'd love to roll to Rio  
Some day before I'm old!  
*The Beginning of the Armadilloes.*

China-going P. & O.'s  
Pass Pau Amma's playground close,  
And his Pusat Tasek lies  
Near the track of most B.I.'s.  
N.Y.K. and N.D.L.  
Know Pau Amma's home as well  
As the Fisher of the Sea knows  
"Bens," M.M.'s and Rubattinos.  
But (and this is rather queer)  
A.T.L.'s can *not* come here;  
O. and O. and D.O.A.  
Must go round another way.  
Orient, Anchor, Bibby, Hall,  
Never go that way at all.  
U.C.S. would have a fit  
If it found itself on it.  
And if "Beavers" took their cargoes  
To Penang instead of Lagos,  
Or a fat Shaw-Savill bore  
Passengers to Singapore,  
Or a White Star were to try a  
Little trip to Sourabaya,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Or a B.S.A. went on  
Past Natal to Cheribon,  
Then great Mr. Lloyds would come  
With a wire and drag them home!

You'll know what my riddle means  
When you've eaten mangosteens.

*The Crab that Played with the Sea.*

Pussy can sit by the fire and sing,  
Pussy can climb a tree,  
Or play with a silly old cork and string  
To 'muse herself, not me.  
But *I* like *Binkie* my dog, because  
He knows how to behave;  
So, *Binkie's* the same as the First Friend was,  
And I am the Man in the Cave!

Pussy will play Man-Friday till  
It's time to wet her paw  
And make her walk on the window-sill  
(For the footprint Crusoe saw);  
Then she fluffles her tail and mews,  
And scratches and won't attend.  
But *Binkie* will play whatever I choose,  
And he is my true First Friend!

Pussy will rub my knees with her head  
Pretending she loves me hard;  
But the very minute I go to my bed  
Pussy runs out in the yard,  
And there she stays till the morning-light;  
So I know it is only pretend;  
But *Binkie*, he snores at my feet all night,  
And he is my Firstest Friend!

*The Cat that Walked by Himself.*

This Uninhabited Island  
Is near Cape Gardafui;  
But it's hot—too hot—off Suez  
For the likes of you and me  
Ever to go in a P. & O.  
To call on the Cake Parsee.

*How the Rhinoceros got his Skin.*

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

There was never a Queen like Balkis,  
From here to the wide world's end;  
But Balkis talked to a butterfly  
As you would talk to a friend.

There was never a King like Solomon,  
Not since the world began;  
But Solomon talked to a butterfly  
As a man would talk to a man.

*She* was Queen of Sabæa—  
And *he* was Asia's Lord—  
But they both of 'em talked to butterflies  
When they took their walks abroad!  
*The Butterfly that Stamped.*

---

## THE LOOKING-GLASS

### A Country Dance

*(Enlarged from " Rewards and Fairies ")*

**Q**UEEN BESS was Harry's daughter. Stand forward  
partners all!  
In ruff and stomacher and gown  
She danced King Philip down-a-down,  
And left her shoe to show 'twas true—  
(The very tune I'm playing you)  
In Norgem at Brickwall!<sup>1</sup>

The Queen was in her chamber, and she was middling old.  
Her petticoat was satin, and her stomacher was gold.  
Backwards and forwards and sideways did she pass,  
Making up her mind to face the cruel looking-glass.  
The cruel looking-glass that will never show a lass  
As comely or as kindly or as young as what she was!

*Queen Bess was Harry's daughter. Now hand your partners  
all!*

<sup>1</sup> A pair of Queen Elizabeth's shoes are still at Brickwall House, Northiam, Sussex.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

The Queen was in her chamber, a-combing of her hair.  
There came Queen Mary's spirit and It stood behind her  
chair,  
Singing "Backwards and forwards and sideways may you  
pass,  
But I will stand behind you till you face the looking-glass.  
The cruel looking-glass that will never show a lass  
As lovely or unlucky or as lonely as I was!"

*Queen Bess was Harry's daughter. Now turn your partners  
all!*

The Queen was in her chamber, a-weeping very sore,  
There came Lord Leicester's spirit and It scratched upon the  
door,  
Singing "Backwards and forwards and sideways may you  
pass,  
But I will walk beside you till you face the looking-glass.  
The cruel looking-glass that will never show a lass,  
As hard and unforgiving or as wicked as you was!"

*Queen Bess was Harry's daughter. Now kiss your partners  
all!*

The Queen was in her chamber, her sins were on her head.  
She looked the spirits up and down and statelily she said:—  
"Backwards and forwards and sideways though I've been,  
Yet I am Harry's daughter and I am England's Queen!"  
And she faced the looking-glass (and whatever else there was)  
And she saw her day was over and she saw her beauty pass  
In the cruel looking-glass, that can always hurt a lass  
More hard than any ghost there is or any man there was!

### THE QUEEN'S MEN

("Gloriana"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

V ALOUR and Innocence  
Have latterly gone hence  
To certain death by certain shame attended.  
Envy—ah! even to tears!—  
The fortune of their years  
Which, though so few, yet so divinely ended.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Scarce had they lifted up  
Life's full and fiery cup,  
Than they had set it down untouched before them.  
Before their day arose  
They beckoned it to close—  
Close in confusion and destruction o'er them.

They did not stay to ask  
What prize should crown their task—  
Well sure that prize was such as no man strives for;  
But passed into eclipse,  
Her kiss upon their lips—  
Even Belphœbe's, whom they gave their lives for!

### A PAGEANT OF ELIZABETH

(Written for "*The Pageant of Parliament*," 1934)

LIKE Princes crowned they bore them—  
Like Demi-Gods they wrought,  
When the New World lay before them  
In headlong fact and thought.  
Fate and their foemen proved them  
Above all meed of praise,  
And Gloriana loved them,  
And Shakespeare wrote them plays!

Now Valour, Youth, and Life's delight break forth  
In flames of wondrous deed, and thought sublime—  
Lightly to mould new worlds or lightly loose  
Words that shall shake and shape all after-time!

Giants with giants, wits with wits engage,  
And England—England—England takes the breath  
Of morning, body and soul, till the great Age  
Fulfil in one great chord:—Elizabeth!

### THE CITY OF SLEEP

("The Brushwood Boy"—*The Day's Work*)

OVER the edge of the purple down,  
Where the single lamplight gleams,  
Know ye the road to the Merciful Town  
That is hard by the Sea of Dreams—

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Where the poor may lay their wrongs away,  
And the sick may forget to weep?  
But we—pity us! Oh, pity us!  
We wakeful; ah, pity us!—  
We must go back with Policeman Day—  
Back from the City of Sleep!

Weary they turn from the scroll and crown,  
Fetter and prayer and plough—  
They that go up to the Merciful Town,  
For her gates are closing now.  
It is their right in the Baths of Night  
Body and soul to steep,  
But we—pity us! ah, pity us!  
We wakeful; oh, pity us!—  
We must go back with Policeman Day—  
Back from the City of Sleep!

Over the edge of the purple down,  
Ere the tender dreams begin,  
Look—we may look—at the Merciful Town,  
But we may not enter in!  
Outcasts all, from her guarded wall  
Back to our watch we creep:  
We—pity us! ah, pity us!  
We wakeful; ah, pity us!—  
We that go back with Policeman Day—  
Back from the City of Sleep!

“HELEN ALL ALONE”

(“In the Same Boat”—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

THERE was darkness under Heaven  
For an hour's space—  
Darkness that we knew was given  
Us for special grace.  
Sun and moon and stars were hid,  
God had left His Throne,  
When Helen came to me, she did,  
Helen all alone!

Side by side (because our fate  
Damned us ere our birth)

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

We stole out of Limbo Gate  
Looking for the Earth.  
Hand in pulling hand amid  
Fear no dreams have known,  
Helen ran with me, she did,  
Helen all alone!

When the Horror passing speech  
Hunted us along,  
Each laid hold on each, and each  
Found the other strong.  
In the teeth of Things forbid  
And Reason overthrown,  
Helen stood by me, she did,  
Helen all alone!

When, at last, we heard those Fires  
Dull and die away,  
When, at last, our linked desires  
Dragged us up to day;  
When, at last, our souls were rid  
Of what that Night had shown,  
Helen passed from me, she did,  
Helen all alone!

Let her go and find a mate,  
As I will find a bride,  
Knowing naught of Limbo Gate  
Or Who are penned inside.  
There is knowledge God forbid  
More than one should own.  
So Helen went from me, she did,  
Oh, my soul, be glad she did!  
Helen all alone!

### THE WIDOWER

FOR a season there must be pain—  
For a little, little space  
I shall lose the sight of her face,  
Take back the old life again  
While She is at rest in her place.

For a season this pain must endure,  
For a little, little while

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

I shall sigh more often than smile  
Till Time shall work me a cure,  
And the pitiful days beguile.

For that season we must be apart,  
For a little length of years,  
Till my life's last hour nears,  
And, above the beat of my heart,  
I hear Her voice in my ears.

But I shall not understand—  
Being set on some later love,  
Shall not know her for whom I strove,  
Till she reach me forth her hand,  
Saying, "Who but I have the right?"  
And out of a troubled night  
Shall draw me safe to the land.

THE PRAYER OF MIRIAM COHEN

*(Enlarged from "Many Inventions")*

FROM the wheel and the drift of Things  
Deliver us, Good Lord,  
And we will face the wrath of Kings,  
The faggot and the sword!

Lay not Thy Works before our eyes  
Nor vex us with Thy Wars,  
Lest we should feel the straining skies  
O'ertrod by trampling stars.

Hold us secure behind the gates  
Of saving flesh and bone,  
Lest we should dream what Dream awaits  
The Soul escaped alone.

Thy Path, Thy Purposes conceal  
From our beleaguered realm,  
Lest any shattering whisper steal  
Upon us and o'erwhelm.

A veil 'twixt us and Thee, Good Lord,  
A veil 'twixt us and Thee—  
Lest we should hear too clear, too clear,  
And unto madness see!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE COMFORTERS

("The Dog Hervey"—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

UNTIL thy feet have trod the Road  
Advise not wayside folk,  
Nor till thy back has borne the Load  
Break in upon the broke.

Chase not with undesired largesse  
Of sympathy the heart  
Which, knowing her own bitterness,  
Presumes to dwell apart.

Employ not that glad hand to raise  
The God-forgotten head  
To Heaven and all the neighbours' gaze—  
Cover thy mouth instead.

The quivering chin, the bitten lip,  
The cold and sweating brow,  
Later may yearn for fellowship—  
Not now, you ass, not now!

Time, not thy ne'er so timely speech,  
Life, not thy views thereon,  
Shall furnish or deny to each  
His consolation.

Or, if impelled to interfere,  
Exhort, uplift, advise,  
Lend not a base, betraying ear  
To all the victim's cries.

Only the Lord can understand,  
When those first pangs begin,  
How much is reflex action and  
How much is really sin.

E'en from good words thyself refrain,  
And tremblingly admit  
There is no anodyne for pain  
Except the shock of it.

So, when thine own dark hour shall fall,  
Unchallenged canst thou say:  
" I never worried *you* at all,  
For God's sake go away! "

# THE SONG OF THE LITTLE HUNTER

(" The King's Ankus "—*The Second Jungle Book*)

ERE Mor the Peacock flutters, ere the Monkey People  
cry,  
Ere Chil the Kite swoops down a furlong sheer,  
Through the Jungle very softly flits a shadow and a sigh—  
He is Fear, O Little Hunter, he is Fear!  
Very softly down the glade runs a waiting, watching shade,  
And the whisper spreads and widens far and near.  
And the sweat is on thy brow, for he passes even now—  
He is Fear, O Little Hunter, he is Fear!

Ere the moon has climbed the mountain, ere the rocks are  
ribbed with light,  
When the downward-dipping trails are dank and drear,  
Comes a breathing hard behind thee—*snuffle-snuffle* through  
the night—  
It is Fear, O Little Hunter, it is Fear!  
On thy knees and draw the bow; bid the shrilling arrow go;  
In the empty, mocking thicket plunge the spear!  
But thy hands are loosed and weak, and the blood has left  
thy cheek—  
It is Fear, O Little Hunter, it is Fear!

When the heat-cloud sucks the tempest, when the slivered  
pine-trees fall,  
When the blinding, blaring rain-squalls lash and veer,  
Through the war-gongs of the thunder rings a voice more  
loud than all—  
It is Fear, O Little Hunter, it is Fear!  
Now the spates are banked and deep; now the footless  
boulders leap—  
Now the lightning shows each littlest leaf-rib clear—  
But thy throat is shut and dried, and thy heart against thy side  
Hammers: Fear, O Little Hunter—this is Fear!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

GOW'S WATCH

(*Enlarged from various sources including "The Prophet and the Country" and "A Madonna of the Trenches"—Debits and Credits*)

ACT II. SCENE 2

*The Pavilion in the Gardens. Enter FERDINAND and the KING*

FERDINAND. Your tiercel's too long at hack, Sir. He's  
no eyass

But a passage-hawk that footed ere we caught him,  
Dangerously free o' the air. 'Faith were he mine  
(As mine's the glove he binds to for his tirings)  
I'd fly him with a make-hawk. He's in yarak—  
Plumed to the very point. So manned, so weathered!  
Give him the firmament God made him for  
And what shall take the air of him?

THE KING. A young wing yet.  
Bold—overbold on the perch, but think you, Ferdinand,  
He can endure the raw skies yonder? Cozen  
Advantage out of the teeth of the hurricane?  
Choose his own mate against the lammer-geier?  
Ride out a night-long tempest, hold his pitch  
Between the lightning and the cloud it leaps from,  
Never too pressed to kill?

FERDINAND. I'll answer for him.  
Bating all parable, I know the Prince.  
There's a bleak devil in the young, my Lord;  
God put it there to save 'em from their elders  
And break their fathers' hearts, but bear them scatheless  
Through mire and thorns and blood if need be. 'Think  
What our prime saw! Such glory, such achievements  
As now our children, wondering at, examine  
Themselves to see if they shall hardly equal.  
But what cared we while we wrought the wonders? Nothing!  
The rampant deed contented.

THE KING. Little enough, God knows! But after-  
wards—after—  
Then comes the reckoning. I would save him that.



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

FERDINAND. Save him dry scars that ache of winter  
                  nights,  
Worn-out self-pity and as much of knowledge  
As makes old men fear judgment? Then loose him—loose  
                  him  
A' God's name loose him to adventure early!  
And trust some random pike, or half-backed horse,  
Besides what's caught in Italy, to save him.

THE KING. I know. I know. And yet. . . . What  
                  stirs in the garden?

*Enter GOW and a GARDENER bearing the Prince's body*

FERDINAND. (Gods give me patience!) Gow and a gar-  
                  dener  
Bearing some load along in the dusk to the dunghill.  
Nay—a dead branch— But as I said, the Prince——

THE KING. They've laid it down. Strange they should  
                  work so late.

Gow (*setting down the body*). Hearn, you unsanctified fool,  
while I set out our story. We found it, this side the North  
Park wall which it had climbed to pluck nectarines from the  
alley. Hearn again! There was a nectarine in its hand when  
we found it, and the naughty brick that slipped from the  
coping beneath its foot and so caused its death, lies now  
under the wall for the King to see.

THE KING (*above*). The King to see! Why should he?  
Who's the man?

Gow. That is your tale. Swerve from it by so much as  
the breadth of my dagger and here's your instant reward.  
You heard not, saw not, and by the Horns of ninefold-cuck-  
olded Jupiter you thought not nor dreamed not anything  
more or other!

THE KING. Ninefold-cuckolded Jupiter. That's a rare  
oath! Shall we look closer?

DEFINITIVE EDITION

FERDINAND. Not yet, my Lord! (I cannot hear him breathe.)

GARDENER. The North Park wall? It was so. Plucking nectarines. It shall be. But how shall I say if any ask why our Lady the Queen——

GOW (*stabs him*). Thus! Hie after the Prince and tell him y'are the first fruits of his nectarine tree. Bleed there behind the laurels.

THE KING. Why did Gow buffet the clown? What said he? I'll go look.

FERDINAND (*above*). Save yourself! It is the King!

*Enter the KING and FERDINAND to GOW*

GOW. God save you! This was the Prince!

THE KING. The Prince! Not a dead branch? (*Uncovers the face.*)  
My flesh and blood! My son! my son! my son!

FERDINAND (*to GOW*). I had feared something of this. And that fool yonder?

GOW. Dead, or as good. He cannot speak.

FERDINAND. Better so.

THE KING. "Loosed to adventure early!" Tell the tale.

GOW. Saddest truth alack! I came upon him not a half hour since, fallen from the North Park wall over against the Deerpark side—dead—dead!—a nectarine in his hand that the dear lad must have climbed for, and plucked the very instant, look you, that a brick slipped on the coping. 'Tis there now. So I lifted him, but his neck was as you see—and already cold.

THE KING. Oh, very cold. But why should he have

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

troubled to climb? He was free of all the fruit in my garden,  
God knows! . . . What, Gow?

Gow. Surely, God knows!

THE KING. A lad's trick. But I love him the better  
for it. . . . True, he's past loving. . . . And now we must  
tell our Queen. What a coil at the day's end! She'll grieve  
for him. Not as I shall, Ferdinand, but as youth for youth.  
They were much of the same age. Playmate for playmate.  
See, he wears her colours. That is the knot she gave him  
last—last. . . . Oh, God! When was yesterday?

FERDINAND. Come in! Come in, my Lord. There's a  
dew falling.

THE KING. He'll take no harm of it. I'll follow presently. . . .  
He's all his mother's now and none of mine—  
Her very face on the bride-pillow. Yet I tricked her.  
But that was later—and she never guessed.  
I do not think he sinned much—he's too young—  
Much the same age as my Queen. God must not judge him  
Too hardly for such slips as youth may fall in.  
But I'll entreat that Throne.  
(*Prays by the body.*)

GOW. The Heavens hold up still. Earth opens not and  
this dew's mere water. What shall a man think of it all?  
(*To GARDENER.*) Not dead yet, sirrah? I bade you follow  
the Prince. Despatch!

GARDENER. Some kind soul pluck out the dagger. Why  
did you slay me? I'd done no wrong. I'd ha' kept it secret  
till my dying day. But not now—not now! I'm dying.  
The Prince fell from the Queen's chamber window. I saw  
it in the nut-alley. He was——

FERDINAND. But what made you in the nut-alley at that  
hour?

GARDENER. No wrong. No more than another man's  
wife. Jocasta of the still-room. She'd kissed me good—

DEFINITIVE EDITION

night too; but that's over with the rest. . . . I've stumbled on the Prince's beastly loves, and I pay for all. Let me pass!

Gow. Count it your fortune, honest man. You would have revealed it to your woman at the next meeting. You fleshmongers are all one feather. (*Plucks out the dagger.*) Go in peace and lay your death to Fortune's door. He's sped—thank Fortune!

FERDINAND. Who knows not Fortune, glutted on easy  
                  thrones,  
Stealing from feasts as rare to coney-catch  
Privily in the hedgerows for a clown,  
With that same cruel-lustful hand and eye,  
Those nails and wedges, that one hammer and lead  
And the very gerb of long-stored lightnings loosed  
Yesterday 'gainst some King!

THE KING. I have pursued with prayers where my heart  
                  warns me  
My soul shall overtake—

*Enter the QUEEN*

THE KING. Look not! Wait till I tell you, dearest. . . .  
Air! . . .  
“Loosed to adventure early” . . . I go late. (*Dies.*)

Gow. So! God hath cut off the Prince in his pleasures.  
Gow, to save the King, hath silenced one poor fool who knew  
how it befell, and, now the King's dead, 'needs only that  
the Queen should kill Gow and all's safe for her this side o'  
the Judgment. . . . Señor Ferdinand, the wind's easterly.  
I'm for the road.

FERDINAND. My horse is at the gate. God speed you.  
Whither?

Gow. To the Duke, if the Queen does not lay hands on  
me before. However it goes, I charge you bear witness,  
Señor Ferdinand, I served the old King faithfully. To the  
death, Señor Ferdinand—to the death!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

ACT IV. SCENE 4

*The Head of the Bargi Pass—in snow. GOW and FERDINAND  
with their Captains*

GOW (*to FERDINAND*). The Queen's host would be delivered me to-day—but that these Mountain Men have sent battalia to hold the Pass. They're shod, helmed and torqued with soft gold. For the rest, naked. By no argument can I persuade 'em their gilt carcasses against my bombards avail not. What's to do, Fox?

FERDINAND. Fatherless folk go furthest. These loud  
pagans  
Are doubly fatherless. Consider; they came  
Over the passes, out of all man's world—  
Adullamites, unable to endure  
Its ancient pinch and belly-ache—full of revenges,  
Or wilfully forgetful. The land they found  
Was manless—her raw airs uncloven by speech,  
Earth without wheel-track, hoof-mark, hearth or plough-  
share  
Since God created; nor even a cave where men,  
When night was a new thing, had hid themselves.

GOW. Excellent. Do I fight them, or let go?

FERDINAND. Unused earth, air and water for their spoil,  
And none to make comparison of their deeds.  
No unbribed dead to judge, accuse 'em or comfort—  
Their present all their future and their past.  
What should they know of reason—litters of folk—  
New whelped to emptiness?

GOW. Nothing. They bar my path.

FERDINAND. Turn it, then—turn it.  
Give them their triumph. They'll be wiser anon—  
Some thirty generations hence.

GOW. Amen! I'm no disposed murderer. (*To the Mountain Men*) Most magnificent Señors? Lords of all

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Suns, Moons, Firmaments—Sole Architects of Yourselves and this present Universe? Yon Philosopher in the hairy cloak bids me wait only a thousand years, till ye've sorted yourselves more to the likeness of mankind.

THE PRIEST OF THE MOUNTAIN MEN. There are none beside ourselves to lead the world!

GOW. That is common knowledge. I supplicate you, allow us the head of the Pass, that we may better reach the Queen's host yonder. Ye will not? Why?

THE PRIEST. Because it is our will. There is none other law for all the earth.

GOW. (That a few feet of snow on a nest of rocky mountains should have hatched this dream-people!) (*To* PRIEST) Ye have reason in nature—all you've known of it. . . . But—a thousand years—I fear they will not suffice.

THE PRIEST. Go you back! We hold the passes into and out of the world. Do you defy us?

FERDINAND. (*To* Gow) I warned you. There's none like them under Heaven. Say it!

GOW. Defy your puissance, Señors? Not I. We'll have our bombards away, all, by noon; and our poor hosts with them. And you, Señors, shall have your triumph upon us.

FERDINAND. Ah! That touches! Let them shout and blow their horns half a day and they'll not think of aught else!

GOW. Fall to your riots then! Señors, ye have won. We'll leave you the head of the Pass—for thirty generations. (*Loudly*) The mules to the bombards and away!

FERDINAND. Most admirably you spoke to my poor text.

GOW. Maybe the better, Fox, because the discourse has drawn them to the head of the Pass. Meantime, our main body has taken the lower road, with all the Artillery.

FERDINAND. Had you no bombards here, then?

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Gow. None, Innocence, at all! None, except your talk and theirs!

ACT V. SCENE 3

*After the Battle. The PRINCESS by the Standard on the Ravelin.*

*Enter Gow, with the Crown of the Kingdom.*

Gow. Here's earnest of the Queen's submission. This by her last herald—and in haste.

PRINCESS. 'Twas ours already. Where is the woman?

Gow. 'Fled with her horse. They broke at dawn. Noon has not struck, and you're Queen questionless.

PRINCESS. By you—through you. How shall I honour *you*?

Gow. Me? But for what?

PRINCESS. For all—all—all—  
Since the realm sunk beneath us! Hear him! "For what?"

Your body 'twixt my bosom and her knife,  
Your lips on the cup she proffered for my death;  
Your one cloak over me, that night in the snows,  
We held the Pass at Bargi. Every hour  
New strengths, to this most unbelievable last.  
"Honour him?" I will honour—will honour you— . . .  
'Tis at your choice.

Gow. Child, mine was long ago.

*Enter FERDINAND, as from horse*

But here's one worthy honour. Welcome, Fox!

FERDINAND. And to you, Watchdog. This day clenches all.  
We've made it and seen it.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

GOW.

Is the city held?

FERDINAND. Loyally. Oh, they're drunk with loyalty  
yonder.

A virtuous mood. Your bombards helped 'em to it . . .  
But here's my word for you. The Lady Frances——

PRINCESS. I left her sick in the city. No harm, I pray.

FERDINAND. Nothing that she called harm. In truth, so little

That (to Gow) I am bidden tell you, she'll be here  
Almost as soon as I.

Gow.

## She says it?

FERDINAND.

**Writes.**

This. (*Gives him letter.*) Yester eve 'twas given me by  
the priest—  
He with her in her hour.

Gow.

So? (*Reads*) So it is.

She will be here. (To FERDINAND) And all is safe in the city?

FERDINAND. As thy long sword and my lean wits can  
make it.

You've naught to stay for. Is it the road again?

Gow. Ay. This time, not alone . . . She will be here?

PRINCESS. I am here. You have not looked at me awhile.

Gow. The rest is with you, Ferdinand . . . Then free.

PRINCESS. And at my service more than ever. I claim—  
(Our wars have taught me)—being your Queen, now, claim  
You wholly mine.

Gow. Then free . . . She will be here? A little while—

PRINCESS (*to FERDINAND*). He looks beyond, not at me.



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

FERDINAND. Weariness.  
We are not so young as once was. 'Two days' fight—  
A worthy servitor—to be allowed  
Some freedom.

PRINCESS. I have offered him all he would.

FERDINAND. He takes what he has taken.

*The Spirit of the LADY FRANCES appears to GOW*

GOW.                                  Frances!

PRINCESS.                                  Distraught!

FERDINAND. An old head-blow, maybe. He has dealt  
in them.

Gow (*to the Spirit*). What can the Grave against us,  
O my Heart,  
Comfort and light and reason in all things  
Visible and invisible—my one God?  
Thou that wast I these barren unyoked years  
Of triflings now at end! Frances!

PRINCESS. She's old.

FERDINAND. True. By most reckonings old.  
They must keep other count.

PRINCESS. He kisses his hand to the air!

FERDINAND. His ring, rather, he kisses. Yes—for sure  
—the ring.

GOW. Dear and most dear. And now—those very arms!  
(*Dies.*)

PRINCESS. Oh, look! He faints. Haste, you! Unhelm  
him! Help!

FERDINAND. Needless. No help avails against that  
poison. He is sped.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

PRINCESS. By his own hand? *This* hour? When I had offered——

FERDINAND. He had made other choice—an old, old choice,  
Ne'er swerved from, and now patently sealed in death.

PRINCESS. He called on—the Lady Frances, was it? Wherefore?

FERDINAND. Because she was his life. Forgive, my friend—(*covers Gow's face*).  
God's uttermost beyond me in all faith,  
Service and passion—that I unveil at last  
The secret. (*To the PRINCESS*) Thought—dreamed you, it was for *you*  
He poured himself—for you resoldered the Crown?  
Struck here, held there, amended, broke, built up  
His multiplied imaginings for *you*?

PRINCESS. I thought—I thought he——

FERDINAND. Looked beyond. *Her* wish  
Was the sole Law he knew. *She* did not choose  
Your House should perish. Therefore he bade it stand.  
Enough for him when she had breathed a word:  
'Twas his to make it iron, stone, or fire,  
Driving our flesh and blood before his ways  
As the wind straws. Her one face unregarded  
Waiting you with your mantle or your glove—  
That is the God whom he is gone to worship.

*Trumpets without. Enter the Prince's Heralds*

And here's the craft of Kingship begun again.  
These from the Prince of Bargi—to whose sword  
You owe such help as may, he thinks, be paid . . .  
He's equal in blood, in fortune more than peer,  
Young, most well favoured, with a heart to love—  
And two States in the balance. Do you meet him?

PRINCESS. God and my Misery! I have seen Love at last.  
What shall content me after?

THE WISHING-CAPS

*(Enlarged from "Kim")*

LIFE'S all getting and giving,  
 I've only myself to give.  
 What shall I do for a living?  
 I've only one life to live.  
 End it? I'll not find another.  
 Spend it? But how shall I best?  
 Sure the wise plan is to live like a man  
 And Luck may look after the rest!  
 Largesse! Largesse, Fortune!  
 Give or hold at your will.  
 If I've no care for Fortune,  
 Fortune must follow me still.

Bad Luck, she is never a lady  
 But the commonest wench on the street,  
 Shuffling, shabby and shady,  
 Shameless to pass or meet.  
 Walk with her once—it's a weakness!  
 Talk to her twice—it's a crime!  
 Thrust her away when she gives you "good day"  
 And the besom won't board you next time.  
 Largesse! Largesse, Fortune!  
 What is Your Ladyship's mood?  
 If I've no care for Fortune,  
 My Fortune is bound to be good!

Good Luck she is never a lady  
 But the cursedest quean alive!  
 Tricksy, wincing and jady,  
 Kittle to lead or drive.  
 Greet her—she's hailing a stranger!  
 Meet her—she's busking to leave.  
 Let her alone for a shrew to the bone,  
 And the hussy comes plucking your sleeve!  
 Largesse! Largesse, Fortune!  
 I'll neither follow nor flee.  
 If I don't run after Fortune,  
 Fortune must run after me!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"BY THE HOOF OF THE WILD GOAT"

("To be Filed for Reference"—*Plain Tales  
from the Hills*)

BY THE Hoof of the Wild Goat uptossed  
From the cliff where she lay in the Sun  
Fell the Stone  
To the Tarn where the daylight is lost,  
So she fell from the light of the Sun  
And alone!

Now the fall was ordained from the first  
With the Goat and the Cliff and the Tarn,  
But the Stone  
Knows only her life is accursed  
As she sinks from the light of the Sun  
And alone!

O Thou Who hast builded the World,  
O Thou Who hast lighted the Sun,  
O Thou Who hast darkened the Tarn,  
Judge Thou  
The sin of the Stone that was hurled  
By the goat from the light of the Sun,  
As she sinks in the mire of the Tarn,  
Even now—even now—even now!

SONG OF THE RED WAR-BOAT

(A. D. 683)

("The Conversion of St. Wilfrid"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

SHOVE off from the wharf-edge! Steady!  
Watch for a smooth! Give way!  
If she feels the lop already  
She'll stand on her head in the bay.  
It's ebb—it's dusk—it's blowing—  
The shoals are a mile of white,  
But (snatch her along!) we're going  
To find our master to-night.

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

*For we hold that in all disaster  
Of shipwreck, storm, or sword,  
A Man must stand by his Master  
When once he has pledged his word.*

Raging seas have we rowed in  
But we seldom saw them thus,  
Our master is angry with Odin—  
Odin is angry with us!  
Heavy odds have we taken,  
But never before such odds.  
The Gods know they are forsaken.  
We must risk the wrath of the Gods!

Over the crest she flies from,  
Into its hollow she drops,  
Cringes and clears her eyes from  
The wind-torn breaker-tops,  
Ere out on the shrieking shoulder  
Of a hill-high surge she drives.  
Meet her! Meet her and hold her!  
Pull for your scoundrel lives!

The thunders bellow and clamour  
The harm that they mean to do!  
There goes Thor's own Hammer  
Cracking the dark in two!  
Close! But the blow has missed her,  
Here comes the wind of the blow!  
Row or the squall'll twist her  
Broadside on to it!—*Row!*

Heark'ee, Thor of the Thunder!  
We are not here for a jest—  
For wager, warfare, or plunder,  
Or to put your power to test.  
This work is none of our wishing—  
We would house at home if we might—  
But our master is wrecked out fishing.  
We go to find him to-night.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

*For we hold that in all disaster—  
As the Gods Themselves have said—  
A Man must stand by his Master  
Till one of the two is dead.*

That is our way of thinking,  
Now you can do as you will,  
While we try to save her from sinking  
And hold her head to it still.  
Bale her and keep her moving,  
Or she'll break her back in the trough. . . .  
Who said the weather's improving,  
Or the swells are taking off?

Sodden, and chafed and aching,  
Gone in the loins and knees—  
No matter—the day is breaking,  
And there's far less weight to the seas!  
Up mast, and finish baling—  
In oars, and out with the mead—  
The rest will be two-reef sailing. . . .  
That was a night indeed!

*But we hold that in all disaster  
(And faith, we have found it true!)  
If only you stand by your Master,  
The Gods will stand by you!*

### MINE SWEEPERS

1914-18

(Sea Warfare)

**D**AWN off the Foreland—the young flood making  
Jumbled and short and steep—  
Black in the hollows and bright where it's breaking—  
Awkward water to sweep.  
“Mines reported in the fairway,  
“Warn all traffic and detain.  
“‘Sent up *Unity, Claribel, Assyrian, Stormcock, and Golden  
Gain.*”

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Noon off the Foreland—the first ebb making .  
Lumpy and strong in the bight.  
Boom after boom, and the golf-hut shaking  
And the jackdaws wild with fright!  
“ Mines located in the fairway,  
“ Boats now working up the chain,  
“ Sweepers—*Unity, Claribel, Assyrian, Stormcock, and Golden Gain.*”

Dusk off the Foreland—the last light going  
And the traffic crowding through,  
And five damned trawlers with their syreens blowing  
Heading the whole review!  
“ Sweep completed in the fairway.  
“ No more mines remain.  
“ ‘Sent back *Unity, Claribel, Assyrian, Stormcock, and Golden Gain.*”

## MORNING SONG IN THE JUNGLE

(“ Letting in the Jungle ”—*The Second Jungle Book*)

ONE moment past our bodies cast  
No shadow on the plain;  
Now clear and black they stride our track,  
And we run home again.  
In morning-hush, each rock and bush  
Stands hard, and high, and raw:  
Then give the Call: “ *Good rest to all  
That keep the Jungle Law!*”

Now horn and pelt our peoples melt  
In covert to abide;  
Now, crouched and still, to cave and hill  
Our Jungle Barons glide.  
Now, stark and plain, Man's oxen strain,  
That draw the new-yoked plough;  
Now, stripped and dread, the dawn is red  
Above the lit *talao*.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pond or lake.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Ho! Get to lair! The sun's aflame  
Behind the breathing grass:  
And creaking through the young bamboo  
The warning whispers pass.  
By day made strange, the woods we range  
With blinking eyes we scan;  
While down the skies the wild duck cries:  
    *"The Day—the Day to Man!"*

The dew is dried that drenched our hide,  
Or washed about our way;  
And where we drank, the puddled bank  
Is crisping into clay.  
The traitor Dark gives up each mark  
Of stretched or hooded claw:  
Then hear the Call: *"Good rest to all  
That keep the Jungle Law!"*

### BLUE ROSES

*(The Light that Failed)*

ROSES red and roses white  
Plucked I for my love's delight.  
She would none of all my posies—  
Bade me gather her blue roses.

Half the world I wandered through,  
Seeking where such flowers grew.  
Half the world unto my quest  
Answered me with laugh and jest.

Home I came at wintertide,  
But my silly love had died  
Seeking with her latest breath  
Roses from the arms of Death.

It may be beyond the grave  
She shall find what she would have.  
Mine was but an idle quest—  
Roses white and red are best!



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### A RIPPLE SONG

(“The Undertakers”—*The Second Jungle Book*)

ONCE a ripple came to land  
In the golden sunset burning—  
Lapped against a maiden's hand,  
By the ford returning.

*Dainty foot and gentle breast—  
Here, across, be glad and rest.  
“Maiden, wait,” the ripple saith;  
“Wait awhile, for I am Death!”*

“Where my lover calls I go—  
Shame it were to treat him coldly—  
’Twas a fish that circled so,  
Turning over boldly.”

*Dainty foot and tender heart,  
Wait the loaded ferry-cart.  
“Wait, ah, wait!” the ripple saith;  
“Maiden, wait, for I am Death!”*

“When my lover calls I haste—  
Dame Disdain was never wedded!”  
Ripple-ripple round her waist,  
Clear the current eddied.

*Foolish heart and faithful hand,  
Little feet that touched no land.  
Far away the ripple sped,  
Ripple—ripple running red!*

### BUTTERFLIES

(“‘Wireless’”—*Traffics and Discoveries*)

YES aloft, over dangerous places,  
The children follow the butterflies,  
And, in the sweat of their upturned faces,  
Slash with a net at the empty skies.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

So it goes they fall amid brambles,  
And sting their toes on the nettle-tops,  
Till, after a thousand scratches and scrambles,  
They wipe their brows and the hunting stops.

Then to quiet them comes their father  
And stills the riot of pain and grief,  
Saying, "Little ones, go and gather  
Out of my garden a cabbage-leaf.

"You will find on it whorls and clots of  
Dull grey eggs that, properly fed,  
Turn, by way of the worm, to lots of  
Glorious butterflies raised from the dead." . . .

"Heaven is beautiful, Earth is ugly,"  
The three-dimensioned preacher saith;  
So we must not look where the snail and the slug lie  
For Psyche's birth. . . . And that is our death!

### MY LADY'S LAW

*(Enlarged from "The Naulahka")*

THE Law whereby my lady moves  
Was never Law to me,  
But 'tis enough that she approves  
Whatever Law it be.

For in that Law, and by that Law,  
My constant course I'll steer;  
Not that I heed or deem it dread,  
But that she holds it dear.

Tho' Asia sent for my content  
Her richest argosies,  
Those would I spurn, and bid return,  
If that should give her ease.

With equal heart I'd watch depart  
Each spiced sail from sight;  
Sans bitterness, desiring less  
Great gear than her delight.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Though Kings made swift with many a gift  
My proven sword to hire—  
I would not go nor serve 'em so—  
Except at her desire.

With even mind, I'd put behind  
Adventure and acclaim,  
And clean give o'er, esteeming more  
Her favour than my fame.

Yet such am I, yea, such am I—  
Sore bond and freest free,  
The Law that sways my lady's ways  
Is mystery to me!

### THE NURSING SISTER

(Maternity Hospital)

(*The Naulahka*)

OUR sister sayeth such and such,  
And we must bow to her behests.  
Our sister toileth overmuch,  
Our little maid that hath no breasts.

A field untilled, a web unwove,  
A flower withheld from sun or bee,  
An alien in the Courts of Love,  
And—teacher unto such as we!

We love her, but we laugh the while,  
We laugh, but sobs are mixed with laughter;  
Our sister hath no time to smile,  
She knows not what must follow after.

Wind of the South, arise and blow,  
From beds of spice thy locks shake free;  
Breathe on her heart that she may know,  
Breathe on her eyes that she may see!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Alas! we vex her with our mirth,  
And maze her with most tender scorn,  
Who stands beside the Gates of Birth,  
Herself a child—a child unborn!

*Our sister sayeth such and such,  
And we must bow to her behests.  
Our sister toileth overmuch,  
Our little maid that hath no breasts.*

### THE LOVE SONG OF HAR DYAL

(“ Beyond the Pale ”—*Plain Tales from the Hills*)

ALONE upon the housetops to the North  
I turn and watch the lightnings in the sky—  
The glamour of thy footsteps in the North.  
*Come back to me, Beloved, or I die.*

Below my feet the still bazar is laid—  
Far, far below the weary camels lie—  
The camels and the captives of thy raid.  
*Come back to me, Beloved, or I die!*

My father's wife is old and harsh with years,  
And drudge of all my father's house am I—  
My bread is sorrow and my drink is tears.  
*Come back to me, Beloved, or I die!*

### A DEDICATION

(To “ *Soldiers Three* ”)

AND they were stronger hands than mine  
That digged the Ruby from the earth—  
More cunning brains that made it worth  
The large desire of a king,  
And stouter hearts that through the brine  
Went down the perfect Pearl to bring.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Lo, I have wrought in common clay  
Rude figures of a rough-hewn race,  
Since pearls strew not the market-place  
In this my town of banishment,  
Where with the shifting dust I play,  
And eat the bread of discontent.

Yet is there life in that I make.  
O thou who knowest, turn and see—  
As thou hast power over me  
So have I power over these,  
Because I wrought them for thy sake,  
And breathed in them mine agonies.

Small mirth was in the making—now  
I lift the cloth that cloaks the clay,  
And, wearied, at thy feet I lay  
My wares, ere I go forth to sell.  
The long bazar will praise, but thou—  
Heart of my heart—have I done well?

### MOTHER O' MINE

*(Dedication to "The Light that Failed")*

**I**F I WERE hanged on the highest hill,  
*Mother o' mine, O mother o' mine!*  
I know whose love would follow me still,  
*Mother o' mine, O mother o' mine!*

If I were drowned in the deepest sea,  
*Mother o' mine, O mother o' mine!*  
I know whose tears would come down to me,  
*Mother o' mine, O mother o' mine!*

If I were damned of body and soul,  
I know whose prayers would make me whole,  
*Mother o' mine, O mother o' mine!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE ONLY SON

(Enlarged from "Many Inventions")

SHE dropped the bar, she shot the bolt, she fed the fire  
anew,  
For she heard a whimper under the sill and a great grey paw  
came through.

The fresh flame comforted the hut and shone on the roof-  
beam,

And the Only Son lay down again and dreamed that he  
dreamed a dream.

The last ash fell from the withered log with the click of a  
falling spark,

And the Only Son woke up again, and called across the  
dark:—

"Now was I born of womankind and laid in a mother's  
breast?

For I have dreamed of a shaggy hide whereon I went to  
rest.

And was I born of womankind and laid on a father's  
arm?

For I have dreamed of clashing teeth that guarded me from  
harm.

And was I born an Only Son and did I play alone?

For I have dreamed of comrades twain that bit me to the  
bone.

And did I break the barley-cake and steep it in the tyre?

For I have dreamed of a youngling kid new-riven from the  
byre:

For I have dreamed of a midnight sky and a midnight call to  
blood

And red-mouthed shadows racing by, that thrust me from  
my food.

'Tis an hour yet and an hour yet to the rising of the  
moon,

But I can see the black roof-tree as plain as it were  
noon.

'Tis a league and a league to the Lena Falls where the troop-  
ing blackbuck go;

But I can hear the little fawn that bleats behind the doe.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

'Tis a league and a league to the Lena Falls where the crop  
and the upland meet,  
But I can smell the wet dawn-wind that wakes the sprouting  
wheat.

Unbar the door. I may not bide, but I must out and see  
If those are wolves that wait outside or my own kin to me! "

She loosed the bar, she slid the bolt, she opened the door anon,  
And a grey bitch-wolf came out of the dark and fawned on  
the Only Son!

### MOWGLI'S SONG AGAINST PEOPLE

(" Letting in the Jungle "—*The Second Jungle Book*)

I WILL let loose against you the fleet-footed vines—  
I will call in the Jungle to stamp out your lines!  
The roofs shall fade before it,  
The house-beams shall fall;  
And the *Karela*,<sup>1</sup> the bitter *Karela*,  
Shall cover it all!

In the gates of these your councils my people shall sing.  
In the doors of these your garnerers the Bat-folk shall cling;  
And the snake shall be your watchman,  
By a hearthstone unswept;  
For the *Karela*, the bitter *Karela*,  
Shall fruit where ye slept!

Ye shall not see my strikers; ye shall hear them and guess.  
By night, before the moon-rise, I will send for my cess,  
And the wolf shall be your herdsman  
By a landmark removed;  
For the *Karela*, the bitter *Karela*,  
Shall seed where ye loved!

I will reap your fields before you at the hands of a host.  
Ye shall glean behind my reapers for the bread that is lost;  
And the deer shall be your oxen  
On a headland untilled;  
For the *Karela*, the bitter *Karela*,  
Shall leaf where ye build!

<sup>1</sup> A wild melon.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

I have untied against you the club-footed vines—  
I have sent in the Jungle to swamp out your lines!  
The trees—the trees are on you!  
The house-beams shall fall;  
And the *Karela*, the bitter *Karela*,  
Shall cover you all!

### ROMULUS AND REMUS

(*Canadian*)

O H, LITTLE did the Wolf-Child care—  
When first he planned his home,  
What City should arise and bear  
The weight and state of Rome.

A shiftless, westward-wandering tramp,  
Checked by the Tiber flood,  
He reared a wall around his camp  
Of uninspired mud.

But when his brother leaped the Wall  
And mocked its height and make,  
He guessed the future of it all  
And slew him for its sake.

Swift was the blow—swift as the thought  
Which showed him in that hour  
How unbelief may bring to naught  
The early steps of Power.

Foreseeing Time's imperilled hopes  
Of Glory, Grace, and Love—  
All singers, Cæsars, artists, Popes—  
Would fail if Remus throve,

He sent his brother to the Gods,  
And, when the fit was o'er,  
Went on collecting turves and clods  
To build the Wall once more!



CHAPTER HEADINGS

THE JUNGLE BOOKS

Now Chil the Kite brings home the night  
That Mang the Bat sets free—  
The herds are shut in byre and hut,  
For loosed till dawn are we.  
This is the hour of pride and power,  
Talon and tush and claw.  
Oh, hear the call!—Good hunting all  
That keep the Jungle Law!

*Mowgli's Brothers.*

His spots are the joy of the Leopard: his horns are the  
Buffalo's pride,  
Be clean, for the strength of the hunter is known by the gloss  
of his hide.  
If ye find that the bullock can toss you, or the heavy-browed  
Sambhur can gore;  
Ye need not stop work to inform us. We knew it ten seasons  
before.  
Oppress not the cubs of the stranger, but hail them as Sister  
and Brother,  
For though they are little and fussy, it may be the Bear is  
their mother.  
"There is none like to me!" says the Cub in the pride of his  
earliest kill;  
But the Jungle is large and the Cub he is small. Let him  
think and be still.

*Kaa's Hunting.*

The stream is shrunk—the pool is dry,  
And we be comrades, thou and I;  
With fevered jowl and dusty flank  
Each jostling each along the bank;

DEFINITIVE EDITION

And, by one drouthy fear made still,  
Forgoing thought of quest or kill.  
Now 'neath his dam the fawn may see  
The lean Pack-wolf as cowed as he,  
And the tall buck, unflinching, note  
The fangs that tore his father's throat.  
*The pools are shrunk—the streams are dry,  
And we be playmates, thou and I,  
Till yonder cloud—Good Hunting!—loose  
The rain that breaks our Water Truce.  
How Fear Came.*

What of the hunting, hunter bold?  
*Brother, the watch was long and cold.*  
What of the quarry ye went to kill?  
*Brother, he crops in the jungle still.*  
Where is the power that made your pride?  
*Brother, it ebbs from my flank and side.*  
Where is the haste that ye hurry by?  
*Brother, I go to my lair to die!*  
“Tiger-Tiger!”

Veil them, cover them, wall them round—  
Blossom, and creeper, and weed—  
Let us forget the sight and the sound,  
The smell and the touch of the breed!  
Fat black ash by the altar-stone,  
Here is the white-foot rain,  
And the does bring forth in the fields unsown,  
And none shall affright them again;  
And the blind walls crumble, unknown, o'erthrown,  
And none shall inhabit again!  
*Letting in the Jungle.*

These are the Four that are never content, that have never  
been filled since the Dewes began—  
Jacala's mouth, and the glut of the Kite, and the hands of  
the Ape, and the Eyes of Man.  
*The King's Ankus.*

For our white and our excellent nights—for the nights of  
swift running,  
Fair ranging, far seeing, good hunting, sure cunning!

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

For the smells of the dawning, untainted, ere dew has  
departed!  
For the rush through the mist, and the quarry blind-started!  
For the cry of our mates when the sambhur has wheeled and  
is standing at bay!  
For the risk and the riot of night!  
For the sleep at the lair-mouth by day!  
It is met, and we go to the fight.  
Bay! O bay!

*Red Dog.*

Man goes to Man! Cry the challenge through the Jungle!  
He that was our Brother goes away.  
Hear, now, and judge, O ye People of the Jungle,—  
Answer, who can turn him—who shall stay?

Man goes to Man! He is weeping in the Jungle:  
He that was our Brother sorrows sore!  
Man goes to Man! (Oh, we loved him in the Jungle!)  
To the Man-Trail where we may not follow more.  
*The Spring Running.*

At the hole where he went in  
Red-Eye called to Wrinkle-Skin.  
Hear what little Red-Eye saith:  
“Nag, come up and dance with death!”

Eye to eye and head to head,  
(*Keep the measure, Nag.*)  
This shall end when one is dead;  
(*At thy pleasure, Nag.*)

Turn for turn and twist for twist—  
(*Run and hide thee, Nag.*)  
Hah! The hooded Death has missed!  
(*Woe betide thee, Nag!*)

*Rikki-Tikki-Tavi.*

Oh! hush thee, my baby, the night is behind us,  
And black are the waters that sparkled so green.  
The moon, o'er the combers, looks downward to find us  
At rest in the hollows that rustle between.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Where billow meets billow, there soft be thy pillow;  
Ah, weary wee flipperling, curl at thy ease!  
The storm shall not wake thee, nor shark overtake thee,  
Asleep in the arms of the slow-swinging seas.

*The White Seal.*

You mustn't swim till you're six weeks old,  
Or your head will be sunk by your heels;  
And summer gales and Killer Whales  
Are bad for baby seals.  
Are bad for baby seals, dear rat,  
As bad as bad can be.  
But splash and grow strong,  
And you can't be wrong,  
Child of the Open Sea!

*The White Seal.*

I will remember what I was. I am sick of rope and chain—  
I will remember my old strength and all my forest-affairs.  
I will not sell my back to man for a bundle of sugar-cane.  
I will go out to my own kind, and the wood-folk in their  
lairs.

I will go out until the day, until the morning break,  
Out to the winds' untainted kiss, the waters' clean caress.  
I will forget my ankle-ring and snap my picket-stake.  
I will revisit my lost loves, and playmates masterless!

*Toomai of the Elephants.*

The People of the Eastern Ice, they are melting like the  
snow—  
They beg for coffee and sugar; they go where the white men  
go.  
The People of the Western Ice, they learn to steal and  
fight;  
They sell their furs to the trading-post; they sell their souls  
to the white.  
The People of the Southern Ice, they trade with the whaler's  
crew;  
Their women have many ribbons, but their tents are torn  
and few.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

But the People of the Elder Ice, beyond the white man's  
ken—  
Their spears are made of the narwhal-horn, and they are the  
last of the Men!

*Quiquern.*

When ye say to Tabaqui, "My Brother!" when ye call the  
Hyæna to meat,  
Ye may cry the Full Truce with Jacala—the Belly that runs  
on four feet.

*The Undertakers.*

The night we felt the earth would move  
We stole and plucked him by the hand,  
Because we loved him with the love  
That knows but cannot understand.

And when the roaring hillside broke,  
And all our world fell down in rain,  
We saved him, we the Little Folk;  
But lo! he does not come again!

Mourn now, we saved him for the sake  
Of such poor love as wild ones may.  
Mourn ye! Our brother will not wake,  
And his own kind drive us away!

*The Miracle of Purun Bhagat.*

---

## THE EGG-SHELL

*(Enlarged from "Traffics and Discoveries")*

THE wind took off with the sunset—  
The fog came up with the tide,  
When the Witch of the North took an Egg-shell  
With a little Blue Devil inside.  
"Sink," she said, "or swim," she said,  
"It's all you will get from me.  
And that is the finish of *him!*" she said,  
And the Egg-shell went to sea.

The wind fell dead with the midnight—  
The fog shut down like a sheet,

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

When the Witch of the North heard the Egg-shell  
Feeling by hand for a fleet.

"Get!" she said, "or you're gone," she said,  
But the little Blue Devil said "No!  
The sights are just coming on," he said,  
And he let the Whitehead go.

The wind got up with the morning—

The fog blew off with the rain,

When the Witch of the North saw the Egg-shell

And the little Blue Devil again.

"Did you swim?" she said. "Did you sink?" she said,

And the little Blue Devil replied:

"For myself I swam, but I *think*," he said,

"There's somebody sinking outside."

### "THE TRADE"

1914-18

(*Sea Warfare*)

THEY bear, in place of classic names,  
Letters and numbers on their skin.

They play their grisly blindfold games

In little boxes made of tin.

Sometimes they stalk the Zeppelin,

Sometimes they learn where mines are laid,

Or where the Baltic ice is thin.

That is the custom of "The Trade."

Few prize-courts sit upon their claims.

They seldom tow their targets in.

They follow certain secret aims

Down under, far from strife or din.

When they are ready to begin

No flag is flown, no fuss is made

More than the shearing of a pin.

That is the custom of "The Trade."

The Scout's quadruple funnel flames

A mark from Sweden to the Swin,

The Cruiser's thund'rous screw proclaims

Her comings out and goings in:

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

But only whiffs of paraffin  
Or creamy rings that fizz and fade  
Show where the one-eyed Death has been.  
That is the custom of "The Trade."

Their feats, their fortunes and their fames  
Are hidden from their nearest kin;  
No eager public backs or blames,  
No journal prints the yarn they spin  
(The Censor would not let it in!)  
When they return from run or raid.  
Unheard they work, unseen they win.  
That is the custom of "The Trade."

### "TIN FISH"

1914-18

(*Sea Warfare*)

THE ships destroy us above  
And ensnare us beneath.  
We arise, we lie down, and we move  
In the belly of Death.

The ships have a thousand eyes  
To mark where we come . . .  
But the mirth of a seaport dies  
When our blow gets home.

### THE KING'S TASK

1902

(*Enlarged from "Traffics and Discoveries"*)

AFTER the sack of the City, when Rome was sunk to a  
name,  
In the years that the lights were darkened, or ever St. Wilfrid  
came,  
Low on the borders of Britain (the ancient poets sing)  
Between the Cliff and the Forest there ruled a Saxon King.  
Stubborn all were his people from cottar to overlord—  
Not to be cowed by the cudgel, scarce to be schooled by the  
sword;

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

Quick to turn at their pleasure, cruel to cross in their mood,  
And set on paths of their choosing as the hogs of Andred's  
Wood.

Laws they made in the Witan—the laws of faying and fine—  
Common, loppage and pannage, the theft and the track of  
kine—

Statutes of tun and of market for the fish and the malt and  
the meal—

The tax on the Bramber packhorse and the tax on the  
Hastings keel.

Over the graves of the Druids and under the wreck of Rome,  
Rudely but surely they bedded the plinth of the days to come.  
Behind the feet of the Legions and before the Norseman's ire  
Rudely but greatly begat they the framing of State and Shire.  
Rudely but deeply they laboured, and their labour stands till  
now,

If we trace on our ancient headlands the twist of their eight-  
ox plough. . . .

There came a king from Hamtun, by Bosenham he came,  
He filled Use with slaughter, and Lewes he gave to flame.  
He smote while they sat in the Witan—sudden he smote and  
sore,

That his fleet was gathered at Selsea ere they mustered at  
Cymen's Ore.

Blithe went the Saxons to battle, by down and wood and  
mere,

But thrice the acorns ripened ere the western mark was clear.  
Thrice was the beechmast gathered, and the Beltane fires  
burned

Thrice, and the beeves were salted thrice ere the host  
returned.

They drove that king from Hamtun, by Bosenham o'er-  
thrown,

Out of Rugnor to Wilton they made his land their own.  
Camps they builded at Gilling, at Basing and Alresford,  
But wrath abode in the Saxons from cottar to overlord.  
Wrath at the weary war-game, at the foe that snapped and  
ran,

Wolf-wise feigning and flying, and wolf-wise snatching his  
man.

Wrath for their spears unready, their levies new to the  
blade—

Shame for the helpless sieges and the scornful ambushade.



# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

At hearth and tavern and market, wherever the tale was  
told,  
Shame and wrath had the Saxons because of their boasts of  
old.  
And some would drink and deny it, and some would pray and  
atone;  
But the most part, after their anger, avouched that the sin  
was their own.  
Wherefore, girding together, up to the Witan they came,  
And as they had shouldered their bucklers so did they  
shoulder their blame;  
(For that was the wont of the Saxons, the ancient poets  
sing),  
And first they spoke in the Witan and then they spoke to the  
King:  
"Edward King of the Saxons, thou knowest from sire  
to son,  
"One is the King and his People—in gain and ungain one.  
"Count we the gain together. With doubtings and spread  
dismays  
"We have broken a foolish people—but after many days.  
"Count we the loss together. Warlocks hampered our  
arms.  
"We were tricked as by magic, we were turned as by charms.  
"We went down to the battle and the road was plain to keep,  
"But our angry eyes were holden, and we struck as they  
strike in sleep—  
"Men new shaken from slumber, sweating, with eyes  
a-stare,  
"Little blows uncertain, dealt on the useless air.  
"Also a vision betrayed us and a lying tale made bold,  
"That we looked to hold what we had not and to have what  
we did not hold:  
"That a shield should give us shelter—that a sword should  
give us power—  
"A shield snatched up at a venture and a hilt scarce handled  
an hour:  
"That being rich in the open, we should be strong in the  
close—  
"And the Gods would sell us a cunning for the day that we  
met our foes.  
"This was the work of wizards, but not with our foe they  
bide,

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

- " In our own camp we took them, and their names are Sloth  
and Pride.  
" Our pride was before the battle, our sloth ere we lifted  
spear,  
" But hid in the heart of the people, as the fever hides in the  
mere,  
" Waiting only the war-game, the heat of the strife to  
rise  
" As the ague fumes round Oxeney when the rotting reed-  
bed dries.  
" But now we are purged of that fever—cleansed by the  
letting of blood,  
" Something leaner of body—something keener of mood.  
" And the men new-freed from the levies return to the fields  
again,  
" Matching a hundred battles, cottar and lord and thane;  
" And they talk loud in the temples where the ancient war-  
gods are;  
" They thumb and mock and belittle the holy harness of  
war.  
" They jest at the sacred chariots, the robes and the gilded  
staff.  
" These things fill them with laughter, they lean on their  
spears and laugh.  
" The men grown old in the war-game, hither and thither  
they range—  
" And scorn and laughter together are sire and dam of  
change;  
" And change may be good or evil—but we know not what  
it will bring;  
" Therefore our King must teach us. That is thy task, O  
King! "

### POSEIDON'S LAW

(" The Bonds of Discipline "—*Traffics and Discoveries*)

WHEN the robust and Brass-bound Man commissioned  
first for sea  
His fragile raft, Poseidon laughed, and " Mariner," said he,  
" Behold, a Law immutable I lay on thee and thine,  
That never shall ye act or tell a falsehood at my shrine.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"Let Zeus adjudge your landward kin whose votive meal and  
salt  
At easy-cheated altars win oblivion for the fault,  
But you the unhoodwinked wave shall test—the immediate  
gulf condemn—  
Except ye owe the Fates a jest, be slow to jest with them.

"Ye shall not clear by Greekly speech, nor cozen from your  
path  
The twinkling shoal, the leeward beach, or Hadria's white-  
lipped wrath;  
Nor tempt with painted cloth for wood my fraud-avenging  
hosts;  
Nor make at all, or all make good, your bulwarks and your  
boasts.

"Now and henceforward serve unshod, through wet and  
wakeful shifts,  
A present and oppressive God, but take, to aid, my gifts—  
The wide and windward-opening eye, the large and lavish  
hand,  
The soul that cannot tell a lie—except upon the land!"

In dromond and in catafract—wet, wakeful, windward-  
eyed—  
He kept Poseidon's Law intact (his ship and freight beside),  
But, once discharged the dromond's hold, the bireme beached  
once more,  
Splendaciously mendacious rolled the Brass-bound Man  
ashore. . . .

The thranite now and thalamite are pressures low and high,  
And where three hundred blades bit white the twin-pro-  
pellers ply.  
The God that hailed, the keel that sailed, are changed beyond  
recall,  
But the robust and Brass-bound Man he is not changed at  
all!

From Punt returned, from Phormio's Fleet, from Javan and  
Gadire,  
He strongly occupies the seat about the tavern fire,  
And, moist with much Falernian or smoked Massilian juice,  
Revenge there the Brass-bound Man his long-enforced truce!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE LOWESTOFT BOAT

*(East Coast Patrols of the War)*

1914-18

IN LOWESTOFT a boat was laid,  
Mark well what I do say!  
And she was built for the herring-trade,  
But she has gone a-rovin', a-rovin', a-rovin',  
The Lord knows where!

They gave her Government coal to burn,  
And a Q.F. gun at bow and stern,  
And sent her out a-rovin', etc.

Her skipper was mate of a bucko ship  
Which always killed one man per trip,  
So he is used to rovin', etc.

Her mate was skipper of a chapel in Wales,  
And so he fights in topper and tails—  
Religi-ous tho' rovin', etc.

Her engineer is fifty-eight,  
So *he's* prepared to meet his fate,  
Which ain't unlikely rovin', etc.

Her leading-stoker's seventeen,  
So he don't know what the Judgments mean,  
Unless he cops 'em rovin', etc.

Her cook was chef in the Lost Dogs' Home,  
Mark well what I do say!  
And I'm sorry for Fritz when they all come  
A-rovin', a-rovin', a-roarin' and a-rovin',  
Round the North Sea rovin',  
The Lord knows where!

A TRUTHFUL SONG

("The Wrong Thing"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

THE BRICKLAYER:  
*I tell this tale, which is strictly true,  
 Just by way of convincing you  
 How very little, since things were made,  
 Things have altered in the building trade.*

A year ago, come the middle of March,  
 We was building flats near the Marble Arch,  
 When a thin young man with coal-black hair  
 Came up to watch us working there.

Now there wasn't a trick in brick or stone  
 Which this young man hadn't seen or known;  
 Nor there wasn't a tool from trowel to maul  
 But this young man could use 'em all!

Then up and spoke the plumbyers bold,  
 Which was laying the pipes for the hot and cold:  
 "Since you with us have made so free,  
 Will you kindly say what your name might be?"

The young man kindly answered them:  
 "It might be Lot or Methusalem,  
 Or it might be Moses (a man I hate),  
 Whereas it is Pharaoh surnamed the Great.

"Your glazing is new and your plumbing's strange,  
 But otherwise I perceive no change;  
 And in less than a month if you do as I bid  
 I'd learn you to build me a Pyramid!"

THE SAILOR:  
*I tell this tale, which is stricter true,  
 Just by way of convincing you  
 How very little, since things was made,  
 Things have altered in the shipwright's trade.*

In Blackwall Basin yesterday  
 A China barque re-fitting lay,  
 When a fat old man with snow-white hair  
 Came up to watch us working there.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Now there wasn't a knot which the riggers knew  
But the old man made it—and better too;  
Nor there wasn't a sheet, or a lift, or a brace,  
But the old man knew its lead and place.

Then up and spoke the caulkyers bold,  
Which was packing the pump in the afterhold:  
“ Since you with us have made so free,  
Will you kindly tell what your name might be? ”

The old man kindly answered them:  
“ It might be Japheth, it might be Shem,  
Or it might be Ham (though his skin was dark),  
Whereas it is Noah, commanding the Ark.

“ Your wheel is new and your pumps are strange,  
But otherwise I perceive no change;  
And in less than a week, if she did not ground,  
I'd sail this hooker the wide world round! ”

BOTH:

*We tell these tales, which are strictest true,  
Just by way of convincing you  
How very little, since things was made,  
Anything alters in any one's trade!*

## A SMUGGLER'S SONG

(“ Hal o' the Draft ”—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

IF YOU wake at midnight, and hear a horse's feet,  
Don't go drawing back the blind, or looking in the  
street,  
Them that asks no questions isn't told a lie.  
Watch the wall, my darling, while the Gentlemen go by!  
Five and twenty ponies  
Trotting through the dark—  
Brandy for the Parson,  
'Baccy for the Clerk;  
Laces for a lady, letters for a spy,  
And watch the wall, my darling, while the Gentlemen go by!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Running round the woodlump if you chance to find  
Little barrels, roped and tarred, all full of brandy-wine,  
Don't you shout to come and look, nor use 'em for your  
play.  
Put the brishwood back again—and they'll be gone next  
day!

If you see the stable-door setting open wide;  
If you see a tired horse lying down inside;  
If your mother mends a coat cut about and tore;  
If the lining's wet and warm—don't you ask no more!

If you meet King George's men, dressed in blue and red,  
You be careful what you say, and mindful what is said.  
If they call you "pretty maid," and chuck you 'neath the  
chin,  
Don't you tell where no one is, nor yet where no one's  
been!

Knocks and footsteps round the house—whistles after  
dark—  
You've no call for running out till the house-dogs bark.  
*Trusty's* here, and *Pincher's* here, and see how dumb they  
lie—  
*They* don't fret to follow when the Gentlemen go by!

If you do as you've been told, 'likely there's a chance,  
You'll be give a dainty doll, all the way from France,  
With a cap of Valenciennes, and a velvet hood—  
A present from the Gentlemen, along o' being good!  
Five and twenty ponies  
Trotting through the dark—  
Brandy for the Parson,  
'Baccy for the Clerk.  
Them that asks no questions isn't told a lie—  
Watch the wall, my darling, while the Gentlemen go by!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

KING HENRY VII. AND THE SHIPWRIGHTS

(A. D. 1487)

("The Wrong Thing"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

HARRY, our King in England, from London town is  
gone,  
And comen to Hamull on the Hoke in the Countie of Suth-  
ampton.  
For there lay the *Mary of the Tower*, his ship of war so strong,  
And he would discover, certaynely, if his shipwrights did him  
wrong.

He told not none of his setting forth, nor yet where he would  
go,  
(But only my Lord of Arundel) and meanly did he show,  
In an old jerkin and patched hose that no man might him  
mark.  
With his frieze hood and cloak above, he looked like any clerk.

He was at Hamull on the Hoke about the hour of the tide,  
And saw the *Mary* haled into dock, the winter to abide,  
With all her tackle and habiliments which are the King his  
own;  
But then ran on his false shipwrights and stripped her to the  
bone.

They heaved the main-mast overboard, that was of a trusty  
tree,  
And they wrote down it was spent and lost by force of weather  
at sea.  
But they sawen it into planks and strakes as far as it might go,  
To maken beds for their own wives and little children also.

There was a knave called Slingawai, he crope beneath the  
deck,  
Crying: "Good felawes, come and see! The ship is nigh a  
wreck!  
For the storm that took our tall main-mast, it blew so fierce  
and fell,  
Alack! it hath taken the kettles and pans, and this brass pott  
as well!"



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

With that he set the pott on his head and hied him up the  
hatch,  
While all the shipwrights ran below to find what they might  
snatch;  
All except Bob Brygandyne and he was a yeoman good.  
He caught Slingawai round the waist and threw him on to the  
mud.

“ I have taken plank and rope and nail, without the King his  
leave,  
After the custom of Portesmouth, but I will not suffer a  
thief.  
Nay, never lift up thy hand at me—there’s no clean hands  
in the trade.  
Steal in measure,” quo’ Brygandyne. “ There’s measure in  
all things made! ”

“ Gramercy, yeoman! ” said our King. “ Thy counsel liketh  
me.”  
And he pulled a whistle out of his neck and whistled whistles  
three.  
Then came my Lord of Arundel pricking across the down,  
And behind him the Mayor and Burgesses of merry Suth-  
ampton town.

They drew the naughty shipwrights up, with the kettles in  
their hands,  
And bound them round the forecastle to wait the King’s  
commands.  
But “ Sith ye have made your beds,” said the King, “ ye  
needs must lie thereon.  
For the sake of your wives and little ones—felawes, get you  
gone! ”

When they had beaten Slingawai, out of his own lips  
Our King appointed Brygandyne to be Clerk of all his  
ships.  
“ Nay, never lift up thy hands to me—there’s no clean hands  
in the trade.  
But steal in measure,” said Harry our King. “ There’s  
measure in all things made! ”

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

*God speed the Mary of the Tower, the Sovereign, and Grace  
Dieu,  
The Sweepstakes and the Mary Fortune, and the Henry  
of Bristol too!  
All tall ships that sail on the sea, or in our harbours stand,  
That they may keep measure with Harry our King and peace in  
Engeland!*

### THE WET LITANY

(“ Their Lawful Occasions ”—*Traffics and Discoveries*)

WHEN the waters' countenance  
Blurs 'twixt glance and second glance;  
When our tattered smokes forerun  
Ashen 'neath a silvered sun;  
When the curtain of the haze  
Shuts upon our helpless ways—  
Hear the Channel Fleet at sea:  
*Libera nos Domine!*

When the engines' bated pulse  
Scarcely thrills the nosing hulls;  
When the wash along the side  
Sounds, a-sudden, magnified;  
When the intolerable blast  
Marks each blindfold minute passed;

When the fog-buoy's squattering flight  
Guides us through the haggard night;  
When the warning bugle blows;  
When the lettered doorways close;  
When our brittle townships press,  
Impotent, on emptiness;

When the unseen leadsmen lean  
Questioning a deep unseen;  
When their lessened count they tell  
To a bridge invisible;  
When the hid and perilous  
Cliffs return our cry to us;

When the treble thickness spread  
 Swallows up our next-ahead;  
 When her siren's frightened whine  
 Shows her sheering out of line;  
 When—her passage undiscerned—  
 We must turn where she has turned,  
 Hear the Channel Fleet at sea:  
*Libera nos Domine!*

# THE BALLAD OF MINEPIT SHAW

("The Tree of Justice"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

ABOUT the time that taverns shut  
 And men can buy no beer,  
 Two lads went up to the keepers' hut  
 To steal Lord Pelham's deer.

Night and the liquor was in their heads—  
 They laughed and talked no bounds,  
 Till they waked the keepers on their beds  
 And the keepers loosed the hounds.

They had killed a hart, they had killed a hind,  
 Ready to carry away,  
 When they heard a whimper down the wind  
 And they heard a bloodhound bay.

They took and ran across the fern,  
 Their crossbows in their hand,  
 Till they met a man with a green lantern  
 That called and bade 'em stand.

"What are ye doing, O Flesh and Blood,  
 And what's your foolish will,  
 That you must break into Minepit Wood  
 And wake the Folk of the Hill?"

"Oh, we've broke into Lord Pelham's park,  
 And killed Lord Pelham's deer,  
 And if ever you heard a little dog bark  
 You'll know why we come here.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"We ask you let us go our way,  
As fast as we can flee,  
For if ever you heard a bloodhound bay  
You'll know how pressed we be."

"Oh, lay your crossbows on the bank  
And drop the knives from your hand,  
And though the hounds be at your flank  
I'll save you where you stand!"

They laid their crossbows on the bank,  
They threw their knives in the wood,  
And the ground before them opened and sank  
And saved 'em where they stood.

"Oh, what's the roaring in our ears  
That strikes us well-nigh dumb?"  
"Oh, that is just how things appears  
According as they come."

"What are the stars before our eyes  
That strike us well-nigh blind?"  
"Oh, that is just how things arise  
According as you find."

"And why's our bed so hard to the bones  
Excepting where it's cold?"  
"Oh, that's because it is precious stones  
Excepting where 'tis gold."

"Think it over as you stand,  
For I tell you without fail,  
If you haven't got into Fairyland  
You're not in Lewes Gaol."

All night long they thought of it,  
And, come the dawn, they saw  
They'd tumbled into a great old pit,  
At the bottom of Minepit Shaw.

And the keeper's hound had followed 'em close,  
And broke her neck in the fall;  
So they picked up their knives and their crossbows  
And buried the dog. That's all.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

But whether the man was a poacher too  
Or a Pharisee<sup>1</sup> so bold—  
I reckon there's more things told than are true,  
And more things true than are told!

### HERIOT'S FORD

*(Enlarged from "The Light that Failed")*

"**W**HAT's that that hirples at my side?"  
*The foe that you must fight, my lord.*  
"That rides as fast as I can ride?"  
*The shadow of your might, my lord.*

"Then wheel my horse against the foe!"  
*He's down and overpast, my lord.*  
*You war against the sunset-glow,*  
*The judgment follows fast, my lord!*

"Oh, who will stay the sun's descent?"  
*King Joshua he is dead, my lord.*  
"I need an hour to repent!"  
*'Tis what our sister said, my lord.*

"Oh, do not slay me in my sins!"  
*You're safe awhile with us, my lord.*  
"Nay, kill me ere my fear begins!"  
*We would not serve you thus, my lord.*

"Where is the doom that I must face?"  
*Three little leagues away, my lord.*  
"Then mend the horses' laggard pace!"  
*We need them for next day, my lord.*

"Next day—next day! Unloose my cords!"  
*Our sister needed none, my lord.*  
*You had no mind to face our swords,*  
*And—where can cowards run, my lord?*

"You would not kill the soul alive?"  
*'Twas thus our sister cried, my lord.*  
"I dare not die with none to shrive."  
*But so our sister died, my lord.*

<sup>1</sup> A fairy.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

"Then wipe the sweat from brow and cheek."

*It runnels forth afresh, my lord.*

"Uphold me—for the flesh is weak."

*You've finished with the Flesh, my lord!*

### FRANKIE'S TRADE

("Simple Simon"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

OLD Horn to All Atlantic said:  
(*A-hay O! To me O!*)

"Now where did Frankie learn his trade?

For he ran me down with a three-reef mains'l."

(*All round the Horn!*)

Atlantic answered:—"Not from me!

You'd better ask the cold North Sea,

For he ran me down under all plain canvas."

(*All round the Horn!*)

The North Sea answered:—"He's my man,

For he came to me when he began—

Frankie Drake in an open coaster.

(*All round the Sands!*)

"I caught him young and I used him sore,

So you never shall startle Frankie more,

Without capsizing Earth and her waters.

(*All round the Sands!*)

"I did not favour him at all.

I made him pull and I made him haul—

And stand his trick with the common sailors.

(*All round the Sands!*)

"I froze him stiff and I fogged him blind,

And kicked him home with his road to find

By what he could see in a three-day snow-storm.

(*All round the Sands!*)

"I learned him his trade o' winter nights,

"Twixt Mardyke Fort and Dunkirk lights,

On a five-knot tide with the forts a-firing.

(*All round the Sands!*)

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

" Before his beard began to shoot,  
I showed him the length of the Spaniard's foot—  
And I reckon he clapped the boot on it later.  
*(All round the Sands!)*

" If there's a risk which you can make,  
That's worse than he was used to take  
Nigh every week in the way of his business;  
*(All round the Sands!)*

" If there's a trick that you can try,  
Which he hasn't met in time gone by,  
Not once or twice, but ten times over;  
*(All round the Sands!)*

" If you can teach him aught that's new,  
*(A-hay O! To me O!)*  
I'll give you Bruges and Nieuport too,  
And the ten tall churches that stand between 'em!"  
*Storm along, my gallant Captains!*  
*(All round the Horn!)*

### THE JUGGLER'S SONG

*(Enlarged from " Kim ")*

WHEN the drums begin to beat  
Down the street,  
When the poles are fetched and guyed,  
When the tight-rope's stretched and tied,  
When the dance-girls make salaam,  
When the snake-bag wakes alarm,  
When the pipes set up their drone,  
When the sharp-edged knives are thrown,  
When the red-hot coals are shown,  
To be swallowed by-and-by—  
*Arré, Brethren, here come I!*

Stripped to loin-cloth in the sun,  
Search me well and watch me close!  
Tell me how my tricks are done—  
Tell me how the mango grows!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Give a man who is not made  
To his trade  
Swords to fling and catch again,  
Coins to ring and snatch again,  
Men to harm and cure again,  
Snakes to charm and lure again—  
He'll be hurt by his own blade,  
By his serpents disobeyed,  
By his clumsiness bewrayed,  
By the people laughed to scorn—  
So 'tis not with juggler born!

Pinch of dust or withered flower,  
Chance-flung nut or borrowed staff,  
Serve his need and shore his power,  
Bind the spell or loose the laugh.

### THE NORTH SEA PATROL

1914-18

(*Sea Warfare*)

WHERE the East wind is brewed fresh and fresh every  
morning,  
And the balmy night-breezes blow straight from the Pole,  
I heard a Destroyer sing: "What an enjoyable  
life does one lead on the North Sea Patrol!

"To blow things to bits is our business (and Fritz's),  
Which means there are mine-fields wherever you stroll.  
Unless you've particular wish to die quick, you'll avoid  
steering close to the North Sea Patrol.

"We warn from disaster the mercantile master  
Who takes in high Dudgeon our life-saving rôle,  
For every one's grouching at Docking and Dowsing<sup>1</sup>  
The marks and the lights on the North Sea Patrol."

[*Twelve verses omitted.*]

So swept but surviving, half drowned but still driving,  
I watched her head out through the swell off the shoal,  
And I heard her propellers roar: "Write to poor fellers  
Who run such a Hell as the North Sea Patrol!"

<sup>1</sup> Shoals and lights on the East Coast.



RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

THORKILD'S SONG

("The Knights of the Joyous Venture"—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

THERE'S no wind along these seas,  
*Out oars for Stavanger!*  
*Forward all for Stavanger!*  
So we must wake the white-ash breeze,  
*Let fall for Stavanger!*  
*A long pull for Stavanger!*

Oh, hear the benches creak and strain!  
*(A long pull for Stavanger!)*  
She thinks she smells the Northland rain!  
*(A long pull for Stavanger!)*

She thinks she smells the Northland snow,  
And she's as glad as we to go.

She thinks she smells the Northland rime,  
And the dear dark nights of winter-time.

She wants to be at her own home pier,  
To shift her sails and standing gear.

She wants to be in her winter-shed,  
To strip herself and go to bed.

Her very bolts are sick for shore,  
And we—we want it ten times more!

So all you Gods that love brave men,  
Send us a three-reef gale again!

Send us a gale, and watch us come,  
With close-cropped canvas slashing home!

*But*—there's no wind on all these seas,  
*A long pull for Stavanger!*  
So we must wake the white-ash breeze,  
*A long pull for Stavanger!*

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### "ANGUTIVAUN TAINA"

*Song of the Returning Hunter (Esquimaux)*

("Quiquern"—*The Second Jungle Book*)

OUR gloves are stiff with the frozen blood,  
Our furs with the drifted snow,  
As we come in with the seal—the seal!  
In from the edge of the floe.

*Au jana! Aua! Oha! Haq!*  
And the yelping dog-teams go;  
And the long whips crack, and the men come back,  
Back from the edge of the floe!

We tracked our seal to his secret place,  
We heard him scratch below,  
We made our mark, and we watched beside,  
Out on the edge of the floe.

We raised our lance when he rose to breathe,  
We drove it downward—so!  
And we played him thus, and we killed him thus,  
Out on the edge of the floe.

Our gloves are glued with the frozen blood,  
Our eyes with the drifting snow;  
But we come back to our wives again,  
Back from the edge of the floe!

*Au jana! Aua! Oha! Haq!*  
*And the loaded dog-teams go;*  
*And the wives can hear their men come back,*  
*Back from the edge of the floe!*

### HUNTING-SONG OF THE SEEONEE PACK

("Mowgli's Brothers"—*The Jungle Book*)

AS THE dawn was breaking the Sambhur belled—  
Once, twice and again!  
And a doe leaped up, and a doe leaped up  
From the pond in the wood where the wild deer sup.  
This I, scouting alone, beheld,  
Once, twice and again!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

As the dawn was breaking the Sambhur belled—  
Once, twice and again!  
And a wolf stole back, and a wolf stole back  
To carry the word to the waiting pack,  
And we sought and we found and we bayed on his track  
Once, twice and again!

As the dawn was breaking the Wolf-Pack yelled  
Once, twice and again!  
Feet in the jungle that leave no mark!  
Eyes that can see in the dark—the dark!  
Tongue—give tongue to it! Hark! O Hark!  
Once, twice and again!

### SONG OF THE MEN'S SIDE

(Neolithic)

("The Knife and the Naked Chalk"—*Rewards and Fairies*)

ONCE we feared The Beast—when he followed us we ran,  
Ran very fast though we knew  
It was not right that The Beast should master Man;  
But what could we Flint-workers do?  
The Beast only grinned at our spears round his ears—  
Grinned at the hammers that we made;  
But now we will hunt him for the life with the Knife—  
And this is the Buyer of the Blade!

*Room for his shadow on the grass—let it pass!  
To left and right—stand clear!  
This is the Buyer of the Blade—be afraid!  
This is the great god Tyr!*

Tyr thought hard till he hammered out a plan,  
For he knew it was not right  
(And it is not right) that The Beast should master Man;  
So he went to the Children of the Night.  
He begged a Magic Knife of their make for our sake.  
When he begged for the Knife they said:  
"The price of the Knife you would buy is an eye!"  
And that was the price he paid.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Tell it to the Barrows of the Dead—run ahead!  
Shout it so the Women's Side can hear!  
This is the Buyer of the Blade—be afraid!  
This is the great god Tyr!*

Our women and our little ones may walk on the Chalk,  
As far as we can see them and beyond.  
We shall not be anxious for our sheep when we keep  
Tally at the shearing-pond.  
We can eat with both our elbows on our knees, if we please,  
We can sleep after meals in the sun,  
For Shepherd-of-the-Twilight is dismayed at the Blade,  
Feet-in-the-Night have run!  
Dog-without-a-Master goes away (Hai, Tyr, aiel),  
Devil-in-the-Dusk has run!

Then:

*Room for his shadow on the grass—let it pass!  
To left and right—stand clear!  
This is the Buyer of the Blade—be afraid!  
This is the great god Tyr!*

## THE RUNES ON WELAND'S SWORD

1906

("Old Men at Pevensy"—*Puck of Pook's Hill*)

A SMITH makes me  
To betray my Man  
In my first fight.

To gather Gold  
At the world's end  
I am sent.

The Gold I gather  
Comes into England  
Out of deep Water.

Like a shining Fish  
Then it descends  
Into deep Water.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

It is not given  
For goods or gear,  
But for The Thing.

The Gold I gather  
A king covets  
For an ill use.

The Gold I gather  
Is drawn up  
Out of deep Water.

Like a shining Fish  
Then it descends  
Into deep Water.

It is not given  
For goods or gear,  
But for The Thing.

### DARZEE'S CHAUNT

Sung in honour of Rikki-tikki-tavi

(“ ‘ Rikki-Tikki-Tavi ’ ”—*The Jungle Book*)

SINGER and tailor am I—  
Doubled the joys that I know—  
Proud of my lilt to the sky,  
Proud of the house that I sew—  
Over and under, so weave I my music—so weave I the house  
that I sew.

Sing to your fledglings again,  
Mother, O lift up your head!  
Evil that plagued us is slain,  
Death in the garden lies dead.  
Terror that hid in the roses is impotent—flung on the dung-  
hill and dead!

Who hath delivered us, who?  
Tell me his nest and his name.  
Rikki, the valiant, the true,  
Tikki, with eyeballs of flame,  
Rik-tikki-tikki, the ivory-fangèd, the Hunter with eyeballs of  
flame.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Give him the Thanks of the Birds,  
Bowling with tail-feathers spread!  
Praise him in nightingale-words—  
Nay, I will praise him instead.  
Hear! I will sing you the praise of the bottle-tailed Rikki,  
with eyeballs of red!

*(Here Rikki-tikki interrupted, and the rest  
of the song is lost.)*

## SONG OF THE GALLEY-SLAVES

(“ ‘ The Finest Story in the World ’ ”—  
*Many Inventions*)

WE PULLED for you when the wind was against us and  
the sails were low.

*Will you never let us go?*

We ate bread and onions when you took towns, or ran aboard  
quickly when you were beaten back by the foe.

The Captains walked up and down the deck in fair weather  
singing songs, but we were below.

We fainted with our chins on the oars and you did not see  
that we were idle, for we still swung to and fro.

*Will you never let us go?*

The salt made the oar-handles like shark-skin; our knees  
were cut to the bone with salt-cracks; our hair was stuck  
to our foreheads; and our lips were cut to the gums, and  
you whipped us because we could not row.

*Will you never let us go?*

But, in a little time, we shall run out of the port-holes as the  
water runs along the oar-blade, and though you tell the  
others to row after us you will never catch us till you  
catch the oar-thresh and tie up the winds in the belly  
of the sail. Aho!

*Will you never let us go?*

THE FOUR ANGELS

(" With the Night Mail "—*Actions and Reactions*)

As ADAM lay a-dreaming beneath the Apple Tree  
 The Angel of the Earth came down, and offered Earth  
 in fee;  
 But Adam did not need it,  
 Nor the plough he would not speed it,  
 Singing:—" Earth and Water, Air and Fire,  
 What more can mortal man desire? "  
 (The Apple Tree's in bud.)

As Adam lay a-dreaming beneath the Apple Tree  
 The Angel of the Waters offered all the Seas in fee;  
 But Adam would not take 'em,  
 Nor the ships he wouldn't make 'em,  
 Singing:—" Water, Earth and Air and Fire,  
 What more can mortal man desire? "  
 (The Apple Tree's in leaf.)

As Adam lay a-dreaming beneath the Apple Tree  
 The Angel of the Air he offered all the Air in fee;  
 But Adam did not crave it,  
 Nor the flight he wouldn't brave it,  
 Singing:—" Air and Water, Earth and Fire,  
 What more can mortal man desire? "  
 (The Apple Tree's in bloom.)

As Adam lay a-dreaming beneath the Apple Tree  
 The Angel of the Fire rose up and not a word said he;  
 But he wished a flame and made it,  
 And in Adam's heart he laid it,  
 Singing:—" Fire, Fire, burning Fire!  
 Stand up and reach your heart's desire! "  
 (The Apple Blossom's set.)

As Adam was a-working outside of Eden-Wall,  
 He used the Earth, he used the Seas, he used the Air and all;  
 Till out of black disaster  
 He arose to be the master  
 Of Earth and Water, Air and Fire,  
 But never reached his heart's desire!  
 (The Apple Tree's cut down!)

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

## THE BEGINNINGS

1914-18

(" Mary Postgate "—*A Diversity of Creatures*)

IT WAS not part of their blood,  
It came to them very late  
With long arrears to make good,  
When the English began to hate.

They were not easily moved,  
They were icy-willing to wait  
Till every count should be proved,  
Ere the English began to hate.

Their voices were even and low,  
Their eyes were level and straight.  
There was neither sign nor show,  
When the English began to hate.

It was not preached to the crowd,  
It was not taught by the State.  
No man spoke it aloud,  
When the English began to hate.

It was not suddenly bred,  
It will not swiftly abate,  
Through the chill years ahead,  
When Time shall count from the date  
That the English began to hate.

## THE PRAYER

(*Kim*)

MY BROTHER kneels, so saith Kabir,  
To stone and brass in heathen wise,  
But in my brother's voice I hear  
My own unanswered agonies.  
His God is as his fates assign,  
His prayer is all the world's—and mine.





# THE MUSE AMONG THE MOTORS

1900-1930



## SEPULCHRAL

(FROM THE GREEK ANTHOLOGIES)

**S**WIFTER than aught 'neath the sun the car of Simonides  
moved him.  
Two things he could not out-run—Death and a Woman who  
loved him.

## ARTERIAL

(EARLY CHINESE)

### I

**F**ROST upon small rain—the ebony-lacquered avenue  
Reflecting lamps as a pool shows goldfish.  
The sight suddenly emptied out of the young man's eyes  
Entering upon it sideways.

### II

In youth, by hazard, I killed an old man.  
In age I maimed a little child.  
Dead leaves under foot reproach not:  
But the lop-sided cherry-branch—whenever the sun rises,  
How black a shadow!

## CARMEN CIRCULARE

(Q. H. FLACCUS)

**D**ELLIUS, that car which, night and day,  
Lightnings and thunders arm and scourge—  
Tumultuous down the Appian Way—  
Be slow to urge.

Though reckless Lydia bid thee fly,  
And Telephus o'ertaking jeer,  
Nay, sit and strongly occupy  
The lower gear.

They call, the road consenting, "Hastel"—  
Such as delight in dust collected—  
Until arrives (I too have raced!)  
The unexpected.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

What ox not doomed to die alone,  
Or inauspicious hound, may bring  
Thee 'twixt two kisses to the throne  
Of Hades' King,

I cannot tell; the Furies send  
No warning ere their bolts arrive.  
'Tis best to reach our chosen end  
Late but alive.

### THE ADVERTISEMENT

(IN THE MANNER OF THE EARLIER ENGLISH)

**W**HETHER to wend through straight streets strictly,  
Trimly by towns perfectly paved;  
Or after office, as fitteth thy fancy,  
Faring with friends far among fields;  
There is none other equal in action,  
Sith she is silent, nimble, unnoisome,  
Lordly of leather, gaudily gilded,  
Burgeoning brightly in a brass bonnet,  
Certain to steer well between wains.

### THE JUSTICE'S TALE

(CHAUCER)

**W**ITH them there rode a lustie Engineere  
Wel skilled to handel everich waie her geere,  
Hee was soe wise ne man colde showe him naught  
And out of Paris was hys learnynge brought.  
Frontlings mid brazen wheelles and wandes he sat,  
And on hys heade he bare an leathern hat.  
Hee was soe certaine of his gouvernance,  
That, by the Road, he tooke everie chaunce.  
For simple people and for lordlings eke  
Hee wolde not bate a del but onlie squeeke  
Behinde their backés on an horné hie  
Until they crope into a piggestie.  
He was more wood than bull in china-shoppe,  
And yet for coves and doggés wolde hee stop,  
Not out of Marcie but for Preudence-sake—  
Than hys dependaunce ever was hys brake.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### THE CONSOLATIONS OF MEMORY

(Circa 1904)

(*Done out of Boethius by Geoffrey Chaucer*)

BLESSED was our first age and morning-time. Then were  
no waies tarren, ne no cars numberen, but each followed  
his owne playnge-busyness to go about singly or by large  
interspaces, for to leden his viage after his luste and layen  
under clene hedge. Jangling there was not, nor the over-  
taking wheele, and all those now cruel clarions were full-  
hushed and full-still. Then nobile horses, lest they should  
make the chariots moveable to run by cause of this new feare,  
we did not press, and were apayed by sweete thankes of him  
that drave. There was not cursings ne adventure of death  
blinded bankes betweene, but good-fellowship of yoke-mates  
at ignorance equal, and a one pillar of dust covered all  
exodus. . . . But, see now how the blacke road hath strippen  
herself of hearte and beauty where the dumbe lampe of  
Tartarus winketh red, etc.

### THE FOUR POINTS

(THOMAS TUSSER)

ERE stopping or turning, to put foorth a hande  
Is a charm that thy daies may be long in the land.

Though seventy-times-seven thee Fortune befriend,  
O'ertaking at corners is Death in the end.

Sith main-roads for side-roads care nothing, have care  
Both to slow and to blow when thou enterest there.

Drink as thou canst hold it, but *after* is best;  
For Drink with men's Driving makes Crowners to Quest.

### TO A LADY, PERSUADING HER TO A CAR

(BEN JONSON)

LOVE's fiery chariot, Delia, take  
Which Vulcan wrought for Venus' sake.  
Wings shall not waft thee, but a flame  
Hot as my heart—as nobly tame:

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Lit by a spark, less bright, more wise  
Than linked lightnings of thine eyes!  
Seated and ready to be drawn  
Come not in muslins, lace or lawn,  
But, for thy thrice imperial worth,  
Take all the sables of the North,  
With frozen diamonds belted on,  
To face extreme Euroclydon!  
Thus in our thund'ring toy we'll prove  
Which is more blind, the Law or Love;  
And may the jealous Gods prevent  
Our fierce and uncontrouled descent!

### THE PROGRESS OF THE SPARK

*(XVIth Circuit)*

(DONNE)

**T**HIS spark now set, retarded, yet forbears  
To hold her light however so he swears  
That turns a metallèd crank and, leather-cloked,  
With some small hammers tappeth hither and yon;  
Peering as when she showeth and when is gone;  
For wait he must till the vext Power's evoked  
That's one with the lightnings. Wait in the showers soaked;  
Or by the road-side sunned. She'll not progress.  
Poor soul, here taught how great things may by less  
Be stayed, to file contacts doth himself address!

### THE BRAGGART

(MAT. PRIOR)

**P**ETROLIO, vaunting his Mercedes' power,  
Vows she can cover eighty miles an hour.  
I tried the car of old and know she can.  
But dare he ever make her? Ask his man!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### "WHEN THE JOURNEY WAS INTENDED TO THE CITY"

(MILTON)

WHEN that with meat and drink they had fulfilled  
Not temperately but like him conceived  
In monstrous jest at Meudon, whose regale  
Stands for exemplar of Gargantuan greed,  
In his own name supreme, they issued forth  
Beneath new firmaments and stars astray,  
Circumvoluminant; nor had they felt  
Neither the passage nor the sad effect  
Of many cups partaken, till that frost  
Wrought on them hideous, and their minds deceived.  
Thus choosing from a progeny of roads,  
That seemed but were not, one most reasonable,  
Of purest moonlight fashioned on a wall,  
Thither they urged their chariot whom that flint  
Buttressed received, itself unscathed—not they.

### TO MOTORISTS

(HERRICK)

SINCE ye distemper and defile  
Sweet Herè by the measured mile,  
Nor aught on jocund highways heed  
Except the evidence of speed;  
And bear about your dreadful task  
Faces beshrouded 'neath a mask;  
Great goblin eyes and gluey hands  
And souls enslaved to gears and bands;  
Here shall no graver curse be said  
Than, though y'are quick, that ye are dead!

### THE TOUR

(BYRON)

THIRTEEN as twelve my Murray always took—  
He was a publisher. The new Police  
Have neater ways of bringing men to book,  
So Juan found himself before J.P.'s



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Accused of storming through that placid nook  
At practically any pace you please.  
The Dogberry, and the Waterbury, made  
It fifty mile—five pounds. And Juan paid !

### THE IDIOT BOY

(WORDSWORTH)

HE WANDERED down the mountain grade  
Beyond the speed assigned—  
A youth whom Justice often stayed  
And generally fined.

He went alone, that none might know  
If he could drive or steer.  
Now he is in the ditch, and Oh!  
The differential gear!

### THE LANDAU

(PRAED)

THERE was a landau deep and wide,  
Cushioned for Sleep's own self to sit on—  
The glory of the country-side  
From Tanner's End to Marlow Ditton.  
John of the broad and brandied cheek  
(Well I recall its eau-de-vie hues!)  
Drove staid Sir Ralph five days a week  
At speeds which we considered Jehu's. . . .

But now poor John sleeps very sound,  
And neither hears nor smells the fuss  
Of the young Squire's nine-hundred-pound—  
Er—*Mors communis omnibus*.  
And I who in my daily stroll  
Observe the reckless chauffeur crowd her,  
*Laudator temporis*, extol  
The times before the Act allowed her.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### CONTRADICTIONS

(LONGFELLOW)

THE drowsy carrier sways  
To the drowsy horses' tramp.  
His axles winnow the sprays  
Of the hedge where the rabbit plays  
In the light of his single lamp.

He hears a roar behind,  
A howl, a hoot, and a yell,  
A headlight strikes him blind  
And a stench o'erpowers the wind  
Like a blast from the mouth of Hell.

He mends his swingle-bar,  
And loud his curses ring;  
But a mother watching afar  
Hears the hum of the doctor's car  
Like the beat of an angel's wing!

So, to the poet's mood,  
Motor or carrier's van,  
Properly understood,  
Are neither evil nor good—  
Ormuzd nor Ahriman!

### FASTNESS

(TENNYSON)

THIS is the end whereto men toiled  
Before thy coachman guessed his fate,—  
How thou shouldst leave thy 'scutcheoned gate  
On that new wheel which is the oiled—

To see the England Shakespeare saw  
(Oh, Earth, 'tis long since Shallow died!  
Yet by yon farrowed sow may hide  
Some blue deep minion of the Law)—

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

To range from Ashby-de-la-Zouch  
By Lyonesse to Locksley Hall,  
Or haply, nearer home, appal  
Thy father's sister's staid barouche.

### THE BEGINNER

*(After he has been extemporising on an instrument  
not of his own invention)*

(BROWNING)

**L**O! WHAT is this that I make—sudden, supreme, unre-  
hearsed—  
This that my clutch in the crowd pressed at a venture  
has raised?  
Forward and onward I sprang when I thought (as I ought)  
I reversed,  
And a cab like a martagon opes and I sit in the wreckage  
dazed.  
And someone is taking my name, and the driver is rending  
the air.  
With cries for my blood and my gold, and a snickering  
newsboy brings  
My cap, wheel-pashed from the kerb. I must run her home  
for repair,  
Where she leers with her bonnet awry—flat on the nether  
springs!

### LADY GERALDINE'S HARSHIP

(E. B. BROWNING)

**I** TURNED—Heaven knows we women turn too much  
To broken reeds, mistaken so for pine  
That shame forbids confession—a handle I turned  
(The wrong one, said the agent afterwards)  
And so flung clean across your English street  
Through the shrill-tinkling glass of the shop-front—paused,  
Artemis mazed 'mid gauds to catch a man,  
And piteous baby-caps and christening-gowns,  
The worse for being worn on the radiator.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

My cousin Romney judged me from the bench:  
Propounding one sleek forty-shilling law  
That takes no count of the Woman's oversoul.  
I should have entered, purred he, by the door—  
The man's retort—the open obvious door—  
And since I chose not, he—not he—could change  
The man's rule, not the Woman's, for the case.  
Ten pounds or seven days . . . Just that . . . I paid!

### THE BOTHER

(CLOUGH)

**H**ASTILY Adam our driver swallowed a curse in the darkness—  
Petrol nigh at end and something wrong with a sprocket  
Made him speer for the nearest town, when lo! at the cross-  
ways  
Four blank letterless arms the virginal signpost extended.  
“Look!” thundered Hugh the Radical. “This is the  
England we boast of—  
Bland, white-bellied, obese, but utterly useless for business.  
They are repainting the signs and have left the job in the  
middle.  
They are repainting the signs and traffic may stop till they've  
done it,  
Which is to say till the son-of-a-gun of a local contractor,  
Having laboriously wiped out every name for  
Probably thirty miles round, be minded to finish his labour!  
Had not the fool the sense to paint out and paint in together?”

Thus, not seeing his speech belied his Radical Gospel  
(Which is to paint out the earth and then write “Damn”  
on the shutter),  
Hugh embroidered the theme imperially and stretched it  
From some borough in Wales through our Australian pos-  
sessions,  
Making himself, reformer-wise, a bit of a nuisance  
Till, with the help of Adam, we cast him out on the landscape.

THE DYING CHAUFFEUR

(ADAM LINDSAY GORDON)

WHEEL me gently to the garage, since my car and I must  
part—  
No more for me the record and the run.  
That cursèd left-hand cylinder the doctors call my heart  
Is pinking past redemption—I am done!  
They'll never strike a mixture that'll help me pull my load.  
My gears are stripped—I cannot set my brakes.  
I am entered for the finals down the timeless untimed Road  
To the Maker of the makers of all makes!

THE INVENTOR

(R. W. EMERSON)

TIME and Space decreed his lot,  
But little Man was quick to note:  
When Time and Space said Man might not,  
Bravely he answered, "Nay! I mote."

I looked on old New England.  
Time and Space stood fast.  
Men built altars to Distance  
At every mile they passed.

Yet sleek with oil, a Force was hid  
Making mock of all they did,  
Ready at the appointed hour  
To yield up to Prometheus  
The secular and well-drilled Power  
The Gods secreted thus.

And over high Wantastiquet  
Emulous my lightnings ran,  
Unregarded but afret,  
To fall in with my plan.

I beheld two ministries,  
One of air and one of earth—  
At a thought I married these,  
And my New Age came to birth!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

For rarely my purpose errs  
Though oft it seem to pause,  
And rods and cylinders  
Obey my planets' laws.

Oil I drew from the well,  
And Franklin's spark from its blue;  
Time and Distance fell,  
And Man went forth anew.

On the prairie and in the street  
So long as my chariots roll  
I bind wings to Adam's feet,  
And, presently, to his soul!

### THE BALLAD OF THE CARS

*(Wardour Street Border Ballad)*

“Now this is the price of a stirrup-cup,”  
The kneeling doctor said.  
And syne he bade them take him up,  
For he saw that the man was dead.

They took him up, and they laid him down  
(And, oh, he did not stir),  
And they had him into the nearest town  
To wait the Coroner.

They drew the dead-cloth over the face,  
They closed the doors upon,  
And the cars that were parked in the market-place  
Made talk of it anon.

Then up and spake a Daimler wide,  
That carries the slatted tank:—  
“’Tis we must purge the country-side  
And no man will us thank.

“For while they pray at Holy Kirk  
That souls should turn from sin,  
We cock our bonnets to the work,  
And gather the drunken in.—

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"And if we spare them for the nonce,—  
Or their comrades jack them free,—  
They learn more under our dumb-irons  
Than they learned at their mother's knee."

Then up and spake an Armstrong bold,  
And Siddeley was his name:—  
"I saw a man lie stark and cold  
By Grantham as I came.

"There was a blind turn by a brook,  
A guard-rail and a fall:  
But the drunken loon that overtook  
He got no hurt at all!

"I ha' trodden the wet road and the dry—  
But and the shady lane;  
And why the guiltless soul should die,  
Good reason find I nane."

Then up and spake the Babe Austi—  
Had barely room for two—  
"'Tis time and place that make the sin,  
And not the deed they do.

"For when a man drives with his dear,  
I ha' seen it come to pass  
That an arm too close or a lip too near  
Has killed both lad and lass.

"There was a car at eventide  
And a sidelings kiss to steal—  
The God knows how the couple died,  
But I mind the inquest weel.

"I have trodden the black tar and the heath—  
But and the cobble-stone;  
And why the young go to their death,  
Good reason find I none."

Then spake a Morris from Oxenford,  
('Was kin to a Cowley Friar):—  
"How shall we judge the ways of the Lord  
That are but steel and fire?

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

“ Between the oil-pits under earth  
And the levin-spark from the skies,  
We but adventure and go forth  
As our man shall devise:

“ And if he have drunken a hoop too deep,  
No kinship can us move  
To draw him home in his market-sleep  
Or spare his waiting love.

“ There is never a lane in all England  
Where a mellow man can go,  
But he must look on either hand  
And back and front also.

“ But he must busk him every tide,  
At prick of horn, to leap  
Either to hide in ditch beside  
Or in the bank's steep.

“ And whether he walk in drink or muse,  
Or for his love be bound,  
We have no wit to mark and chuse,  
But needs must slay or wound.”

They drew the dead-cloth from its face.  
The Crowner looked thereon;  
And the cars that were parked in the market-place  
Went all their ways anon.

## A CHILD'S GARDEN

(R. L. STEVENSON)

NOW there is nothing wrong with me  
Except—I think it's called T.B.  
And that is why I have to lay  
Out in the garden all the day.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Our garden is not very wide,  
And cars go by on either side,  
And make an angry-hooty noise  
That rather startles little boys.

But worst of all is when they take  
Me out in cars that growl and shake,  
With charabancs so dreadful-near  
I have to shut my eyes for fear.

But when I'm on my back again,  
I watch the Croydon aeroplane  
That flies across to France, and sings  
Like hitting thick piano-strings.

When I am strong enough to do  
The things I'm truly wishful to,  
I'll never use a car or train  
But always have an aeroplane;

And just go zooming round and round,  
And frighten Nursey with the sound,  
And see the angel-side of clouds,  
And spit on all those motor-crowds!

### THE MORAL

(AUTHOR UNKNOWN)

**Y**OU mustn't groom an Arab with a file.  
You hadn't ought to tension-spring a mule.  
You couldn't push a brumby fifty mile  
And drop him in a boiler-shed to cool.  
I'll sling you through six counties in a day.  
I'll hike you up a grade of one in ten.  
I am Duty, Law and Order under way,  
I'm the Mentor of banana-fingered men!  
I will make you know your left hand from your right.  
I will teach you not to drink about your biz.  
I'm the only temperance advocate in sight!  
I am all the Education Act there is!

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

## THE MARRÈD DRIVES OF WINDSOR

PREFACE BY SAMUEL JOHNSON

*It is to be observed of this play that, though its plan is irregular, it has been made instrumental to the production of many discriminate characters who deliver themselves with candour and propriety, as they approach towards, or recede from, the operations of justice. The juxtaposition of Hamlet and Falstaff may be questioned by the learned or the delicate, but the conjectural critic of an author neither systematic nor consequential can affirm that those same forces of natural genius, which expatiate in splendour and passion, demand for their refreshment and sanity an abruptness of release and a lawlessness of invention, proportioned to precedent constrictions. He only who hath never toiled in the anfractuons mines of Philosophy or Letters, nor subdued himself to the ignoble needs of the Stage, will dispute the proposition.*

*There is a tradition that this play was composed after a drinking bout. I would prefer to credit that it owed its birth to some such concatenation of circumstances as I have adumbrated. The more so since, amid much that is ill-considered, or even depraved, our author has assigned to the crafty and careless Falstaff an awful, if fleeting, visitation of self-knowledge. Let us now be told no more of the illegitimacy of this play.*

### ACT I

*Argument.* FALSTAFF, NYM, POINS, BARDOLPH and FLUELLEN having accompanied PRINCE HENRY in a motor drive through the city of London, their car breaks down, and FALSTAFF returns to the Boar's Head Tavern in Eastcheap, where he is followed by the PRINCE and FLUELLEN.

*Enter FALSTAFF, habited as a motorist*

Here's all at an end between us, or I'll never taste sack again. Prince or no Prince, I'll not ride with him to Coventry on the hinder parts of a carbonadoed stink, not though he call her all the car in Christendom. Sack! Sack! Sack!

HOSTESS. I spied her out of the lattice. A' fizzled and a' groaned and a' shook from the bones out, Sir John, and a' ran on her own impulsidges back and forth o' Chepe, and I knew that there was but one way to it when I saw them fighting at the handles. She died of a taking of pure wind on the heart, and they be about her body now with tongs. A marvellous searching perfume, Sir John!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

FALSTAFF. He hath called me ribs; he hath called me tallow. There is no name in the extremer oiliness of comparisons which I have not borne meekly. But to go masked at midday; to wrap my belly in an horse-hide cloak of ten thousand buttons till I looked like a mushroomed dunghill; to be smoked over burnt oils; to be enseamed, moreover, with intolerable greases; and thus scented, thus habited, thus vizarded, to leap out—for I leaped, mark you . . . Another cup of sack! But there's vengeance for my case! These eyes have seen the Lord's Anointed on his knees in Chepe, foining with the key of Shrewsbury Castle, which Poins had bent to the very crook of Nym's theftuous elbow, to wake the dumb devil in the guts of her. "Sweet Hal," said I, "are all horses sold out of England, that thou must kneel before the lieges to any petrol-piddling turnspit?" Then he, Poins, and Bardolph whose nose blanched with sheer envy of her bodywork, begged a shoulder of me to thrust her into some alley, the street being full of Ephesians of the old Church. Whereat I . . .

*Enter PRINCE and FLUELLEN*

PRINCE. Whereat thou, hearing her once or twice tenderly backfire—

FALSTAFF. Heaven forgive thee, Hal! She thundered and lightened a full half-hour, so that Jove Himself could not have bettered the instruction. There's a pit beneath her now, which she blew out of thy father's highway the while I watched, where Sackerson could stand to six dogs.

PRINCE. Hearing, I say, her gentle outcry against Poins' mishandling, thou didst flee up Chepe, calling upon the Sheriff's Watch for a red flag.

FALSTAFF. I? Call me Jack if I were not jack to each of her wheels in turn till I am stamped like a butter-pat with the imprint of her underpinnings. I seek a red flag?

PRINCE. Ay, roaring like a bull.

FALSTAFF. Groans, Hal, groans such as Atlas heaved. But she overbore me at the last. Why hast thou left her?—

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Faugh, that a King's son should ever reek like a smutty-wicked lamp upon the wrong side of the morning!

PRINCE. There was Bardolph in the buckbasket behind, nosing fearfully overside like a full-wattled turkey-poult from Norfolk. There was Poins upon his belly beneath her, thrice steeped in pure plumbago, most despairfully clanking of chains like the devil in Brug's Hall window; and there were some four thousand 'prentices at her tail, crying, "What ho!" and that she bumped. Methought 'twas no place for my father's son.

FALSTAFF. Take any man's horses and hale her to bed! The laws of England are at thy commandment, that the Heir should not be made a common stink in the nostrils of the lieges.

PRINCE. She'd not stir for all Apollo's team—not though Phæton himself, drunk with nectar, lashed 'em stark mad. Poor Phæton!

HOSTESS. A' was a King's son, was a' not, and came to's end by keeping of bad company?

FALSTAFF. No more than a little horseflesh. I tell thee, Hal, this England of ours has never looked up since the nobles fell to puking over oil-buckets by the side of leather-jerkined Walloons.

PRINCE. He that drives me now is French as our princely cousin.

FALSTAFF. Dumain? Hang him for a pestilent, poke-eyed, chicken - chopping, hump - backed, leather - hatted, muffle-gloved ape! He hath been fined as often as he hath broken down; and that is at every tavern 'twixt here and York. Dumain! He's the most notorious widow-maker on the Windsor road. His mother was a corn-cutter at Ypres, and his father a barber at Rouen, by which beastly conjunction he rightly draws every infirmity that damns him in his trade. Item: He cuts corners niggardly and upon the wrong side. Item: He'll look behind him after a likely wench in the hottest press of Holborn, though he skid into the kennel

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

for it. Item: He depends upon his brake to save him at need—a death-bed repentance, Hal, as hath been proved ere this, since grace is uncertain. Item: He is too proud to clean the body of her, but leaves the care of that which should be the very cote-armour of his mechanic knighthood to an unheedful ostler. Thus, at last, he comes to overlook even the oiling; and so it falls that she's where she must be, and not where thou wouldst have her. Ay, laugh if thou wilt, Hal, but a round worthy knight need not fire himself through three baronies in eight hours to know the very essence of the petrol<sup>1</sup> that fumes him. Dumain will one day clutch thee into Hell upon the first speed.

PRINCE. Strange that clear knowledge should so long outlive mere nerve! I'll dub Dumain knight when I come to the throne, if he be not hanged first for murder on the highway. 'Twill save the state a pension.

FALSTAFF. So the lean vice goes ever before the solid virtue. (*Confused noise without.*) What riot's afoot now?

FLUELLEN. Riots, look you, by my vizaments, make one noise, but murders another. There's riots in Monmouth; but, by my vizaments, look you, there's murders in Chepe. Pabes and old 'oomen—they howl so tamnably.

FALSTAFF. Rebellion rather! Half London's calling on thy name, Hal, and half on thy father's. Well, if it be successful, forget not who was promised the reversion of the Chief Justiceship. Hal! Unquestioned rebellion, if broken crowns signify aught.

*Enter HERALDS (wounded)*

Most gracious lord, the car that bore thy state,  
Too long neglected and adjudged acold,  
Hath, without warning or advertisement,  
Risen refreshed from her supposed stand  
In unattended revolution.

PRINCE. This it is to be a King's son! That a pitiful twelve-horse touring-car<sup>2</sup> cannot jar off her brakes but they

<sup>1</sup> Petard, which is almost synonymous. HORNE TOOKE: First Folio; *private notes upon*.

<sup>2</sup> Touraine-cart (*conjectural*).—WARBURTON.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

must rehearse it me in damnable heroics. Your pleasure, gentlemen?

HERALDS. The blood upon our boltered brow attests  
'Twas Bardolph's art that waked her, whereat she  
Skipped thunderously before our mazèd eyes,  
Drew out o'er several lieges (all with God!),  
Battered a house or so to laths, and now  
Fumes on her side in Holborn. Please you, come!

PRINCE. Anon! Seek each a physician according to his  
needs and revenues. I'll be with you anon. (*To FALSTAFF*)  
The third in three weeks! These whoreson German clock-  
cases no sooner dint honest English paving-stone than they  
incontinent lay their entrails on the street. Five hundred and  
seventy pounds! I'll out and pawn the Duchy!

HERALDS. The Lord Chief Justice waits thy princely will,  
In thy dread father's Court at Westminster.

FALSTAFF. A Star Chamber matter, Hal—a Star Chamber  
matter! Glasses, Doll! We'll drink to his deliverance.

HERALDS. You, too, Sir John, as party to these broils  
And breakings-forth, in like attainder stand  
For judgment: wherein fail not at your peril!

FALSTAFF. I do remember now to have had some deal-  
ings with this same Chief Justice. An old feeble man,  
drawn abroad in a cart by horses. We must enlighten—  
enlighten him, Hal. (*Exeunt.*)

## ACT II

*Argument.* PRINCE HENRY, POINS, FLUELLEN, NYM, and  
SIR JOHN FALSTAFF (*BARDOLPH having escaped*) are charged,  
on DOGBERRY'S evidence, before the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE  
at Westminster, with exceeding the speed-limit and leaving

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*their car unattended in the street. PORTIA defends them. JUSTICE SHALLOW has been accommodated with a seat on the Bench.*

PRINCE. Where's our red rear-lamp? Where's Bardolph?

POINS. Shining over Southwark if he be not puffed out by now. He ran when the watch came. The Chief Justice looks sourly. Is any appointed to speak for us, Hal?

PRINCE. Thy notorious innocence, my known virtue, and if these fail, Sir John's big belly. I have fed my father's exchequer here twice since Easter.

CH. JUSTICE. Intemperate, rash, and ill-advised men—Yoke-fellows at unsavoury enterprise—Harry, and you, Sir John, stand forth for sentence!

FLUELLEN. Put—put there is no indictments discharged upon us yet. To pronounce sentences, look you, before the indictments is discharged is ropperies and oppressions.

NYM. Ay, that's the humour of it. When they cry Budget we must cry mum.

FALSTAFF. Cram the Welsh flannel down his own throat, or we are imprisoned after the fine. I know the Chief Justice is sick of me.

SHALLOW (*to* CH. JUSTICE). My lord, my lord, if you suffer yon fat knight to talk, he'll cozen the teeth out of your lordship's head, while his serving-man steals the steeped crust you'd mumble to. I lent him a thousand pounds, my lord.

FALSTAFF. I deny it not. For the which I promised thee advancement. And art thou not now visibly next the Chief Justice himself?

SHALLOW. Not on my merits, Sir John. I sit here simple of courtesy as visiting-justice. I'd do as much for my lord if he came to Gloucestershire, 'faith!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

FALSTAFF. Shallow! Shallow! I say I gave thee occasion and opportunity to rise. Promotion is in thy hands. (*To CH. JUSTICE*) Have a care, my lord! He fingers his dagger already.

SHALLOW. My dagger? My ink-horn, la! I'll sit further off. I told you how he'd talk, my lord. But I'll sit further off. My dagger, 'faith!

CH. JUSTICE. Sir John! Sir John! The licence of inveterate humour overstretched rends like an outworn garment—with like shame to the enduer. Answer me roundly, what defence make you to the charge you have run through Chepe at ten leagues the hour?

FALSTAFF. Roundly, my lord, my shape—my evident shape.

CH. JUSTICE. But 'tis so charged, and will be so witnessed.

DOGBERRY. Yes, and by one that hath a stopped watch and everything forsworn about him. Write it down fifteen leagues, my lord.

PRINCE (*to CH. JUSTICE*). We knights of the road have ever been fair quarry for your knights of the post to bind to, but this passes endurance. We left our car, my lord, extinct and combust in the kennel, while we sought an engineer to hoist her. In which stay she would have continued, but for the prying vulgar who found on her some handle to their curiosity, which, doubtless, they turned. For in such a car as this——

CH. JUSTICE. In such a car as this  
The enfranchised 'prentices of London quash  
Our harmless babes and necessary wives  
At morning to the sound of Sabbath bells  
Through panicked Huntingdon.

PORTIA. In such a car as this,  
Slides young Desire athwart the mountain-tops,  
Drinking the airs that part him from his dear  
'Twixt Berwick and Glamorgan.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

CH. JUSTICE. In such a car as this,  
The lecherous Israelite to Brighthelmstone  
Convoys his Jessica.

PORTIA. In such a car as this,  
The lean chirurgeon burns the midnight oil  
Impetuous over England. Where his lamp  
Strikes pale the hedgerow, all the affrighted fays,  
Their misty revels in the dew divulged,  
Flee to the coney's burrow, or divide  
His antre with the squirrel—whom that ministrant  
Marks not, his eyes being bent to thrid the dark,  
Indifferent beneath the morning star,  
To the poor cot that summoned him, and the life—  
Some hour-old, mother-naked life, scarce held  
By the drowsy midwife but it yarks and squeaks  
Batlike, and batlike, would to the void again.  
This he forbids, and yet not he, whose art,  
His car unaiding, else had ne'er o'erleaped  
The largess of a county in an hour.

SHALLOW. Neat, faith, la! For how a brace of twins  
now, the far side Cotsall, of a snowy night, my lord?

FALSTAFF. A pregnant wit. Which of thy misdeeds,  
Hal, hath raised this angel to help us? I'll ask Doll.

PRINCE. Peace, dunghill, peace! She was never of  
Doll's company.

PORTIA. And I charge you, my lord, if ever need,  
Extreme and urgent need, hath visited you,  
Or, in the unprobeable decree of Time,  
May visit and masterfully constrain, think well  
Ere your abhorrence of new enginery  
Seal up the avenues of mercy here!

CH. JUSTICE. I sealed no avenues. They sealed the  
King's  
(Albeit it was called Northumberland)  
With hellish engines drawn across the street  
In an opposed and desperate barrier  
Unto the lieges' progress.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

PORTIA. Not by their will, nor their intent, my lord!  
It was a passing humour of the car—  
Gusty incontinence which, overlooked,  
As unregard oft cows pretension,  
May well not chance again.

CH. JUSTICE. But if it chance?

PORTIA. If the deep-brooding vault of Heaven retain  
Memory and record of miracle  
Vouchsafed, like this your prayed-for mercy, once,  
And, in default of quail, rain from her gate  
Heaven's sweetest choristers—then it may fall,  
But not till then!

FLUELLEN. Put—put—look you, she is telling the old  
shentlemans to wait till the sky shall rain larks! It is open  
contempts of Courts!

NYM. Ay, there's humours in them all. But I think the  
old man's humour is sweeter.

CH. JUSTICE. Yet, bating miracle, how if mercy breed  
Not gratitude, but livelier insolence,  
And through my softened verdict after years  
Grow bold to break the law? How if our England—  
Loverly, temperate, the midmost close of peace—  
Dissolve in smoke and oils along the green,  
Till sickened memory conceive no minute  
Unharried, unpollutable, unhooted?  
If I loose these, what do I loose on England?

PORTIA. Too late! Too late! That babe is viable!  
The hour we dread o'ertops us while we wonder,  
Not asking sufferance, but imposing change,  
Most multitudinously. Hark, it sings i' the wind!

ARIEL (*invisible*) sings:

Where the car slips there slip I—  
In a sunbeam's path I lie!  
There I crouch while crowds do cry,  
After somersaults muddily!  
Where I lie, where I lie, shall I live now  
Under the bonnet that bangs on my brow?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

FALSTAFF (*to PRINCE*). The Chief Justice is mazed by the fairies. He hath great motions towards virtue. He'll let us go.

CH. JUSTICE. Ourselves have snuffed some savour of these changes,  
And more our horses who, poor winkered fools,  
Hearing their dooms outstrip them, cast aside  
And pole the all-shattered house-fronts.

We ourselves,

Of purpose to repair to Westminster,  
Infirmity and age consenting, signalled  
From her hot lair an horseless chariot  
Which, in the recorded twelfth part of an hour,  
Bore our inviolate ermines half a league.  
It is, and woe it is, the chill refuge,  
The lean, unenvied privilege of Age,  
To meet new changes with old courtesy,  
Not as averting change but sparing souls  
Worn weak, and bodies extenuate with the years  
That heed nor never heeded! Set them free.  
What has been was, and what will be, must be!

### ACT III

*Argument. A room in the Boar's Head Tavern set for a banquet to celebrate the discharge of the motorists from the King's Justice. Enter PRINCE HENRY with PORTIA and several others. Also FALSTAFF drunk.*

FALSTAFF. "When that I had and a little tinny car—  
With a heigh-ho, the wind and the screen—"  
Empty the radiator!

HOSTESS. Sir John, there's one without says he's your twin-brother.

FALSTAFF. I'll be the wise child. Have him in! (*Enter HAMLET drunk.*) Ha! 'Begot a night's ride the cooler side o' the blanket! But if I be knight, he's Blood-Royal. (*To*

## D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

PRINCE HENRY) Here's thy meat, Hal. I stay by our commons.

PRINCE. Lions know lions, tho' they pride apart,  
And Princes Princes. (To HAMLET) For these, my companions  
Rejoicingly from Justice, your pardon, Brother,  
And, if it so far please, your title.

HAMLET. Prince. Hamlet of Denmark. Your pardon too. 'Tis the Rhenish . . . But conceive, sirrah, how it comes about 'neath the unjust stars, that by a few ink-spirts and frail pretences of the plays, a bald-pated ostler to Pegasus conjures life into such as we. In which continuance, mark you, we live and inextinguishably shake spheres: he having left the globe—how long? But I'll go find my double.<sup>1</sup>

PRINCE. Rumour wrongs not the Danes. They drink too deep.  
He is full proof. (To HAMLET) Welcome, distracted Sir.  
We have a foolish feast in hand, whereat,  
Wine and our near escapes making familiar,  
You shall be richer by a score of brothers  
Before the score is paid. Seek and make merry.  
(To NYM) When the fat gentleman stumbles, lay him against the arras, head highest. There's a crown waiting.

<sup>1</sup> . . . After the transparent reference to "the unjust stars," the word "ink-spirts" leaps to the eye of the initiated as the simplest anagram of "*scripsit*" (the "k" being used, of course, for the desiderated "c," and the apparently superfluous "n," for the initial of Nicholas, Bacon's father). "Frail pretences" (taking the first three letters of the first, and the last four of the second, word) reveals, beyond negation, the same "Frances" who wrote to his King (Mar. 25, 1631) that he might be "frail and partake, etc." The "bald-pated ostler" who "conjures life into, etc.," is even more palpable and needs not the additional "continuance" which follows. Nor does this exhaust the category. Miss Nessa Droenbergh acutely explains Hamlet's opening remark to Prince Henry as a well-bred man's apology for phenomena due to liquor-excess—briefly a hiccough. But we must remember that Bacon, where possible, always "doubles his clues," on the principle of the British railroads' "distant" and "home" signals. Thus after "Your pardon too," comes "'Tis the Rhenish," a German wine long traded into Britain and the Baltic, and later known as "hoc(k)." So we have, all but *en clair*, the author of "Shakespeare's" plays proclaiming, "*Hoc scripsit Frances Bacon.*" (Francis Bacon wrote this.) What more, in the name of sanity, is needed to convince anyone who is not delivered over to the "man of Stratford" complex? — From PROFESSOR O. P. CALLOWITZ's *William the World-Impostor*.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

NYM. For him—not me. That's an old humour.

PRINCE (*to* PORTIA). Lovely lady,  
To whom we go in bondage, first, of beauty,  
And next of golden advocacy, snatching  
Us from deservèd Bridewells,—name thy fee.

PORTIA. I here confess I never owned a car;  
Never, in all my life, have driven car;  
And, touching any uses of a car,  
From airiest hearsays<sup>1</sup> were my pleadings drawn.  
Therefore, I ask no guerdon but a car,  
To experience on the heels of phantasy.

PRINCE. A car? A car?

PORTIA. I said even so—one car.

HAMLET (*to* FALSTAFF). Women have dread affections,  
for their spirit,  
Out-plumbing ours, their easier sympathies  
Frame both the passion and the appurtenance;  
Else they go mad.

FALSTAFF. True! Doll's a she-kite of the same feather.  
But moulting—moulting!

PRINCE (*to* PORTIA). Nay, entertain conjecture of a time  
When, horses fed to hounds, the thrice-stuffed streets  
Ring, reek and rumble with opprobrious wains  
Inveterately unheedful. Straw between  
Their bulks the rash and pillioned amorists  
Whose so mis-timed embracements on the wood<sup>2</sup>  
Sling hose and cap<sup>3</sup> to inquest.

BEATRICE. Signor Prince, spare thyself a dry mouth and

<sup>1</sup> Hearses.—WARBURTON (*conject.*).

<sup>2</sup> The text is corrupt. It is impossible to imagine a street paved with wood. But mis-timed embracements might well be "untoward."—JOHNSON.

<sup>3</sup> At this epoch the London 'prentices wore cloth caps, and their female companions stockings, which had then been largely discovered by the vulgar.—THEOBALD.

## D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

us drier discourse. The world moves, for all man's owlings,  
and we women in the va'ward.<sup>1</sup>

NYM. That's the new humour. To over-run the law  
and the lieges and say "I am a maid!"

BENEDICK. To have at a man sideways out of a blind  
lane, and if he give natural vent on some broken head, arm,  
or running-board,<sup>2</sup> her husband or lover must challenge him  
as though he were Claudio.

BEATRICE. That, Signor Benedick, shall never be. For  
when I drive you shall stay at home.

SHYLOCK. I have a bond! I have a bond in my office,  
Whose virtue is—for every pound of flesh,  
Or drop of blood, on such mistakings drawn,  
Or push of market-bestial—being signed  
(And some poor ducats paid) assures the holder  
'Gainst every act and charge of law or leech.

PORTIA. We made sweet composition long ago,  
Shylock and I. He pays upon such bonds,  
As, in mine office, I can well avouch;  
Having prepared the like for Jessica  
Whose paths are wayward. Let them see it, Jew.

SHYLOCK *shows the company a Third Party Risks Policy.*  
HAMLET and FALSTAFF *talk apart*

FALSTAFF (*to HAMLET*). Unconfined truth! Cowards  
natural, both of us, with each some huddled deliverance of  
jest or philosophy to piece out the skirts of 'voided occasion.  
'You drive?

HAMLET. For action to be taken on the instant? I'd  
liever . . . ! But, oh, God—I have no choice, being what I  
am and informed of myself past endurance.

FALSTAFF. I have some same cause. How, now, of  
drink and lechery to drown self-knowledge?

<sup>1</sup> "Ford" (*conjectural*).—STEEVENS.

<sup>2</sup> Running aboard—in the sense of vessels falling "foul" of each  
other at sea. (*Conjectural*).—JOHNSON.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

HAMLET. 'Serves me not. There's a mad woman whom I drowned floats in my every cup, like borage.<sup>1</sup> But I am not brave.

FALSTAFF. Women in liquor! Double damnation and half satisfaction. Think you, Ham, that he who made us twins knew his work?

HAMLET. I set no limit, being born of that soul—  
One spark in all its hells. Flesh, canst thou tremble?

FALSTAFF. I am too young to 'scape the cold fit o' mornings.

HAMLET. Shake to thy core, contemplating what vasts  
Unlawful, and what darkness, whereto ours  
Is the sun's targe, had he adventured down  
(Holding the poised brain ice) till he arraigned <sup>2</sup>  
A murderess, a Moor, a mad King—me!  
For ensample of all uttermosts of woe  
Man bears or shall be designate to suffer  
Inly or of the Gods!

FALSTAFF. True enough. But the sack's here, and I have 'scaped Justice an hour. What a plague does the Jew with his papers?

PRINCE (*taking Insurance Policy from SHYLOCK*).  
Thus furnished, and with knowledge of the wealth  
Behind the bond, are all my doubts resolved.  
My fears? (*To PORTIA*) Fair lady, warn me of thy comings  
When that car rolls its fifty roystering steeds  
Which is our instant, grateful, deadly gift!

SIR A. AGUECHEEK. There's simply no back-alley left in

<sup>1</sup> An allusion to the old distich:—

'I, Borage,  
Give Courage.'

This herb is not included in the Queen's category of those used by Ophelia previous to her suicide, nor does Ophelia herself mention it. (*Conjectural*).—STEEVENS.

<sup>2</sup> Mr. Malone says that this word should be "arrayed," in the sense of displaying before the public; but considering that each one of the characters enumerated is, in various forms, arraigned by Conscience, that most dreadful of judges, I incline towards the former reading.—M. MASON.

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

Illyria now where a man may let 's liquor out of him, but he must stand ready to leap into either hedge.

PRINCE. To-morrow be his own klaxon.<sup>1</sup> Till he call,  
Put cars away, and revel comrades all!

FESTE. When all about the joiners thrive—  
And coffins quick as man can saw;—  
When learning lady-owners drive,  
And beaks sit brooding on the Law;  
When roasting cabs hiss on the grass,  
Then lightly brays the headlong ass:—  
“*Where to? To Hell!*” Oh, word of fear,  
Unpleasing to the charioteer!

<sup>1</sup> “Sexton.” This word, through corruption, has been lost, and is now restored to its original meaning.—SIR T. HANMER.





SONGS WRITTEN FOR  
C. R. L. FLETCHER'S  
"A HISTORY OF ENGLAND"

1911



## THE RIVER'S TALE

(PREHISTORIC)

*T*WENTY bridges from Tower to Kew—  
(Twenty bridges or twenty-two)—  
Wanted to know what the River knew,  
For they were young and the Thames was old,  
And this is the tale that the River told:—

“ I walk my beat before London Town,  
Five hours up and seven down.  
Up I go till I end my run  
At Tide-end-town, which is Teddington.  
Down I come with the mud in my hands  
And plaster it over the Maplin Sands.  
But I'd have you know that these waters of mine  
Were once a branch of the River Rhine,  
When hundreds of miles to the East I went  
And England was joined to the Continent.

I remember the bat-winged lizard-birds,  
The Age of Ice and the mammoth herds,  
And the giant tigers that stalked them down  
Through Regent's Park into Camden Town.  
And I remember like yesterday  
The earliest Cockney who came my way,  
When he pushed through the forest that lined the Strand,  
With paint on his face and a club in his hand.  
He was death to feather and fin and fur.  
He trapped my beavers at Westminster.  
He netted my salmon, he hunted my deer,  
He killed my heron off Lambeth Pier.  
He fought his neighbour with axes and swords,  
Flint or bronze, at my upper fords,  
While down at Greenwich, for slaves and tin,  
The tall Phoenician ships stole in,  
And North Sea war-boats, painted and gay,  
Flashed like dragon-flies, Erith way;  
And Norseman and Negro and Gaul and Greek  
Drank with the Britons in Barking Creek,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And life was gay, and the world was new,  
And I was a mile across at Kew!  
But the Roman came with a heavy hand,  
And bridged and roaded and ruled the land,  
And the Roman left and the Danes blew in--  
And that's where your history-books begin!"

### THE ROMAN CENTURION'S SONG

(ROMAN OCCUPATION OF BRITAIN, A.D. 300)

LEGATE, I had the news last night—my cohort ordered  
home  
By ship to Portus Itius and thence by road to Rome.  
I've marched the companies aboard, the arms are stowed  
below:  
Now let another take my sword. Command me not to go!

I've served in Britain forty years, from Vectis to the Wall.  
I have none other home than this, nor any life at all.  
Last night I did not understand, but, now the hour draws  
near  
That calls me to my native land, I feel that land is here.

Here where men say my name was made, here where my  
work was done;  
Here where my dearest dead are laid—my wife—my wife  
and son;  
Here where time, custom, grief and toil, age, memory,  
service, love,  
Have rooted me in British soil. Ah, how can I remove?

For me this land, that sea, these airs, those folk and fields  
suffice.  
What purple Southern pomp can match our changeful  
Northern skies,  
Black with December snows unshed or pearly with August  
haze—  
The clanging arch of steel-grey March, or June's long-lighted  
days?

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

You'll follow widening Rhodanus till vine and olive lean  
Aslant before the sunny breeze that sweeps Nemausus clean  
To Arelate's triple gate; but let me linger on,  
Here where our stiff-necked British oaks confront Euro-  
clydon!

You'll take the old Aurelian Road through shore-descending  
pines  
Where, blue as any peacock's neck, the Tyrrhene Ocean  
shines.  
You'll go where laurel crowns are won, but—will you e'er  
forget  
The scent of hawthorn in the sun, or bracken in the wet?

Let me work here for Britain's sake—at any task you will—  
A marsh to drain, a road to make or native troops to drill.  
Some Western camp (I know the Pict) or granite Border  
keep,  
Mid seas of heather derelict, where our old messmates sleep.

Legate, I come to you in tears—My cohort ordered home!  
I've served in Britain forty years. What should I do in  
Rome?  
Here is my heart, my soul, my mind—the only life I know.  
I cannot leave it all behind. Command me not to go!

## THE PIRATES IN ENGLAND

(SAXON INVASION, A.D. 400-600)

WHEN Rome was rotten-ripe to her fall,  
And the sceptre passed from her hand,  
The pestilent Picts leaped over the wall  
To harry the English land.

The little dark men of the mountain and waste,  
So quick to laughter and tears,  
They came panting with hate and haste  
For the loot of five hundred years.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

They killed the trader, they sacked the shops,  
They ruined temple and town—  
They swept like wolves through the standing crops  
Crying that Rome was down.

They wiped out all that they could find  
Of beauty and strength and worth,  
But they could not wipe out the Viking's Wind  
That brings the ships from the North.

They could not wipe out the North-East gales,  
Nor what those gales set free—  
The pirate ships with their close-reefed sails,  
Leaping from sea to sea.

They had forgotten the shield-hung hull  
Seen nearer and more plain,  
Dipping into the troughs like a gull,  
And gull-like rising again—

The painted eyes that glare and frown  
In the high snake-headed stem,  
Searching the beach while her sail comes down,  
They had forgotten them!

There was no Count of the Saxon Shore  
To meet her hand to hand,  
As she took the beach with a grind and a roar,  
And the pirates rushed inland!

### DANE-GELD

(A. D. 980-1016)

**I**T is always a temptation to an armed and agile nation  
To call upon a neighbour and to say:—  
“We invaded you last night—we are quite prepared to fight,  
Unless you pay us cash to go away.”

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And that is called asking for Dane-geld,  
And the people who ask it explain  
That you've only to pay 'em the Dane-geld  
And then you'll get rid of the Dane!

It is always a temptation to a rich and lazy nation,  
To puff and look important and to say:—  
“Though we know we should defeat you, we have not the  
time to meet you.  
We will therefore pay you cash to go away.”

And that is called paying the Dane-geld;  
But we've proved it again and again,  
That if once you have paid him the Dane-geld  
You never get rid of the Dane.

It is wrong to put temptation in the path of any nation,  
For fear they should succumb and go astray;  
So when you are requested to pay up or be molested,  
You will find it better policy to say:—

“We never pay *any*-one Dane-geld,  
No matter how trifling the cost;  
For the end of that game is oppression and shame,  
And the nation that plays it is lost!”

## THE ANVIL

(NORMAN CONQUEST, 1066)

ENGLAND's on the anvil—hear the hammers ring—  
Clanging from the Severn to the Tyne!  
Never was a blacksmith like our Norman King—  
England's being hammered, hammered, hammered into  
line!

England's on the anvil! Heavy are the blows!  
(But the work will be a marvel when it's done.  
Little bits of Kingdoms cannot stand against their foes.  
England's being hammered, hammered, hammered into  
one!



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There shall be one people—it shall serve one Lord—  
(Neither Priest nor Baron shall escape!)  
It shall have one speech and law, soul and strength and sword.  
England's being hammered, hammered, hammered into  
shapel

### NORMAN AND SAXON

(A. D. 1100)

“MY SON,” said the Norman Baron, “I am dying, and  
you will be heir  
To all the broad acres in England that William gave me for  
my share  
When we conquered the Saxon at Hastings, and a nice little  
handful it is.  
But before you go over to rule it I want you to understand  
this:—

“The Saxon is not like us Normans. His manners are not  
so polite.  
But he never means anything serious till he talks about  
justice and right.  
When he stands like an ox in the furrow with his sullen set  
eyes on your own,  
And grumbles, ‘This isn’t fair dealing,’ my son, leave the  
Saxon alone.

“You can horsewhip your Gascony archers, or torture your  
Picardy spears;  
But don’t try that game on the Saxon; you’ll have the whole  
brood round your ears.  
From the richest old Thane in the county to the poorest  
chained serf in the field,  
They’ll be at you and on you like hornets, and, if you are  
wise, you will yield.

“But first you must master their language, their dialect,  
proverbs and songs.  
Don’t trust any clerk to interpret when they come with the  
tale of their wrongs.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Let them know that you know what they're saying; let them  
feel that you know what to say.  
Yes, even when you want to go hunting, hear 'em out if it  
takes you all day.

"They'll drink every hour of the daylight and poach every  
hour of the dark.  
It's the sport not the rabbits they're after (we've plenty of  
game in the park).  
Don't hang them or cut off their fingers. That's wasteful  
as well as unkind,  
For a hard-bitten, South-country poacher makes the best  
man-at-arms you can find.

"Appear with your wife and the children at their weddings  
and funerals and feasts.  
Be polite but not friendly to Bishops; be good to all poor  
parish priests.  
Say 'we,' 'us' and 'ours' when you're talking, instead of  
'you fellows' and 'I.'  
Don't ride over seeds; keep your temper; and *never you tell*  
*'em a lie!*"

## THE REEDS OF RUNNYMEDE

(MAGNA CHARTA, JUNE 15, 1215)

AT RUNNYMEDE, at Runnymede,  
What say the reeds at Runnymede?  
The lissom reeds that give and take,  
That bend so far, but never break.  
They keep the sleepy Thames awake  
With tales of John at Runnymede.

At Runnymede, at Runnymede,  
Oh, hear the reeds at Runnymede:—  
"You mustn't sell, delay, deny,  
A freeman's right or liberty.  
It wakes the stubborn Englishry,  
We saw 'em roused at Runnymede!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

“ When through our ranks the Barons came,  
With little thought of praise or blame,  
But resolute to play the game,  
They lumbered up to Runnymede;  
And there they launched in solid line  
The first attack on Right Divine—  
The curt, uncompromising ‘ Sign! ’  
That settled John at Runnymede.

“ At Runnymede, at Runnymede,  
Your rights were won at Runnymede!  
No freeman shall be fined or bound,  
Or dispossessed of freehold ground,  
Except by lawful judgment found  
And passed upon him by his peers.  
Forget not, after all these years,  
The Charter signed at Runnymede.”

And still when Mob or Monarch lays  
Too rude a hand on English ways,  
The whisper wakes, the shudder plays,  
Across the reeds at Runnymede.  
And Thames, that knows the moods of kings,  
And crowds and priests and suchlike things,  
Rolls deep and dreadful as he brings  
Their warning down from Runnymede!

### MY FATHER'S CHAIR

(PARLIAMENTS OF HENRY III., 1265)

**T**HERE are four good legs to my Father's Chair—  
Priest and People and Lords and Crown.  
I sits on all of 'em fair and square,  
And that is the reason it don't break down.

I won't trust one leg, nor two, nor three,  
To carry my weight when I sets me down.  
I wants all four of 'em under me—  
Priest and People and Lords and Crown.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

I sits on all four and I favours none—  
Priest, nor People, nor Lords, nor Crown:  
And I never tilts in my chair, my son,  
And that is the reason it don't break down.

When your time comes to sit in my Chair,  
Remember your Father's habits and rules.  
Sit on all four legs, fair and square,  
And never be tempted by one-legged stools!

### THE DAWN WIND

(THE FIFTEENTH CENTURY)

AT TWO o'clock in the morning, if you open your window  
and listen,  
You will hear the feet of the Wind that is going to call the  
sun.  
And the trees in the shadow rustle and the trees in the moon-  
light glisten,  
And though it is deep, dark night, you feel that the night  
is done.

So do the cows in the field. They graze for an hour and lie  
down,  
Dozing and chewing the cud; or a bird in the ivy wakes,  
Chirrup one note and is still, and the restless Wind strays on,  
Fidgeting far down the road, till, softly, the darkness  
breaks.

Back comes the Wind full strength with a blow like an angel's  
wing,  
Gentle but waking the world, as he shouts: "The Sun!  
The Sun!"  
And the light floods over the fields and the birds begin to  
sing,  
And the Wind dies down in the grass. It is day and his  
work is done.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

So when the world is asleep, and there seems no hope of her  
waking  
Out of some long, bad dream that makes her mutter and  
moan,  
Suddenly, all men arise to the noise of fetters breaking,  
And every one smiles at his neighbour and tells him his  
soul is his own!

### THE KING'S JOB

(THE TUDOR MONARCHY)

ONCE on a time was a King anxious to understand  
What was the wisest thing a man could do for his land.  
Most of his population hurried to answer the question,  
Each with a long oration, each with a new suggestion.  
They interrupted his meals—he wasn't safe in his bed from  
'em—  
They hung round his neck and heels, and at last His Majesty  
fled from 'em.  
He put on a leper's cloak (people leave lepers alone),  
Out of the window he broke, and abdicated his throne.  
All that rapturous day, while his Court and his Ministers  
mourned him,  
He danced on his own highway till his own Policemen warned  
him.  
Gay and cheerful he ran (lepers don't cheer as a rule)  
Till he found a philosopher-man teaching an infant-school.  
The windows were open wide, the King sat down on the grass,  
And heard the children inside reciting "Our King is an ass."  
The King popped in his head: "Some people would call this  
treason,  
But I think you are right," he said; "Will you kindly give  
me your reason?"  
Lepers in school are as rare as kings with a leper's dress on,  
But the class didn't stop or stare; it calmly went on with the  
lesson:  
"The wisest thing, we suppose, that a man can do for his land,  
Is the work that lies under his nose, with the tools that lie under  
his hand."

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The King whipped off his cloak, and stood in his crown  
before 'em.

He said: "My dear little folk, *Ex ore parvulorum*—  
(Which is Latin for "Children know more than grown-ups  
would credit")

You have shown me the road to go, and I propose to tread it."

Back to his Kingdom he ran, and issued a Proclamation,

"Let every living man return to his occupation!"

Then he explained to the mob who cheered in his palace and  
round it,

"I've been to look for a job, and Heaven be praised I've  
found it!"

## WITH DRAKE IN THE TROPICS

(A. D. 1580)

SOUTH and far south below the Line,  
Our Admiral leads us on,  
Above, undreamed-of planets shine—  
The stars we knew are gone.  
Around, our clustered seamen mark  
The silent deep ablaze  
With fires, through which the far-down shark  
Shoots glimmering on his ways.

The sultry tropic breezes fail  
That plagued us all day through;  
Like molten silver hangs our sail,  
Our decks are dark with dew.  
Now the rank moon commands the sky.  
Ho! Bid the watch beware  
And rouse all sleeping men that lie  
Unsheltered in her glare.

How long the time 'twixt bell and bell!  
How still our lanthorns burn!  
How strange our whispered words that tell  
Of England and return!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Old towns, old streets, old friends, old loves,  
We name them each to each,  
While the lit face of Heaven removes  
Them farther from our reach.

Now is the utmost ebb of night  
When mind and body sink,  
And loneliness and gathering fright  
O'erwhelm us, if we think—  
Yet, look, where in his room apart,  
All windows opened wide,  
Our Admiral thrusts away the chart  
And comes to walk outside.

Kindly, from man to man he goes,  
With comfort, praise, or jest,  
Quick to suspect our childish woes,  
Our terror and unrest.  
It is as though the sun should shine—  
Our midnight fears are gone!  
South and far south below the Line,  
Our Admiral leads us on!

### "TOGETHER"

(ENGLAND AT WAR)

WHEN Horse and Rider each can trust the other every-  
where,  
It takes a fence and more than a fence to pound that happy  
pair;  
For the one will do what the other demands, although he is  
beaten and blown,  
And when it is done, they can live through a run that neither  
could face alone.

When Crew and Captain understand each other to the core,  
It takes a gale and more than a gale to put their ship ashore;  
For the one will do what the other commands, although they  
are chilled to the bone,  
And both together can live through weather that neither  
could face alone.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

When King and People understand each other past a doubt,  
It takes a foe and more than a foe to knock that country  
out;

For the one will do what the other requires as soon as the  
need is shown;  
And hand in hand they can make a stand which neither could  
make alone!

This wisdom had Elizabeth and all her subjects too,  
For she was theirs and they were hers, as well the Spaniard  
knew;  
For when his grim Armada came to conquer the Nation and  
Throne,  
Why, back to back they met an attack that neither could face  
alone!

It is not wealth, nor talk, nor trade, nor schools, nor even the  
Vote,  
Will save your land when the enemy's hand is tightening  
round your throat.  
But a King and a People who thoroughly trust each other in  
all that is done  
Can sleep on their bed without any dread—for the world will  
leave 'em alone!

### JAMES I.

(1603-25)

THE child of Mary Queen of Scots,  
A shifty mother's shiftless son,  
Bred up among intrigues and plots,  
Learnèd in all things, wise in none.  
Ungainly, babbling, wasteful, weak,  
Shrewd, clever, cowardly, pedantic,  
The sight of steel would blanch his cheek.  
The smell of baccy drive him frantic.  
He was the author of his line—  
He wrote that witches should be burnt;  
He wrote that monarchs were divine,  
And left a son who—proved they weren't!



EDGEHILL FIGHT

(CIVIL WARS, 1642)

N<sup>A</sup>KED and grey the Cotswolds stand  
 Beneath the autumn sun,  
 And the stubble-fields on either hand  
 Where Stour and Avon run.  
 There is no change in the patient land  
 That has bred us every one.

She should have passed in cloud and fire  
 And saved us from this sin  
 Of war—red war—'twixt child and sire,  
 Household and kith and kin,  
 In the heart of a sleepy Midland shire,  
 With the harvest scarcely in.

But there is no change as we meet at last  
 On the brow-head or the plain,  
 And the raw astonished ranks stand fast  
 To slay or to be slain  
 By the men they knew in the kindly past  
 That shall never come again—

By the men they met at dance or chase,  
 In the tavern or the hall,  
 At the justice-bench and the market-place,  
 At the cudgel-play or brawl—  
 Of their own blood and speech and race,  
 Comrades or neighbours all!

More bitter than death this day must prove  
 Whichever way it go,  
 For the brothers of the maids we love  
 Make ready to lay low  
 Their sisters' sweethearts, as we move  
 Against our dearest foe.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Thank Heaven! At last the trumpets peal  
Before our strength gives way.  
For King or for the Commonweal—  
No matter which they say,  
The first dry rattle of new-drawn steel  
Changes the world to-day!

### THE DUTCH IN THE MEDWAY

(1664-72)

**I**F WARS were won by feasting,  
Or victory by song,  
Or safety found in sleeping sound,  
How England would be strong!  
But honour and dominion  
Are not maintained so.  
They're only got by sword and shot,  
*And this the Dutchmen know!*

The moneys that should feed us  
You spend on your delight,  
How can you then have sailor-men  
To aid you in your fight?  
Our fish and cheese are rotten,  
Which makes the scurvy grow—  
We cannot serve you if we starve,  
*And this the Dutchmen know!*

Our ships in every harbour  
Be neither whole nor sound,  
And, when we seek to mend a leak,  
No oakum can be found;  
Or, if it is, the caulkers,  
And carpenters also,  
For lack of pay have gone away,  
*And this the Dutchmen know!*

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Mere powder, guns, and bullets,  
We scarce can get at all;  
Their price was spent in merriment  
And revel at Whitehall,  
While we in tattered doublets  
From ship to ship must row,  
Beseeching friends for odds and ends—  
*And this the Dutchmen know!*

No King will heed our warnings,  
No Court will pay our claims—  
Our King and Court for their disport  
Do sell the very Thames!  
For, now De Ruyter's topsails  
Off naked Chatham show,  
We dare not meet him with our fleet—  
*And this the Dutchmen know!*

### "BROWN BESS"

(THE ARMY MUSKET—1700-1815)

**I**N THE days of lace-ruffles, perukes and brocade  
Brown Bess was a partner whom none could despise—  
An out-spoken, flinty-lipped, brazen-faced jade,  
With a habit of looking men straight in the eyes—  
At Blenheim and Ramillies fops would confess  
They were pierced to the heart by the charms of Brown  
Bess.

Though her sight was not long and her weight was not  
small,  
Yet her actions were winning, her language was clear;  
And everyone bowed as she opened the ball  
On the arm of some high-gaitered, grim grenadier.  
Half Europe admitted the striking success  
Of the dances and routs that were given by Brown Bess.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

When ruffles were turned into stiff leather stocks,  
And people wore pigtails instead of perukes,  
Brown Bess never altered her iron-grey locks.  
She knew she was valued for more than her looks.  
“Oh, powder and patches was always my dress,  
And I think I am killing enough,” said Brown Bess.

So she followed her red-coats, whatever they did,  
From the heights of Quebec to the plains of Assaye,  
From Gibraltar to Acre, Cape Town and Madrid,  
And nothing about her was changed on the way;  
(But most of the Empire which now we possess  
Was won through those years by old-fashioned Brown  
Bess.)

In stubborn retreat or in stately advance,  
From the Portugal coast to the cork-woods of Spain,  
She had puzzled some excellent Marshals of France  
Till none of them wanted to meet her again:  
But later, near Brussels, Napoleon—no less—  
Arranged for a Waterloo ball with Brown Bess.

She had danced till the dawn of that terrible day—  
She danced till the dusk of more terrible night,  
And before her linked squares his battalions gave way,  
And her long fierce quadrilles put his lancers to flight:  
And when his gilt carriage drove off in the press,  
“I have danced my last dance for the world!” said Brown  
Bess.

If you go to Museums—there’s one in Whitehall—  
Where old weapons are shown with their names writ  
beneath,  
You will find her, upstanding, her back to the wall,  
As stiff as a ramrod, the flint in her teeth.  
And if ever we English had reason to bless  
Any arm save our mothers’, that arm is Brown Bess!

THE AMERICAN REBELLION

(1776)

BEFORE

'T WAS not while England's sword unsheathed  
Put half a world to flight,  
Nor while their new-built cities breathed  
Secure behind her might;  
Not while she poured from Pole to Line  
Treasure and ships and men—  
These worshippers at Freedom's shrine  
They did not quit her then!

Not till their foes were driven forth  
By England o'er the main—  
Not till the Frenchman from the North  
Had gone with shattered Spain;  
Not till the clean-swept oceans showed  
No hostile flag unrolled,  
Did they remember what they owed  
To Freedom—and were bold!

AFTER

T HE snow lies thick on Valley Forge,  
The ice on the Delaware,  
But the poor dead soldiers of King George  
They neither know nor care.

Not though the earliest primrose break  
On the sunny side of the lane,  
And scuffling rookeries awake  
Their England's spring again.

They will not stir when the drifts are gone,  
Or the ice melts out of the bay:  
And the men that served with Washington  
Lie all as still as they.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

They will not stir though the mayflower blows  
In the moist dark woods of pine,  
And every rock-strewn pasture shows  
Mullein and columbine.

Each for his land, in a fair fight,  
Encountered, strove, and died,  
And the kindly earth that knows no spite  
Covers them side by side.

She is too busy to think of war;  
She has all the world to make gay;  
And, behold, the yearly flowers are  
Where they were in our fathers' day!

Golden-rod by the pasture-wall  
When the columbine is dead,  
And sumach leaves that turn, in fall,  
Bright as the blood they shed.

## THE FRENCH WARS

### (NAPOLEONIC)

THE boats of Newhaven and Folkestone and Dover  
To Dieppe and Boulogne and to Calais cross over;  
And in each of those runs there is not a square yard  
Where the English and French haven't fought and fought  
hard!

If the ships that were sunk could be floated once more,  
They'd stretch like a raft from the shore to the shore,  
And we'd see, as we crossed, every pattern and plan  
Of ship that was built since sea-fighting began.

There'd be biremes and brigantines, cutters and sloops,  
Cogs, carracks and galleons with gay gilded poops—  
Hoys, caravels, ketches, corvettes and the rest,  
As thick as regattas, from Ramsgate to Brest.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

But the galleys of Cæsar, the squadrons of Sluys,  
And Nelson's crack frigates are hid from our eyes,  
Where the high Seventy-fours of Napoleon's days  
Lie down with Deal luggers and French *chasse-marées*.

They'll answer no signal—they rest on the ooze,  
With their honey-combed guns and their skeleton crews—  
And racing above them, through sunshine or gale,  
The Cross-Channel packets come in with the Mail.

Then the poor sea-sick passengers, English and French,  
Must open their trunks on the Custom-house bench,  
While the officers rummage for smuggled cigars  
And nobody thinks of our blood-thirsty wars!

### BIG STEAMERS

1914-18

“OH, WHERE are you going to, all you Big Steamers,  
With England's own coal, up and down the salt seas?”  
“We are going to fetch you your bread and your butter,  
Your beef, pork, and mutton, eggs, apples, and cheese.”

“And where will you fetch it from, all you Big Steamers,  
And where shall I write you when you are away?”  
“We fetch it from Melbourne, Quebec, and Vancouver—  
Address us at Hobart, Hong-Kong, and Bombay.”

“But if anything happened to all you Big Steamers,  
And suppose you were wrecked up and down the salt sea?”  
“Then you'd have no coffee or bacon for breakfast,  
And you'd have no muffins or toast for your tea.”

“Then I'll pray for fine weather for all you Big Steamers,  
For little blue billows and breezes so soft.”  
“Oh, billows and breezes don't bother Big Steamers,  
For we're iron below and steel-rigging aloft.”

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

"Then I'll build a new lighthouse for all you Big Steamers,  
With plenty wise pilots to pilot you through."

"Oh, the Channel's as bright as a ball-room already,  
And pilots are thicker than pilchards at Looe."

"Then what can I do for you, all you Big Steamers,  
Oh, what can I do for your comfort and good?"

"Send out your big warships to watch your big waters,  
That no one may stop us from bringing you food."

*"For the bread that you eat and the biscuits you nibble,  
The sweets that you suck and the joints that you carve,  
They are brought to you daily by all us Big Steamers—  
And if any one hinders our coming you'll starve!"*

## THE SECRET OF THE MACHINES

(MODERN MACHINERY)

WE WERE taken from the ore-bed and the mine,  
We were melted in the furnace and the pit—  
We were cast and wrought and hammered to design,  
We were cut and filed and tooled and gauged to fit.  
Some water, coal, and oil is all we ask,  
And a thousandth of an inch to give us play:  
And now, if you will set us to our task,  
We will serve you four and twenty hours a day!

We can pull and haul and push and lift and drive,  
We can print and plough and weave and heat and light,  
We can run and race and swim and fly and dive,  
We can see and hear and count and read and write!

Would you call a friend from half across the world?  
If you'll let us have his name and town and state,  
You shall see and hear your crackling question hurled  
Across the arch of heaven while you wait.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Has he answered? Does he need you at his side?  
You can start this very evening if you choose,  
And take the Western Ocean in the stride  
Of seventy thousand horses and some screws!

The boat-express is waiting your command!  
You will find the *Mauretania* at the quay,  
Till her captain turns the lever 'neath his hand,  
And the monstrous nine-decked city goes to sea.

Do you wish to make the mountains bare their head  
And lay their new-cut forests at your feet?  
Do you want to turn a river in its bed,  
Or plant a barren wilderness with wheat?  
Shall we pipe aloft and bring you water down  
From the never-failing cisterns of the snows,  
To work the mills and tramways in your town,  
And irrigate your orchards as it flows?

It is easy! Give us dynamite and drills!  
Watch the iron-shouldered rocks lie down and quake,  
As the thirsty desert-level floods and fills,  
And the valley we have dammed becomes a lake.

But remember, please, the Law by which we live,  
We are not built to comprehend a lie,  
We can neither love nor pity nor forgive.  
If you make a slip in handling us you die!  
We are greater than the Peoples or the Kings—  
Be humble, as you crawl beneath our rods!—  
Our touch can alter all created things,  
We are everything on earth—except The Gods!

*Though our smoke may hide the Heavens from your eyes,  
It will vanish and the stars will shine again,  
Because, for all our power and weight and size,  
We are nothing more than children of your brain!*

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE BELLS AND QUEEN VICTORIA

1911

"*G*AY go up and gay go down  
To ring the Bells of London Town."  
When London Town's asleep in bed  
You'll hear the Bells ring overhead.  
In excelsis gloria!  
Ringing for Victoria,  
Ringing for their mighty mistress—ten years dead!

THE BELLS:

Here is more gain than Gloriana guessed—  
Than Gloriana guessed or Indies bring—  
Than golden Indies bring. A Queen confessed—  
A Queen confessed that crowned her people King.  
Her people King, and crowned all Kings above,  
Above all Kings have crowned their Queen their love—  
Have crowned their love their Queen, their Queen their love!

Denying her, we do ourselves deny,  
Disowning her are we ourselves disowned.  
Mirror was she of our fidelity,  
And handmaid of our destiny enthroned;  
The very marrow of Youth's dream, and still  
Yoke-mate of wisest Age that worked her will!

Our fathers had declared to us her praise—  
Her praise the years had proven past all speech.  
And past all speech our loyal hearts always,  
Always our hearts lay open, each to each—  
Therefore men gave the treasure of their blood  
To this one woman—for she understood!

*Four o' the clock! Now all the world is still.*  
*Oh, London Bells, to all the world declare*  
*The Secret of the Empire—read who will!*  
*The Glory of the People—touch who dare!*

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### THE BELLS:

Power that has reached itself all kingly powers,

*St. Margaret's*: By love o'erpowered—

*St. Martin's*: By love o'erpowered—

*St. Clement Danes*: By love o'erpowered,

The greater power confers!

### THE BELLS:

For we were hers, as she, as she was ours,

*Bow Bells*: And she was ours—

*St. Paul's*: And she was ours—

*Westminster*: And she was ours,

As we, even we, were hers!

### THE BELLS:

As we were hers!

## THE GLORY OF THE GARDEN

OUR England is a garden that is full of stately views,  
Of borders, beds and shrubberies and lawns and avenues,  
With statues on the terraces and peacocks strutting by;  
But the Glory of the Garden lies in more than meets the  
eye.

For where the old thick laurels grow, along the thin red wall,  
You find the tool- and potting-sheds which are the heart of  
all;

The cold-frames and the hot-houses, the dungpits and the  
tanks,

The rollers, carts and drain-pipes, with the barrows and the  
planks.

And there you'll see the gardeners, the men and 'prentice  
boys

Told off to do as they are bid and do it without noise;

For, except when seeds are planted and we shout to scare the  
birds,

The Glory of the Garden it abideth not in words.

D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

And some can pot begonias and some can bud a rose,  
And some are hardly fit to trust with anything that grows;  
But they can roll and trim the lawns and sift the sand and  
    loam,  
For the Glory of the Garden occupieth all who come.

Our England is a garden, and such gardens are not made  
By singing:—"Oh, how beautiful!" and sitting in the shade,  
While better men than we go out and start their working lives  
At grubbing weeds from gravel-paths with broken dinner-  
    knives.

There's not a pair of legs so thin, there's not a head so thick,  
There's not a hand so weak and white, nor yet a heart so sick,  
But it can find some needful job that's crying to be done,  
For the Glory of the Garden glorifieth every one.

Then seek your job with thankfulness and work till further  
    orders,  
If it's only netting strawberries or killing slugs on borders;  
And when your back stops aching and your hands begin to  
    harden,  
You will find yourself a partner in the Glory of the Garden.

Oh, Adam was a gardener, and God who made him sees  
That half a proper gardener's work is done upon his knees,  
So when your work is finished, you can wash your hands and  
    pray  
For the Glory of the Garden, that it may not pass away!  
*And the Glory of the Garden it shall never pass away!*



VERSES FROM  
“LAND AND SEA TALES”  
1919-1923



## A PREFACE

TO ALL to whom this little book may come—  
Health for yourselves and those you hold most dear!  
Content abroad, and happiness at home,  
And—one grand Secret in your private ear:—  
*Nations have passed away and left no traces,  
And History gives the naked cause of it—  
One single, simple reason in all cases;  
They fell because their peoples were not fit.*

Now, though your Body be mis-shapen, blind,  
Lame, feverish, lacking substance, power or skill,  
Certain it is that men can school the Mind  
To school the sickliest Body to her will—  
As many have done, whose glory blazes still  
Like mighty flames in meanest lanterns lit:  
Wherefore, we pray the crippled, weak and ill —  
Be fit—be fit! In mind at first be fit!

And, though your Spirit seem uncouth or small,  
Stubborn as clay or shifting as the sand,  
Strengthen the Body, and the Body shall  
Strengthen the Spirit till she take command;  
As a bold rider brings his horse in hand  
At the tall fence, with voice and heel and bit,  
And leaps while all the field are at a stand.  
Be fit—be fit! In body next be fit!

*Nothing on earth—no Arts, no Gifts, nor Graces—  
No Fame, no Wealth—outweighs the want of it.  
This is the Law which every law embraces—  
Be fit—be fit! In mind and body be fit!*

The even heart that seldom slurs its beat—  
The cool head weighing what that heart desires—  
The measuring eye that guides the hands and feet—  
The Soul unbroken when the Body tires—  
These are the things our weary world requires  
Far more than superfluities of wit;  
Wherefore we pray you, sons of generous sires,  
Be fit—be fit! For Honour's sake be fit.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

*There is one lesson at all Times and Places—  
One changeless Truth on all things changing writ,  
For boys and girls, men, women, nations, races—  
Be fit—be fit! And once again, be fit!*

### THE JUNK AND THE DHOW

("An Unqualified Pilot")

ONCE a pair of savages found a stranded tree.

*(One-piecee stick-pidgin—two-piecee man.*

*Straddle-um—paddle-um—push-um off to sea.*

*That way Foleign Debbil-boat began.)*

But before, and before, and ever so long before

Any shape of sailing-craft was known,

The Junk and Dhow had a stern and a bow,

And a mast and a sail of their own—ahoy! alone!

As they crashed across the Oceans on their own!

Once there was a pirate-ship, being blown ashore—

*(Plitty soon pilum up, s'posee no can tack.*

*Seven-piecee stlong man pullum sta'boa'd oar.*

*That way bling her head aloud and sail-o back.)*

But before, and before, and ever so long before

Grand Commander Noah took the wheel,

The Junk and the Dhow, though they look like anyhow,

Had rudders reaching deep below their keel—ahoy! akeel!

As they laid the Eastern Seas beneath their keel!

Once there was a galliot yawing in a tide.

*(Too much foolee side-slip. How can stop?*

*Man catchee tea-box lid—lasha longaside.*

*That way make her plenty glip and sail first-chop.)*

But before, and before, and ever so long before

Any such contrivances were used,

The whole Confucian sea-board had standardised the lee-board,

And hauled it up or dropped it as they choosed—or chose  
—or chused!

According to the weather, when they cruised!

Once there was a caravel in a beam-sea roll—

*(Ca'go shiftee—alla dlistee—no can livee long.*

*S'posum' nail-o boa'd across—makee ploper hol'?*

*That way, ca'go sittum still, an' ship mo' stlong.)*

## D E F I N I T I V E   E D I T I O N

But before, and before, and ever so long before  
 Any square-rigged vessel hove in sight,  
 The Canton deep-sea craft carried bulkheads fore and aft,  
 And took good care to keep 'em water-tight—atite—atite!  
 From Amboyna to the Great Australian Bight!

Once there was a sailor-man singing just this way—  
*(Too muchee yowl-o, sickum best flend!*

*Singee all-same pullee lope—haul and belay!*

*Hully up and coilum down an'—bite off end!)*

But before, and before, and ever so long before

Any sort of chanty crossed our lips,

The Junk and the Dhow, though they look like anyhow,

Were the Mother and the Father of all Ships—ahoy!—  
 a'ships!

And of half the new inventions in our Ships!

From Tarifa to Formosa in our Ships!

From Socotra to Selankhor of the windlass and the  
 anchor,

And the Navigators' Compass in our Ships—ahoy!—  
 our Ships!

*(O, hully up and coilum down and—bite—off—end!)*

## THE MASTER-COOK

(" His Gift ")

WITH us there rade a Maister-Cook that came  
 From the Rochelle which is neere Angoulême.  
 Littel hee was, but rounder than a topp,  
 And his small berd hadde dipped in manie a soppe.  
 His honde was smother than beseemeth mann's,  
 And his discoorse was all of marzipans,<sup>1</sup>  
 Of tripes of Caen, or Burdeux snailés swote,<sup>2</sup>  
 And Sainte Menhoulde wher cooken piggés-foote.<sup>3</sup>  
 To Thoulouse and to Bress and Carcasson  
 For pyes and fowles and chesnottes hadde hee wonne;<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A kind of sticky sweetmeat.

<sup>2</sup> Bordeaux snails are specially large and sweet.

<sup>3</sup> They grill pigs'-feet still at St. Menhoulde, not far from Verdun, better than anywhere else in all the world.

<sup>4</sup> Gone—to get pâtés of ducks' liver at Toulouse; fatted poultry at Bourg in Bresse, on the road to Geneva; and very large chestnuts in sugar at Carcassonne, about forty miles from Toulouse.

Of hammés of Thuringie<sup>1</sup> colde hee prate,  
And well hee knew what Princes hadde on plate  
At Christmas-tide, from Artois to Gascogne.

Lordinges, quod hee, manne liveth nat alone  
By bred, but meatés rost and seethed, and broth,  
And purchasable<sup>2</sup> deinties, on mine othe.  
Honey and hote gingere well liketh hee,  
And whalés-flesch mortred<sup>3</sup> with spicerie.  
For, lat be all how man denie or carpe,<sup>4</sup>  
Him thries a daie his honger maketh sharpe,  
And setteth him at boorde<sup>5</sup> with hawkés eyne,  
Snuffing what dish is set beforne to deyne,  
Nor, till with meate he all-to fill to brim,  
None other matter nowher mooveth him.  
Lat holie Seintés sterve<sup>6</sup> as bookés boast,  
Most mannés soule is in his bellie most.  
For, as man thinketh in his hearte is hee,  
But, as hee eateth so his thought shall bee.  
And Holie Fader's self<sup>7</sup> (with reveraunce)  
Oweth to Cooke his port and his presaunce.  
Wherbye it cometh past disputison<sup>8</sup>  
Cooques over alle men have dominion,  
Which follow them as schippe her gouvernail.<sup>9</sup>  
Enoff of wordes—beginneth heere my tale:—

## THE HOUR OF THE ANGEL

(" Stalky ")

SOONER or late—in earnest or in jest—  
(But the stakes are no jest) Ithuriel's Hour  
Will spring on us, for the first time, the test  
Of our sole unbacked competence and power  
Up to the limit of our years and dower  
Of judgment—or beyond. But here we have  
Prepared long since our garland or our grave.

<sup>1</sup> This would probably be some sort of wild-boar ham from Germany.

<sup>2</sup> Expensive. <sup>3</sup> Beaten up. <sup>4</sup> Sneer or despise.

<sup>5</sup> Brings him to table. <sup>6</sup> Starve.

<sup>7</sup> The Pope himself, who depends on his cook for being healthy and well-fed.

<sup>8</sup> Dispute or argument.

<sup>9</sup> Men are influenced by their cooks as ships are steered by their rudders.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

For, at that hour, the sum of all our past,  
Act, habit, thought, and passion, shall be cast  
In one addition, be it more or less,  
And as that reading runs so shall we do;  
Meeting, astounded, victory at the last,  
Or, first and last, our own unworthiness.  
And none can change us though they die to save!

### THE LAST LAP

("The Burning of the *Sarah Sands*")

How do we know, by the bank-high river,  
Where the mired and sulky oxen wait,  
And it looks as though we might wait for ever,  
How do we know that the floods abate?  
There is no change in the current's brawling—  
Louder and harsher the fresher scolds;  
Yet we can feel she is falling, falling,  
And the more she threatens the less she holds.  
Down to the drift, with no word spoken,  
The wheel-chained wagons slither and slue. . . .  
*Achtung!* The back of the worst is broken!  
And—lash your leaders!—we're through—we're through!

How do we know, when the port-fog holds us  
Moored and helpless, a mile from the pier,  
And the week-long summer smother enfolds us—  
How do we know it is going to clear?  
There is no break in the blindfold weather,  
But, one and another, about the bay,  
The unseen capstans clink together,  
Getting ready to up and away.  
A pennon whimpers—the breeze has found us—  
A headsail jumps through the thinning haze.  
The whole hull follows, till—broad around us—  
The clean-swept ocean says: "Go your ways!"

How do we know, when the long fight rages,  
On the old, stale front that we cannot shake,  
And it looks as though we were locked for ages,  
How do we know they are going to break?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There is no lull in the level firing,  
Nothing has shifted except the sun.  
Yet we can feel they are tiring, tiring—  
Yet we can tell they are ripe to run.  
Something wavers, and, while we wonder,  
Their centre-trenches are emptying out,  
And, before their useless flanks go under,  
Our guns have pounded retreat to rout!

### A DEPARTURE

(“ The Parable of Boy Jones ”)

SINCE first the White Horse Banner blew free,  
By Hengist's horde unfurled,  
Nothing has changed on land or sea  
Of the things that steer the world.  
(As it was when the long-ships scudded through the gale  
So it is where the Liners go.)  
Time and Tide, they are both in a tale—  
“ Woe to the weaker—woe! ”

No charm can bridle the hard-mouthed wind  
Or smooth the fretting swell.  
No gift can alter the grey Sea's mind,  
But she serves the strong man well.  
(As it is when her uttermost deeps are stirred  
So it is where the quicksands show,)  
All the waters have but one word—  
“ Woe to the weaker—woe! ”

The feast is ended, the tales are told,  
The dawn is overdue,  
And we meet on the quay in the whistling cold  
Where the galley waits her crew.  
Out with the torches, they have flared too long,  
And bid the harpers go.  
Wind and warfare have but one song—  
“ Woe to the weaker—woe! ”

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Hail to the great oars gathering way,  
As the beach begins to slide!  
Hail to the war-shields' click and play  
As they lift along our side!  
Hail to the first wave over the bow—  
Slow for the sea-stroke! Slow!—  
All the benches are grunting now:—  
“*Woe to the weaker—woe!*”

### THE NURSES

(“The Bold 'Prentice”)

WHEN, with a pain he desires to explain to his servitors,  
Baby  
Howls himself black in the face, toothlessly striving to curse;  
And the six-months-old Mother begins to inquire of the  
Gods if it may be  
Tummy, or Temper, or Pins—what does the adequate Nurse?  
See! At a glance and a touch his trouble is guessed; and,  
thereafter,  
She juggles (unscared by his throes) with drops of hot water  
and spoons,  
Till the hiccoughs are broken by smiles, and the smiles pucker  
up into laughter,  
And he lies o'er her shoulder and crows, and she, as she  
nurses him, croons! . . .

When, at the head of the grade, tumultuous out of the cutting  
Pours the belated Express, roars at the night, and draws clear,  
Redly obscured or displayed by her fire-door's opening and  
shutting—  
Symbol of strength under stress—what does her small  
engineer?

Clamour and darkness encircle his way. Do they deafen or  
blind him?  
No!—nor the pace he must keep. He, being used to these  
things,  
Placidly follows his work, which is laying his mileage behind  
him,  
While his passengers placidly sleep, and he, as he nurses  
her, sings! . . .

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

When, with the gale at her heel, the ship lies down and  
recovers—  
Rolling through forty degrees, combing the stars with her  
tops,  
What says the man at the wheel, holding her straight as she  
hovers  
On the summits of wind-screening seas; steadying her as she  
drops?

Behind him the blasts without check from the Pole to the  
Tropic, pursue him,  
Heaving up, heaping high, slamming home, the surges he  
must not regard:  
Beneath him the crazy wet deck, and all Ocean on end to  
undo him:  
Above him one desperate sail, thrice-reefed but still buckling  
the yard!

Under his hand fleet the spokes and return, to be held or set  
free again;  
And she bows and makes shift to obey their behest, till the  
master-wave comes  
And her gunnel goes under in thunder and smokes, and she  
chokes in the trough of the sea again—  
Ere she can lift and make way to its crest; and he, as he  
nurses her, hums! . . .

*These have so utterly mastered their work that they work  
without thinking;  
Holding three-fifths of their brain in reserve for whatever betide.  
So, when catastrophe threatens, of colic, collision or sinking,  
They shunt the full gear into train, and take that small thing in  
their stride.*

### A COUNTING-OUT SONG

(" An English School ")

WHAT is the song the children sing  
When doorway lilacs bloom in Spring,  
And the Schools are loosed, and the games are played  
That were deadly earnest when Earth was made?

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Hear them chattering, shrill and hard,  
After dinner-time, out in the yard,  
As the sides are chosen and all submit  
To the chance of the lot that shall make them "It."

(Singing) "*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo!*  
*Catch a nigger by the toe!*  
*If he hollers let him go!*  
*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo!*  
*You—are—It!*"

Eenee, Mcenee, Mainee, and Mo  
Were the First Big Four of the Long Ago,  
When the Pole of the Earth sloped thirty degrees,  
And Central Europe began to freeze,  
And they needed Ambassadors staunch and stark  
To steady the Tribes in the gathering dark:  
But the frost was fierce and flesh was frail,  
So they launched a Magic that could not fail.

(Singing) "*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo!*  
*Hear the wolves across the snow!*  
*Some one has to kill 'em—so*  
*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo*  
*Make—you—It!*"

Slowly the Glacial Epoch passed,  
Central Europe thawed out at last;  
And, under the slush of the melting snows,  
The first dim shapes of the Nations rose.  
Rome, Britannia, Belgium, Gaul—  
Flood and avalanche fathered them all;  
And the First Big Four, as they watched the mess,  
Pitied Man in his helplessness.

(Singing) "*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo!*  
*Trouble starts when Nations grow.*  
*Some one has to stop it—so*  
*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo*  
*Make—you—It!*"

Thus it happened, but none can tell  
What was the Power behind the spell—  
Fear, or Duty, or Pride, or Faith—  
That sent men shuddering out to death—



# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

To cold and watching, and, worse than these,  
Work, more work, when they looked for ease—  
To the day's discomfort, the night's despair,  
In the hope of a prize that they never could share.

(Singing) "*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo!*  
*Man is born to Toil and Woe.*  
*One will cure the other—so*  
*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo*  
*Make—you—It."*

Once and again, as the Ice went North  
The grass crept up to the Firth of Forth.  
Once and again, as the Ice came South  
The glaciers ground over Lossiemouth.  
But, grass or glacier, cold or hot,  
The men went out who would rather not,  
And fought with the Tiger, the Pig and the Ape,  
To hammer the world into decent shape.

(Singing) "*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo!*  
*What's the use of doing so?*  
*Ask the Gods, for we don't know;*  
*But Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo*  
*Make—us—It!"*

Nothing is left of that terrible rune  
But a tag of gibberish tacked to a tune  
That ends the waiting and settles the claims  
Of children arguing over their games;  
For never yet has a boy been found  
To shirk his turn when the turn came round;  
Nor even a girl has been known to say  
"If you laugh at me I shan't play."

For— "*Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo,*  
*(Don't you let the grown-ups know!)*  
*You may hate it ever so,*  
*But if you're chose you're bound to go,*  
*When Eenee, Meenee, Mainee, Mo*  
*Make—you—It!"*

VERSES FROM  
“DEBITS AND CREDITS ”  
1919-1926



## THE CHANGELINGS

(R.N.V.R.)

(" Sea Constables ")

**O**R EVER the battered liners sank  
With their passengers to the dark,  
I was head of a Walworth Bank,  
And you were a grocer's clerk.

I was a dealer in stocks and shares,  
And you in butters and teas;  
And we both abandoned our own affairs  
And took to the dreadful seas.

Wet and worry about our ways—  
Panic, onset, and flight—  
Had us in charge for a thousand days  
And a thousand-year-long night.

We saw more than the nights could hide—  
More than the waves could keep—  
And—certain faces over the side  
Which do not go from our sleep.

We were more tired than words can tell  
While the pied craft fled by,  
And the swinging mounds of the Western swell  
Hoisted us Heavens-high . . .

Now there is nothing—not even our rank—  
To witness what we have been;  
And I am returned to my Walworth Bank,  
And you to your margarine!

## THE VINEYARD

(" Sea Constables ")

**A**T THE eleventh hour he came,  
But his wages were the same  
As ours who all day long had trod  
The wine-press of the Wrath of God.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

When he shouldered through the lines  
Of our cropped and mangled vines,  
His unjaded eye could scan  
How each hour had marked its man.

(Children of the morning-tide  
With the hosts of noon had died;  
And our noon contingents lay  
Dead with twilight's spent array.)

Since his back had felt no load,  
Virtue still in him abode;  
So he swiftly made his own  
Those last spoils we had not won.

We went home, delivered thence,  
Grudging him no recompense  
Till he portioned praise or blame  
To our works before he came.

*Till he showed us for our good—  
Deaf to mirth, and blind to scorn—  
How we might have best withstood  
Burdens that he had not borne!*

### “ BANQUET NIGHT ”

(“ ‘ In the Interests of the Brethren ’ ”)

“ ONCE in so often,” King Solomon said,  
Watching his quarrymen drill the stone,  
“ We will club our garlic and wine and bread  
And banquet together beneath my Throne.  
And all the Brethren shall come to that mess  
As Fellow-Craftsmen—no more and no less.

“ Send a swift shallop to Hiram of Tyre,  
Felling and floating our beautiful trees,  
Say that the Brethren and I desire  
Talk with our Brethren who use the seas.  
And we shall be happy to meet them at mess  
As Fellow-Craftsmen—no more and no less.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

"Carry this message to Hiram Abif—  
Excellent Master of forge and mine:—  
I and the Brethren would like it if  
He and the Brethren will come to dine  
(Garments from Bozrah or morning-dress)  
As Fellow-Craftsmen—no more and no less. .

"God gave the Hyssop and Cedar their place—  
Also the Bramble, the Fig and the Thorn—  
But that is no reason to black a man's face  
Because he is not what he hasn't been born.  
And, as touching the Temple, I hold and profess  
We are Fellow-Craftsmen—no more and no less."

So it was ordered and so it was done,  
And the hewers of wood and the Masons of Mark,  
With foc'sle hands of the Sidon run  
And Navy Lords from the *Royal Ark*,  
Came and sat down and were merry at mess  
As Fellow-Craftsmen—no more and no less.

*The Quarries are hotter than Hiram's forge,  
No one is safe from the dog-whips' reach.  
It's mostly snowing up Lebanon gorge,  
And it's always blowing off Joppa beach;  
But once in so often, the messenger brings  
Solomon's mandate: "Forget these things!  
Brother to Beggars and Fellow to Kings,  
Companion of Princes—forget these things!  
Fellow-Craftsman, forget these things!"*

### TO THE COMPANIONS

HORACE, Bk. V. Ode 17.

("The United Idolaters")

How comes it that, at even-tide,  
When level beams should show most truth,  
Man, failing, takes unfailing pride  
In memories of his frolic youth?

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Venus and Liber fill their hour;  
The games engage, the law-courts prove;  
Till hardened life breeds love of power  
Or Avarice, Age's final love.

Yet at the end, these comfort not—  
Nor any triumph Fate decrees—  
Compared with glorious, unforget-  
ten innocent enormities

Of frontless days before the beard,  
When, instant on the casual jest,  
The God Himself of Mirth appeared  
And snatched us to His heaving breast.

And we—not caring who He was  
But certain He would come again—  
Accepted all He brought to pass  
As Gods accept the lives of men . . .

Then He withdrew from sight and speech,  
Nor left a shrine. How comes it now,  
While Charon's keel grates on the beach,  
He calls so clear: "Rememberest thou?"

### THE CENTAURS

("The United Idolaters")

UP CAME the young Centaur-colts from the plains they  
were fathered in—  
Curious, awkward, afraid.  
Burrs on their hocks and their tails, they were branded and  
gathered in  
Mobs and run up to the yard to be made.

Starting and shying at straws, with sidlings and plungings,  
Buckings and whirlings and bolts;  
Greener than grass, but full-ripe for their bridlings and  
lungings,  
Up to the yards and to Chiron they bustled the colts . . .

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

First the light web and the cavesson; then the linked keys  
To jingle and turn on the tongue. Then, with cocked  
ears,  
The hours of watching and envy, while comrades at ease  
Passed and backed, making naught of these terrible  
gears.

Next, over-pride and its price at the low-seeming fence,  
Too oft and too easily taken—the world-beheld fall!  
And none in the yard except Chiron to doubt the immense,  
Irretrievable shame of it all! . . .

Last, the trained squadron, full-charge—the sound of a  
going  
Through dust and spun clods, and strong kicks, pelted  
in as they went,  
And repaid at top-speed; till the order to halt without  
slowing  
Showed every colt on his haunches—and Chiron content!

### “ LATE CAME THE GOD ”

(“ The Wish House ”)

LATE came the God, having sent his forerunners who  
were not regarded—

Late, but in wrath;  
Saying: “The wrong shall be paid, the contempt be  
rewarded

On all that she hath.”  
He poisoned the blade and struck home, the full bosom  
receiving  
The wound and the venom in one, past cure or relieving.

He made treaty with Time to stand still that the grief  
might be fresh—

Daily renewed and nightly pursued through her soul to  
her flesh—

Mornings of memory, noontides of agony, midnights  
unslaked for her,  
Till the stones of the streets of her Hells and her Paradise  
ached for her.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

So she lived while her body corrupted upon her.

And she called on the Night for a sign, and a Sign was  
allowed,  
And she builded an Altar and served by the light of her  
Vision—

Alone, without hope of regard or reward, but uncowed,  
Resolute, selfless, divine.

These things she did in Love's honour . . .  
What is a God beside Woman? Dust and derision!

### RAHERE

("The Wish House")

**R**AHERE, King Henry's Jester, feared by all the Norman  
Lords  
For his eye that pierced their bosoms, for his tongue that  
shamed their swords;  
Feed and flattered by the Churchmen—well they knew  
how deep he stood  
In dark Henry's crooked counsels—fell upon an evil mood.

Suddenly, his days before him and behind him seemed  
to stand  
Stripped and barren, fixed and fruitless, as those leagues  
of naked sand  
When St. Michael's ebb slinks outward to the bleak horizon-  
bound,  
And the trampling wide-mouthed waters are withdrawn  
from sight and sound.

Then a Horror of Great Darkness sunk his spirit and,  
anon,  
(Who had seen him wince and whiten as he turned to walk  
alone)  
Followed Gilbert the Physician, and muttered in his ear,  
"Thou hast it, O my brother?" "Yea, I have it," said  
Rahere.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

"So it comes," said Gilbert smoothly, "man's most immanent distress.

'Tis a humour of the Spirit which abhorreth all excess;  
And, whatever breed the surfeit—Wealth, or Wit, or Power,  
or Fame  
(And thou hast each) the Spirit laboureth to expel the same.

"Hence the dulled eye's deep self-loathing—hence the loaded leaden brow;  
Hence the burden of Wanhope that aches thy soul and body now.  
Ay, the merriest fool must face it, and the wisest Doctor learn;  
For it comes—it comes," said Gilbert, "as it passes—to return."

But Rahere was in his torment, and he wandered, dumb and far,  
Till he came to reeking Smithfield where the crowded gallows are,  
(Followed Gilbert the Physician) and beneath the wry-necked dead,  
Sat a leper and his woman, very merry, breaking bread.

He was cloaked from chin to ankle—faceless, fingerless, obscene—  
Mere corruption swaddled man-wise, but the woman whole and clean;  
And she waited on him crooning, and Rahere beheld the twain,  
Each delighting in the other, and he checked and groaned again.

"So it comes,—it comes," said Gilbert, "as it came when Life began.  
'Tis a motion of the Spirit that revealeth God to man.  
In the shape of Love exceeding, which regards not taint or fall,  
Since in perfect Love, saith Scripture, can be no excess at all.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

"Hence the eye that sees no blemish—hence the hour that  
holds no shame.  
Hence the Soul assured the Essence and the Substance are  
the same.  
Nay, the meanest need not miss it, though the mightier  
pass it by;  
For it comes—it comes," said Gilbert, "and, thou seest, it  
does not die!"

### THE SURVIVAL

HORACE, Bk. V. Ode 22.

("The Janeites")

SECURELY, after days  
Unnumbered, I behold  
Kings mourn that promised praise  
Their cheating bards foretold.

Of earth-constricting wars,  
Of Princes passed in chains,  
Of deeds out-shining stars,  
No word or voice remains.

Yet furthest times receive,  
And to fresh praise restore,  
Mere breath of flutes at eve,  
Mere seaweed on the shore.

A smoke of sacrifice;  
A chosen myrtle-wreath;  
An harlot's altered eyes;  
A rage 'gainst love or death;

Glazed snow beneath the moon;  
The surge of storm-bowed trees—  
The Cæsars perished soon,  
And Rome Herself: But these

Endure while Empires fall  
And Gods for Gods make room . . . .  
Which greater God than all  
Imposed the amazing doom?

JANE'S MARRIAGE

(" The Janeites ")

JANE went to Paradise:  
That was only fair.  
Good Sir Walter followed her,  
And armed her up the stair.  
Henry and Tobias,  
And Miguel of Spain,  
Stood with Shakespeare at the top  
To welcome Jane—

Then the Three Archangels  
Offered out of hand  
Anything in Heaven's gift  
That she might command.  
Azrael's eyes upon her,  
Raphael's wings above,  
Michael's sword against her heart,  
Jane said: " Love."

Instantly the under-  
standing Seraphim  
Laid their fingers on their lips  
And went to look for him.  
Stole across the Zodiac,  
Harnessed Charles's Wain,  
And whispered round the Nebulæ  
" Who loved Jane?"

In a private limbo  
Where none had thought to look,  
Sat a Hampshire gentleman  
Reading of a book.  
It was called *Persuasion*,  
And it told the plain  
Story of the love between  
Him and Jane.

He heard the question  
Circle Heaven through—  
Closed the book and answered:  
" I did—and do!"

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Quietly but speedily  
(As Captain Wentworth moved)  
Entered into Paradise  
The man Jane loved!

*Jane lies in Winchester, blessèd be her shade!  
Praise the Lord for making her, and her for all she made.  
And, while the stones of Winchester—or Milsom Street—remain,  
Glory, Love, and Honour unto England's Jane!*

THE PORTENT

HORACE, Bk. V. Ode 20

("The Prophet and the Country")

O H, LATE withdrawn from human-kind  
And following dreams we never knew!  
Varus, what dream has Fate assigned  
To trouble you?

Such virtue as commends the law  
Of Virtue to the vulgar horde  
Suffices not. You needs must draw  
A righteous sword;

And, flagrant in well-doing, smite  
The priests of Bacchus at their fane,  
Lest any worshipper invite  
The God again.

Whence public strife and naked crime  
And—deadlier than the cup you shun—  
A people schooled to mock, in time,  
All law—not one.

Cease, then, to fashion State-made sin,  
Nor give thy children cause to doubt  
That Virtue springs from iron within—  
Not lead without.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

ALNASCHAR AND THE OXEN

("The Bull that Thought")

THERE'S a pasture in a valley where the hanging woods  
divide,  
And a Herd lies down and ruminates in peace;  
Where the pheasant rules the nooning, and the owl the  
twilight-tide,  
And the war-cries of our world die out and cease.  
Here I cast aside the burden that each weary week-day brings  
And, delivered from the shadows I pursue,  
On peaceful, postless Sabbaths I consider Weighty Things—  
Such as Sussex Cattle feeding in the dew!

At the gate beside the river where the trouty shallows  
brawl,  
I know the pride that Lobengula felt,  
When he bade the bars be lowered of the Royal Cattle Kraal,  
And fifteen miles of oxen took the veldt.  
From the walls of Bulawayo in unbroken file they came  
To where the Mount of Council cuts the blue . . .  
I have only six and twenty, but the principle's the same  
With my Sussex Cattle feeding in the dew!

To a luscious sound of tearing, where the clovered herbage  
rips,  
Level-backed and level-bellied watch 'em move—  
See those shoulders, guess that heart-girth, praise those loins,  
admire those hips,  
And the tail set low for flesh to make above!  
Count the broad unblemished muzzles, test the kindly  
mellow skin,  
And, where yon heifer lifts her head at call,  
Mark the bosom's just abundance 'neath the gay and clean-  
cut chin,  
And those eyes of Juno, overlooking all!

Here is colour, form and substance! I will put it to the  
proof  
And, next season, in my lodges shall be born  
Some very Bull of Mithras, flawless from his agate hoof  
To his even-branching, ivory, dusk-tipped horn.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

He shall mate with block-square virgins—kings shall seek  
his like in vain,  
While I multiply his stock a thousandfold,  
Till an hungry world extol me, builder of a lofty strain  
That turns one standard ton at two years old!

*There's a valley, under oakwood, where a man may dream his  
dream,  
In the milky breath of cattle laid at ease,  
Till the moon o'ertops the alders, and her image chills the stream,  
And the river-mist runs silver round their knees!  
Now the footpaths fade and vanish; now the ferny clumps  
deceive;  
Now the hedgerow-folk possess their fields anew;  
Now the Herd is lost in darkness, and I bless them as I leave,  
My Sussex Cattle feeding in the dew!*

### GIPSY VANS

("A Madonna of the Trenches")

UNLESS you come of the gipsy stock  
That steals by night and day,  
Lock your heart with a double lock  
And throw the key away.  
Bury it under the blackest stone  
Beneath your father's hearth,  
And keep your eyes on your lawful own  
And your feet to the proper path.  
*Then you can stand at your door and mock  
When the gipsy vans come through . . .  
For it isn't right that the Gorgio stock  
Should live as the Romany do.*

Unless you come of the gipsy blood  
That takes and never spares,  
Bide content with your given good  
And follow your own affairs.  
Plough and harrow and roll your land,  
And sow what ought to be sowed;  
But never let loose your heart from your hand,  
Nor flitter it down the road!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

*Then you can thrive on your boughten food  
As the gipsy vans come through . . .  
For it isn't nature the Gorgio blood  
Should love as the Romany do.*

Unless you carry the gipsy eyes  
That see but seldom weep,  
Keep your head from the naked skies  
Or the stars'll trouble your sleep.  
Watch your moon through your window-pane  
And take what weather she brews;  
But don't run out in the midnight rain  
Nor home in the morning dews.

*Then you can huddle and shut your eyes  
As the gipsy vans come through . . .  
For it isn't fitting the Gorgio ryes  
Should walk as the Romany do.*

Unless you come of the gipsy race  
That counts all time the same,  
Be you careful of Time and Place  
And Judgment and Good Name:  
Lose your life for to live your life  
The way that you ought to do;  
And when you are finished, your God and your wife  
And the Gipsies'll laugh at you!

*Then you can rot in your burying-place  
As the gipsy vans come through . . .  
For it isn't reason the Gorgio race  
Should die as the Romany do.*

## THE BIRTHRIGHT

("The Propagation of Knowledge")

*THE miracle of our land's speech—so known  
And long received, none marvel when 'tis shown!*

We have such wealth as Rome at her most pride  
Had not or (having) scattered not so wide;  
Nor with such arrant prodigality  
Beneath her any pagan's foot let lie . . .  
Lo! Diamond that cost some half their days  
To find and t'other half to bring to blaze:



Rubies of every heat, wherethrough we scan  
 The fiercer and more fiery heart of man:  
 Emerald that with the uplifted billow vies,  
 And Sapphires evening remembered skies:  
 Pearl perfect, as immortal tears must show,  
 Bred, in deep waters, of a piercing woe;  
 And tender Turkis, so with charms y-writ,  
 Of woven gold, Time dares not bite on it.  
 Thereafter, in all manners worked and set,  
 Jade, coral, amber, crystal, ivories, jet,—  
 Showing no more than various fancies, yet  
 Each a Life's token or Love's amulet. . . .  
 Which things, through timeless arrogance of use,  
 We neither guard nor garner, but abuse;  
 So that our scholars—nay, our children—fling  
 In sport or jest treasure to arm a King;  
 And the gross crowd, at feast or market, hold  
 Traffic perforce with dust of gems and gold!

# A LEGEND OF TRUTH

(" A Friend of the Family ")

ONCE on a time, the ancient legends tell,  
 Truth, rising from the bottom of her well,  
 Looked on the world, but, hearing how it lied,  
 Returned to her seclusion horrified.  
 There she abode, so conscious of her worth,  
 Not even Pilate's Question called her forth,  
 Nor Galileo, kneeling to deny  
 The Laws that hold our Planet 'neath the sky.  
 Meantime, her kindlier sister, whom men call  
 Fiction, did all her work and more than all,  
 With so much zeal, devotion, tact, and care,  
 That no one noticed Truth was elsewhere.

Then came a War when, bombed and gassed and mined,  
 Truth rose once more, perforce, to meet mankind,  
 And through the dust and glare and wreck of things,  
 Beheld a phantom on unbalanced wings,  
 Reeling and groping, dazed, dishevelled, dumb,  
 But semaphoring direr deeds to come.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Truth hailed and bade her stand; the quavering shade  
Clung to her knees and babbled, "Sister, aid!  
I am—I was—thy Deputy, and men  
Besought me for my useful tongue or pen  
To gloss their gentle deeds, and I complied,  
And they, and thy demands, were satisfied.  
But this—" she pointed o'er the blistered plain,  
Where men as Gods and devils wrought amain—  
"This is beyond me! Take thy work again."

Tablets and pen transferred, she fled afar,  
And Truth assumed the record of the War . . .  
She saw, she heard, she read, she tried to tell  
Facts beyond precedent and parallel—  
Unfit to hint or breathe, much less to write,  
But happening every minute, day and night.  
She called for proof. It came. The dossiers grew.  
She marked them, first, "Return. This *can't* be true."  
Then, underneath the cold official word:  
"This is not really half of what occurred."

She faced herself at last, the story runs,  
And telegraphed her sister: "Come at once.  
Facts out of hand. Unable overtake  
Without your aid. Come back for Truth's own sake!  
Co-equal rank and powers if you agree.  
*They need us both, but you far more than me!*"

### WE AND THEY

("A Friend of the Family")

FATHER, Mother, and Me,  
Sister and Auntie say  
All the people like us are We,  
And every one else is They.  
And They live over the sea,  
While We live over the way,  
But—would you believe it?—They look upon We  
As only a sort of They!

We eat pork and beef  
With cow-horn-handled knives.  
They who gobble Their rice off a leaf,  
Are horrified out of Their lives;

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

While They who live up a tree,  
And feast on grubs and clay,  
(Isn't it scandalous?) look upon We  
As a simply disgusting They!

We shoot birds with a gun.  
They stick lions with spears.  
Their full-dress is un-.  
We dress up to Our ears.  
They like 'Their friends for tea.  
We like Our friends to stay;  
And, after all that, They look upon We  
As an utterly ignorant They!

We eat kitcheny food.  
We have doors that latch.  
They drink milk or blood,  
Under an open thatch.  
We have Doctors to fee.  
They have Wizards to pay.  
And (impudent heathen!) They look upon We  
As a quite impossible They!

All good people agree,  
And all good people say,  
All nice people, like Us, are We  
And every one else is They:  
But if you cross over the sea,  
Instead of over the way,  
You may end by (think of it!) looking on We  
As only a sort of They!

### UNTIMELY

("The Eye of Allah")

**N**OTHING in life has been made by man for man's using  
But it was shown long since to man in ages  
Lost as the name of the maker of it,

Who received oppression and shame for his wages—  
Hate, avoidance, and scorn in his daily dealings—  
Until he perished, wholly confounded.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

More to be pitied than he are the wise  
Souls which foresaw the evil of loosing  
Knowledge or Art before time, and aborted  
Noble devices and deep-wrought healings,  
Lest offence should arise.

Heaven delivers on earth the Hour that cannot be thwarted,  
Neither advanced, at the price of a world nor a soul, and its  
Prophet  
Comes through the blood of the vanguards who dreamed—  
too soon—it had sounded.

### THE LAST ODE

NOV. 27, 8 B. C.

HORACE, Bk. V. Ode 31

(“ The Eye of Allah ”)

AS WATCHERS couched beneath a Bantine oak,  
Hearing the dawn-wind stir,  
Know that the present strength of night is broke  
Though no dawn threaten her  
Till dawn's appointed hour—so Virgil died,  
Aware of change at hand, and prophesied

Change upon all the Eternal Gods had made  
And on the Gods alike—  
Fated as dawn but, as the dawn, delayed  
Till the just hour should strike—

A Star new-risen above the living and dead;  
And the lost shades that were our loves restored  
As lovers, and for ever. So he said;  
Having received the word . . .

Maecenas waits me on the Esquiline:  
Thither to-night go I. . . .  
And shall this dawn restore us, Virgil mine,  
To dawn? Beneath what sky?

THE BURDEN

("The Gardener")

ONE grief on me is laid  
 Each day of every year,  
 Wherein no soul can aid,  
 Whereof no soul can hear:  
 Whereto no end is seen  
 Except to grieve again—  
 Ah, Mary Magdalene,  
 Where is there greater pain?

To dream on dear disgrace  
 Each hour of every day—  
 To bring no honest face  
 To aught I do or say:  
 To lie from morn till e'en—  
 To know my lies are vain—  
 Ah, Mary Magdalene,  
 Where can be greater pain?

To watch my steadfast fear  
 Attend mine every way  
 Each day of every year—  
 Each hour of every day:  
 To burn, and chill between—  
 To quake and rage again—  
 Ah, Mary Magdalene,  
 Where shall be greater pain?

*One grave to me was given—  
 To guard till Judgment Day—  
 But God looked down from Heaven  
 And rolled the Stone away!  
 One day of all my years—  
 One hour of that one day—  
 His Angel saw my tears  
 And rolled the Stone away!*

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

## THE SUPPORTS

(" On the Gate ")

*Song of the Waiting Seraphs*

*Full Chorus.*

*To Him Who bade the Heavens abide, yet cease not from their motion,*

*To Him Who tames the moonstruck tide twice a day round Ocean-- -*

*Let His Names be magnified in all poor folks' devotion!*

*Powers and Gifts.*

Not for Prophecies or Powers, Visions, Gifts, or Graces,  
But the unregardful hours that grind us in our places  
With the burden on our backs, the weather in our faces.

*Toils.*

Not for any Miracle of easy Loaves and Fishes,  
But for doing, 'gainst our will, work against our wishes—  
Such as finding food to fill daily-emptied dishes.

*Glories.*

Not for Voices, Harps or Wings or rapt illumination,  
But the grosser Self that springs of use and occupation,  
Into which the Spirit clings as her last salvation.

*Powers, Glories, Toils, and Gifts.*

*He Who launched our Ship of Fools many anchors gave us,  
If one gale should start them all--one collision stave us.*

*Praise Him for the petty creeds  
That prescribe in paltry needs  
Solemn rites to trivial deeds and, by small things, save us!)*

*Services and Loves.*

Heart may fail, and Strength outwear, and Purpose turn to  
Loathing,  
At the everyday affair of business, meals, and clothing,  
Aids a bulkhead 'twixt Despair and the Edge of Nothing.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

### *Patiences.*

*(Praise Him, then, Who orders it that, though Earth be flaring,  
And the crazy skies are lit  
By the searchlights of the Pit,  
Man should not depart a whit from his wonted bearing.)*

### *Hopes.*

He Who bids the wild-swans' host still maintain their  
flight on  
Air-roads over islands lost—  
Ages since 'neath Ocean lost—  
Beaches of some sunken coast their fathers would alight on—

### *Faiths.*

*He shall guide us through this dark, not by new-blown glories,  
But by every ancient mark our fathers used before us,  
Till our children ground their ark where the proper shore is.*

### *Services, Patiences, Faiths, Hopes, and Loves.*

He Who used the clay that clings on our boots to make us,  
Shall not suffer earthly things to remove or shake us:  
But, when Man denies His Lord,  
Habit without Fleet or Sword  
(Custom without threat or word)  
Sees the ancient fanes restored—the timeless rites o'ertake  
us!

### *Full Chorus.*

*For He Who makes the Mountains smoke and rives the Hills  
asunder,  
And, to-morrow, leads the grass—  
Mere unconquerable grass—  
Where the fuming crater was, to heal and hide it under,  
He shall not—He shall not—  
Shall not lay on us the yoke of too long Fear and Wonder!*

VERSES FROM  
“LIMITS AND RENEWALS”

1932





## GERTRUDE'S PRAYER

(" Dayspring Mishandled ")

**T**HAT which is marred at birth Time shall not mend,  
Nor water out of bitter well make clean;  
All evil thing returneth at the end,  
Or elseway walketh in our blood unseen.  
Whereby the more is sorrow in certaine—  
Dayspring mishandled cometh not againe.

To-bruizèd be that slender, sterting spray  
Out of the oake's rind that should betide  
A branch of girt and goodliness, straightway  
Her spring is turnèd on herself, and wried  
And knotted like some gall or veiney wen.—  
Dayspring mishandled cometh not agen.

Noontide repayeth never morning-bliss—  
Sith noon to morn is incomparable;  
And, so it be our dawning goth amiss,  
None other after-hour serveth well.  
Ah! Jesu-Moder, pitie my oe paine—  
Dayspring mishandled cometh not againe!

## DINAH IN HEAVEN

(" The Woman in his Life ")

**S**HE did not know that she was dead,  
But, when the pang was o'er,  
Sat down to wait her Master's tread  
Upon the Golden Floor,

With ears full-cock and anxious eyes,  
Impatiently resigned;  
But ignorant that Paradise  
Did not admit her kind.

Persons with Haloes, Harps, and Wings  
Assembled and reproved;  
Or talked to her of Heavenly things,  
But Dinah never moved.

RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

There was one step along the Stair  
That led to Heaven's Gate;  
And, till she heard it, her affair  
Was—she explained—to wait.

And she explained with flattened ear,  
Bared lip and milky tooth—  
Storming against Ithuriel's Spear  
That only proved her truth!

Sudden—far down the Bridge of Ghosts  
That anxious spirits clomb—  
She caught that step in all the hosts,  
And knew that he had come.

She left them wondering what to do,  
But not a doubt had she.  
Swifter than her own squeal she flew  
Across the Glassy Sea;

Flushing the Cherubs everywhere,  
And skidding as she ran,  
She refuged under Peter's Chair  
And waited for her man.

There spoke a Spirit out of the press,  
'Said:—"Have you any here  
That saved a fool from drunkenness,  
And a coward from his fear?"

"That turned a soul from dark to day  
When other help was vain;  
That snatched it from Wanhope and made  
A cur a man again?"

"Enter and look," said Peter then,  
And set The Gate ajar.  
"If I know aught of women and men  
I trow she is not far."

"Neither by virtue, speech nor art  
Nor hope of grace to win;  
But godless innocence of heart  
That never heard of sin:

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

“ Neither by beauty nor belief  
Nor white example shown.  
Something a wanton—more a thief—  
But—most of all—mine own.”

“ Enter and look,” said Peter then,  
“ And send you well to speed;  
But, for all that I know of women and men  
Your riddle is hard to read.”

Then flew Dinah from under the Chair,  
Into his arms she flew—  
And licked his face from chin to hair  
And Peter passed them through!

### FOUR-FEET

(“ The Woman in his Life ”)

I HAVE done mostly what most men do,  
And pushed it out of my mind;  
But I can't forget, if I wanted to,  
Four-Foot trotting behind.

Day after day, the whole day through—  
Wherever my road inclined—  
Four-Foot said, “ I am coming with you! ”  
And trotted along behind.

Now I must go by some other round—  
Which I shall never find—  
Somewhere that does not carry the sound  
Of Four-Foot trotting behind.

### THE TOTEM

(“ The Tie ”)

ERÉ the mother's milk had dried  
On my lips, the Brethren came—  
Tore me from my nurse's side,  
And bestowed on me a name

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Infamously overtrue—

Such as "Bunny," "Stinker," "Podge"; —  
But, whatever I should do,  
Mine for ever in the Lodge.

Then they taught with palm and toe—

Then I learned with yelps and tears--  
All the Armoured Man should know  
Through his Seven Secret Years . . .

Last, oppressing as oppressed,

I was loosed to go my ways  
With a Totem on my breast  
Governing my nights and days—

Ancient and unbribeable,

By the virtue of its Name—  
Which, however oft I fell,  
Lashed me back into The Game.

And the World, that never knew,

Saw no more beneath my chin  
Than a patch of rainbow-hue,  
Mixed as Life and crude as Sin.

### THE DISCIPLE

("The Church that was at Antioch")

**H**E THAT hath a Gospel  
To loose upon Mankind,  
Though he serve it utterly—  
Body, soul and mind—  
Though he go to Calvary  
Daily for its gain—  
It is His Disciple  
Shall make his labour vain.

He that hath a Gospel

For all earth to own—  
Though he etch it on the steel,  
Or carve it on the stone—

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Not to be misdoubted  
Through the after-days—  
It is His Disciple  
Shall read it many ways.

It is His Disciple  
(Ere Those Bones are dust)  
Who shall change the Charter,  
Who shall split the Trust—  
Amplify distinctions,  
Rationalise the Claim;  
Preaching that the Master  
Would have done the same.

It is His Disciple  
Who shall tell us how  
Much the Master would have scrapped  
Had he lived till now—  
What he would have modified  
Of what he said before.  
It is His Disciple  
Shall do this and more. . . .

He that hath a Gospel  
Whereby Heaven is won  
(Carpenter, or cameleer,  
Or Maya's dreaming son),  
Many swords shall pierce Him,  
Mingling blood with gall;  
But His Own Disciple  
Shall wound Him worst of all!

### THE PLAYMATE

(" Aunt Ellen ")

SHE is not Folly—that I know.  
Her steadfast eyelids tell me so  
When, at the hour the lights divide,  
She steals as summonsed to my side.

When, finger on the pursèd lip  
In secret, mirthful fellowship,  
She, heralding new-framed delights,  
Breathes, " This shall be a Night of Nights ! "

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Then, out of Time and out of Space,  
Is built an Hour and a Place  
Where all an earnest, baffled Earth  
Blunders and trips to make us mirth;

Whence, from the trivial flux of Things,  
Rise unconceived miscarryings,  
Outrageous but immortal, shown,  
Of Her great love, to me alone. . . .

She is not Wisdom, but, maybe,  
Wiser than all the Norns is She:  
And more than Wisdom I prefer  
To wait on Her,—to wait on Her!

### NAAMAN'S SONG

(“ Aunt Ellen ”)

“ **G**o, WASH thyself in Jordan—go, wash thee and be  
clean! ”  
Nay, not for any Prophet will I plunge a toe therein !  
For the banks of curious Jordan are parcelled into sites,  
Commanded and embellished and patrolled by Israelites.

There rise her timeless capitals of Empires daily born,  
Whose plinths are laid at midnight, and whose streets are  
packed at morn;  
And here come hired youths and maids that feign to love or sin  
In tones like rusty razor-blades to tunes like smitten tin.

And here be merry murtherings, and steeds with fiery hooves;  
And furious hordes with guns and swords, and clamberings  
over rooves;  
And horrid tumblings down from Heaven, and flights with  
wheels and wings;  
And always one weak virgin who is chased through all these  
things.

And here is mock of faith and truth, for children to behold;  
And every door of ancient dirt reopened to the old;

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

With every word that taints the speech, and show that  
weakens thought;  
And Israel watcheth over each, and—doth not watch for  
nought. . . .

But Pharpar — but Abana —which Hermon launcheth  
down—  
They perish fighting desert-sands beyond Damascus-town.  
But yet their pulse is of the snows—their strength is from  
on high—  
And, if they cannot cure my woes, a leper will I die!

### THE MOTHER'S SON

(" Fairy-kist ")

I HAVE a dream—a dreadful dream—  
A dream that is never done.  
I watch a man go out of his mind,  
And he is My Mother's Son.

They pushed him into a Mental Home,  
And that is like the grave:  
For they do not let you sleep upstairs,  
And you aren't allowed to shave.

And it was *not* disease or crime  
Which got him landed there,  
But because They laid on My Mother's Son  
More than a man could bear.

What with noise, and fear of death,  
Waking, and wounds and cold,  
They filled the Cup for My Mother's Son  
Fuller than it could hold.

They broke his body and his mind  
And yet They made him live,  
And They asked more of My Mother's Son  
Than any man could give.

For, just because he had not died,  
Nor been discharged nor sick,



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

They dragged it out with My Mother's Son  
Longer than he could stick. . . .

And no one knows when he'll get well—  
So, there he'll have to be:  
And, 'spite of the beard in the looking-glass,  
I know that man is me!

### THE COINER

(Circa 1611)

*(To be sung by the unlearned to the tune of "King John and the Abbot of Canterbury," and by the learned to "Tempest-a-brewing.")*

("A Naval Mutiny")

AGAINST the Bermudas we foundered, whereby  
This Master, that Swabber, yon Bo'sun, and I  
(Our pinnace and crew being drowned in the main)  
Must beg for our bread through old England again.

For a bite and a sup, and a bed of clean straw,  
We'll tell you such marvels as man never saw,  
On a Magical Island which no one did spy  
Save this Master, that Swabber, yon Bo'sun, and I.

Seven months among Mermaids and Devils and Sprites,  
And Voices that howl in the cedars o' nights,  
With further enchantments we underwent there.  
Good Sirs, 'tis a tale to draw guts from a bear!

'Twixt Dover and Southwark it paid us our way,  
Where we found some poor players were labouring a play;  
And, willing to search what such business might be,  
We entered the yard, both to hear and to see.

One hailed us for seamen and courteous-ly  
Did guide us apart to a tavern near by  
Where we told him our tale (as to many of late),  
And he gave us good cheer, so we gave him good weight.

Mulled sack and strong waters on bellies well lined  
With beef and black pudding do strengthen the mind;

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And seeing him greedy for marvels, at last  
From plain salted truth to flat leasing we passed.

But he, when on midnight our reckoning he paid,  
Says, "Never match coins with a Coiner by trade,  
Or he'll turn your lead pieces to metal as rare  
As shall fill him this globe, and leave something to spare. . . ."

We slept where they laid us, and when we awoke  
'Was a crown or five shillings in every man's poke.  
We bit them and rang them, and, finding them good,  
We drank to that Coiner as honest men should!

For a cup and a crust, and a truss, etc.

### AKBAR'S BRIDGE

("The Debt")

JELALUDIN MUHAMMED AKBAR, Guardian of Mankind,  
Moved his standards out of Delhi to Jaunpore of lower  
Hind,  
Where a mosque was to be builded, and a lovelier ne'er was  
planned;  
And Munim Khan, his Viceroy, slid the drawings 'neath his  
hand.

(High as Hope upsheered her out-works to the promised  
Heavens above.  
Deep as Faith and dark as Judgment her unplumbed founda-  
tions dove.  
Wide as Mercy, white as moonlight, stretched her fore-  
courts to the dawn;  
And Akbar gave commandment, "Let it rise as it is drawn.")

Then he wearied—the mood moving—of the men and things  
he ruled,  
And he walked beside the Goomti while the flaming sunset  
cooled,  
Simply, without mark or ensign—singly, without guard or  
guide,  
Till he heard an angry woman screeching by the river-side.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

'Twas the Widow of the Potter, a virago feared and known,  
In haste to cross the ferry, but the ferry-man had gone.  
So she cursed him and his office, and hearing Akbar's tread,  
(She was very old and darkling) turned her wrath upon his  
head.

But he answered—being Akbar—"Suffer me to scull you  
o'er."  
Called her "Mother," stowed her bundles, worked the  
clumsy scow from shore,  
Till they grounded on a sand-bank, and the Widow loosed  
her mind;  
And the stars stole out and chuckled at the Guardian of  
Mankind.

"Oh, most impotent of bunglers! Oh, my daughter's  
daughter's brood  
Waiting hungry on the threshold; for I cannot bring their  
food,  
Till a fool has learned his business at their virtuous grandam's  
cost,  
And a greater fool, our Viceroy, trifles while her name is lost!

"Munim Khan, that Sire of Asses, sees me daily come and go  
As it suits a drunken boatman, or this ox who cannot row.  
Munim Khan, the Owl's Own Uncle—Munim Khan, the  
Capon's seed,  
Must build a mosque to Allah when a bridge is all we need!

"Eighty years I eat oppression and extortion and delays—  
Snake and crocodile and fever, flood and drouth, beset my  
ways.  
But Munim Khan must tax us for his mosque whate'er befall;  
Allah knowing (May He hear me!) that a bridge would save  
us all!"

While she stormed that other laboured and, when they  
touched the shore,  
Laughing brought her on his shoulder to her hovel's very  
door.  
But his mirth renewed her anger, for she thought he mocked  
the weak;  
So she scored him with her talons, drawing blood on either  
cheek. . . .

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Jelaludin Muhammed Akbar, Guardian of Mankind,  
Spoke with Munim Khan his Viceroy, ere the midnight stars  
declined—

Girt and sworded, robed and jewelled, but on either cheek  
appeared

Four shameless scratches running from the turban to the  
beard.

“Allah burn all Potters’ Widows! Yet, since this same  
night was young,

One has shown me by sure token, there was wisdom on her  
tongue.

Yes, I ferried her for hire. Yes,” he pointed, “I was paid.”  
And he told the tale rehearsing all the Widow did and said.

And he ended, “Sire of Asses—Capon—Owl’s Own Uncle  
—know

I—most impotent of bunglers—I—this ox who cannot row—

I—Jelaludin Muhammed Akbar, Guardian of Mankind—

Bid thee build the hag her bridge and put our mosque from  
out thy mind.”

So ’twas built, and Allah blessed it; and, through earthquake,  
flood, and sword,

Still the bridge his Viceroy builded throws her arch o’er  
Akbar’s Ford!

## AT HIS EXECUTION

(“The Manner of Men”)

(*St. Paul*)

I AM made all things to all men—  
Hebrew, Roman, and Greek—

In each one’s tongue I speak,

Suiting to each my word,

That some may be drawn to the Lord!

I am made all things to all men—

In City or Wilderness

Praising the crafts they profess

That some may be drawn to the Lord—

By any means to my Lord!

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Since I was overcome  
By that great Light and Word,  
I have forgot or forgone  
The self men call their own  
(Being made all things to all men)  
So that I might save some,  
At such small price, to the Lord,  
As being all things to all men.

I was made all things to all men,  
But now my course is done—  
And now is my reward . . .  
Ah, Christ, when I stand at Thy Throne  
With those I have drawn to the Lord,  
Restore me my self again!

### THE THRESHOLD

(" Unprofessional ")

**I**N THEIR deepest caverns of limestone  
They pictured the Gods of Food—  
The Horse, the Elk, and the Bison  
That the hunting might be good;  
With the Gods of Death and Terror—  
The Mammoth, Tiger, and Bear.  
And the pictures moved in the torchlight  
To show that the Gods were there!  
But that was before Ionia—  
(Or the Seven Holy Islands of Ionia)  
Any of the Mountains of Ionia,  
Had bared their peaks to the air.

The close years packed behind them,  
As the glaciers bite and grind,  
Filling the new-gouged valleys  
With Gods of every kind.  
Gods of all-reaching power—  
Gods of all-searching eyes—  
But each to be wooed by worship  
And won by sacrifice.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Till, after many winters, rose Ionia—  
(Strange men brooding in Ionia)  
Crystal-eyed Sages of Ionia  
Who said, "These tales are lies.

"We dream one Breath in all things,  
"That blows all things between.  
"We dream one Matter in all things—  
"Eternal, changeless, unseen.  
"That the heart of the Matter is single  
"Till the Breath shall bid it bring forth—  
"By choosing or losing its neighbour—  
"All things made upon Earth."  
But Earth was wiser than Ionia  
(Babylon and Egypt than Ionia)  
And they overlaid the teaching of Ionia  
And the Truth was choked at birth.

It died at the Gate of Knowledge—  
The Key to the Gate in its hand—  
And the anxious priests and wizards  
Re-blinded the waking land;  
For they showed, by answering echoes,  
And chasing clouds as they rose,  
How shadows should stand for bulwarks  
Between mankind and its woes.  
It was then that men bethought them of Ionia  
(The few that had not allforgot Ionia)  
Or the Word that was whispered in Ionia;  
And they turned from the shadows and the shows.

They found one Breath in all things,  
That moves all things between.  
They proved one Matter in all things—  
Eternal, changeless, unseen;  
That the heart of the Matter was single  
Till the Breath should bid it bring forth—  
Even as men whispered in Ionia,  
(Resolute, unsatisfied Ionia)  
Ere the Word was stifled in Ionia—  
All things known upon earth!

NEIGHBOURS

(" Beauty Spots ")

THE man that is open of heart to his neighbour,  
 And stops to consider his likes and dislikes,  
 His blood shall be wholesome whatever his labour,  
 His luck shall be with him whatever he strikes.  
 The Splendour of Morning shall duly possess him,  
 That he may not be sad at the falling of eve.  
 And, when he has done with mere living—God bless him!—  
 A many shall sigh, and one Woman shall grieve!

But he that is costive of soul toward his fellow,  
 Through the ways, and the works, and the woes of this life,  
 Him food shall not fatten, him drink shall not mellow;  
 And his innards shall brew him perpetual strife.  
 His eye shall be blind to God's Glory above him;  
 His ear shall be deaf to Earth's Laughter around;  
 His Friends and his Club and his Dog shall not love him;  
 And his Widow shall skip when he goes underground!

THE EXPERT

(" Beauty Spots ")

YOUTH that trafficked long with Death,  
 And to second life returns,  
 Squanders little time or breath  
 On his fellow-man's concerns.  
 Earned peace is all he asks  
 To fulfil his broken tasks.

Yet, if he find war at home  
 (Waspish and importunate),  
 He hath means to overcome  
 Any warrior at his gate;  
 For the past he buried brings  
 Back unburiable things—  
 Nights that he lay out to spy  
 Whence and when the raid might start;  
 Or prepared in secrecy  
 Sudden blows to break its heart—  
 All the lore of No-Man's Land  
 Steels his soul and arms his hand.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

So, if conflict vex his life  
Where he thought all conflict done,  
He, resuming ancient strife,  
Springs his mine or trains his gun;  
And, in mirth more dread than wrath,  
Wipes the nuisance from his path!

### THE CURÉ

(“ The Miracle of Saint Jubanus ”)

LONG years ago, ere R—lls or R—ce  
Trebled the mileage man could cover;  
When Sh—nks’s Mare was H—bs—n’s Choice,  
And Bl—r—ot had not flown to Dover:  
When good hoteliers looked askance  
If any power save horse-flesh drew vans—  
’Time was in easy, hand-made France,  
I met the Curé of Saint Juvans.

He was no babbler, but, at last,  
One learned from things he left unspoken  
How in some fiery, far-off past,  
His, and a woman’s, heart were broken.  
He sought for death, but found it not,  
Yet, seeking, found his true vocation,  
And fifty years, by all forgot,  
Toiled at a simple folk’s salvation.

His pay was lower than our Dole;  
The piteous little church he tended  
Had neither roof nor vestments whole  
Save what his own hard fingers mended:  
While, any hour, at every need  
(As Conscience or La Grippe assailed ’em),  
His parish bade him come with speed,  
And, foot or cart, he never failed ’em.

His speech—to suit his hearers—ran  
From pure Parisian to gross peasant,  
With interludes North African  
If any Légionnaire were present:



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And when some wine-ripe atheist mocked  
His office or the Faith he knelt in,  
He left the sinner dumb and shocked  
By oaths his old Battalion dealt in.

And he was learned in Death and Life;  
And he was Logic's self (as France is).  
He knew his flock—man, maid, and wife—  
Their forebears, failings, and finances.  
Spite, Avarice, Devotion, Lies—  
Passion ablaze or sick Obsession—  
He dealt with each physician-wise;  
Stern or most tender, at Confession . . .

To-day? God knows where he may lie—  
His Cross of weathered beads above him:  
But one not worthy to untie  
His shoe-string, prays you read—and love him!

### SONG OF SEVENTY HORSES

("The Miracle of Saint Jubanus")

ONCE again the Steamer at Calais—the tackles  
Easing the car-trays on to the quay. Release her!  
Sign—refill, and let me away with my horses.  
(Seventy Thundering Horses!)  
Slow through the traffic, my horses! It is enough—it is  
France!

Whether the throat-closing brick-fields by Lille, or her  
pavés  
Endlessly ending in rain between beet and tobacco;  
Or that wind we shave by—the brutal North-Easter,  
Rasping the newly dunged Somme.  
(Into your collars, my horses!) It is enough—it is France!

Whether the dappled Argonne, the cloud-shadows packing  
Either horizon with ghosts; or exquisite, carven  
Villages hewn from the cliff, the torrents behind them  
Feeding their never-quenched lights.  
(Look to your footing, my horses!) It is enough—it is  
France!

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Whether that gale where Biscay jammed in the corner  
Herds and heads her seas at the Landes, but defeated  
Bellowing smokes along Spain, till the uttermost headlands  
Make themselves dance in the mist.  
(Breathe—breathe deeply, my horses!) It is enough—it is  
France!

Whether the broken, honey-hued, honey-combed limestone,  
Cream under white-hot sun; the rosemary bee-bloom  
Sleepily noisy at noon and, somewhere to Southward,  
Sleepily noisy, the Sea.  
(Yes, it is warm here, my horses!) It is enough—it is  
France!

Whether the Massif in Spring, the multiplied lacets  
Hampered by slips or drifts; the gentians, under  
Turbaned snow, pushing up the heavens of Summer  
Though the stark moors lie black.  
(Neigh through the icicled tunnels:—"It is enough—it is  
France!")

### HYMN TO PHYSICAL PAIN

("The Tender Achilles")

**D**READ Mother of Forgetfulness  
Who, when Thy reign begins,  
Wipest away the Soul's distress,  
And memory of her sins.

The trusty Worm that dieth not—  
The steadfast Fire also,  
By Thy contrivance are forgot  
In a completer woe.

Thine are the lidless eyes of night  
That stare upon our tears,  
Through certain hours which in our sight  
Exceed a thousand years:

Thine is the thickness of the Dark  
That presses in our pain,

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

As 'Thine the Dawn that bids us mark  
Life's grinning face again.

Thine is the weariness outworn  
No promise shall relieve,  
That says at eve, " Would God 'twere morn! "  
At morn, " Would God 'twere eve! "

And when Thy tender mercies cease  
And life unvexed is due,  
Instant upon the false release  
The Worm and Fire renew.

Wherefore we praise Thee in the deep,  
And on our beds we pray  
For Thy return that Thou may'st keep  
The Pains of Hell at bay!

### THE PENALTY

(" The Tender Achilles ")

ONCE in life I watched a Star;  
But I whistled, " Let her go!  
There are others, fairer far,  
Which my favouring skies shall show."  
Here I lied, and herein I  
Stood to pay the penalty.

Marvellous the Planets shone  
As I ranged from coast to coast;  
But beyond comparison  
Rode the Star that I had lost.  
I had lied, and only I  
Did not guess the penalty! . . .

When my Heavens were turned to blood,  
When the dark had filled my day,  
Furthest, but most faithful, stood  
That lone Star I cast away.  
I had loved myself, and I  
Have not lived and dare not die!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

AZRAEL'S COUNT

("Uncovenanted Mercies")

Lo! THE Wild Cow of the Desert, her yeanling estrayed  
from her—

Lost in the wind-plaited sand-dunes—athirst in the maze of  
them.

Hot-foot she follows those foot-prints—the thrice-tangled  
ways of them.

Her soul is shut save to one thing—the love-quest consum-  
ing her.

Fearless she lows past the camp, our fires affright her not.  
Ranges she close to the tethered ones—the mares by the  
lances held.

Noses she softly apart the veil in the women's tent.

Next—withdrawn under moonlight, a shadow afar off—

Fades. Ere men cry, "Hold her fast!" darkness recovers  
her.

She the all-crazed and forlorn, when the dogs threaten her,  
Only a side-tossed horn, as though a fly troubled her,  
Shows she hath heard, till a lance in the heart of her quiv-  
ereth.

—Lo, from that carcass ahead—where speeds the soul of it?  
Where is the tryst it must keep? Who is her pandar? Death!

Men I dismiss to the Mercy greet me not willingly;

Crying, "Why seekest Thou *me* first? Are not my kin  
unslain?"

Shrinking aside from the Sword-edge, blinking the glare of it,  
Sinking the chin in the neck-bone. How shall that profit  
them?

Yet, among men a ten thousand, few meet me otherwise.

Yet, among women a thousand, one comes to me mistress-  
wise.

Arms open, breasts open, mouth open—hot is her need on  
her.

Crying, "Ho, Servant, acquit me, the bound by Love's  
promises!

Haste Thou! He waits! I would go! Handle me lustily!"

Lo! her eyes stare past my wings, as things unbeheld by her.

Lo! her lips summoning part. I am not whom she calls!

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

Lo! My sword sinks and returns. At no time she heedeth it  
More than the dust of a journey, her garments brushed clear  
of it.

Lo! Ere the blood-gush has ceased, forward her soul rushes.  
She is away to her tryst. Who is her pandar? Death!

## MISCELLANEOUS VERSE



## THE GODS OF THE COPYBOOK HEADINGS

1919

AS I PASS through my incarnations in every age and  
race,  
I make my proper prostrations to the Gods of the Market-  
Place.  
Peering through reverent fingers I watch them flourish and  
fall,  
And the Gods of the Copybook Headings, I notice, outlast  
them all.

We were living in trees when they met us. They showed us  
each in turn  
That Water would certainly wet us, as Fire would certainly  
burn:  
But we found them lacking in Uplift, Vision and Breadth of  
Mind,  
So we left them to teach the Gorillas while we followed the  
March of Mankind.

We moved as the Spirit listed. *They* never altered their  
pace,  
Being neither cloud nor wind-borne like the Gods of the  
Market-Place;  
But they always caught up with our progress, and presently  
word would come  
That a tribe had been wiped off its icefield, or the lights had  
gone out in Rome.

With the Hopes that our World is built on they were utterly  
out of touch,  
They denied that the Moon was Stilton; they denied she was  
even Dutch.  
They denied that Wishes were Horses; they denied that a  
Pig had Wings.  
So we worshipped the Gods of the Market Who promised  
these beautiful things.



## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

When the Cambrian measures were forming, They promised perpetual peace.  
They swore, if we gave them our weapons, that the wars of the tribes would cease.  
But when we disarmed They sold us and delivered us bound to our foe,  
And the Gods of the Copybook Headings said: "*Stick to the Devil you know.*"

On the first Feminian Sandstones we were promised the Fuller Life  
(Which started by loving our neighbour and ended by loving his wife)  
Till our women had no more children and the men lost reason and faith,  
And the Gods of the Copybook Headings said: "*The Wages of Sin is Death.*"

In the Carboniferous Epoch we were promised abundance for all,  
By robbing selected Peter to pay for collective Paul;  
But, though we had plenty of money, there was nothing our money could buy,  
And the Gods of the Copybook Headings said: "*If you don't work you die.*"

Then the Gods of the Market tumbled, and their smooth-tongued wizards withdrew,  
And the hearts of the meanest were humbled and began to believe it was true  
That All is not Gold that Glitters, and Two and Two make Four—  
And the Gods of the Copybook Headings limped up to explain it once more.

As it will be in the future, it was at the birth of Man—  
There are only four things certain since Social Progress began:—  
That the Dog returns to his Vomit and the Sow returns to her Mire,  
And the burnt Fool's bandaged finger goes wabbling back to the Fire;

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And that after this is accomplished, and the brave new world  
begins  
When all men are paid for existing and no man must pay for  
his sins,  
As surely as Water will wet us, as surely as Fire will  
burn,  
The Gods of the Copybook Headings with terror and  
slaughter return!

### THE SCHOLARS

1919

*"Some hundreds of the younger naval officers whose education was interrupted by the War are now to be sent to various colleges at Cambridge to continue their studies. The experiment will be watched with great interest."*—DAILY PAPERS.

"**O**H, SHOW me how a rose can shut and be a bud again!"  
Nay, watch my Lords of the Admiralty, for they have  
the work in train.  
They have taken the men that were careless lads at Dart-  
mouth in 'Fourteen  
And entered them at the landward schools as though no  
war had been.  
They have piped the children off all the seas from the  
Falklands to the Bight,  
And quartered them on the Colleges to learn to read and  
write!

Their books were rain and sleet and fog—the dry gale and  
the snow,  
Their teachers were the hornèd mines and the hump-backed  
Death below.  
Their schools were walled by the walking mist and roofed  
by the waiting skies,  
When they conned their task in a new-sown field with the  
Moonlight Sacrifice.

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

They were not rated too young to teach, nor reckoned unfit  
to guide  
When they formed their class on Helles' beach at the bows  
of the "River Clyde."

Their eyes are sunk by endless watch, their faces roughed by  
the spray,  
Their feet are drawn by the wet sea-boots they changed not  
night or day  
When they guarded the six-knot convoy's flank on the road  
to Norroway.  
Their ears are stuffed with the week-long roar of the West-  
Atlantic gale  
When the sloops were watching the Irish Shore from Galway  
to Kinsale.  
Their hands are scored where the life-lines cut or the  
dripping funnel-stays  
When they followed their leader at thirty knot between the  
Skaw and the Naze.  
Their mouths are filled with the magic words they learned  
at the collier's hatch  
When they coaled in the foul December dawns and sailed in  
the forenoon-watch;  
Or measured the weight of a Pentland tide and the wind off  
Ronaldshay,  
Till the target mastered the breathless tug and the hawser  
carried away.

They know the price to be paid for a fault—for a gauge-  
clock wrongly read,  
Or a picket-boat to the gangway brought bows-on and full-  
ahead,  
Or the drowsy second's lack of thought that costs a dozen  
dead.  
They have touched a knowledge outreaching speech—as  
when the cutters were sent  
To harvest the dreadful mile of beach after the *Van-  
guard* went.  
They have learned great faith and little fear and a high heart  
in distress,  
And how to suffer each sodden year of heaped-up weariness.  
They have borne the bridle upon their lips and the yoke  
upon their neck,

DEFINITIVE EDITION

Since they went down to the sea in ships to save the world  
from wreck—  
Since the chests were slung down the College stair at Dart-  
mouth in 'Fourteen,  
And now they are quit of the sea-affair as though no war had  
been.  
Far have they steamed and much have they known, and most  
would they fain forget;  
But now they are come to their joyous own with all the world  
in their debt.

. . . . .  
Soft—blow soft on them, little East Wind! Be smooth for  
them, mighty stream!  
Though the cams they use are not of your kind, and they  
bump, for choice, by steam.  
Lightly dance with them, Newnham maid—but none too  
lightly believe.  
They are hot from the fifty-month blockade, and they carry  
their hearts on their sleeve.  
Tenderly, Proctor, let them down, if they do not walk as  
they should:  
For, by God, if they owe you half a crown, you owe 'em your  
four years' food!

. . . . .  
Hallowed River, most gracious Trees, Chapel beyond com-  
pare,  
Here be gentlemen sick of the seas—take them into your  
care.  
Far have they come, much have they braved. Give them  
their hour of play,  
While the hidden things their hands have saved work for  
them day by day:  
'Till the grateful Past their youth redeemed return them their  
youth once more,  
And the Soul of the Child at last lets fall the unjust load that  
it bore!

THE CLERKS AND THE BELLS

(OXFORD IN 1920)

THE merry clerks of Oxenford they stretch themselves at  
           ease  
 Unhelmeted on unbleached sward beneath unshrivelled  
           trees.  
 For the leaves, the leaves, are on the bough, the bark is on  
           the bole,  
 And East and West men's housen stand all even-roofed and  
           whole . . .  
*(Men's housen doored and glazed and floored and whole at  
           every turn!)*  
 And so the Bells of Oxenford ring:—"Time it is to learn!"

The merry clerks of Oxenford they read and they are told  
 Of famous men who drew the sword in furious fights of old.  
 They heark and mark it faithfully, but never clerk will write  
 What vision rides 'twixt book and eye from any nearer  
           fight.  
*(Whose supplication rends the soul? Whose night-long cries  
           repeat?)*  
 And so the Bells of Oxenford ring:—"Time it is to eat!"

The merry clerks of Oxenford they sit them down anon  
 At tables fair with silver-ware and naperies thereon,  
 Free to refuse or dainty choose what dish shall seem them  
           good;  
 For they have done with single meats, and waters streaked  
           with blood . . .  
*(That three days' fast is overpast when all those guns said  
           "Nay"!)*  
 And so the Bells of Oxenford ring:—"Time it is to play!"

The merry clerks of Oxenford they hasten one by one  
 Or band in companies abroad to ride, or row, or run  
 By waters level with fair meads all goldenly bespread,  
 Where flash June's clashing dragon-flies—but no man bows  
           his head,  
*(Though bullet-wise June's dragon-flies deride the fearless air!)*  
 And so the Bells of Oxenford ring:—"Time it is for prayer!"

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The pious clerks of Oxenford they kneel at twilight-tide  
For to receive and well believe the Word of Him Who died,  
And, though no present wings of Death hawk hungry round  
that place,

Their brows are bent upon their hands that none may see  
their face—

*(Who set aside the world and died? What life shall please  
Him best?)*

And so the Bells of Oxenford ring:—"Time it is to rest!"

The merry clerks of Oxenford lie under bolt and bar  
Lest they should rake the midnight clouds or chase a sliding  
star.

In fear of fine and dread rebuke, they round their full-night  
sleep,

And leave that world which once they took for older men to  
keep.

*(Who walks by dreams what ghostly wood in search of play-  
mate slain?)*

Until the Bells of Oxenford ring in the light again.

Unburdened breeze, unstricken trees, and all God's works  
restored—

In this way live the merry clerks,—the clerks of Oxenford!

### A RECTOR'S MEMORY

(ST. ANDREWS, 1923)

THE Gods that are wiser than Learning  
But kinder than Life have made sure

No mortal may boast in the morning

That even will find him secure.

With naught for fresh faith or new trial,

With little unsoiled or unsold,

Can the shadow go back on the dial,

Or a new world be given for the old?

*But he knows not what time shall awaken,*

*As he knows not what tide shall lay bare,*

*The heart of a man to be taken—*

*Taken and changed unaware.*

He shall see as he tenders his vows

The far, guarded City arise—

# RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

The power of the North 'twixt Her brows—  
 The steel of the North in Her eyes;  
 The sheer hosts of Heaven above—  
 The grey warlock Ocean beside;  
 And shall feel the full centuries move  
 To Her purpose and pride.  
 Though a stranger shall he understand,  
 As though it were old in his blood,  
 The lives that caught fire 'neath Her hand—  
 The fires that were tamed to Her mood.  
 And the roar of the wind shall refashion,  
 And the wind-driven torches recall,  
 The passing of Time and the passion  
 Of Youth over all!

*And, by virtue of magic unspoken  
 (What need She should utter Her power?)  
 The frost at his heart shall be broken  
 And his spirit be changed in that hour—  
 Changed and renewed in that hour!*

## LOLLIUS

1920

HORACE, Bk. V. Ode 13

**W**HY gird at Lollius if he care  
 To purchase in the city's sight,  
 With nard and roses for his hair,  
 The name of Knight?

Son of unmitigated sires  
 Enriched by trade in Afric corn,  
 His wealth allows, his wife requires,  
 Him to be born.

Him slaves shall serve with zeal renewed  
 At lesser wage for longer whiles,  
 And school- and station-masters rude  
 Receive with smiles.

His bowels shall be sought in charge  
 By learned doctors; all his sons  
 And nubile daughters shall enlarge  
 Their horizons.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

For fierce she-Britons, apt to smite  
Their upward-climbing sisters down,  
Shall smooth their plumes and oft invite  
The brood to town.

For these delights will he disgorge  
The State enormous benefice,  
But—by the head of either George—  
He pays not twice!

Whom neither lust for public pelf,  
Nor itch to make orations, vex—  
Content to honour his own self  
With his own cheques—

That man is clean. At least, his house  
Springs cleanly from untainted gold—  
Not from a conscience or a spouse  
Sold and resold.

Time was, you say, before men knew  
Such arts, and rose by Virtue guided?  
The tables rock with laughter—you  
Not least derided.

## A SONG OF FRENCH ROADS

1923

*"The National Roads of France are numbered throughout, and carry their numbers upon each kilometre stone. By following these indications, comprehensible even to strangers, the tourist can see at a glance if he is on the correct road. For example, Route Nationale No. 20 conducts from Paris to the Spanish frontier at Bourg-Madame, in the Eastern Pyrenees; and No. 10 to the same frontier at Hendaye, on the Bay of Biscay."*—GUIDE BOOK.

Now praise the Gods of Time and Chance  
That bring a heart's desire,  
And lay the joyous roads of France  
Once more beneath the tyre—  
So numbered by Napoleon,  
The veriest ass can spy  
How Twenty takes to Bourg-Madame  
And Ten is for Hendaye.



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

Sixteen hath fed our fighting-line  
From Dunkirk to Péronne,  
And Thirty-nine and Twenty-nine  
Can show where it has gone,  
Which slant through Arras and Bapaume,  
And join outside Cambrai,  
While Twenty takes to Bourg-Madame,  
And Ten is for Hendaye.

The crops and houses spring once more  
Where Thirty-seven ran,  
And even ghostly Forty-four  
Is all restored to man.  
Oh, swift as shell-hole poppies pass  
The blurring years go by,  
And Twenty takes to Bourg-Madame,  
And Ten is for Hendaye!

And you desire that sheeted snow  
Where chill Mont Louis stands?  
And we the rounder gales that blow  
Full-lunged across the Landes—  
So you will use the Orleans Gate,  
While we slip through Versailles;  
Since Twenty takes to Bourg-Madame,  
And Ten is for Hendaye.

Sou'-West by South—and South by West—  
On every vine appear  
Those four first cautious leaves that test  
The temper of the year;  
The dust is white at Angoulême,  
The sun is warm at Blaye;  
And Twenty takes to Bourg-Madame,  
And Ten is for Hendaye.

Broad and unbridled, mile on mile,  
The highway drops her line  
Past Langon down that grey-walled aisle  
Of resin-scented pine;

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

And ninety to the lawless hour  
The kilometres fly—  
What was your pace to Bourg-Madame?  
We sauntered to Hendaye.

Now Fontarabia marks our goal,  
And Bidassoa shows,  
At issue with each whispering shoal  
In violet, pearl and rose,  
Ere crimson over ocean's edge  
The sunset banners die . . .  
Yes—Twenty takes to Bourg-Madame,  
But Ten is for Hendaye!

*Oh, praise the Gods of Time and Chance  
That ease the long control,  
And bring the glorious soul of France  
Once more to cheer our soul  
With beauty, change and valiancy  
Of sun and soil and sky,  
Where Twenty takes to Bourg-Madame,  
And Ten is for Hendaye!*

## CHARTRES WINDOWS

1925

C OLOUR fulfils where Music has no power:  
By each man's light the unjudging glass betrays  
All men's surrender, each man's holiest hour  
And all the lit confusion of our days—  
Purpled with iron, traced in dusk and fire,  
Challenging ordered Time who, at the last,  
Shall bring it, grozed and leaded and wedged fast,  
To the cold stone that curbs or crowns desire.  
Yet on the pavement that all feet have trod—  
Even as the Spirit, in her deeps and heights,  
Turns only, and that voiceless, to her God—  
There falls no tincture from those anguished lights.  
And Heaven's one light, behind them, striking through  
Blazons what each man dreamed no other knew.

LONDON STONE

NOV. 11, 1923

WHEN you come to London Town,  
(Grieving—grieving!)  
Bring your flowers and lay them down  
At the place of grieving.

When you come to London Town,  
(Grieving—grieving!)  
Bow your head and mourn your own,  
With the others grieving.

For those minutes, let it wake  
(Grieving—grieving!)  
All the empty-heart and ache  
That is not cured by grieving.

For those minutes, tell no lie:  
(Grieving—grieving!)  
“Grave, this is thy victory;  
And the sting of death is grieving.”

Where's our help, from Earth or Heaven.  
(Grieving—grieving!)  
To comfort us for what we've given,  
And only gained the grieving?

Heaven's too far and Earth too near,  
(Grieving—grieving!)  
But our neighbour's standing here,  
Grieving as we're grieving.

What's his burden every day?  
(Grieving—grieving!)  
Nothing man can count or weigh,  
But loss and love's own grieving.

What is the tie betwixt us two  
(Grieving—grieving!)  
That must last our whole lives through?  
“*As I suffer, so do you.*”  
That may ease the grieving.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE KING'S PILGRIMAGE

*King George V's Visit to War Cemeteries in France*

1922

OUR King went forth on pilgrimage  
His prayers and vows to pay  
To them that saved our heritage  
And cast their own away.

And there was little show of pride,  
Or prows of belted steel,  
For the clean-swept oceans every side  
Lay free to every keel.

And the first land he found, it was shoal and banky ground—  
Where the broader seas begin,  
And a pale tide grieving at the broken harbour-mouth  
Where they worked the death-ships in.

And there was neither gull on the wing,  
Nor wave that could not tell  
Of the bodies that were buckled in the life-buoy's ring  
That slid from swell to swell.

*All that they had they gave—they gave; and they shall not  
return,  
For these are those that have no grave where any heart may  
mourn.*

And the next land he found, it was low and hollow ground—  
Where once the cities stood,  
But the man-high thistle had been master of it all,  
Or the bulrush by the flood.

And there was neither blade of grass,  
Nor lone star in the sky,  
But shook to see some spirit pass  
And took its agony.

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

And the next land he found, it was bare and hilly ground—  
Where once the bread-corn grew,  
But the fields were cankered and the water was defiled,  
And the trees were riven through.

And there was neither paved highway,  
Nor secret path in the wood,  
But had borne its weight of the broken clay  
And darkened 'neath the blood.

*Father and mother they put aside, and the nearer love also—  
An hundred thousand men that died whose graves shall no man  
know.*

And the last land he found, it was fair and level ground  
About a carven stone,  
And a stark Sword brooding on the bosom of the Cross  
Where high and low are one.

And there was grass and the living trees,  
And the flowers of the spring,  
And there lay gentlemen from out of all the seas  
That ever called him King.

*'Twixt Nieuport sands and the eastward lands where the Four  
Red Rivers spring,  
Five hundred thousand gentlemen of those that served their  
King.*

All that they had they gave—they gave—  
In sure and single faith.  
There can no knowledge reach the grave  
To make them grudge their death  
Save only if they understood  
That, after all was done,  
We they redeemed denied their blood  
And mocked the gains it won.

DEFINITIVE EDITION

A SONG IN THE DESERT

(P. L. Ob. Jan. 1927)

*F*RIEND, thou beholdest the lightning? Who has the charge  
of it—

To decree which rock-ridge shall receive—shall be chosen for  
targe of it?

Which crown among palms shall go down, by the thunderbolt  
broken;

While the floods drown the sere wadis where no bud is token?

First for my eyes, above all, he made show of his treasure.

First in his ear, before all, I made sure of my measure.

If it were good—what acclaim! None other so moved me.

If it were faulty—what shame? While he mocked me he  
loved me.

*Friend, thou hast seen in Rida'ar, the low moon descending,*

*One silent, swart, swift-striding camel, oceanward wending?*

*Browbound and jawbound the rider, his shadow in front of him,*

*Ceaselessly eating the distances? That was the wont of him.*

Whether the cliff-walled defiles, the ambush prepared for  
him;

Whether the wave-crested dunes—a single sword bared for  
him—

Whether cold danger fore-weighed, or quick peril that took  
him

Alone, out of comfort or aid, no breath of it shook him.

Whether he feasted or fasted, sweated or shivered,

There was no proof of the matter—no sign was delivered.

Whatever this dust or that heat, or those fools that he  
laboured with,

He forgot and forbore no observance towards any he  
neighbourd with.

*Friend, thou hast known at Rida'ar, when the Council was  
bidden,*

*One face among faces that leaped to the light and were hidden?*

*One voice among night-wasting voices of boasting and shouting?*

*And that face and that voice abide with thee? His beyond  
doubting!*

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

Never again in Rida'ar, my watch-fire burning,  
That he might see from afar, shall I wait his returning;  
Or the roar of his beast as she knelt and he leaped to unlade  
her,

Two-handedly tossing me jewels. *He* was no trader!

Gems and wrought gold, never sold—brought for me to  
behold them;

Tales of far magic unrolled—to me only he told them,  
With the light, easy laugh of dismissal 'twixt story and story—  
As a man brushes sand from his hand, or the great dismiss  
glory.

Never again in Rida'ar! My ways are made black to me!  
Whether I sing or am silent, he shall not come back to me!  
There is no measure for trial, nor treasure for bringing.  
Allah divides the Companions. (*Yet he said—yet he said:—*  
“Cease not from singing.”)

## BRAZILIAN VERSES

1 9 2 7

### THE FRIENDS

**I** HAD some friends—but I dreamed that they were dead—  
Who used to dance with lanterns round a little boy in bed;  
Green and white lanterns that waved to and fro:  
But I haven't seen a Firefly since ever so long ago!

I had some friends—their crowns were in the sky—  
Who used to nod and whisper when a little boy went by,  
As the nuts began to tumble and the breeze began to blow:  
And I haven't seen a Cocoa-palm since ever so long ago!

I had a friend—he came up from Cape Horn,  
With a Coal-sack on his shoulder when a little boy was born.  
He heard me learn to talk, and he helped me thrive and grow:  
But I haven't seen the Southern Cross since ever so long ago!

I had a boat—I out and let her drive,  
Till I found my dream was foolish, for my friends were  
all alive.

The Cocoa-palms were real, and the Southern Cross was true:  
And the Fireflies were dancing—so I danced too!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

A SONG OF BANANAS

HAVE you no Bananas, simple townsmen all?  
“Nay, but we have them certainly.  
“We buy them off the barrows, with the vegetable-marrows  
“And the cabbage of our own country,  
“ (From the costers of our own country.) ”

Those are not Bananas, simple townsmen all.  
(Plantains from Canaryward maybe!)  
For the true are red and gold, and they fill no steamer's hold,  
But flourish in a rare country,  
(That men go far to see.)

Their stiff fronds point the nooning down, simple townsmen all,  
Or rear against the breezes off the sea;  
Or duck and loom again, through the curtains of the rain  
That the loaded hills let free—  
(Bellying 'twixt the uplands and the sea.)

Little birds inhabit there, simple townsmen all—  
Jewelled things no bigger than a bee;  
And the opal butterflies plane and settle, flare and rise,  
Through the low-arched greenery,  
(That is malachite and jade of the sea.)

The red earth works and whispers there, simple townsmen all,  
Day and night in rank fecundity,  
That the Blossom and the Snake lie open and awake,  
As it was by Eden Tree,  
(When the First Moon silvered through the Tree) . . .

But you must go to business, simple townsmen all,  
By 'bus and train and tram and tube must flee!  
For your Pharpars and Abanas do not include Bananas  
(And Jordan is a distant stream to drink of, simple townsmen),  
Which leaves the more for me!



SONG OF THE DYNAMO

How do I know what Order brings  
 Me into being?  
 I only know, if you do certain things,  
 I must become your Hearing and your Seeing;  
 Also your Strength, to make great wheels go round,  
 And save your sons from toil, while I am bound!

What do I care how you dispose  
 The Powers that move me?  
 I only know that I am one with those  
 True Powers which rend the firmament above me,  
 And, harrying earth, would save me at the last—  
 But that your coward foresight holds me fast!

“SUCH AS IN SHIPS”

SUCH as in Ships and brittle Barks  
 Into the Seas descend  
 Shall learn how wholly on those Arks  
 Our Victuals do depend.  
 For, when a Man would bite or sup,  
 Or buy him Goods or Gear,  
 He needs must call the Oceans up,  
 And move an Hemisphere.

Consider, now, that Indian Weed  
 Which groweth o'er the Main,  
 With Teas and Cottons for our Need,  
 And Sugar of the Cane—  
 Their Comings We no more regard  
 Than daily Corn or Oil:  
 Yet, when Men waft Them Englandward,  
 How infinite the Toil!

Nation and People harvesteth  
 The tropique Lands among,  
 And Engines of tumultuous Breath  
 Do draw the Yield along—  
 Yea, even as by Hecatombs  
 Which, presently struck down  
 Into our Navies' labouring Wombs  
 Make Pennyworths in Town.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

### "POISON OF ASPS"

*(A Brazilian Snake-Farm)*

"**P**OISON of asps is under our lips"?  
Why do you seek us, then?  
Breaking our knotted fellowships  
With your noisy-footed men?

Time and time over we let them go;  
Hearing and slipping aside;  
Until they followed and troubled us—so  
We struck back, and they died.

"Poison of asps is under our lips"?  
Why do you wrench them apart?  
To learn how the venom makes and drips  
And works its way to the heart?

It is unjust that when we have done  
All that a serpent should,  
You gather our poisons, one by one,  
And thin them out to your good.

"Poison of asps is under our lips."  
That is your answer? No!  
Because we hissed at Adam's eclipse  
Is the reason you hate us so.

### THE OPEN DOOR

**E**NGLAND is a cosy little country,  
Excepting for the draughts along the floor.  
And that is why you're told,  
When the passages are cold:

"Darling, you've forgot to shut the Door!"

The Awful East Wind blows it—  
Pussy on the Hearthrug shows it,  
Aunt at the Writing-table knows it—

"Darling, you've forgot to shut the Door!"

Shut—shut—shut the Door, my darling!  
Always shut the Door behind you, but  
You can go when you are old  
Where there isn't any cold—

## RUDYARD KIPLING'S VERSE

So there isn't any Door that need be shut!  
And—  
The deep Verandah shows it—  
The pale Magnolia knows it—  
And the bold, white Trumpet-flower blows it:—  
There isn't any Door that need be shut!  
The piping Tree-toad knows it—  
The midnight Firefly shows it—  
And the Beams of the Moon disclose it:—  
There isn't any Door that need be shut!  
The milky Beaches know it—  
The silky Breezes blow it—  
And the Shafts of the Sunrise show it:—  
There isn't any Door that need be shut!

### TWO RACES

I SEEK not what his soul desires.  
He dreads not what my spirit fears.  
Our Heavens have shown us separate fires.  
Our dooms have dealt us differing years.  
Our daysprings and our timeless dead  
Ordained for us and still control  
Lives sundered at the fountain-head,  
And distant, now, as Pole from Pole.  
Yet, dwelling thus, these worlds apart,  
When we encounter each is free  
To bare that larger, liberal heart  
Our kin and neighbours seldom see.  
(Custom and code compared in jest—  
Weakness delivered without shame—  
And certain common sins confessed  
Which all men know, and none dare blame.)  
E'en so it is, and well content  
It should be so a moment's space,  
Each finds the other excellent,  
And—runs to follow his own race!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE GLORIES

1925

IN FAITHS and Food and Books and Friends  
Give every soul her choice.  
For such as follow divers ends  
In divers lights rejoice.

There is a glory of the Sun  
(‘Pity it passeth soon!)  
But those whose work is nearer done  
Look, rather, towards the Moon.

There is a glory of the Moon  
When the hot hours have run;  
But such as have not touched their noon  
Give worship to the Sun.

There is a glory of the Stars,  
Perfect on stilly ways;  
But such as follow present wars  
Pursue the Comet’s blaze.

There is a glory in all things;  
But each must find his own,  
Sufficient for his reckonings,  
Which is to him alone.

“VERY MANY PEOPLE”

1926

ON THE Downs, in the Weald, on the Marshes,  
I heard the Old Gods say:  
“Here come Very Many People:  
“We must go away.

“They take our land to delight in,  
“But their delight destroys.  
“They flay the turf from the sheep-walk.  
“They load the Denes with noise.

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

“ They burn coal in the woodland.  
“ They seize the oast and the mill.  
“ They camp beside Our dew-ponds.  
“ They mar the clean-flanked hill.

“ They string a clamorous Magic  
“ To fence their souls from thought,  
“ Till Our deep-breathed Oaks are silent,  
“ And Our muttering Downs tell nought.

“ They comfort themselves with neighbours.  
“ They cannot bide alone.  
“ It shall be best for their doings  
“ When We Old Gods are gone.”

*Farewell to the Downs and the Marshes,  
And the Weald and the Forest known  
Before there were Very Many People,  
And the Old Gods had gone!*

SUPPLICATION OF THE BLACK ABERDEEN

1928

I PRAY! My little body and whole span  
Of years is Thine, my Owner and my Man.  
For Thou hast made me—unto Thee I owe  
This dim, distressed half-soul that hurts me so,  
Compact of every crime, but, none the less,  
Broken by knowledge of its naughtiness.  
Put me not from Thy Life—’tis all I know.  
If Thou forsake me, whither shall I go?

Thine is the Voice with which my Day begins:  
Thy Foot my refuge, even in my sins.  
Thine Honour hurls me forth to testify  
Against the Unclean and Wicked passing by.  
(But when Thou callest they are of Thy Friends,  
Who readier than I to make amends?)  
I was Thy Deputy with high and low—  
If Thou dismiss me, whither shall I go?

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

I have been driven forth on gross offence  
That took no reckoning of my penitence.  
And, in my desolation—faithless me!—  
Have crept for comfort to a woman's knee!  
Now I return, self-drawn, to meet the just  
Reward of Riot, Theft and Breach of Trust.  
Put me not from Thy Life—though this is so.  
If Thou forsake me, whither shall I go?

Into The Presence, flattening while I crawl—  
From head to tail, I do confess it all.  
Mine was the fault—deal me the stripes—but spare  
The Pointed Finger which I cannot bear!  
The Dreadful Tone in which my Name is named.  
That sends me 'neath the sofa-frill ashamed!  
(Yet, to be near Thee, I would face that woe.)  
If Thou reject me, whither shall I go?

Can a gift turn Thee? I will bring mine all—  
My Secret Bone, my Throwing-Stick, my Ball.  
Or wouldst Thou sport? Then watch me hunt awhile,  
Chasing, not after conies, but Thy Smile,  
Content, as breathless on the turf I sit,  
Thou shouldst deride my little legs and wit—  
Ah! Keep me in Thy Life for a fool's show!  
If Thou deny me, whither shall I go? . . .

Is the Dark gone? The Light of Eyes restored?  
The Countenance turned meward, O my Lord?  
The Paw accepted, and—for all to see—  
The Abject Sinner throned upon the Knee?  
The Ears bewrung, and Muzzle scratched because  
He is forgiven, and All is as It was? . . .  
Now am I in Thy Life, and since 'tis so—  
That Cat awaits the Judgment. May I go?

“ HIS APOLOGIES ”

1932

MASTER, this is Thy Servant. He is rising eight weeks old.  
He is mainly Head and Tummy. His legs are uncontrolled.  
But Thou hast forgiven his ugliness, and settled him on Thy knee . . .  
Art Thou content with Thy Servant? He is *very* comfy with Thee.

Master, behold a Sinner! He hath committed a wrong.  
He hath defiled Thy Premises through being kept in too long.  
Wherefore his nose has been rubbed in the dirt, and his self-respect has been bruised.  
Master, pardon Thy Sinner, and see he is properly loosèd.

Master—again Thy Sinner! This that was once Thy Shoe,  
He has found and taken and carried aside, as fitting matter to chew.  
Now there is neither blacking nor tongue, and the Housemaid has us in tow.  
Master, remember Thy Servant is young, and tell her to let him go!

Master, extol Thy Servant, he has met a most Worthy Foel  
There has been fighting all over the Shop—and into the Shop also!  
Till cruel umbrellas parted the strife (or I might have been choking him yet),  
But Thy Servant has had the Time of his Life—and now shall we call on the vet?

Master, behold Thy Servant! Strange children came to play,  
And because they fought to caress him, Thy Servant wentest away.  
But now that the Little Beasts have gone, he has returned to see  
(Brushed—with his Sunday collar on) what they left over from tea.

. . . . .

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

Master, pity Thy Servant! He is deaf and three parts blind.  
He cannot catch Thy Commandments. He cannot read  
Thy Mind.

Oh, leave him not to his loneliness; nor make him that  
kitten's scorn.

He hath had none other God than Thee since the year that  
he was born.

Lord, look down on Thy Servant! Bad things have come  
to pass.

There is no heat in the midday sun, nor health in the wayside  
grass.

His bones are full of an old disease—his torments run and  
increase.

Lord, make haste with Thy Lightnings and grant him a  
quick release!

## HYMN OF THE TRIUMPHANT AIRMAN

(FLYING EAST TO WEST AT 1000 M.P.H.)

1929

OH, LONG had we paltered  
With bridle and girth  
Ere those horses were haltered  
That gave us the Earth—

Ere the Flame and the Fountain,  
The Spark and the Wheel,  
Sank Ocean and Mountain  
Alike 'neath our keel.

But the Wind in her blowing,  
The bird on the wind,  
Made naught of our going,  
And left us behind.

Till the gale was outdriven,  
The gull overflown,  
And there matched us in Heaven  
The Sun-God alone.



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

He only the master  
    We leagued to o'erthrow,  
He only the faster  
    And, therefore, our foe!

. . . . .

Light steals to uncurtain  
    The dim-shaping skies  
That arch and make certain  
    Where he shall arise.

We lift to the onset.  
    We challenge anew.  
From sunrise to sunset,  
    Apollo, pursue!

. . . . .

What ails thee, O Golden?  
    Thy Chariot is still?  
What Power has withholden  
    The Way from the Will?

Lo, Hesper hath paled not,  
    Nor darkness withdrawn.  
The Hours have availed not  
    To lead forth the Dawn!

Do they flinch from full trial,  
    The Coursers of Day?  
The shade on our dial  
    Moves swifter than they!

We fleet, but thou stayest  
    A God unreleased;  
And still thou delayest  
    Low down in the East—

A beacon faint-burning,  
    A glare that decays  
As the blasts of our spurning  
    Blow backward its blaze.

## DEFINITIVE EDITION

The mid-noon grows colder,  
Night rushes to meet,  
And the curve of Earth's shoulder  
Heaves up thy defeat.

Storm on at that portal,  
We have thee in prison!  
Apollo, immortal,  
Thou hast not arisen!

### FOX-HUNTING

1933

(The Fox Meditates)

WHEN Samson set my brush afire  
To spoil the Timnites' barley,  
I made my point for Leicestershire  
And left Philistia early.  
Through Gath and Rankesborough Gorse I fled,  
And took the Coplow Road, sir!  
And was a Gentleman in Red  
When all the Quorn wore woad, sir!

When Rome lay massed on Hadrian's Wall,  
And nothing much was doing,  
Her bored Centurions heard my call  
O' nights when I went wooing.  
They raised a pack—they ran it well  
(For I was there to run 'em)  
From Aesica to Carter Fell,  
And down North Tyne to Hunnum.

When William landed hot for blood,  
And Harold's hosts were smitten,  
I lay at earth in Battle Wood  
While Domesday Book was written.  
Whatever harm he did to man,  
I owe him pure affection;  
For in his righteous reign began  
The first of Game Protection.

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

When Charles, my namesake, lost his mask,  
    And Oliver dropped his'n,  
I found those Northern Squires a task,  
    To keep 'em out of prison.  
In boots as big as milking-pails,  
    With holsters on the pommel,  
They chevied me across the Dales  
    Instead of fighting Cromwell.

When thrifty Walpole took the helm,  
    And hedging came in fashion,  
The March of Progress gave my realm  
    Enclosure and Plantation.  
'Twas then, to soothe their discontent,  
    I showed each pounded Master,  
However fast the Commons went,  
    I went a little faster!

When Pigg and Jorrock's held the stage,  
    And Steam had linked the Shires,  
I broke the staid Victorian age  
    To posts, and rails, and wires.  
Then fifty mile was none too far  
    To go by train to cover,  
Till some dam' sutler pupped a car,  
    And decent sport was over!

When men grew shy of hunting stag,  
    For fear the Law might try 'em,  
The Car put up an average bag  
    Of twenty dead *per diem*.  
Then every road was made a rink  
    For Coroners to sit on;  
And so began, in skid and stink,  
    The real blood-sport of Britain!

# DEFINITIVE EDITION

## MEMORIES

1930

"*The eradication of memories of the Great War.*"—SOCIALIST GOVERNMENT ORGAN.

*The Socialist Government speaks:*

THOUGH all the Dead were all forgot  
And razed were every tomb,  
The Worm—the Worm that dieth not  
Compels Us to our doom.  
Though all which once was England stands  
Subservient to Our will,  
The Dead of whom we washed Our hands,  
They have observance still.

We laid no finger to Their load.  
We multiplied Their woes.  
We used Their dearly-opened road  
To traffic with Their foes:  
And yet to Them men turn their eyes,  
To Them are vows renewed  
Of Faith, Obedience, Sacrifice,  
Honour and Fortitude!

Which things must perish. But Our hour  
Comes not by staves or swords  
So much as, subtly, through the power  
Of small corroding words.  
No need to make the plot more plain  
By any open thrust;  
But—see Their memory is slain  
Long ere Their bones are dust!

Wisely, but yearly, filch some wreath—  
Lay some proud rite aside—  
And daily tarnish with Our breath  
The ends for which They died.  
Distract, deride, decry, confuse—  
(Or—if it serve Us—pray!)  
So presently We break the use  
And meaning of Their day!

THE ENGLISH WAY

1929

AFTER the fight at Otterburn,  
Before the ravens came,  
The Witch-wife rode across the fern  
And spoke Earl Percy's name.

"Stand up—stand up, Northumberland!  
I bid you answer true,  
If England's King has under his hand  
A Captain as good as you?"

Then up and spake the dead Percy—  
Oh, but his wound was sore!  
"Five hundred Captains as good," said he,  
"And I trow five hundred more.

"But I pray you by the lifting skies,  
And the young wind over the grass,  
That you take your eyes from off my eyes,  
And let my spirit pass."

"Stand up—stand up, Northumberland!  
I charge you answer true,  
If ever you dealt in steel and brand,  
How went the fray with you?"

"Hither and yon," the Percy said;  
"As every fight must go;  
For some they fought and some they fled,  
And some struck ne'er a blow.

"But I pray you by the breaking skies,  
And the first call from the nest,  
That you turn your eyes away from my eyes,  
And let me to my rest."

"Stand up—stand up, Northumberland!  
I will that you answer true,  
If you and your men were quick again,  
How would it be with you?"

DEFINITIVE EDITION

“ Oh, we would speak of hawk and hound,  
And the red deer where they rove,  
And the merry foxes the country round,  
And the maidens that we love.

“ We would not speak of steel or steed,  
Except to grudge the cost;  
And he that had done the doughtiest deed  
Would mock himself the most.

“ But I pray you by my keep and tower,  
And the tables in my hall,  
And I pray you by my lady's bower  
(Ah, bitterest of all)

“ That you lift your eyes from outen my eyes,  
Your hand from off my breast,  
And cover my face from the red sun-rise,  
And loose me to my rest! ”

She has taken her eyes from out of his eyes—  
Her palm from off his breast,  
And covered his face from the red sun-rise,  
And loosed him to his rest.

“ Sleep you, or wake, Northumberland—  
You shall not speak again,  
And the word you have said 'twixt quick and dead  
I lay on Englishmen.

“ So long as Severn runs to West  
Or Humber to the East,  
That they who bore themselves the best  
Shall count themselves the least.

“ While there is fighting at the ford,  
Or flood along the Tweed,  
That they shall choose the lesser word  
To cloke the greater deed.

“ After the quarry and the kill—  
The fair fight and the fame—  
With an ill face and an ill grace  
Shall they rehearse the same.

R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

“ 'Greater the deed, greater the need  
Lightly to laugh it away,  
Shall be the mark of the English breed  
Until the Judgment Day!’ ”

THE STORM CONE

1932

**T**HIS is the midnight—let no star  
Delude us—dawn is very far.  
This is the tempest long foretold—  
Slow to make head but sure to hold.

Stand by! The lull 'twixt blast and blast  
Signals the storm is near, not past;  
And worse than present jeopardy  
May our forlorn to-morrow be.

If we have cleared the expectant reef,  
Let no man look for his relief.  
Only the darkness hides the shape  
Of further peril to escape.

It is decreed that we abide  
The weight of gale against the tide  
And those huge waves the outer main  
Sends in to set us back again.

They fall and whelm. We strain to hear  
The pulses of her labouring gear,  
Till the deep throb beneath us proves,  
After each shudder and check, she moves!

She moves, with all save purpose lost,  
To make her offing from the coast;  
But, till she fetches open sea,  
Let no man deem that he is free!

DEFINITIVE EDITION

THE KING AND THE SEA

(17th July 1935)

AFTER His Realms and States were moved  
To bare their hearts to the King they loved,  
Tendering themselves in homage and devotion,  
The Tide Wave up the Channel spoke  
To all those eager, exultant folk:—  
*"Hear now what Man was given you by the Ocean!"*

"There was no thought of Orb or Crown  
When the single wooden chest went down  
To the steering-flat, and the careless Gunroom haled him  
To learn by ancient and bitter use,  
How neither Favour nor Excuse,  
Nor aught save his sheer self henceforth availed him.

"There was no talk of birth or rank  
By the slung hammock or scrubbed plank  
In the steel-grated prisons where I cast him;  
But niggard hours and a narrow space  
For rest—and the naked light on his face—  
While the ship's traffic flowed, unceasing, past him.

"Thus I schooled him to go and come—  
To speak at the word—at a sign be dumb;  
To stand to his task, not seeking others to aid him;  
To share in honour what praise might fall  
For the task accomplished, and—over all—  
To swallow rebuke in silence. Thus I made him.

"I loosened every mood of the deep  
On him, a child and sick for sleep,  
Through the long watches that no time can measure,  
When I drove him, deafened and choked and blind,  
At the wave-tops cut and spun by the wind;  
Lashing him, face and eyes, with my displeasure.

"I opened him all the guile of the seas—  
Their sullen, swift-sprung treacheries,



R U D Y A R D   K I P L I N G ' S   V E R S E

To be fought, or forestalled, or dared, or dismissed with  
    laughter.

I showed him Worth by Folly concealed,  
And the flaw in the soul that a chance revealed  
(Lessons remembered—to bear fruit thereafter).

“ I dealt him Power beneath his hand,  
For trial and proof, with his first Command—  
Himself alone, and no man to gainsay him.  
On him the End, the Means, and the Word,  
And the harsher judgment if he erred,  
And—outboard—Ocean waiting to betray him.

“ Wherefore, when he came to be crowned,  
Strength in Duty held him bound,  
So that not Power misled nor ease ensnared him  
Who had spared himself no more than his seas had spared  
    him! ”

. . . . .  
After His Lieges, in all His Lands,  
Had laid their hands between His hands,  
And His ships thundered service and devotion,  
The Tide Wave, ranging the Planet, spoke  
On all Our foreshores as it broke:—  
“ *Know now what Man I gave you—I, the Ocean!* ”

## THE APPEAL

*IF I HAVE GIVEN YOU DELIGHT  
BY AUGHT THAT I HAVE DONE,  
LET ME LIE QUIET IN THAT NIGHT  
WHICH SHALL BE YOURS ANON :*

*AND FOR THE LITTLE, LITTLE, SPAN  
THE DEAD ARE BORNE IN MIND,  
SEEK NOT TO QUESTION OTHER THAN  
THE BOOKS I LEAVE BEHIND.*



## INDEX TO FIRST LINES



# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
A farmer of the Augustan Age . . . . .	543
A fool there was and he made his prayer . . . . .	220
A great and glorious thing it is . . . . .	45
<i>A much-discerning Public hold</i> . . . . .	28
A Nation spoke to a Nation . . . . .	182
A Rose, in tatters on the garden path . . . . .	373
A Smith makes me . . . . .	669
A stone's throw out on either hand . . . . .	506
<i>A tinker out of Bedford</i> . . . . .	289
<i>Abdhur Rahman, the Durani Chief, of him is the story told</i> . . . . .	243
About the time that taverns shut . . . . .	660
<i>Across a world where all men grieve</i> . . . . .	393
After His Realms and States were moved . . . . .	825
After the burial-parties leave . . . . .	318
After the fight at Otterburn . . . . .	822
After the sack of the City, when Rome was sunk to a name . . . . .	648
Against the Bermudas we foundered, whereby . . . . .	778
<i>Ah! What avails the classic bent</i> . . . . .	340
Ah, would swift ships had never been, for then we ne'er had found . . . . .	392
Ahasuerus Jenkins of the "Operatic Own" . . . . .	5
All day long to the judgment-seat . . . . .	542
All the world over, nursing their scars . . . . .	570
Alone upon the housetops to the North . . . . .	637
"And some are sulky, while some will plunge . . . . .	504
And they were stronger hands than mine . . . . .	637
As Adam lay a-dreaming beneath the Apple Tree . . . . .	672
"'As anybody seen Bill 'Awkins?" . . . . .	444
As I left the Halls at Lumley, rose the vision of a comely . . . . .	52
As I pass through my incarnations in every age and race . . . . .	793
As I was spittin' into the Ditch aboard o' the <i>Crocodile</i> . . . . .	433
As our mother the Frigate, bepainted and fine . . . . .	141
As the dawn was breaking the Sambhur belled— . . . . .	667
As tho' again—yea, even once again . . . . .	210
As watchers couched beneath a Bantine oak . . . . .	765
At dawn there was a murmur in the trees . . . . .	81
At Runnymede, at Runnymede . . . . .	715
At the close of a winter day . . . . .	332
At the eleventh hour he came . . . . .	749
At the hole where he went in . . . . .	644
At times when under cover I 'ave said . . . . .	472
At two o'clock in the morning, if you open your window and listen . . . . .	717
'Ave you 'eard o' the Widow at Windsor . . . . .	413
<i>Away by the lands of the Japanee</i> . . . . .	113

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Ay, lay him 'neath the Simla pine— . . . .	43
Be well assured that on our side . . . .	148
Beat off in our last fight were we? . . . .	538
Because I sought it far from men . . . .	539
<i>Bees! Bees! Hark to your bees!</i> . . . .	593
Before a midnight breaks in storm . . . .	293
Before my Spring I garnered Autumn's gain . . . .	568
Beneath the deep verandah's shade . . . .	63
Between the waving tufts of jungle-grass . . . .	567
Beware the man who's crossed in love . . . .	536
<i>Beyond the path of the outmost sun through utter darkness</i> <i>hurled—</i> . . . .	83
"Blessèd be the English and all their ways and works . . . .	502
Blessèd was our first age and morning-time . . . .	679
Boanerges Blitzten, servant of the Queen . . . .	17
Body and Spirit I surrendered whole . . . .	387
Boh Da Thone was a warrior bold . . . .	255
Brethren, how shall it fare with me . . . .	327
<i>Broke to every known mischance, lifted over all</i> . . . .	291
<i>Buy my English posties!</i> . . . .	190
By the Hoof of the Wild Goat uptossed . . . .	629
By the Laws of the Family Circle 'tis written in letters of brass . . . .	14
By the old Moulmein Pagoda, lookin' lazy at the sea . . . .	418
By the well, where the bullocks go . . . .	66
Cain and Abel were brothers born . . . .	580
Call me not false, beloved . . . .	392
China-going P. & O.'s . . . .	607
Cities and Thrones and Powers . . . .	487
Colour fulfils where Music has no power . . . .	803
Concerning brave Captains . . . .	577
Cry "Murder" in the market-place, and each . . . .	504
Daily, though no ears attended . . . .	390
Dark children of the mere and marsh . . . .	567
Dawn off the Foreland—the young flood making . . . .	631
Death favoured me from the first, well knowing I could not endure . . . .	388
Delilah Aberyswith was a lady—not too young— . . . .	7
Dellius, that car which, night and day . . . .	677
Dim dawn behind the tamarisks—the sky is saffron-yellow— . . . .	54
Dread Mother of Forgetfulness . . . .	787
Duly with knees that feign to quake— . . . .	312
'E was warned agin 'er— . . . .	447
Eddi, priest of St. Wilfrid . . . .	513
England is a cosy little country . . . .	811
England's on the anvil—hear the hammers ring— . . . .	713
<i>Er-Heb beyond the Hills of Ao-Safai</i> . . . .	263
Ere Mor the Peacock flutters, ere the Monkey People cry . . . .	616
Ere stopping or turning, to put forth a hande . . . .	679
Ere the mother's milk had dried . . . .	773
Ere the steamer bore him Eastward, Sleary was engaged to marry . . . .	11
Excellent herbs had our fathers of old— . . . .	563

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Eyes aloft, over dangerous places . . . . .	634
Eyes of grey—a sodden quay . . . . .	30
<i>Fair is our lot—O goodly is our heritage!</i> . . . . .	170
Faithless the watch that I kept: now I have none to keep . . . . .	389
Farewell and adieu to you, Harwich Ladies . . . . .	571
"Farewell, Romance!" the Cave-men said . . . . .	376
Father, Mother, and Me . . . . .	763
Filcs— . . . . .	351
For a season there must be pain— . . . . .	613
For all we have and are . . . . .	329
For Fog or Fate no charm is found . . . . .	391
For our white and our excellent nights—for the nights of swift running . . . . .	643
For the sake of him who showed . . . . .	526
For things we never mention . . . . .	96
<i>Friend, thou beholdest the lightning? Who has the charge of it—</i> . . . . .	807
From every quarter of your land . . . . .	169
From little towns in a far land we came . . . . .	388
From the date that the doors of his prep-school close . . . . .	525
From the wheel and the drift of Things . . . . .	614
Frost upon small rain—the ebony-lacquered avenue . . . . .	677
Full thirty foot she towered from waterline to rail . . . . .	330
"Gay go up and gay go down" . . . . .	731
Go, stalk the red deer o'er the heather . . . . .	504
"Go, wash thyself in Jordan—go, wash thee and be clean!" . . . . .	776
God gave all men all earth to love . . . . .	213
God of our fathers, known of old . . . . .	328
God rest you, peaceful gentlemen, let nothing you dismay . . . . .	277
Gods of the Nile, should this stout fellow here . . . . .	388
"Gold is for the mistress—silver for the maid— . . . . .	508
Harry, our King in England, from London town is gone . . . . .	657
Hastily Adam our driver swallowed a curse in the darkness— . . . . .	685
"Have you news of my boy Jack?" . . . . .	216
Have you no Bananas, simple townsmen all? . . . . .	809
He drank strong waters and his speech was coarse . . . . .	506
He from the wind-bitten North with ship and companions descended . . . . .	391
He passed in the very battle-smoke . . . . .	204
He that hath a Gospel . . . . .	774
He wandered down the mountain grade . . . . .	682
Headless, lacking foot and hand . . . . .	391
<i>Hear now the Song of the Dead—in the North by the torn berg-     edges—</i> . . . . .	172
Heh! Walk her round. Heave, ah, heave her short again! . . . . .	111
Help for a patriot distressed, a spotless spirit hurt . . . . .	227
Her hand was still on her sword-hilt, the spur was still on her heel . . . . .	187
Here come I to my own again . . . . .	579
<i>Here is a horse to tame</i> . . . . .	358
"Here is nothing new nor aught unproven," say the Trumpets . . . . .	296
Here's all at an end between us, or I'll never taste sack . . . . .	691
Here we go in a flung festoon . . . . .	544



# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Here, where my fresh-turned furrows run . . . . .	212
His spots are the joy of the Leopard: his horns are the Buffalo's pride . . . . .	642
How comes it that, at even-tide . . . . .	751
How do I know what Order brings . . . . .	810
How do we know, by the bank-high river . . . . .	741
"How far is St. Helena from a little child at play?" . . . . .	530
How shall she know the worship we would do her? . . . . .	46
"How sweet is the shepherd's sweet life! . . . . .	35
Hurree Chunder Mookerjee, pride of Bow Bazar . . . . .	15
I am made all things to all men— . . . . .	781
I am the land of their fathers . . . . .	487
I am the Most Wise Baviaan, saying in most wise tones . . . . .	605
I ate my fill of a whale that died . . . . .	343
I closed and drew for my love's sake . . . . .	494
I could not dig: I dared not rob . . . . .	390
I could not look on Death, which being known . . . . .	387
I do not look for holy saints to guide me on my way . . . . .	371
I do not love my Empire's foes . . . . .	479
I followed my Duke ere I was a lover . . . . .	495
I go to concert, party, ball— . . . . .	22
I had seen, as dawn was breaking . . . . .	28
I had some friends—but I dreamed that they were dead— . . . . .	808
I have a dream—a dreadful dream— . . . . .	777
"I have a thousand men," said he . . . . .	540
I have been given my charge to keep— . . . . .	520
I have done mostly what most men do . . . . .	773
<i>I have eaten your bread and salt</i> . . . . .	3
<i>I have made for you a song</i> . . . . .	394
I have slain none except my Mother. She . . . . .	387
I have watched a thousand days . . . . .	391
I keep six honest serving-men . . . . .	605
I know not in Whose hands are laid . . . . .	582
I met my mates in the morning (and oh, but I am old!) . . . . .	589
I'm 'ere in a ticky ulster an' a broken billycock 'at . . . . .	430
I'm just in love with all these three . . . . .	490
I pray! My little body and whole span . . . . .	814
"I see the grass shake in the sun for leagues on either hand . . . . .	501
I seek not what his soul desires . . . . .	812
I sent a message to my dear— . . . . .	88
<i>I tell this tale, which is strictly true</i> . . . . .	654
I turned—Heaven knows we women turn too much . . . . .	684
I've a head like a concertina, I've a tongue like a button-stick . . . . .	404
I've never sailed the Amazon . . . . .	606
I've paid for your sickest fancies; I've humoured your crackedest whim— . . . . .	129
I've taken my fun where I've found it . . . . .	442
"I was a Have" . . . . .	386
I was a shepherd to fools . . . . .	391
I was Lord of Cities very sumptuously builded . . . . .	594
I was of delicate mind. I stepped aside for my needs . . . . .	389
<i>I was the staunchest of our fleet</i> . . . . .	149

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
I was very well pleased with what I knowed . . .	491
I went into a public-'ouse to get a pint o' beer . . .	398
I will let loose against you the fleet-footed vines— . . .	640
I will remember what I was. I am sick of rope and chain—	645
I wish my mother could see me now, with a fence-post under my arm . . .	463
If any God should say . . .	583
If any mourn us in the workshop, say . . .	390
If any question why we died . . .	390
If down here I chance to die . . .	31
If I had clamoured at Thy Gate . . .	390
<i>If I have given you delight</i> . . .	827
"If I have taken the common clay . . .	541
If I were hanged on the highest hill . . .	638
If It be pleasant to look on, stalled in the packed <i>serai</i> . . .	60
If the Led Striker call it a strike . . .	184
If thought can reach to Heaven . . .	592
If wars were won by feasting . . .	723
If you can keep your head when all about you . . .	576
If you stop to find out what your wages will be . . .	373
If you wake at midnight, and hear a horse's feet . . .	655
If you're off to Philadelphia in the morning . . .	585
If you've ever stole a pheasant-egg be'ind the keeper's back	410
<i>Imprimis</i> he was "broke." Thereafter left . . .	78
<i>In a land that the sand overlays—the ways to her gates are untrod—</i> . . .	315
In extended observation of the ways and works of man . . .	287
In Faiths and Food and Books and Friends . . .	813
In Lowestoft a boat was laid . . .	653
In the days of lace-ruffles, perukes and brocade . . .	724
In the daytime, when she moved about me . . .	506
In the Name of the Empress of India, make way . . .	33
In the Neolithic Age savage warfare did I wage . . .	342
In their deepest caverns of limestone . . .	782
In youth, by hazard, I killed an old man . . .	677
It got beyond all orders an' it got beyond all 'ope . . .	437
It is always a temptation to an armed and agile nation . . .	712
It's forty in the shade to-day, the spouting eaves declare . . .	356
It was an artless <i>Bandar</i> and he danced upon a pine . . .	34
It was an August evening and, in snowy garments clad . . .	20
It was not in the open fight . . .	505
It was not part of their blood . . .	673
It was our war-ship <i>Clampherdown</i> . . .	138
Jack Barrett went to Quetta . . .	10
Jane Austen Beecher Stowe de Rouse . . .	39
Jane went to Paradise . . .	757
Jelaludin Muhammed Akbar, Guardian of Mankind . . .	779
Jenny and Me were engaged, you see . . .	18
Jubal sang of the Wrath of God . . .	554
Kabul town's by Kabul river— . . .	423
King Solomon drew merchantmen . . .	151
"Know this, my brethren, Heaven is clear . . .	313

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Land of our Birth, we pledge to thee . . . . .	573
Late came the God, having sent his forerunners who were not regarded— . . . . .	753
Laughing through clouds, his milk-teeth still unshed . . . . .	389
Legate, I had the news last night—my cohort ordered home . . . . .	710
'Less you want your toes trod off you'd better get back at once . . . . .	570
<i>Lest you should think this story true</i> . . . . .	12
<i>Let us admit it fairly, as a business people should</i> . . . . .	299
" <i>Let us now praise famous men</i> "— . . . . .	556
Life's all getting and giving . . . . .	628
Like as the Oak whose roots descend . . . . .	349
Like Princes crowned they bore them . . . . .	611
Little Blind Fish, thou art marvellous wise . . . . .	508
Lived a woman wonderful . . . . .	207
Lo! the Wild Cow of the Desert, her yeanling estrayed from her— . . . . .	789
Lo! what is this that I make—sudden, supreme, un- rehearsed— . . . . .	684
Long years ago, ere R—lls or R—ce . . . . .	785
Look, you have cast out Love! What Gods are these . . . . .	503
Lord, Thou hast made this world below the shadow of a dream . . . . .	120
Love and Death once ceased their strife . . . . .	371
Love's fiery chariot, Delia, take . . . . .	679
Man dies too soon, beside his works half-planned . . . . .	565
Man goes to Man! Cry the challenge through the Jungle! . . . . .	644
March! The mud is cakin' good about our trousers . . . . .	432
Master, this is Thy Servant. He is rising eight weeks old . . . . .	816
Me that 'ave been what I've been— . . . . .	461
Men make them fires on the hearth . . . . .	82
Mine was the woman to me, darkling I found her . . . . .	159
Mithras, God of the Morning, our trumpets waken the Wall! . . . . .	523
Much I owe to the Lands that grew— . . . . .	587
My brother kneels, so saith Kabir . . . . .	673
My father's father saw it not . . . . .	547
My garden blazes brightly with the rose-bush and the peach . . . . .	78
My girl, she give me the go onest . . . . .	427
My name is O'Kelly, I've heard the Revelly . . . . .	429
My name, my speech, my self I had forgot . . . . .	387
My new-cut ashlar takes the light . . . . .	511
"My son," said the Norman Baron, "I am dying, and you will be heir . . . . .	714
My son was killed while laughing at some jest. I would I knew . . . . .	387
Naked and grey the Cotswolds stand . . . . .	722
Neither the harps nor the crowns amused, nor the cherubs' dove-winged races— . . . . .	596
<i>News!</i> . . . . .	109
<i>No doubt but ye are the People—your throne is above the King's</i> . . . . .	301
No hope, no change! The clouds have shut us in . . . . .	80
<i>Non nobis Domine!</i> — . . . . .	512

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
"None whole or clean," we cry, "or free from stain . . .	21
<i>Not in the camp his victory lies . . .</i>	319
Not in the thick of the fight . . .	142
Not though you die to-night, O Sweet, and wail . . .	505
Not with an outcry to Allah nor any complaining . . .	532
Nothing in life has been made by man for man's using . . .	764
Now Chil the Kite brings home the night . . .	642
Now it is not good for the Christian's health to hustle the Aryan brown . . .	537
Now Jones had left his new-wed bride to keep his house in order . . .	12
Now praise the Gods of Time and Chance . . .	801
Now the Four-way Lodge is opened, now the Hunting Winds are loose— . . .	270
Now the New Year reviving last Year's Debt . . .	25
Now the New Year reviving old desires . . .	163
Now there is nothing wrong with me . . .	689
Now, this is the cup the White Men drink . . .	282
<i>Now this is the Law of the Jungle—as old and as true as the sky</i> <i>"Now this is the price of a stirrup-cup"</i> . . .	558
Now this is the tale of the Council the German Kaiser decreed . . .	687
Now Tomlinson gave up the ghost in his house in Berkeley Square . . .	284
Now Valour, Youth, and Life's delight break forth . . .	360
Now we are come to our Kingdom . . .	611
O woe is me for the merry life . . .	494
O ye who tread the Narrow Way . . .	268
Of all the trees that grow so fair . . .	92
<i>Oh, East is East, and West is West, and never the twain shall meet . . .</i>	497
Oh, gallant was our galley from her carven steering-wheel . . .	234
Oh, glorious are the guarded heights . . .	73
Oh, Hubshee, carry your shoes in your hand and bow your head on your breast! . . .	308
Oh! hush thee, my baby, the night is behind us . . .	202
Oh, late withdrawn from human-kind . . .	644
Oh, light was the world that he weighed in his hands! . . .	758
Oh, little did the Wolf-Child care— . . .	510
Oh, long had we paltered . . .	641
<i>"Oh, show me how a rose can shut and be a bud again!"</i> . . .	817
<i>"Oh, where are you going to, all you Big Steamers</i> <i>Oh, ye who hold the written clue . . .</i>	795
Old Horn to All Atlantic said . . .	728
<i>Old is the song that I sing— . . .</i>	210
Old Mother Laidinwool had nigh twelve months been dead . . .	663
On land and sea I strove with anxious care . . .	5
<i>On the Downs, in the Weald, on the Marshes . . .</i>	599
On the first hour of my first day . . .	389
Once a pair of savages found a stranded tree . . .	813
Once a ripple came to land . . .	389
Once, after long-drawn revel at The Mermaid . . .	738
	634
	348

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Once again the Steamer at Calais—the tackles . . .	786
Once in life I watched a Star . . .	788
“Once in so often,” King Solomon said . . .	750
Once, on a glittering ice-field, ages and ages ago . . .	345
Once on a time, the ancient legends tell . . .	762
Once on a time was a King anxious to understand . . .	718
Once we feared The Beast—when he followed us we ran . . .	668
One from the ends of the earth—gifts at an open door— . . .	175
One grief on me is laid . . .	766
One man in a thousand, Solomon says . . .	529
One moment bid the horses wait . . .	50
One moment past our bodies cast . . .	632
One used and butchered me: another spied . . .	391
Only two African kopjes . . .	470
Open the old cigar-box, get me a Cuba stout . . .	47
Or ever the battered liners sank . . .	749
Our brows are bound with spindrift and the weed is on our knees . . .	171
Our England is a garden that is full of stately views . . .	732
Our Fathers in a wondrous age . . .	565
Our gloves are stiff with the frozen blood . . .	667
Our King went forth on pilgrimage . . .	805
Our Lord Who did the Ox command . . .	510
Our sister sayeth such and such . . .	636
Out o’ the wilderness, dusty an’ dry . . .	466
Over the edge of the purple down . . .	611
Pagett, M.P., was a liar, and a fluent liar therewith— . . .	26
Peace is declared, an’ I return . . .	485
Petrolio, vaunting his Mercedes’ power . . .	680
Pit where the buffalo cooled his hide . . .	506
Pity not! The Army gave . . .	387
Pleasant it is for the Little Tin Gods . . .	507
“Poison of asps is under our lips” ? . . .	811
Potiphar Gubbins, C.E. . . .	6
Prometheus brought down fire to men . . .	389
Prophets have honour all over the Earth . . .	554
Pussy can sit by the fire and sing . . .	608
Put forth to watch, unschooled, alone, . . .	571
<i>Queen Bess was Harry’s daughter. Stand forward partners all!</i>	609
Rahere, King Henry’s Jester, feared by all the Norman Lords	754
<i>Read here: This is the story of Evarra—man—</i> . . .	338
Red Earl, and will ye take for guide . . .	230
Ride with an idle whip, ride with an unused heel . . .	505
Rome never looks where she treads . . .	548
Roses red and roses white . . .	633
Rosicrucian subtleties . . .	507
Royal and Dower-royal, I the Queen . . .	175
Rustum Beg of Kolazai—slightly backward Native State—	8
Said England unto Pharaoh, “I must make a man of you . . .	198
Securely, after days . . .	756
See you the ferny ride that steals . . .	488
<i>Seven men from all the world back to Docks again</i> . . .	137

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Seven Watchmen sitting in a tower . . . . .	394
Sez the Junior Orderly Sergeant . . . . .	453
She did not know that she was dead . . . . .	771
She dropped the bar, she shot the bolt, she fed the fire anew	639
She is not Folly—that I know . . . . .	775
Shiv, who poured the harvest and made the winds to blow .	519
Shove off from the wharf-edge! Steady! . . . . .	629
<i>Shun—shun the Bowl! That fatal, facile drink</i> . . . . .	17
Since first the White Horse Banner blew free . . . . .	742
Since ye distemper and defile . . . . .	681
Singer and tailor am I— . . . . .	670
Smells are surer than sounds or sights . . . . .	476
Smokin' my pipe on the mountings, sniffin' the mornin'-cool	403
So here's your Empire. No more wine, then? Good . . . . .	69
So long as memory, valour, and faith endure . . . . .	189
So long as 'neath the Kalka hills . . . . .	58
So we loosed a bloomin' volley . . . . .	507
So we settled it all when the storm was done . . . . .	540
Soldier, soldier come from the wars . . . . .	401
Sooner or late—in earnest or in jest— . . . . .	740
South and far south below the Line . . . . .	719
Speakin' in general, I 'ave tried 'em all— . . . . .	87
"Stopped in the straight when the race was his own!— .	504
Strangers drawn from the ends of the earth, jewelled and plumed were we . . . . .	493
Such as in Ships and brittle Barks . . . . .	810
Sudden the desert changes . . . . .	205
Swifter than aught 'neath the sun the car of Simonidés moved him . . . . .	677
Take of English earth as much . . . . .	500
Take up the White Man's burden— . . . . .	323
Tell it to the locked-up trees . . . . .	499
<i>That night, when through the mooring-chains</i> . . . . .	40
That which is marred at birth Time shall not mend . . . . .	771
<i>The Babe was laid in the Manger</i> . . . . .	217
The bachelor 'e fights for one . . . . .	474
The banked oars fell an hundred strong . . . . .	282
The beasts are very wise . . . . .	567
The blown sand heaps on me, that none may learn . . . . .	388
The boats of Newhaven and Folkestone and Dover . . . . .	727
The Camel's hump is an ugly lump . . . . .	604
The careful text-books measure . . . . .	384
The Celt in all his variants from Builth to Bally-hoo . . . . .	533
The child of Mary Queen of Scots . . . . .	721
The Cities are full of pride . . . . .	179
The dark eleventh hour . . . . .	232
The dead child lay in the shroud . . . . .	374
The Doorkeepers of Zion . . . . .	91
The doors were wide, the story saith . . . . .	568
The drowsy carrier sways . . . . .	683
The Earth gave up her dead that tide . . . . .	569
The earth is full of anger . . . . .	325

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
The 'eathen in 'is blindness bows down to wood an' stone	451
The eldest son bestrides him . . . . .	67
The fans and the beltings they roar round me . . . . .	310
The fear was on the cattle, for the gale was on the sea . . . . .	127
The first time that Peter denièd his Lord . . . . .	326
The Four Archangels, so the legends tell . . . . .	516
The freed dove flew to the Rajah's tower— . . . . .	254
The Garden called Gethsemane . . . . .	98
The General 'eard the firin' on the flank . . . . .	477
The God of Fair Beginnings . . . . .	153
The Gods that are wiser than Learning . . . . .	799
The gull shall whistle in his wake, the blind wave break in fire	555
The Injian Ocean sets an' smiles . . . . .	457
The King has called for priest and cup . . . . .	377
The Knight came home from the quest . . . . .	521
The lark will make her hymn to God . . . . .	541
The Law whereby my lady moves . . . . .	635
The Liner she's a lady, an' she never looks nor 'eeds— . . . . .	158
The man that is open of heart to his neighbour . . . . .	784
The men that fought at Minden, they was rookies in their time— . . . . .	438
The merry clerks of Oxenford they stretch themselves at ease . . . . .	798
<i>The miracle of our land's speech—so known</i> . . . . .	761
The night we felt the earth would move . . . . .	646
<i>The overfaithful sword returns the user</i> . . . . .	107
The People of the Eastern Ice, they are melting like the snow— . . . . .	645
The rain it rains without a stay . . . . .	498
The road to En-dor is easy to tread . . . . .	366
The ships destroy us above . . . . .	648
The sky is lead, and our faces are red . . . . .	569
The smoke upon your Altar dies . . . . .	81
The snow lies thick on Valley Forge . . . . .	726
The Soldier may forget his, Sword . . . . .	534
The Sons of Mary seldom bother, for they have inherited that good part . . . . .	382
The Stranger within my gate . . . . .	549
The stream is shrunk—the pool is dry . . . . .	642
<i>The strength of twice three thousand horse</i> . . . . .	143
<i>The toad beneath the harrow knows</i> . . . . .	26
The torn boughs trailing o'er the tusks aslant . . . . .	567
<i>The Weald is good, the Downs are best—</i> . . . . .	491
The white moth to the closing bine . . . . .	181
The wind took off with the sunset . . . . .	646
The wolf-cub at even lay hid in the corn . . . . .	540
The Word came down to Dives in Torment where he lay . . . . .	278
The World hath set its heavy yoke . . . . .	505
The wreath of banquet overnight lay withered on the neck . . . . .	250
The wrecks dissolve above us; their dust drops down from afar— . . . . .	174
Then a pile of heads he laid . . . . .	507

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Then we brought the lances down—then the trumpets blew—	540
There are four good legs to my Father's Chair—	716
There are no leaders to lead us to honour, and yet without leaders we sally	101
There are three degrees of bliss	584
There are whose study is of smells	588
There dwells a wife by the Northern Gate	94
There is a tide in the affairs of men	508
There is a word you often see, pronounce it as you may—	483
There is a world outside the one you know	482
There is pleasure in the wet, wet clay	537
There is sorrow enough in the natural way	591
There runs a road by Merrow Down—	597
There's a convict more in the Central Jail	568
There's a Legion that never was 'listed	195
There's a little red-faced man	395
There's a pasture in a valley where the hanging woods divide	759
There's a whisper down the field where the year has shot her yield	165
<i>There's a widow in sleepy Chester</i>	56
"There's no sense in going further—it's the edge of cultivation"	103
There's no wind along these seas	666
There was a landau deep and wide	682
There was a Priest at Philæ	514
There was a row in Silver Street that's near to Dublin Quay	414
There was a strife 'twixt man and maid—	536
There was darkness under Heaven	612
There was never a Queen like Balkis	609
There was no one like 'im, 'Orse or Foot	446
There was Rundle, Station Master	444
There were thirty million English who talked of England's might	200
There were three friends that buried the fourth	541
These are <i>our</i> regulations—	273
These are the Four that are never content, that have never been filled since the Dews began—	643
These were my companions going forth by night—	532
"These were never your true love's eyes	158
These were our children who died for our lands: they were dear in our sight	522
" <i>They are fools who kiss and tell</i> "—	18
They bear, in place of classic names	647
They burnt a corpse upon the sand—	505
They christened my brother of old—	294
They killed a Child to please the Gods	566
They shall not return to us, the resolute, the young	300
They shut the road through the woods	490
Thirteen as twelve my Murray always took—	681
This 'appened in a battle to a batt'ry of the corps	412



# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
<i>This ditty is a string of lies</i> . . . . .	6
This fell when dinner-time was done— . . . . .	64
This I saw when the rites were done . . . . .	538
<i>This is our lot if we live so long and labour unto the end—</i> . . . . .	321
<i>This is the ballad of Boh Da Thone</i> . . . . .	255
This is the end whereto men toiled . . . . .	683
This is the midnight—let no star . . . . .	824
This is the mouth-filling song of the race that was run by a Boomer . . . . .	606
<i>This is the reason why Rustum Beg</i> . . . . .	8
This is the sorrowful story . . . . .	354
"This is the State above the Law . . . . .	286
This man in his own country prayed we know not to what Powers . . . . .	387
This spark now set, retarded, yet forbears . . . . .	680
This Uninhabited Island . . . . .	608
Though all the Dead were all forgot . . . . .	821
<i>Though tangled and twisted the course of true love</i> . . . . .	11
Three things make earth unquiet . . . . .	560
Thrones, Powers, Dominions, Peoples, Kings . . . . .	546
Through learned and laborious years . . . . .	322
Through the Plagues of Egypt we was chasin' Arabi . . . . .	449
Thus, for a season, they fought it fair . . . . .	507
Thus said the Lord in the Vault above the Cherubim . . . . .	160
<i>Thy face is far from this our war</i> . . . . .	85
Time and Space decreed his lot . . . . .	686
To all to whom this little book may come— . . . . .	737
<i>To Him Who bade the Heavens abide, yet cease not from their motion</i> . . . . .	767
To the Heavens above us . . . . .	590
<i>To the Judge of Right and Wrong</i> . . . . .	186
To the legion of the lost ones, to the cohort of the damned . . . . .	424
To-day, across our fathers' graves . . . . .	305
To-night, God knows what thing shall tide . . . . .	506
"Tommy" you was when it began . . . . .	458
<i>Too late, alas! the song</i> . . . . .	51
Troopin', troopin', troopin' to the sea . . . . .	420
Truly ye come of The Blood; slower to bless than to ban . . . . .	178
Try as he will, no man breaks wholly loose . . . . .	353
'Twas Fultah Fisher's boarding-house . . . . .	40
'Twas not while England's sword unsheathed . . . . .	726
'Twas when the rain fell steady an' the Ark was pitched an' ready . . . . .	355
<i>Twelve hundred million men are spread</i> . . . . .	21
<i>Twenty bridges from Tower to Kew—</i> . . . . .	709
'Twixt my house and thy house the pathway is broad . . . . .	179
Udai Chand lay sick to death . . . . .	238
Unless you come of the gipsy stock . . . . .	760
Until thy feet have trod the Road . . . . .	615
Unto whose use the pregnant suns are poised . . . . .	569
Up came the young Centaur-colts from the plains they were fathered in— . . . . .	752

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Valour and Innocence . . . . .	610
Veil them, cover them, wall them round— . . . . .	643
<i>Walpole talks of "a man and his price"</i> . . . . .	14
We are very slightly changed . . . . .	4
We be the Gods of the East— . . . . .	539
We counterfeited once for your disport . . . . .	392
We giving all gained all . . . . .	388
<i>We have another Viceroy now,—those days are dead and done</i> . . . . .	7
We have fed our sea for a thousand years . . . . .	173
We have no heart for the fishing—we have no hand for the oar— . . . . .	305
We knew thee of old . . . . .	93
We know the Rocket's upward whizz . . . . .	350
We lent to Alexander the strength of Hercules . . . . .	574
We meet in an evil land . . . . .	538
We now, held in captivity . . . . .	570
We pulled for you when the wind was against us and the sails were low . . . . .	671
We're foot—slog—slog—slog—sloggin' over Africal . . . . .	473
We're marchin' on relief over Injia's sunny plains . . . . .	426
We're not so old in the Army List . . . . .	196
We thought we ranked above the chance of ill . . . . .	320
We've drunk to the Queen—God bless her!— . . . . .	192
We've fought with many men acrost the seas . . . . .	400
We've got the cholerer in camp—it's worse than forty fights . . . . .	440
We've rode and fought and ate and drunk as rations come to hand . . . . .	468
We've sent our little Cupids all ashore— . . . . .	156
We were all one heart and one race . . . . .	307
We were dreamers, dreaming greatly, in the man-stifled town . . . . .	172
We were taken from the ore-bed and the mine . . . . .	729
We were together since the War began . . . . .	386
"What are the bugles blowin' for?" said Files-on-Parade . . . . .	397
<i>What boots it on the Gods to call?</i> . . . . .	369
"What have we ever done to bear this grudge?" . . . . .	51
What is a woman that you forsake her . . . . .	528
What is the moral? Who rides may read . . . . .	530
What is the song the children sing . . . . .	744
What of the hunting, hunter bold? . . . . .	643
"What's that that hirlples at my side?" . . . . .	662
Wheel me gently to the garage, since my car and I must part— . . . . .	686
When a lover hies abroad . . . . .	538
When all the world would keep a matter hid . . . . .	545
When by the labour of my 'ands . . . . .	478
<i>When Drake went down to the Horn</i> . . . . .	173
When Earth's last picture is painted and the tubes are twisted and dried . . . . .	226
When first by Eden Tree . . . . .	572
When, foot to wheel and back to wind . . . . .	168

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
When Horse and Rider each can trust the other everywhere	720
When I left Rome for Lalage's sake . . . . .	550
When I was a King and a Mason—a Master proven and skilled—	385
When Julius Fabricius, Sub-Prefect of the Weald . . . . .	601
When 'Omer smote 'is bloomin' lyre . . . . .	351
When Rome was rotten-ripe to her fall . . . . .	711
When Samson set my brush afire . . . . .	819
When spring-time flushes the desert grass . . . . .	247
When that great Kings return to clay . . . . .	209
When that with meat and drink they had fulfilled . . . . .	681
When the 'arf-made recruity goes out to the East . . . . .	416
When the cabin port-holes are dark and green . . . . .	604
When the darkened Fifties dip to the North . . . . .	90
When the drums begin to beat . . . . .	664
When the earth was sick and the skies were grey . . . . .	504
When the flush of a new-born sun fell first on Eden's green and gold . . . . .	336
When the Great Ark, in Vigo Bay . . . . .	553
When the grey geese heard the Fool's tread . . . . .	562
When the Himalayan peasant meets the he-bear in his pride	367
When the robust and Brass-bound Man commissioned first for sea . . . . .	651
When the waters' countenance . . . . .	659
When the Waters were dried an' the Earth did appear . . . . .	435
When, with a pain he desires to explain to his servitors, Baby . . . . .	743
When ye say to Tabaqui, " My Brother! " when ye call the Hyæna to meat . . . . .	646
When you come to London Town . . . . .	804
When you've shouted " Rule Britannia," when you've sung " God save the Queen " . . . . .	459
Whence comest thou, Gehazi . . . . .	242
" Where have you been this while away . . . . .	421
<i>Where run your colts at pasture?</i> . . . . .	145
Where's the lamp that Hero lit . . . . .	586
Where the East wind is brewed fresh and fresh every morning	665
Where the sober-coloured cultivator smiles . . . . .	76
Whether the State can loose and bind . . . . .	561
Whether to wend through straight streets strictly . . . . .	678
While the snaffle holds or the long-neck stings . . . . .	508
Who gives him the Bath? . . . . .	524
Who hath desired the Sea?—the sight of salt water un- bounded— . . . . .	110
<i>Who in the Realm to-day lays down dear life for the sake of a land more dear?</i> . . . . .	224
Who knows the heart of the Christian? How does he reason?	535
Who recalls the twilight and the ranged tents in order . . . . .	218
Why gird at Lollius if he care . . . . .	800
" <i>Why is my District death-rate low?</i> " . . . . .	20
Will you conquer my heart with your beauty, my soul going out from afar? . . . . .	24

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Winds of the World, give answer! They are whimpering to and fro—	221
With them there rode a lustie Engineere	678
With those that bred, with those that loosed the strife	242
With us there rade a Maister-Cook that came	739
Wot makes the soldier's 'eart to penk, wot makes 'im to perspire?	408
Yearly, with tent and rifle, our careless white men go	274
Yet at the last, ere our spearmen had found him	541
You call yourself a man	455
You couldn't pack a Broadwood half a mile—	98
You may talk o' gin and beer	406
You mustn't groom an Arab with a file	690
You mustn't swim till you're six weeks old	645
Your jar of Virginny	551
Your patience, Sirs. The Devil took me up	536
Your tiercel's too long at hack, Sir He's no eyass	617
Your trail runs to the westward	598
Youth that trafficked long with Death	784

THE END